Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/michiganhistoric09michuoft

P
HUS
M

Michigan. Historical Commission
" Michigan historical collections

COLLECTIONS

REPORT

OF THE

PIONEER SOCIETY

OF THE

STATE OF MICHIGAN

TOGETHER WITH

REPORTS OF COUNTY PIONEER SOCIETIES.

VOL. IX

SECOND EDITION

95675
19/4/09

LANSING
WYNKOOP HALLENBECK CRAWFORD COMPANY, STATE PRINTERS
1908

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1886, by the
PIONEER SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN,
In the office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington, D. C.

Reprint, 1908.

F
561
M47
v. 9

PREFACE

With renewed confidence in the great value of the work being done by the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, the Committee of Historians submit the ninth volume of Pioneer Collections to the public, believing that it will not be found inferior in interest and information to any that has gone before.

Within the pages of the several volumes of these Collections is contained the recital of many matters of important interest to all who may wish to know the full history of the country now composing the State of Michigan. Not that these volumes form a history in themselves, but rather, that they are collections of sketches, statements, papers and documents, written by the actual participants in the scenes described, and which must prove of inestimable value to him who shall hereafter write *The History of Michigan.*

While, with commendable liberality and enterprise, the legislature provided for the appropriate celebration of this the Fiftieth Year of Michigan as a State, and the commission having that celebration in charge arranged an interesting programme of able historical papers concerning every important interest connected with the growth and development of the State, yet it must be borne in mind that in the short space of but one day comparatively few and brief could be the papers presented. To the Pioneer Society, therefore, necessarily remains the work of collecting and rescuing from decay and oblivion the many important matters which have hitherto escaped preservation or attention, but which must combine to make our history correct and complete. Again, Michigan's history is not embraced within the short period of fifty years but extends backward for more than two centuries, and to gather and preserve any and everything that will give light to the unwritten history of those years is one of the chief objects of this Society.

Since the publication of the eighth volume, we have extended our researches beyond our own State. Our representative, Mr. B. W. Shoemaker, of Jackson, Michigan, spent three weeks in Ottawa, examining the archives of Canada. The result of his labor among these collections of bygone days was most gratifying to the Society. A portion of the so-called "Haldimand Papers," published in this volume, will give some idea of the importance of the manuscripts found at Ottawa. In 1872 the Canadian government established a department, with chief and assistants, especially devoted to the collection and preservation of their historical documents. During the fourteen years of its existence this department has brought together and arranged a vast amount of material. Mr. Douglas Brymner, the Archivist, has made personal research among the governmental records of Great Britain and France, and through his agents procured many documents of importance from all the European powers.

The Ottawa collection covers three periods of the history of our own State. The proceedings of the Colonial Council at Quebec, extending from the ceding of this country by the French to the actual possession of Detroit by the American forces (1763-1796), contain the legislation of this council over the District of Hesse. Detroit and a large portion of our territory was included in this district, and their proceedings are full of interest to the student of early days. The second period, the War of Independence (1776-1781), can be studied from the original correspondence of the officers of the frontier posts with each other, and with the commanding officer, General Haldimand, at Quebec. The letters of the Haldimand Papers portray not only the military but also the civil life of the times. The treaties and conferences with the Indians, the means employed to obtain their alliance, and the influence they had in the war, as shown in the Haldimand Papers, give us a better knowledge of these unfortunate people. The third period, the war of 1812 (1812-1815), is also faithfully depicted by the correspondence of the officers of the British forces. These letters treat of the capture of Detroit, the battles of *Riviere au Raisen* the settlement of the boundaries, etc.

The above is a brief outline of the manuscripts that are now in the hands of the copyist and publishers, and will be numbered among our collections at no distant day. Our Society is indebted to many of the Canadian officials for the kindness and assistance shown their representative while in Ottawa, and wish especially to thank Mr. Douglas Brymner, the Archivist, for the courtesy and help they obtained from him. He has taken a personal interest in the success of our work, and has done all in his power to aid us in our research.

The several preceding volumes of Pioneer Collections have spoken for themselves in the valuable contents presented, while, for Volume IX, the

Committee of Historians asks a careful examination, believing that it will conclusively show that the Society is earnestly laboring to accomplish the work laid out for it. Following the reports of officers and committees, including brief sketches of pioneers who have ceased their earthly toils, first appear the papers presented at the annual meeting of June 8 and 9, 1886, and within which is contained much that will prove of historic value. Next is given the action of the society relative to the Semi-Centennial Celebration of Michigan as a State, and then follow the papers read at the Semi-Centennial Celebration of the settlement of Ottawa county, which was held at Grand Haven, December 2, 1884. The careful preservation of all within its power, concerning the history of the several counties, townships and districts of the State, has ever been a special object of the society, for the fact is recognized that from the smaller parts the greater whole is formed. These papers regarding Ottawa county's history are, therefore, highly prized. The last half of the volume contains the first installment of the "Haldimand Papers," which have already been referred to. In the publication of these papers it will be observed that care has been taken to preserve, as closely as possible, the exact orthography, capitalization, punctuation, etc., of the original copies.

Grateful acknowledgements are due and are hereby tendered to all who have contributed in any way toward making this volume what it is.

M. SHOEMAKER, CHAIRMAN,
HARRIET A. TENNEY, SECRETARY,
TALCOTT E. WING,
WITTER J. BAXTER,
O. C. COMSTOCK,
THOMAS M. COOLEY,
Committee of Historians.

LANSING, December 13, 1886.

PREFACE TO SECOND EDITION

VOLUME IX

The original edition of Volume IX of Pioneer Collections having become exhausted, this second edition has been prepared as authorized by Act No. 62 of the legislature, approved April 25th, 1907.

The differences between this and the first edition are not of much importance, though many minor corrections have been made. Before making any alterations however slight, references have been made to the author's original copy and to the historical authorities on the shelves of the State Library,—and such changes have been made, either by reference to an appendix or a note inserted in the text in brackets; actual changes of the wording have been made only for the correction of palpable blunders.

On account of an index of the first fifteen volumes already published, it was necessary to make the paging of the Second Edition exactly follow the first, consequently the comments usually appearing as footnotes had to be printed as an appendix, each note numbered according to the page to which it refers.

That the reader will still encounter errors is to be expected, especially as the time allowed for revision was limited, but it should be held in mind that no attempt has been made to substitute the editor's style for that of the author's, and that the bad spelling, grammar and capitalization of the Haldimand letters have been religiously preserved.

HENRY S. BARTHOLOMEW,
Editor of Second Edition.

STATE LIBRARY, July, 1907.

CONTENTS

PAGE.
PREFACE, first edition iii
PREFACE, second edition vi
CONTENTS vii
LIST OF OFFICERS OF THE SOCIETY FOR 1886-7 xi

ANNUAL MEETING, JUNE 8 AND 9, 1886:

Address of the President 1
Report of the Recording Secretary 5
Report of the Corresponding Secretary 12
Report of the Treasurer 14
Report of the Committee of Historians 15
Report of the Memorial Committee:
Allegan County 17
Berrien County 18
Branch County 19
Clinton County 26
Crawford County 29
Eaton County 29
Genesee County 32
Hillsdale County 36
Ingham County 41
Ionia County 43
Jackson County 47
Kalamazoo County 54
Kent County 54
Lenawee County 56
Marquette County 59
Oakland County 60
Saginaw County 64
St. Joseph County 75
Tuscola County 77
Van Buren County 78
Washtenaw County 82
Wayne County 86
List of Members of the State Pioneer and Historical Society 90

PAPERS READ AT THE ANNUAL MEETING: PAGE.
A Quarter-Century of Education in Michigan.................................... 92
Reminiscences of the Survey of the Northwestern Lakes.................... 100
An Old-Time Trip 108
Recollections of Pioneer Life in Michigan.................................. 118
The Diocese of Detroit—What it was—What it is.......................... 128
Convivial Habits of the Pioneers of Saginaw.............................. 137
History of St. Andrew's Church at Ann Arbor.............................. 141
Recollections of Early Ministers of Washtenaw County.................. 155
From Buffalo to Michigan in 1829.. 161
Incidents of Early Days in Michigan... 166
The Town of Green 172
Andrew Nowland: The Old Pioneer Mail Carrier and Teamster............ 175
The Goodrich Family Reunion 178
Sketch of John Skinner Goodrich... 180
Sketch of Hon. Charles Upson.. 188
Sketch of Thomas L. L. Brent.. 192
Sketch of Dr. George W. Fish... 196
Sketch of Linus Cone 201
Sketch of William Poppleton 205
Last Letter of Col. T. Broadhead.. 208
Uncle Tom's Bond 210
Letter regarding the Battle of Cherubusco.................................... 211
A New Version of an Old Song.. 212
Seventy Second Anniversary of the Marriage of Mr. and Mrs. Alexander Odren 213

SEMI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION OF MICHIGAN AS A STATE:
Action of the Pioneer and Historical Society................................ 217
List of Delegates to Represent the Society.................................. 217
Address of Hon. W. J. Baxter at the Celebration........................... 219

PAPERS READ AT THE SEMI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION OF OTTAWA COUNTY:
Historical Discourse 222
Early Settlement of Ottawa County... 234
Rev. W. M. Ferry, Rix Robinson, and Other Early Settlers................ 238
Semi-Centennial Poem 246
Organization of Ottawa County and its Towns.............................. 251
Early Administration of Justice 256
Soil and Climate of Ottawa County.. 258
Agriculture of Ottawa County... 261
Fruit Culture in Ottawa County... 267
Railroads in Ottawa County 270
Commerce and Ship-Building 280
Manufactures—Actual and Possible 286
Buildings of Ottawa County... 292
Newspapers in Ottawa County 295
The Holland and German Churches 301
Churches Worshiping in the English Language............................ 315

PAPERS READ AT SEMI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION OF OTTAWA CO.—(Continued): PAGE.

The Schools of Ottawa County.... 321
The First Schools in Holland.... 326
Historical Sketch of Hope College.... 328
Early Recollections of Grand Haven.... 330
Early Medical History of Ottawa County.... 332
The Burning of Holland in 1871.... 334
The Song of Time—Poem.... 341

THE HALDIMAND PAPERS:

Letters of Gen. Carleton and Lieut. Gov. Hamilton.... 343
Letters of Gen. Haldimand to Maj. DePeyster at Michilimackinac.... 352
Letters from Maj. DePeyster, Commanding at Michilimackinac.... 365
Letters of Gen. Haldimand to Lieut. Gov. Hamilton.... 398
Letters of Gen. Haldimand to Capt. Lernoult.... 407
Stores, etc., taken upon Lieut. Gov. Hamilton's Expedition.... 409
Letters of Capt. D. Brehm 410
Letters of Gen. Haldimand 423
Letters of Lieut. Col. Bolton to Gen. Haldimand.... 427
Letters of Lieut. Gov. Hamilton 430
Report of Indian Councils at Detroit.... 442
Account of the Expedition of Lieut. Gov. Hamilton.... 489
Letters of Haldimand, Brehm, and Sinclair.... 516
Letters of Sinclair, DePeyster, and Others.... 580
Papers Concerning Samuel Robertson 618
Letters of Gen. Haldimand to Maj. DePeyster, at Detroit.... 633
Description of Michilimackinac in 1781.... 642
Trip to Lake Superior in 1784.... 643
Inventories, Bills of Accounts, and Returns.... 647

INDEXES:

General Index 659
Index of Names 671

OFFICERS

OF THE

PIONEER SOCIETY

OF THE

STATE OF MICHIGAN

ELECTED JUNE 9, 1886

PRESIDENT

M. H. GOODRICH..Ann Arbor.

VICE PRESIDENTS

County.	Name.	Residence.
Allegan	Don C. Henderson	Allegan.
Barry	David G. Robinson	Hastings.
Bay	William R. McCormick	Bay City.
Berrien	Alexander B. Leeds	Berrien Springs.
Branch	C. D. Randall	Coldwater.
Calhoun	Benjamin F. Hinman	Battle Creek.
Clare	Henry Woodruff	Farwell.
Clinton	Samuel S. Walker	St. Johns.
Crawford	Melvin D. Osband	Fredricvillle.
Eaton	David B. Hale	Eaton Rapids.
Emmet	Isaac D. Toll	Petoskey.
Genesee	Josiah W. Begole	Flint.
Grand Traverse	J. G. Ramsdell	Traverse City.
Houghton	Jay A. Hubbell	Houghton.
Ingham	C. B. Stebbins	Lansing.
Ionia	Hampton Rich	Ionia.
Jackson	Hiram H. Smith	Jackson.
Kalamazoo	Henry Bishop	Kalamazoo.
Kent	Wright L. Coffinbury	Grand Rapids.
Lapeer	John B. Wilson	Lapeer.
Lenawee	Francis A. Dewey	Cambridge.
Livingston	Isaac W. Bush	Howell.
Macomb	John E. Day	Armada.
Manistee	T. J. Ramsdell	Manistee.
Marquette	Peter White	Marquette.

County.	Name.	Residence.
Monroe	J. M. Sterling	Monroe.
Montcalm	Joseph P. Shoemaker	Amsden.
Menominee	James A. Crozier	Menominee.
Muskegon	Henry H. Holt	Muskegon.
Oakland	O. Poppleton	Birmingham.
Oceana	Oliver K. White	New Era.
Ottawa	—— —— ———	—— ———
Saginaw	Charles W. Grant	East Saginaw.
Shiawassee	Alonzo H. Owens	Venice.
St. Clair	William T. Mitchell	Port Huron.
St. Joseph	H. H. Riley	Constantine.
Tuscola	Townsend North	Vassar.
Van Buren	C. J. Monroe	South Haven.
Washtenaw	Ezra D. Lay	Ypsilanti.
Wayne	Philo Parsons	Detroit.

RECORDING SECRETARY

HARRIET A. TENNEY	Lansing

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY

GEORGE H. GREENE	Lansing.

TREASURER

EPHRAIM LONGYEAR	Lansing.

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE

JOHN C. HOLMES, *Chairman*	Detroit.
ALBERT MILLER	Bay City.
FRANCIS A. DEWEY	Cambridge
STEPHEN D. BINGHAM	Lansing.

COMMITTEE OF HISTORIANS

MICHAEL SHOEMAKER, *Chairman*	Jackson.
HARRIET A. TENNEY, *Secretary*	Lansing.
TALCOTT E. WING	Monroe.
WITTER J. BAXTER	Jonesville.
OLIVER C. COMSTOCK	Marshall.
THOMAS M. COOLEY	Ann Arbor.

ANNUAL MEETING JUNE 8 AND 9, 1886

MICHIGAN
PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

ADDRESS OF THE PRESIDENT

BY HON. HENRY FRALICK, OF GRAND RAPIDS

Ladies and Gentlemen; Fathers, Mothers, Sons and Daughters; Pioneers of Michigan:

It is my pleasant and agreeable duty as president of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, to greet you on the return of another annual meeting of this society. The large attendance here annually of so many aged persons, and from long distances, attests the interest felt and the enjoyments attained in this pleasant annually recurring social intercourse. To those scenes and incidents long past and gone, yet comparatively fresh and vivid in the recollections of those who participated in them, whether they were scenes of trial and suffering, or of enjoyment and pleasure, where persons are well past middle age as most of us are, the mind loves to revert back and clings with great tenacity, and that is one of the strongest reasons of the interest and pleasure taken by our associate pioneers in these meetings.

While it is a great pleasure to meet so many of the old familiar faces, it is mixed with pain to notice the many vacant places made in our ranks by the remorseless sickle of old Time, but such is life. It therefore behooves us who still remain to be laborers in the prolific field of gathering up such fragments of the early history of our beloved State, while yet we may, as important to their permanent place in the future history of the State. With you who have felled the forests, cleared the fields, prepared the soil, and sowed the seed, and so wisely started the early history of this now great State, is the knowledge that no generation after this can obtain if not imparted and left of record by you. Every week death calls from our ranks some of those who have in a greater or less degree helped to change the wilderness into fruitful fields of plenty, having left their native States in the early days to fill the noble mission of a pioneer.

The incidents, self-denial and hardships of braving the terrors of the unbroken forests, in the settlement of a new country, are well known to you; but they, thank God, are now largely removed from the present generation, by the energy, privations, and indomitable preseverance of our early pioneers.

I think it the duty of every pioneer, according to his or her ability, to contribute of his or her knowledge and experience in the early settlement of this Territory and State, including incidents, circumstances and transactions which go to make up a full and complete record of its pioneer history. Each one may and can furnish the information of what transpired in his or her neighborhood or locality. It may not seem material to them, but when properly arranged and compiled makes the veritable history, which is the aim and object of this society to gather, record and perpetuate.

Our work is progressing fairly, the seventh volume of our publications has just been issued; it has been delayed some time by the press of other State printing that required urgency; the material for the eighth volume is all ready for the printers, and there is sufficient material now nearly ready for the ninth volume. We hope to get both volumes out before January next. Our Committee of Historians, with the help of some good friends, have been able to obtain quite voluminous, but reliable and valuable papers relating to the early history of the territory now comprised in the limits of the State of Michigan. The Society has been at some expense in having such of these as required it translated from the French into the English language and all carefully compiled. In this we are confident the money has been wisely expended. The work of the last year has required a good deal of the time and attention of the Committee of Historians for which they are entitled to the thanks of the Society, as are also the Recording and Corresponding Secretaries and Treasurer, for the prompt and faithful services rendered.

The dignity of labor, both mental and physical, is exhibited in all laudable undertakings, and in none more so than in felling the forest, clearing and cultivating the new lands, organizing new towns, counties, and states, building the necessary and indispensable roads and bridges, farm buildings, school-houses, churches, mills, factories, villages and cities, form and enact proper, wise, and suitable laws for the government of each. Who has greater and better cause for gratulation than the pioneers of this State, in the glorious success of their efforts in establishing a State so great and complete in all the elements that are desirable in a community as the State of Michigan.

We have accomplished in that sense our full duty; it still remains for us, for the benefit of the State, the nation, our children, and our successors in whatever capacity, to perfect the record, so far as possible, of the ways and means how this great work was brought about. There is no doubt the underlying cause of the rapid and desirable progress of Michigan was in the character of a large majority of its early settlers. They were mostly from New York and New England; their early training had been in the right direction; they and their progenitors had been early imbued with the knowledge that industry, sobriety, and good morals were vitally essential to the ultimate desirable success in the formation of the society and laws of a new community; and to their influence and action much of the enviable position of this State and character of its people are undoubtedly due.

The land was sold only for cash at time of purchase; thus those unsatiable cormorants, high prices and large interest for credit, were generally avoided by the early pioneers. They were thrown on their own resources, and about their only hope lay in self-reliance and those principles which sustain it.

I am confident that I am briefly giving the experience of most of my hearers and associate pioneers. We were early taught that intelligence was essential to success, therefore one of the first joint actions of a few settlers, comparatively remote from each other by reason of the want of roads, was the building of a school-house, though of the most primitive kind, and establishing a school. When the neighborhood had a few more settlers an addition to the school-house or a new and larger one was erected, not only for holding schools, but in which to hold religious and other necessary meetings. Gradually as the country became more settled and improved school districts were organized and a primary school system established, which was soon followed by a few seminaries and high schools for the preparation of teachers. Then as the means of the people increased the establishment of our Normal School and University system and private colleges followed. All of which were so well managed, patronized, and sustained, that at the National Centennial held in 1876, it was found on examination and comparison by the able judges selected for the purpose, that the primary school system of Michigan was entitled to the first rank, and its university equalled, if it did not excel, the oldest and most richly endowed colleges of the country.

Fathers, mothers, and fellow pioneers, your useful lives have been spared to behold the celebration of the centennial year of our Nation's existence ten years ago, which was a wonderful event in the world's history. It brought together representatives from most of the civilized and semi-civilized nations of the world, with their industrial arts and inventions. This was, perhaps, not more important, if as much so, in the wonderful display, as in the influence of kindred fellowship shed abroad among the nations of the earth, giving them their first real personal contact and knowledge of the people and their ways and progress of the great country where the people are the sovereigns. Not only this have you beheld, but with the blessing of God your lives and health have been continued to see the time and occasion when the State of your adoption, and at whose birth many of you were present, will celebrate the fiftieth year of its existence as a State, and the semi-centennial year of its admission into the Union of States. In this I trust that many of you will take a part. The celebration will take place next week, the 15th instant, at this place. The programme of the celebration seems wise and appropriate; eminent men in all the various walks of life, citizens of the State, have been selected to gather up and put into a proper and permanent form not only the general history of the State and current events affecting it, but also to go somewhat into detail into the history and progress of the important branches or departments that go to make up a successful State. These include the historical, executive, legislative, congressional, judicial, financial, mineral agricultural, horticultural, mechanical, educational, reformatory, fish and fish culture, and railroad development in the State, with brief biographical sketches of some of the men who have been largely instrumental in various ways in making Michigan what it is, one of the foremost States in all the great and material interests of the union.

Thus, in the short space of the time of an active life, we have seen a territory of an almost unbroken forest as large as the Kingdom of Great Britain peacefully purchased from the red men of the wilderness; the forests removed, the country settled and cultivated, a State government formed and established, villages and cities with all the various necessary industrial shops and factories built, trade and commerce established, including railroads and all the other improvements necessary for a great State and the accommodation of its nearly two millions of people; where any industrious and good citizen may and can own his own domicile and enjoy himself "under his own vine and fig tree, with no person to make him afraid."

All this we have seen and in our way helped to accomplish, and we may now retire from active life in full confidence that we leave our work in safe hands, thanking God for all the great blessings bestowed on us and ours, and praying that a Divine Providence may continue his favor and protection on our beloved State and its people in the future as in the past.

REPORT OF THE RECORDING SECRETARY

OFFICE OF THE
PIONEER SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN,
Lansing, June 7, 1886.

In accordance with the provisions of the constitution of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, I herewith present my twelfth annual report, as follows:—

ANNUAL MEETING, 1885.

The annual meeting of the society was held in the Central M. E. Church, commencing at 2 o'clock, Wednesday afternoon, June 17.

Officers Present:

President—Francis A. Dewey.

Vice Presidents—J. W. Begole, George H. Greene, F. R. Stebbins, Peter White, O. Poppleton, B. O. Williams, William T. Mitchell, E. D. Lay, Philo Parsons.

Executive Committee—Henry Fralick, Judge Albert Miller.

Committee of Historians—M. Shoemaker, J. C. Holmes, T. E. Wing, O. C. Comstock, M. H. Goodrich, Harriet A. Tenney.

Recording Secretary—Harriet A. Tenney.

Corresponding Secretary—George H. Greene.

Treasurer—E. Longyear.

The President, Hon. Francis A. Dewey, took the chair, and the exercises of the afternoon were opened with reading of the Scriptures and prayer by the Rev. George Taylor, of Lansing. The audience joined in singing "Old Hundred," led by the Misses Brown, Miss Addie Berridge acting as musical director.

The reports of the recording and corresponding secretaries and the treasurer were read and adopted.

An original poem, written for the occasion by Wm. Lambie, was read by E. Longyear.

A violin solo, "Tannhauser and Marseilles Hymn," was rendered by Mrs. Ella W. Shank, of Lansing.

The report of the Committee of Historians was prepared and read by T. E. Wing, and, on motion of O. Poppleton, was accepted and adopted.

Memorial reports were presented by the Corresponding Secretary, George H. Greene, and by the Vice Presidents from the following counties:—Allegan county, by Don C. Henderson; Berrien, by Alexander B. Leeds; Genesee, by J. W. Begole; Ingham, by George H. Greene; Jackson, by C. R. Taylor; Kalamazoo, by Henry Bishop; Kent, by W. L. Coffinbury for Robert Hilton; Lenawee, by F. R. Dewey; Marquette, by Peter White; Montcalm, by Joseph P. Shoemaker; Oakland, by O. Poppleton; Ottawa, by Henry Pennoyer; Shiawassee, by B. O. Williams; Saginaw, by C. W. Grant; St. Clair, by William T. Mitchell; Van Buren, by Eaton Branch; Washtenaw, by E. D. Lay; Wayne, by Philo Parsons.

Memorial notices of the late Judge Hezekiah G. Wells, reported by the special committee, Messrs. Fralick and Comstock, were read by Dr. Comstock.

Remarks upon the life and labors of Judge Wells were made by W. J. Baxter, Maj. Wyllys C. Ransom, and Philo Parsons.

A vocal solo, "Memories of Childhood," was sung by Miss Lizzie Brown.

The President then appointed the committee to nominate officers for the ensuing year, as follows: J. C. Holmes, Albert Miller, B. O. Williams, J. W. Begole and T. E. Wing.

John F. Hinman, of Battle Creek, then read a paper entitled, "Early Recollections of Eaton County."

Remarks were made by Philo Parsons on the contemplated erection of a statue of Gov. Lewis Cass in the National Capitol Hall of Statuary. Remarks were made by Major Ransom, Judge W. T. Mitchell, B. O. Williams and Hon. Geo. Robertson commending the project.

The following resolution, presented by Judge Mitchell, was adopted:

Resolved, That this society highly commends the project of erecting a statute of Hon. Lewis Cass as a memorial erected by the people of the State to the perpetuation of his fame and the honor of the State, and we fully approve of the appropriation made therefor by the legislature, and we honor Hon. Philo Parsons for his activity in procuring the same.

The hymn, "Silver Sweet," was then sung and the society adjourned till 7 o'clock in the evening.

Wednesday Evening

The President called the society to order according to adjournment. The session was opened by the reading of the 101st Psalm and prayer by Rev. B. Franklin.

A quartette, "Spring Time," was sung by Mrs. Flora Rarrick, Miss Ella Baker, Messrs. Willis Bement and L. A. Baker, Miss Emily Barnard playing the accompaniment.

A memoir of John Mullett was read by John H. Forster, of Williamston.

B. O. Williams stated that Mr. Mullett boarded at his father's house and was sent across Silver Creek one morning while he was getting out from the quarry an immense pair of mill stones, the first that were ever used in Oakland County.

Mr. O. Poppleton arose to make an explanation in regard to an item or statement in Mr. Hinman's paper in regard to the naming of the town of Battle Creek, and read a letter of John Mullett's to Gen. Cass, in regard to the matter, that was published in volume six of Pioneer Collections. Mr. Hinman stated that he related the circumstances just as he received the same from Mr. Mullett many years ago, as near as he could remember them.

A vocal solo, "Let Me Dream Again," was sung by Mrs. Homer Thayer.

A paper on "The Iron Region of Lake Superior," was read by Hon. Peter White, of Marquette.

A solo, "Who Will Buy My Flowers?" was sung by Miss Flora Rarrick.

The story of the "Indian Chief Tonguish," by M. D. Osband, was read by his son, Charles H. Osband.

The evening session was closed with the singing of the hymn, "All Hail, the Power of Jesus' Name."

Thursday Morning

The Society met at 9 o'clock, the President in the chair. Rev. J. S. Valentine opened the exercises with the reading of a portion of Scripture from St. Matthew and prayer. The hymn, "Brightest and Best," was then sung by the audience.

T. E. Wing introduced Mr. E. H. Custer, of Monroe, father of Gen. Custer. Mr. Custer was eighty years old. He expressed his thanks to the society for the courtesy shown to him by the members, and related some of his early experiences in Michigan.

"Reminiscences of Her Early Life in Michigan" was read by Mrs. Richard Dye, of Ionia.

"The Pioneers and Early Ministers of Washtenaw County," by Rev. Lorenzo Davis, was read by Dr. O. C. Comstock.

T. E. Wing stated that he knew that the first church organized in Michigan, outside of Detroit, was in Monroe, instead of in Washtenaw county.

A duet, "Fantastic Waltzes," was rendered by Edna Dayton on the violin and May Sipley on the organ.

An historical paper by E. S. Williams of Flint, entitled "Michigan as it Was Seventy Years Ago, or the Williams Family in Michigan," was read by M. Shoemaker.

On motion of Dr. Comstock the following was adopted:

Resolved, That E. S. Williams, in the presentation of his exceedingly interesting and valuable historical papers to this society, receive our sincere thanks, and that he be requested to further extend it as intimated by him.

The song, "Give Me the Wings of Faith," was sung by Lena Berridge.

The President called for five minute speeches.

T. E. Wing responded, and after stating that he was born in Detroit, related the scene of the last case of capital punishment in Michigan, that occurred in Detroit when Mr. Wing was eleven years of age. J. C. Holmes also made a few remarks about the case.

Mrs. Mary E. Foster, of Ann Arbor, being called upon, made some very eloquent remarks. Ex-Gov. Begole also gave a short talk.

A paper by A. L. Williams of Owosso, relative to the removal of the Capitol from Detroit, was read by Mr. Fralick.

"Pleyel's Hymn" was then sung, and the Society adjourned.

Thursday Afternoon

The society met according to adjournment, the President in the chair. The 23rd Psalm was read, and prayer was offered by Rev. B. Franklin, and "America" was sung by the audience.

A continuation of his "Sketches of the Early Settlement of the Copper Region of Lake Superior," was read by John H. Forster.

The report of the committee on the nomination of officers for 1885 was made as follows:—

President—Henry Fralick.

Recording Secretary—Harriet A. Tenney.

Corresponding Secretary—Geo. H. Greene.

Treasurer—E. Longyear.

Executive Committee—John C. Holmes, Chairman; Albert Miller and F. A. Dewey.

Committee of Historians—Michael Shoemaker, Chairman; Talcott E. Wing, Witter J. Baxter, Dr. O. C. Comstock, M. H. Goodrich, and Mrs. Harriet A. Tenney, Secretary.

Vice Presidents—The same as for 1884.

The report, on motion of Dr. Comstock, was adopted.

A piece of music was then rendered by the Reform School Orchestra.

On motion of J. C. Holmes a vote of thanks was tendered to the orchestra for their fine music.

A memoir of Father Winter and family was read by C. B. Stebbins, of Lansing.

A solo, "Home, Sweet Home," was sung by Miss Ella Baker.

The following telegram was receive from an old pioneer.

DETROIT, MICH., June 17, 1885.

To the Michigan State Pioneer Society:

A veteran of eighty-one years, and fifty-six years a pioneer, sends hearty greeting to his fellows now in the enjoyment of their eleventh reunion. May they yet see many repetitions. Temporary indisposition only prevents his participation and his presence to partake in the exercises of the occasion. God bless and preserve you is the benediction of HENRY RAYMOND.

"Shadowy Reminiscences of 1847; or Farewell to the Old State Capitol at Detroit," by Enos Goodrich, was read by W. J. Baxter.

Five members of the legislature of 1847, Henry Fralick, E. D. Lay, J. Kilbourne, Albert Miller, and H. B. Lathrop, being present, were called to the platform and on motion of W. J. Baxter, three cheers were given to the said members.

"Reminiscences of the Early History of Ridgeway, Lenawee County," by O. Lamb, was read by F. A. Dewey.

Remarks were made on the removal of the Capitol from Detroit to Lansing, by Isaac N. Bush, H. Fralick and O. C. Comstock.

"Blest be the Tie" was sung by the audience, and the society adjourned.

Thursday Evening

The society met according to adjournment, the President, Mr. Dewey, in the chair.

Prayer was offered by Rev. H. M. Joy; he also, by request, sang "Beautiful Hands."

An anthem was then sung by the quartette, Misses Eva Turner and Lizzie Haines, Messrs. C. O. Pratt and E. Esselstyn.

"Detroit, One Hundred Years Ago" was read by Silas Farmer, of Detroit.

Solo and chorus, "The Star Spangled Banner," was rendered by Mrs. R. B. De Viney and audience.

A paper on "The Probate Judges of Lenawee County," by Hon. Norman Geddes of Adrian, was read by Dr. O. C. Comstock.

A song, "What Joy," was rendered by the quartette, Misses Turner and Haines, and Messrs. Pratt and Esselstyn.

"Reminiscences of Hon L. B. Price," by Mrs. Frank Hagerman, his daughter, was read by Mrs. Harriet A. Tenney.

Impromptu speeches being called for Messrs. W. J. Baxter, O. Poppleton, T. E. Wing, J. C. Holmes, Wyllys C. Ransom, Isaac N. Bush, Rev. Alfred Cornell, Jr., J. H. Forster, and others responded. Many amusing anecdotes were related of "Salt Williams."

The following resolutions, offered by Dr. O. C. Comstock, were adopted:

Resolved, That the thanks of this society be tendered to the ladies of Lansing who have decorated the church with such a profusion of beautiful flowers, and for the many courtesies that have made our meetings successful and pleasant.

Resolved, That the music, both vocal and instrumental, has contributed largely to the enjoyment of our meetings, and the secretary is hereby asked to communicate this sentiment to the performers with the thanks of the Michigan State Pioneer Society.

The exercises of the meetings were closed with the singing of "Auld Lang Syne" by the audience, and the benediction by Dr. Wm. H. Haze.

MEMBERSHIP

There are now six hundred and thirty-three names upon the membership book of the society. Since the last annual meeting twelve names have been added to the membership, as follows:—Jay A. Hubbell, Isaac Bush, Robert Hayward, John F. Hinman, Sullivan R. Kelsey, Richard Dye, Mrs. Polly Dye, J. H. Kilbourne, Ebenezer Walker, James L. Thorn, Mrs. N. S. King, and Joseph Busby.

DONATIONS

Some very valuable donations have been made to the society during the past year. They are fully entered upon the record book. The list of these donations is as follows:

BUFFALO HISTORICAL SOCIETY:
Annual Report of Managers for 1886.

CHICAGO HISTORICAL SOCIETY:
Three Pamphlets: Samuel DeChamplain. Constitution and By-Laws of Chicago Historical Society. In Memoriam: John S. Wright.

WM. H. CROSS, Centreville:
Two copies "Centreville Times," Jan. 2, 1886, containing Pioneer Articles and Chronology of 1885.

CHARLES W. DARLING, Utica, N. Y.:
One Pamphlet: Anthropophagy, Historic and Pre-historic.

D. W. C. EDGERTON, Chillicothe, Mo.:
One copy "Kansas City Sunday Journal," Dec. 27, 1885, containing article on Unclaimed Estates in England.

SILAS FARMER, Detroit:
One copy "Magazine of Western History," Vol. III, No. 3, containing article by Silas Farmer, "Detroit During Revolutionary Days."

J. C. HOLMES, Detroit:
One copy "Lynn Transcript," Oct. 16, 1885, containing account of Seventy-third Anniversary of Lynn Light Infantry. Program of Exercise at Memorial Presbyterian Church, Feb. 20, 1883. One Pamphlet: Memorial to Rev. James Ballard. One pamphlet: Annual Report of Trustees of Elmwood Cemetery.

O. A. Jenison, Lansing:
First issue of State Republican, Jan. 1, 1886. Large poster of Twentieth Annual Fair of Michigan Agricultural Society, 1885. Metal sign, taken from the office of "N. Osborne & Co.," contractors for building Michigan State Capitol.

Kansas State Historical Society:
Two copies "Daily Commonwealth," Topeka, Kansas, Jan. 30, 1886, containing account of Celebration of Twenty-fifth Anniversary of Admission in the Union, and the annual meeting of Kansas Historical Society.

A. C. McClurg & Co., Chicago:
Memoir of Edwin Channing Larned.

Philadelphia Library Co.:
Bulletin for 1886.

C. D. Randall, Coldwater:
One copy Coldwater Semi-weekly Republican, Sept. 29, 1885, containing account of Dedication of State School Chapel; Memorial of Judge Upson, and Notice of Mr. Randall's Appointment to Membership in "Society of Agricultural Colonies and Industrial Asylums of Poland." One copy ditto, Feb. 19, 1886, containing Letter from Hon. E. B. Pond. One copy ditto, June 1, 1886, containing History of Coldwater.

F. H. Revell, Chicago:
Five copies "American Antiquarian," Vol. VII., Nos. 5 and 6; Vol. VIII., Nos. 1, 2 and 3.

Col. M. Shoemaker, Jackson:
Detroit Free Press, Dec. 7, containing account of Fiftieth Anniversary of Mr. and Mrs. John Burt's Wedding. Two copies of Detroit Gazette, July 25, 1817.

Mrs. Mary C. Spencer, Lansing:
One Pamphlet: Memorial Sermon for Rev. John A. Wilson, D. D.

C. B. Stebbins, Lansing:
One copy of "The Beacon," Aug. 27, 1885.

Unknown:
One pamphlet Annual Report of Governor of North Western Branch of National Home for Disabled Volunteers, 1885. Three copies "Detroit Free Press," Sept. 20, 1885, containing account of its Fiftieth Anniversary. One copy "Coldwater Republican," July 20, 1879, containing History of Coldwater Journalism. One copy "Berrien County Journal," July 11, 1885, containing Reminiscences of Mr. Levi Godfrey. One copy "Grand Rapids Morning Telegram," Jan. 19, 1886, containing Notice of Meeting of Michigan State Pioneer Society in connection with Legislative Reunion, 1886. Catalogue of Historical and Biographical Works of Mr. Henry Stevens, of Vermont.

United States Department of the Interior, Washington:
House and Senate Journal, Second Session, Forty-eighth Congress, 1884-85, 2 vols.

George H. White, Grand Rapids:
Memorial of Grand Rapids Valley.

Abel Whitney, Adrian:
One pamphlet, Surnames and Coats of Arms of the Williamses. History and Biographical Record of Lenawee county, Michigan, 2 vols. Genealogy of the Whitney Family of Connecticut, 3 vols. Incidents of Early Settlements of Bean Creek Valley, Michigan.

A larger number of valuable manuscript historical papers than usual have been collected by the society, and will soon be published in volumes eight and nine.

This society has overcome many obstacles since its organization, and it would seem that a few more years of the systematic, persevering work commenced by the executive committee and the committe of historians will give the State Pioneer Society of Michigan a recognition equal to that of any other Historical Society in the United States.

We do not hesitate to declare it a great honor to be identified in promoting the welfare of such a society.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

HARRIET A. TENNEY,
Recording Secretary.

REPORT OF THE CORRESPONDING SECRETARY

LANSING, MICH., June 8, 1886.

To the Officers and Members of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:

The time has again arrived when, according to custom, it becomes my duty to make a report of the correspondence, which, though not large, is gradually increasing from year to year as our society becomes more widely known. The letters and communications received during the year are herewith submitted, all filed in the order of their reception; on the back of each is the name and postoffice address of the writer, also the date it was answered, if an answer was necessary.

At the close of our last annual meeting I forwarded a copy of the *Lansing Republican* containing the proceedings of the meeting to all the officers of the society, including the Vice Presidents; and a little later I sent a postal card to each of the Vice Presidents notifying them of their election and their duties, and again about a month before this meeting I sent them a further notice requesting them to furnish a memorial report for their county of all pioneers who had died during the year; quite a number have sent such a report, which will be presented at the proper time, and others no doubt are here to make their reports in person.

Notices of this meeting were promptly forwarded to each member.

Death has claimed a greater number of our members within the past year than in any previous year. Those who have passed away, so far as I have been able to ascertain, are nineteen in number, and are as follows:—

Chas. A. Lull, Bridgeport, died July 11, 1885.

Robert Hilton, Grand Rapids, died July 14, 1885, at Grand Rapids.

Theodore Romeyn, Detroit, died July 22, 1885, at Detroit.

Charles Upson, Coldwater, died September 6, 1885,

George W. Fish, Flint, died September 19, 1885.

Jacob H. Hicks, Ann Arbor, died September 21, 1885, at Jackson.

Henry H. North, Delhi, died October 30, 1885, at Delhi.

Stephen Hill, Watertown, died November 5, 1885, Watertown.

A. L. Williams, Owosso, died January 5, 1886.

Richard Dye, Ionia, died January 28, 1886, at Ionia.

E. H. Thompson, Flint, died February 2, 1886.

George C. Bates, Leadville, Col., died February 11, 1886, at Denver.

Alonzo C. Davis, Detroit, died February 20, 1886, at Detroit.

Henry Pennoyer, Nunica, died April 25, 1886.

Eugene Laible, Detroit, died April 27, 1886, at Detroit.

Joseph Gonior, Monroe, died May 5, 1886, at Monroe.

Mrs. Fanny L. Avery, Grand Rapids, died May 8, 1886, at Grand Rapids.

William Besley, St. Johns, died May 10, 1886.

Philo H. Budlong, Harbor Springs, died May 26, 1886, at Harbor Springs.

Also deaths of the following named members which have not been mentioned in my former reports, have come to my notice within the past year:

Henry Packer, Jonesville, died November 19, 1881, at Jonesville.

W. N. Wilder, Marshall, died August 14, 1882, at Cedar Rapids, Iowa.

Joseph Wood, St. Johns, died June 3, 1883, at St. Johns.

George C. Monroe, Jonesville, died August 16, 1883, at St. Johns.

The correspondence of the last year shows a growing interest in the society throughout the State; those who have known little of us until quite recently are now doing all they can, apparently, to make up lost time. To verify this fact permit me to make the following quotations from among many that might be made. Hon. Enos Goodrich, of Washington, Tuscola county, who furnished us a valuable paper at our last annual meeting, in a recent letter, says: "I have been looking over Vols. II. and III. of the Pioneer Collections, and I am forcibly impressed with the idea that I should have been acting with your organization long ago, and that I have lost much precious time that can never be recalled."

Rev. Frank A O'Brien, of Kalamazoo, who will read a paper here this evening, says: "The object of your society is very praiseworthy. I am in love with it. I regret that I have not more time at my disposal to rumage the archives of our old churches for their hidden treasures."

These are gratifying and cheering words to those who have been struggling for these twelve long years to make the society what it now is.

Let us continue in the course we have marked out, and many others will fall into line.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

GEORGE H. GREENE,
Corresponding Secretary.

REPORT OF THE TREASURER

Lansing, Mich., June 8, 1886.

To the State Pioneer Society of Michigan:

Your Treasurer submits the following report:

E. Longyear, Treasurer, in account with the Society from June 15, 1885 to June 7, 1886.

RESOURCES

To balance on hand June 15, 1885		$199 42
Receipts for membership fees	$29 00	
Pioneer Collections, Vols. 1 and 2	10 50	
Old Folks' Song Book	2 15	
from appropriation, General Fund, of 1884	500 00	
Publication Fund, of 1883	1,000 00	
1884	1,000 00	
Total		$2,542 06
		$2,741 48

DISBURSEMENTS.

Paid from General Fund:		
for expenses Executive Committee	$95 50	
Annual Meeting, 1885	79 30	
Postage	27 50	
Filing and Recording Papers	24 99	
		$227 29
Paid from Publication Fund:		
for expenses Committee of Historians	464 10	
translating and copying	651 83	
State Printers	432 34	
Printing paper	292 32	
Heliotypes	37 20	
Reading proof on Vol. 7	100 00	
		$1,977 79
Total disbursements		$2,205 08
Balance on hand June 7, 1886		536 40
		$2,741 48

All of which is respectfully submitted.

E. LONGYEAR,
Treasurer.

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE OF HISTORIANS

LANSING, MICH., June 8, 1886.

To the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society:

The Committee of Historians would respectfully report that the proceedings of the committee in the past year have been productive of results of great interest. Volume 6 of Pioneer Collections which was in the hands of the State Printers at the time of our last annual meeting, was completed by them in July, and was then ready for delivery to members of the society and other purchasers. It contains 571 pages. The material for Volume 7 was given to the printers immediately after the receipt of Volume 6, and it affords us great satisfaction to be able at this annual meeting to place it in the hands of those who feel an interest in the work of the society. There are in this volume 709 pages.

Volume 6 contains the proceedings of the annual meeting of 1883, many valuable papers read at that meeting, and others collected by the committees, also the proceedings of county societies. One hundred and sixty-six pages are devoted to papers of a general nature, and 405 to history of counties, papers of a local interest, and memorial reports.

In Volume 7 will be found the proceedings of the annual meeting of 1884, and other matter of historical importance relating to the general history of the State, occupying 151 pages, papers relating to the Upper Peninsula covering 76 pages, also most interesting sketches of the early history of Saginaw Valley by Judge Albert Miller, Ephraim S. Williams, and others; these occupy 78 pages. The remaining space is taken up with the reports of counties, memorial reports, the index of names, general index, and index of volumes one to six inclusive.

By the liberal provisions of the law, the seven volumes now published, or the nine volumes that will be ready for delivery by the first of January next, can be purchased for seventy-five cents per volume. Each volume contains between six and seven hundred pages, and the price at which they can be purchased is but a small part of the actual cost of each volume. These books are also furnished free of cost to every public library in the State, making application for them. They will be found to be a necessity in every library claiming to have on its shelves an authentic history of the State of Michigan.

Volume 7 will be of particular service and value to the members of the society, and all others having full sets of "Pioneer Collections," as it has a general index to volumes one to six inclusive. The committee has made, through the kindness of Messrs. Thorp & Godfrey, the State Printers, arrangements for the publication of Volumes 8 and 9, so that the same shall be completed and ready for delivery on or before the first day of January, 1887.

In obtaining original material relating to the history of the State from its first settlement and occupation by the French, and while under the government of France and Great Britain, down to and including the territorial government to the admission of Michigan as one of the States of the union, the committee have been remarkably successful. Members of the committee obtained temporary possession of the papers and documents of the old State Historical Society which had an organization in Detroit many years since.

Most of these manuscripts are of inestimable value as giving original matter in connection with all these periods, and without which a correct history of the times could not be written, or would be wanting in the details of most important transactions. Volumes 8 and 9 will be of especial interest to every citizen of Michigan, as they will be composed, to a very considerable extent, of matter copied from these papers. This work is being continued, and the committee will endeavor to secure all the material that is of greatest value in this collection.

The committee is now engaged in a work, the importance of which cannot be over estimated. At a meeting of the joint committees of the Executive Committee and Committee of Historians, held May 18, the following resolution was adopted:

Resolved, That the Committee of Historians be, and it is hereby authorized to take such measures, and employ such persons as it may find necessary, to procure original matter connected with the history of Michigan, either in Canada, Wisconsin, or elsewhere; the cost of the same not to exceed one thousand dollars.

We know that both in Ottawa, Canada, and Madison, Wisconsin, there are papers of the greatest importance relating to the early history of Michigan, and absolutely necessary for a correct knowledge of many of the most important transactions while under French and British dominion. Copies of these documents the committee has already taken steps to procure, and will be able at the next annual meeting to report more particularly the result of its labors in this direction.

The gratuitous work that the Society has accomplished, and is accomplishing, has resulted, and will result, in securing original material relating to the settlement and history of the State that would, to a great extent, have been lost beyond recall but for its methods of procuring from the several counties, both of earlier or later settlement, the personal narratives of the first to make settlements, or to become residents. This has been done, is being done, and will continue to be done, in addition to procuring copies of all authentic documents extant, whether in Canada, Wisconsin, or our own State.

This work has become so important, and is being so thoroughly done, that the committee feel confident that the legislature of the State will make appropriations that will enable the society to continue its labors in a manner commensurate with the importance of the work in which it is engaged.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

MICHAEL SHOEMAKER,
Chairman

REPORT OF THE MEMORIAL COMMITTEE

ALLEGAN COUNTY

BY DONALD C. HENDERSON

James W. Kent, died January 26, 1885, aged 70 years.
Zenas L. Griswold, died January 29, 1885, aged 70 years.
Mrs. Julia A. Montieth, died February 2, 1885, aged 77 years.
John F. Lasher, died February 6, 1885, aged 53 years.
Mrs. Sally Drew, died June 15, 1885, aged 85 years.
Mrs. Catharine A. Town, died June 15, 1885, aged 79 years.
Orsamus Eaton, died August 27, 1885, aged 75 years.
Benjamin Plummer, died August 28, 1885, aged 84 years.
Alford Whitcomb, died September 15, 1885, aged 77 years.
Mrs. Esther Atkins, died November 18, 1885, aged 66 years.
Mrs. Almira Proutey, died January 18, 1886, aged 75 years.

BENJAMIN PLUMMER

Benjamin Plummer, one of the pioneers of Allegan county, who came to Saugatuck fifty-two years ago, died at Plummerville, in Ganges, August 28, aged eighty-four years. A wife and a number of children survive this venerable man, whose residence in our county is coincident with its first settlement by the white man.

A funeral discourse in memory of the deceased was delivered by Rev. Mr. Johnson, of South Haven, in the presence of a large assemblage of mourning friends, who were cognizant for years of the many benevolent deeds of this good man. His pall bearers were selected from his fellow pioneers, who universally regret Mr. Plummer's death.

BERRIEN COUNTY

BY ALEXANDER B. LEEDS

Mrs. Mary Mack, died June 6, 1885, Berrien, aged 85 years.

Orrin D. Snow, died June 8, 1885, Berrien, aged 83 years.

Dr. M. Holland, died June 11, 1885, St. Joseph, aged 70 years.

Mrs. O. Eldred, died June 20, 1885, Benton, aged 70 years.

William Zillman, died June 29, 1885, Benton, aged 63 years.

James Hannah, died August 4, 1885, Coloma, aged 66 years.

——— Andrews, died August 8, 1885, Pipestone, aged 70 years.

George H. Jerome, died August 15, 1885, Niles, aged 66 years.

Ralph Grow, died August 20, 1885, Benton Harbor, aged 71 years.

A. C. Carmichael, died August —, 1885, Benton Harbor, aged 62 years.

Elijah H. Beardsley, died September 8, 1885, Buchanan, aged 78 years.

Sarah A. Morris, died September 7, 1885, Buchanan, aged 66 years.

William Ferguson, died September 10, 1885, Benton Harbor, aged 80 years.

Reuben Richardson, died September 26, 1885, Berrien Springs, aged 60 years.

John Storick, died October 7, 1885, Berrien Springs, aged 87 years.

Jane Lewen, died October 21, 1885, New Troy, aged 73 years.

Adna Hinman, died October 25, 1885, Bridgman, aged 80 years.

James A. Hess, died October 25, 1885, Berrien Springs, aged 65 years.

John A. Van Riper, died October 25, 1885, Buchanan, aged 75 years.

Andrew C. Day, died November 1, 1885, Buchanan, aged 80 years.

Alvin Chapman, died November 6, 1885, Niles, aged 82 years.

Charles Cowles, died November 8, 1885, Buchanan, aged 81 years.

Isabella Mayhew, died November 9, 1885, Sodus, aged 80 years.

Eliza Babcock, died November 27, 1885, Niles, aged 62 years.

Harriet Fuller, died December 1, 1885, Niles, aged 71 years.

Betsy Nye, died December 13, 1885, New Troy, aged 73 years.

William Cochran, died January 7, 1886, Niles, aged 83 years.

H. H. Hubbard, died January 12, 1886, Bainbridge, aged 72 years.

Thomas Bayes, died January 17, 1886, Stevensville, aged 87 years.

Charles T. Hamlin, died January 17, 1886, Benton Harbor, aged 63 years.
Elias Devoe, died January 30, 1886, Lincoln, aged 63 years.
Jane Van Hoosen, died February 5, 1886, Coloma, aged 81 years.
Philo Sanford, died February 12, 1886, Niles, aged 88 years.
Lucy Fitzgerald, died February 13, 1886, Niles, aged 72 years.
David B. Crane, died February 20, 1886, St. Joseph, aged 63 years.
Barnet Rynearson, died February 20, 1886, St. Joseph, aged 89 years.
William Garrison, died February 23, 1886, Sodus, aged 75 years.
Newton K. Hyde, died March 10, 1886, Royalton, aged 79 years.
Mary A. Tabor, died March 4, 1886, Three Oaks, aged 60 years.
Henry Rounds, died March 13, 1886, Niles, aged 90 years.
Henry Rush, died March 17, 1886, Berrien Springs, aged 86 years.
Phoebe Staton, died March 26, 1886, Niles, aged 76 years.
Caleb Rockey, died March 31, 1886, Royalton, aged 83 years.
Cornelius Stanley, died April 1, 1886, Coloma, aged 75 years.
Elizabeth Henney, died April 4, 1886, Berrien Springs, aged 66 years.
Mary Murphy, died April 2, 1886, Berrien, aged 77 years.
Mary Olives, died April 7, 1886, Buchanan, aged 86 years.
Mrs. Rufus Tuttle, died April 9, 1886, Coloma, aged 80 years.
Menton F. Allen, died April 10, 1886, Buchanan, aged 76 years.
Stephen Busbee, died April 12, 1886, Benton Harbor, aged 63 years.
James Barnum, died April 17, 1886, Niles, aged 65 years.
Mrs. Zimmerlee, died April 26, 1886, Lake, aged 78 years.
Nancy Reddick, died April 27, 1886, Niles, aged 83 years.
Thomas C. Bradley, died May 4, 1886, Three Oaks, aged 67 years.
James Hastings, died May 8, 1886, Berrien Springs, aged 83 years.
Nutter M. Holston, died May 11, 1886, Niles, aged 71 years.
A. R. Gould, died May 19, 1886, St. Joseph, aged 79 years.
Mrs. George H. Fogle, died May 24, 1886, Royalton, aged 70 years.

BRANCH COUNTY

BY C. D. RANDALL

ROLAND ROOT

The funeral of the late Hon. Roland Root was attended yesterday at his late residence by a large number of family friends, pioneers, members of the G. A. R., and his old Battery comrades. All the members of his own family, including his seven grandchildren, were present, except Captain S. A. Johnson, who was detained in Washington, and Mr. and Mrs. W. S. Fielding, who are in California. Rev. W. T. Lowrey officiated, using the beautiful burial service of the Episcopal Church and delivering some very appropriate remarks. The music of the male quartet was touchingly effective. The numerous floral offerings of kind friends were exceedingly beautiful, A sheaf of wheat adorned the casket which was borne by Albert Chandler, Harvey Warner, L. D. Halstead, Hon. C. D. Randall, Edwin R. Clarke, Hon. Charles Upson, David B. Purinton and William S. Gilbert. The one old friend and neighbor now rests in one of the loveliest spots in Oak Grove, overlooking the place where he first located fifty years ago. We append a short sketch of his life:

Mr. Root was born in Onondago county, N. Y., on Christmas day, 1813, and died at his residence in this city, August 11, 1885. To the pain and suffering of a long illness was added, for many months, the calamity of total blindness, all of which he endured with touching patience and resignation. Mr. Root's education was obtained by attending the winter terms of a district school until he was sixteen years of age. By working on a farm, teaching school, and a fishing voyage to the banks of New Foundland, he managed in two years afterward to save money enough to purchase eighty acres of wild land in Michigan. Starting for the west he was pursuaded by his brother, Hon. J. M. Root, (then a successful lawyer and later one of the little band of original Abolitionists in Congress) to accept a position as clerk for Judge Baker, a wealthy merchant of Norwalk, Ohio. He remained there for two or three years, during which time his employer bought the property now owned by the Kerr Bros., and also many acres of land in what was then known as Masonville. The young clerk was sent here to examine the property and report upon its adaptability either for milling purposes or for general merchandising. He made the trip in four weeks on horseback, and his report was a favorable one, he was entrusted with $1,600 worth of goods—a large stock in those days—with which to open a store. This he did in the early fall of 1835, putting up a building 16x26 feet in size near where the Kerr mill now stands. After a year there he removed to a better location near Mr. Nettleton's present place of business, and soon found himself able to start in trade upon his own account. Merchandising in pioneer days was very hazardus. Goods were sold on credit, farm produce from the whites and furs from the Indians taken in payment, and these in turn sold to pay the debts of the merchant. But Mr. Root was careful, prudent and energetic and was for a long time the leading merchant of Branch county.

After some years he turned his attention to flour milling, and built and successfully operated one of the largest mills in the State. This in the end proved disastrous. His mill being totally destroyed by fire, with characteristic energy, he built another on a larger scale. The drain upon his capital consequent upon this, the opening of railroads to the north and south of his location, impairing his source of supplies, and the locking up of his entire flour product one winter, owing to the early freezing of the Erie Canal, financially ruined him. He never recovered his losses pecuniarily, but in spite of these he gave a good education and all reasonable advantages to a large family of children. In 1849 he represented this county in the legislature, was re-elected in 1850, and has since been chosen many times by his fellow citizens of this city and county for public positions of honor and responsibility.

At the first call of President Lincoln for troops in 1861, Mr. Root—then forty-seven years of age—enlisted as a private in the Coldwater Light Artillery—afterward known as the Loomis Battery—was commissioned 2d lieutenant May 28, 1861, and 1st lieutenant October 6, of the same year. Exposure and hardship brought on rheumatism and other diseases (which finally caused his death) and he reluctantly resigned, November 17, 1862.

He married Harriet Chapin, of Canandaigua, New York, May 9, 1837. Losing his first wife and their only child he married Irene Alden, of Coldwater, January 14, 1841. His wife and eight children survive him.

The above details outline a hard-working, eventful life. It is not necessary to dwell upon or to write an extended analysis of his character. The people of this section of the State, in which he has lived and borne his part in public and in private life, in so many different capacities, for half a century, knew him well. A man of decided opinions always freely expressed, and energetically acted upon, it goes without saying that he sometimes aroused and encountered bitter antagonism. But there was no concealment in his nature. His opposition to men, or measures, was of the open, aboveboard kind which manly men respect, and doubtless all feelings of unkindness towards him have been long since forgotten. He harbored none such. Having made his peace with God, he died with only loving, charitable thoughts toward his fellow men. A faithful friend, his pioneer associates will recollect how freely in the old days he gave of what he had to those who had not; and there are many younger in years, who will remember his generous aid and sympathy in times of necessity and trouble. That he was a good citizen the public trusts repeatedly conferred upon him prove. That he was a good soldier the army records show. That he had the respect and love of his comrades let the tender devotion with which they bore him, blind and helpless, to their reunions testify.

Roland Root lived an honest, honorable life. He did his duty to his friends, his neighbors, his family, and his country.—Coldwater *Republican*, Aug. 14, 1885.

HON. CHARLES UPSON

Early Saturday evening, September 5, 1885, this community was startled by the sudden and unexpected announcement that Judge Upson was dead. The news spread quickly and rested like a nightmare over the city, causing many sad and heavy hearts. He was a man who seldom complained, but for a week or more had been indisposed, and was so ill on Monday that a physician was called, but on Tuesday he was better and around as usual. His condition, however, gave his family anxiety. His brother Edwin and wife from Milwaukee had been visiting with him, and Mr. Upson had taken great pleasure in their company. They returned last week Wednesday. After his dinner on Saturday he lay down on a couch, which was an unusual thing for him to do, and his wife asked him if he was sick. He replied that he felt tired and his back pained him. After a short time he went to his office and transacted business at the bank, and in the afternoon went to the postoffice. Those who met him remember now that he was looking pale and was unusually quiet. He and his wife expected to spend the evening with their daughter, Mrs. Morris G. Clarke, and after taking tea with the family he went into the sitting-room and took a seat near the register as if to warm himself. Soon after he lay down upon the couch. Seeing him lie there his wife asked him if he thought he would be able to go out. He said he would be up after a while, and as she wanted to call on Mrs. Allen she better do so, and go from there with her daughter, Mrs. Pratt, to Mrs. Clarke's. Soon after she left he went out to the street and bought a melon of Mr. Harpham. Returning with it to the dinning-room he asked the girl for some sherry wine, saying he felt badly. Not finding it he returned to the sitting-room, and while standing near the register, throwing his arms and shoulders back as if to expand his chest, he fell backwards and expired. His wife had barely time to reach Mr. Pratt's when she was summoned by telephone to come home. Charles Champion and Will Upham, nephews of Mr. Upson, who were upstairs, were summoned, and Mrs. Scovill and Mrs. Hale, near neighbors, were called, Mrs. Scovill arriving in time to see him gasp twice, when all was over. An autospy was held the following day by Drs. Wurtz, Powers, and Clizbe, which revealed the rupture of a large vein within the pericardium or heart sac. The pericardium was found full to distension with blood which had coagulated; the other organs of the body were all sound. The funeral services were held at the Episcopal church on

Tuesday afternoon after a short service at the home, Mrs. Upson's aged mother, who was a member of the family, being unable to go to the church; and notwithstanding the unpleasant weather a large concourse assembled to pay their last tribute of respect to their neighbor and friend.

Mr. Upson's brother, of Milwaukee, who had just returned home from a delightful visit with his brother, was present, and a nephew and his wife from Cincinnati. The members of the Bar Association, the Mayor and Common Council, the School Board and the teachers in the schools attended the funeral in a body, the members of the Bar wearing badges of mourning. The following gentlemen from abroad were also present: Judge R. R. Pealer, of Three Rivers; Hon. Witter J. Baxter, of Jonesville; Hon. Cyrus G. Luce, of Gilead; Congressman O'Donnell, of Jackson; and ex-Judge Shipman and ex-Congressman McGowan, of Washington, D. C. Many letters and telegrams of sympathy and condolence were received, among them a telegram from Gov. Alger and a letter from Hon. C. V. R. Pond, regretting their inability to be present at the funeral. The floral offerings were very beautiful and appropriate. A large cross of roses and lilies stood at the head and a sheaf of wheat upon the casket. He was dressed in black, and his features was so natural and lifelike that he seemed to be asleep. The grave was lined with arbor-vitae, and the mound of earth converted into a pyramid of plants and flowers. After the burial service the quartette sang the beautiful chant "Abide with me," and God's benediction was pronounced over a good and useful life. Rev. Herbert J. Cook was assisted in the ceremonies by Rev. H. P. Colin, and the male quartette sang several beautiful selections.

After the singing of the 443d hymn by the male quartette, the rector delivered the following address, closing with expressions of condolence and sympathy, which were spoken without notes:

When the Apostle answers his own question: "What is your life?" "It is even a vapor that appeareth for a little time and then vanishes away," he utters a profound truth. But it is truth spoken in poetic figure. The query is still unanswered, and the problem unsolved. We catch a glimpse of some beautiful landscape, —perhaps a cloud-shadowed valley where a noble river sweeps past overhanging mountains on to the open sea. Definition is lost in the rising mists, and the sunlit peaks appearing to the imagination, the riddle is forgotton. We have caught an idea, however,—appearing for a little time, then vanishing away. Is not this the epitaph of earth's silent and sleeping millions? It is the same for monarchs and for peasants; for the wise and the ignorant; for the old man who carries his burden until it rolls off at the hundredth mile-post, and for the infant who died yesterday. The child's life we know was short, and the lament of the patriarch is pitched in a minor key—"Few and evil have been the days of the years of my life."

And yet, dear friends, we forget,—strange beings that we are,—we forget about this. We build houses and call the lands after our own names. Though consciously mortal, we act as if we were to stay here forever. It is the paradox of human life—our familiarity with death and our disposition to ignore it. See that splendid piece of machinery. It seems to be perfect. It obeys the master's touch like a thing of life. But a slight disturbance of parts, the loosening of a single screw, will stop its working and render it for a time simply worthless. The chronometer in your hand will mark the seconds with almost the sun's exactness, but a broken wheel or a bit of dirt will make it incorrect or absolutely of no use or value. Infinitely more wonderful are the countless living organisms of the earth, and especially the human body. Here is mechanism that works in silence and with perfect exactness. No human eye, though itself a marvel, has yet discovered the secret springs by which it moves. No philosopher has yet fathomed the mystery of life, or satisfactorily answered the apostle's question. We are familiar with the attempts at scientific definition, while the definitions themselves need to be defined. But the old facts thrust themselves upon us, and philosophy has no word of comfort for breaking hearts. Science is dumb by the open grave. "Appearing for a little time then vanishing away," is all the answer that comes from this source. It is only when we turn to revelation, and the beginning and end of life, that we get a clear and definite response to what we most wish to know. The poetic question and answer referred to is not the Bible's last word for us. Immortality and eternal life in the Son of God is the glorious reply that falls soothingly upon faith's listening ear. The dust may and must return unto the dust, but the spirit returns to God who gave it. The curious mechanism of the body may crumble into fragments, piece by piece, during the slow process of years—always slow to the invalid, who is hardly ever permitted to forget the presence of pain; or the breaking down may be sudden, all in an instant, and from an unexpected cause. And so to us life appears a vapor when we allow ourselves to think seriously, while in reality our true life is more enduring and changeless than adamant. The life that is "hid with Christ in God" is forever safe, and no warning of slow disease lifting up the pale finger of admonition, and no shock or alarm of sudden dissolution can ever reach it, for tempest cannot shake, and winds cannot move the eternal Rock of Ages.

Though we all do fade as a leaf, He is "the same yesterday, to-day, and forever," and He is able to keep what we have given into His care. The creature may fail, but the Creator endures. Our earthly house of this tabernacle may be dissolved, but ours is the fault if we have not the title to an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens, whose maker and builder is God.

These thoughts of the slender hold we have upon this earthly life have been suggested by the sudden and common bereavement that brings us all here to-day as mourners. A most unexpected death has closed a life of singular private virtues and of eminent public services. It seems fitting, though there is little need that some one should voice the general sorrow and give expression to the universal esteem, on such an occasion. Allow me, then, to speak briefly of public life in general, and then of the distinguished services of our friend and neighbor.

The public service, dear friends, is so much involved with party spirit and other perhaps necessary evils, that we are apt to overlook its absolute necessity and great usefulness. As a rule your public servant is never thanked. He is criticized, maligned, and in various ways ill-treated, but thanked, never. The spoils idea has so corrupted men that even the well-disposed seem to regard pecuniary considerations and public attention sufficient reward for hard and faithful work. But the machinery of government must go on, and the future of the country is in the hands of its public servants, and their labors claim more general recognition than is usually accorded them. Of what use were wars for the preservation of government if there were no able and patriotic statesmen to represent that government and to act for the people? Much has been said in eulogy of our army and navy in the history of our country; and too much cannot be said for their loyalty and patriotism. But we should not forget the civil officers of those troublous times, and what they did to help gain the victory and to secure all that was won on land and sea in many hard-fought battles.

Charles Upson was a member of congress in the trying years from 1863 to 1869. It is alike honorable to him and to this community that he was twice re-elected. I see here many who were active in our country's cause during the critical years of that eventful period. Many of you could bear testimony to the patriotic spirit, the high and unswerving integrity of our fellow-townsman in those three successive congressional terms. There, as elsewhere, he had clear and decided views of right and wrong, and he had the firmness of character to put his principles to the test of action.

It was so in the legislative halls of our own State, on the bench, in his professional career, and in many places of public trust. If we could always have such men in public places there would be less cause for anxiety and more for the highest and best hopes for the nation and society in general than now appears to be the case. It is for us, friends and neighbors, to praise the praiseworthy, and, while we mourn our irrevocable loss, to honor the memory of him to whom all honor is due.

It is no exaggeration to say that the legal profession of this county and State has lost one of its brightest ornaments, or that our city has been bereaved of her most widely-known citizen. He had filled so many positions and so well that he brought honor and reputation to the community which he represented.

How much he will be missed from our streets and our social life is beyond my power to tell. Of good citizens no place can have too many; of eminent citizens every place has too few. We need them for their counsel and help. We need them for their example. The young need them for counsel and assistance; the weak, the aged, as well as others more favored, need them to look up to and to lean upon. They are truly the pillars of the social fabric, and happy is that society which has many of them. But now, in the providence of God, we are deprived of just such a counselor, neighbor, friend; and we may well "weep with those who weep," as being ourselves also afflicted.

Judge Upson was a man of books, and he had a pure literary taste. The best authors were his constant companions, his unfailing source of pleasure. He was widely read in the Holy Scriptures and his religious ideas were clear and positive. He delighted in the plays of Shakespeare, as noble minds have ever done, while the study of history was the favorite diversion of his life. His influence in the province of letters in connection with our schools and public library was very marked and wholesome, and his example is one that our young men will do wisely to emulate.

He was a frequent attendant upon the services of the church, though his belief, on some points, differed from ours. All the principles of integrity, kindness, true manhood and brotherly love which the Scriptures teach seem to have been the very warp and woof of his character.

In his own home he was most tender and loving, always thoughtful for the wants of others rather than his own, and ready to minister to them. I shall not, however, trench upon those hallowed associations, farther than to say that their remembrance will do much to soften the bitterness of bereavement as the days go by and the good works of the dead will most surely follow him.

My dear friends and neighbors, I commend to your thoughts the lessons of a useful and honorable life. If there were faults in our common friend—and what life is without faults?—they are covered with the mantle of christian charity. But the life was singularly free from blemishes, and its whole impression upon an individual or the entire community was the very opposite. His thorough manhood and his many virtues call upon us both to honor his memory and to emulate the excellence of his character.

Nor should we forget the admonition of his sudden departure. Like him we inhabit frail bodies, and we cannot tell the day nor the hour when our summons shall come. Be it ours so to live the life of each to-day that we may be ready for each to-morrow as it comes. Be it ours to seek Divine help for the daily struggle, to pray ever to be led on by the kindly light of the holy Son of God, that death can never surprise us whenever it may come.

"Watch ye, therefore: for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at the cock crowing, or in the morning: Lest coming suddenly He find you sleeping. And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch."

Charles Upson was born at Southington, Conn., March 19, 1821. He received a common school education until his thirteenth year, when he attended a select school taught by Hon. Jesse Olney. For two subsequent winters he attended the academy in his native town. He then taught for seven winters, during two of which and also one summer he was in charge of the union school at Farmington, Conn. In the summer of 1842 he attended the higher academical course at Meriden, Conn. During this interval of seven years his summers, with the above exceptions, were occupied in assisting his father on his farm. In the spring of 1844 he commenced the study of law under Judge Lowery, of Southington. In the fall he entered Yale College Law School, continuing there one year. In the fall of 1845 he removed to Michigan, and taught in the village of Constantine, St. Joseph County, the following winter. Having continued his law studies, in the summer of 1846 he went to the village of Centerville and entered the law office of Gurney & Hammond. He taught the village school the next winter. In January, 1847, he was appointed deputy clerk of St. Joseph county. In the spring, after an examination before the Supreme Court at Kalamazoo, he was admitted to the bar. He served two years as deputy clerk, being at the same time engaged in the practice of law. Having been elected county clerk in 1848, he served in that capacity for two years. In 1852 he was elected prosecuting attorney and held that office until November, 1854, when he was elected State senator. In the summer of 1856 he removed to Coldwater for the practice of his profession. In 1857 he was appointed one of the board of railroad commissioners, serving four years. In 1860 he was elected attorney general of the State. In 1862 he was elected representative in congress and was re-elected in 1864 and 1866. In the spring of 1869 he was elected judge of the Fifteenth Circuit, which office he held until his resignation December 31, 1872. In 1871 he was appointed by Gov. Baldwin one of the two commissioners to examine the compilation of the laws made that year. In 1873 he was appointed by Gov. Bagley one of the eighteen commissioners to revise the State constitution and report amendments thereto. In 1876 he was tendered the position of commissioner of Indian affairs by the late Senator Chandler, the secretary of the interior, but declined the appointment. In 1880 he was elected State senator from the Tenth District, consisting of Branch and St. Joseph counties. Later he was nominated by the republicans for Supreme Court judge and was defeated by a very small majority. He was twice mayor of our city, had been alderman, member of the Library Board, and at the time of his death was a member of the Board of Education.

In 1850 he was married in Leroy, N. Y., to Miss Sophia Upham, who survives him, together with three children—A. S. Upson, Mrs. J. F. Pratt and Mrs. M. G. Clarke—all residing here.—Coldwater *Courier,* Sept. 12, 1885.

CLINTON COUNTY

BY S. S. WALKER

Heman Thomas, of Eagle, Clinton county, died July 10, 1885. He was born in Middlebury, Ky., in 1810; he moved to Clinton county and settled on the farm, where he has always lived, in 1834, being one of the first settlers in the county. He was ever a strictly honest, upright, and temperate man, a true husband, and a kind and indulgent father.

Charles Turner, one of the earliest pioneers of St. Johns, died at his home, July 22, 1885. He was born in New Jersey in 1801, and when a young man moved to Geneva, N. Y., and from there to St. Johns in 1855. He was a member of the Congregational Church, and an exemplary man.

Mrs. M. V. Brown died September 8, 1885. Her maiden name was Fannie Hewitt, and she was born in De Witt in 1836, was married in 1853, and moved to St. Johns in 1864. Mrs. Brown was a faithful member of the Methodist Church, a devoted wife, and a highly esteemed member of society.

August 23, 1885, Geo A. Britten, of Essex township, committed suicide by shooting himself. September 6 his father, Jacob Britten, died at the age of seventy-six. September 7, his brother, Nathaniel Britten, died, aged forty-two. All were pioneers of Essex, having settled there in 1853, and were among the most respected citizens of that township.

Joab Baker, one of the pioneer lawyers of Clinton county, died at his home in Muskegon, September 24, aged eighty-six years. He settled in De Witt in 1847. In 1850 he was elected prosecuting attorney of Clinton county under the new constitution. When the county seat was removed to St. Johns, in 1857, Mr. Baker settled here; he moved from here to Grand Haven, and then to Muskegon.

Alonzo Plumstead, one of the pioneer business men of St. Johns, died November 4, 1885, at his home in that place. Mr. Plumstead was born in Clinton, Dutchess county, N. Y., in 1808. In 1835 he moved to Detroit; in 1836 to Northville, where he was engaged in the boot and shoe business till 1855, when he moved to St. Johns. For a long time he was one of the most prominent merchants in that place, and was identified with all the enterprises for its early development. For several years he was express agent. He was a genial, intelligent, and honorable citizen, and will be missed by a wide circle of friends.

Stephen Hill, the oldest pioneer of the township of Watertown, and a member of this society, died at his home the 5th of November. He purchased of the government and settled on the farm where he died, in 1837. By patient labor he made from the wilderness one of the finest farms in the township. He was a kind neighbor, and an esteemed and honored citizen.

Charles Coleman, a highly respected citizen of St. Johns, died December 29, 1885. He was born in Orange county, N. Y., and moved to Livingston county, Michigan, where he lived several years; thence he removed to St. Johns about twenty-one years ago. Mr. Coleman was not a member of any church, but believed in and practiced the religion of an honorable life.

Barney Bond, for the last thirty-one years a resident of Essex township, Clinton county, died at his home December 31, 1885, in his seventy-seventh year. He came to this county from Monroe county, N. Y.

Mrs. Catherine Chase, wife of Daniel Chase, of Essex, died January 10, 1886. She came with her husband to this county from Cayuga county, N. Y., some twenty-five years ago.

Geo. W. Kinney died January 17, 1886, at the age of sixty-six. Mr. Kinney settled in the township of Watertown in 1847, and has resided there ever since. He has been respected and honored by all as a kind, obliging, and honest man, and a public spirited, useful citizen.

Mrs. Anna Richards, of Duplain township, died March 7, 1886, at the age of sixty-two years. She was born in Yates, Monroe county, N. Y., and came to Duplain in 1846, where she was an estimable christian woman.

Micah D. Pope died in Clinton county, March 10, 1886, at the age of seventy-seven. He was born in Vermont and brought up in New York State. In an early day he worked in Rochester in the foundry of Jethro Wood, the first maker of iron plows. He moved to Ohio, and from there at the close of the war to Michigan. He was of a genial and social nature, always looking on the bright side of life.

Edward W. Higbee, of Watertown, died April 17, 1886, aged seventy-one. He was an old pioneer, having settled in Eagle in 1837, and has resided in that township and Watertown ever since. He was an honest, intelligent man, and his death is universally regretted.

Mrs. Maria Nichols, of Bengal, died April 22, 1886. She was born in 1803, moved from Genesee county, N. Y., to Oakland county, Michigan, in 1825, and came to Bengal in 1864, where she has since lived.

Mrs. Mary Van Sickle, of Greenbush township, died May 9, 1886, aged seventy. She had been a resident of the county forty years.

Mrs. Rice, of Bingham township, died May 8, 1886, at the age of seventy-eight years. She had been a resident of the county forty-one years.

Wm. Besley, one of the earliest pioneers of Clinton county, died May 10, 1886, at the age of seventy-eight years. He was born in New York State, and settled in this county forty years ago. He was one of the charter members of the Clinton County Pioneer Society and took great interest in its meetings, and was also very much interested in the State Pioneer Society. In his later years he delighted in telling stories of his early life in Poughkeepsie, N. Y., and of Martin Van Buren, with whom he was personally acquainted. He was an intelligent and honorable citizen.

CRAWFORD COUNTY

BY M. D. OSBAND

MARTIN VALENTINE

Martin Valentine, of Marathon, Lapeer county, died in Fredericville, while on a visit to his children, at the residence of his son, Mr. P. Valentine, on Sunday, August 9, 1885, aged seventy-one and a half years. Mr. Valentine was one of Michigan's pioneers. He was a native of New York. He was married to Miss Mary J. Phillips, March 13, 1836, in the town of Sennet, Cayuga county, and with his young wife emigrated to Michigan and purchased a farm in Marathon, during the same year. This constituted his residence till his death. There were but five families within the township when they came. Their oldest son, Dr. A. B. Valentine, of Montmorency county, was the first white child born within the town, which then consisted of what is now Marathon, Oregon and Deerfield townships. At the first town election he was elected constable and collector. He ran a stage line and carried the mail between Marathon and Lapeer. They had eight children, four boys and four girls. The girls died young. He was a painter by trade, and followed that business in connection with farming, until his health failed him in 1861. Since then he has been an invalid. After these many years, wrestling with disease of the throat, he rests from his labors. He leaves a wife and four sons to mourn his loss. He was buried in the cemetery at Fredericville. Rev. G. S. Weir officiated at the funeral.

EATON COUNTY

BY DAVID B. HALE

James I. Rogers died in the township of Eaton Rapids, September 26, 1885, aged ninety-three years, ten months, and two days. He was born in the township of Zone, Massachusetts, November 24, 1791. April 11, 1819, he was married to Miss Savina Lowell, reared a family of ten children; seven children are still living. He buried his wife January 24, 1876. Deceased was a pensioner of the war of 1812. He participated in the battle of Fort Erie and witnessed the burning of Buffalo. He came to Michigan in the summer of 1838, and settled in Eaton Rapids, where he resided until his death.

Francis Champlin died in the town of Hamlin, September 8, 1885, aged seventy years. Mr. Champlin was born in Stafford, in Genesee county, New York, May 15, 1815. He settled in the town of Tyler, now Hamlin, in 1843.

Lorilla Pierson died in the township of Hamlin, October 20, 1885, aged eighty years, four months, and twenty-eight days. Born in Batavia, Genesee county, May, 23, 1805. Her maiden name was Lorilla Clark; was married to Josiah Pierson in 1832. Moved to Michigan in 1836 or 1837, and settled on section 14, now town of Hamlin.

David Osborn died in the city of Eaton Rapids, September 3, 1885, aged seventy-four years. He was born in Somerset, in the State of Maine. He married Miss Eliza Dexter in June, 1838, and settled on land he had located the year previous in the township of Tyler (now Hamlin), in Eaton county, Mich. He continued to reside on the same farm until about a year prior to his death, when he moved to the city of Eaton Rapids.

Eliza Osborn died in the city of Eaton Rapids, December 7, 1885, aged sixty-five years, six months, and eleven days. Her maiden name was Eliza Dexter. She was born in Weathersfield, Vermont, May 18, 1820. She settled with her husband, David Osborn, in Eaton county, when a large portion of the county was an unbroken wilderness.

Amos H. Munson died in the city of Charlotte, April 1, 1886, aged sixty-six years. He was born in Salsbury, New York, June 13, 1819. He located in Charlotte in the fall of 1854. Mr. Munson was united in marriage with Miss Lydia White, February 3, 1840, who died November 20, 1853. He was again married, January 1, 1856, to Mrs. Sarah L. Cushing, who survives him. He was engaged in the hardware business at the time of his death; he also owned a large farm near the city of Charlotte. He was a man much respected for his sterling worth, whose character was above reproach.

Luther Hartson, died in the city of Charlotte, August 22, 1885, aged seventy-six years and seven months. Deceased was one of the early settlers of Eaton county.

Benjamin Bartlett died in the city of Eaton Rapids, November 27, 1885, aged seventy-four years. Born in Washington county, Ohio, September 29, 1811; was married in 1843 to Miss Eunice Hunt, came to Michigan in 1853, and settled in the township of Eaton Rapids.

Wm. R. Kingman died in the township of Benton, March 19, 1885, aged sixty-four years. He was born in Virgil, Courtland county, New York, in 1822, and came to Michigan in early manhood. Settled in Charlotte, where he resided about one year, then to Benton, where he continued to reside until his death. He was elected clerk and deacon of the Baptist Church at the time of its organization in Charlotte in 1855.

Ira Hitchcock died in the township of Carmel, January 11, 1886, aged eighty-one years and six months. He was a resident of the township between thirty and forty years.

James Surene died in Vermontville on the 2d day of October, 1885. He was born in Kent, Putman county, New York, in 1814. In 1837 he was united in marriage to Miss Nancy Hough, who survives him. He moved to Shiawassee county Mich., in 1855, and in 1870 moved to Vermontville, where he died.

Zelotes Searles died in the city of Charlotte, November 17, 1885, aged seventy years, four months and four days. He was born in Wales, Erie county New York, July 13, 1815. He came to Michigan when a young man.

Edgar D. Brackett died in the city of Charlotte, January 24, 1886, aged forty-one years. He was born in Eaton county, in which he resided the whole of his lifetime.

Robert Dunn died in Carmel, Eaton county, on the 31st day of May, 1886. He was born in Essex county, State of New York, and was seventy years old at the time of his death. He settled in the township of Carmel in 1837. The town meeting was held at Mr. Dunn's house in 1840, and he claimed the honor of casting the first vote in the township.

Mrs. Hannah Ross died in Eaton, January 14, 1886, aged eighty-eight years. She has been a resident of the county for over forty years.

Roger W. Griswold died in Vermontville, May 31, 1886, at the age of seventy-four years. He was born in Benson, Vermont, in 1812. He was one of the original members of the "Vermont Colony," and settled in Vermontville in 1836, just half a century ago, and settled on the place where he spent the greater part of his life. He returned to Vermont in 1837, and was married to Miss Abigail Stor Bascom, who returned with him to his new home in Michigan. He took an active interest in the advancement of the public interests of his town and county, and ever labored for the best interests of society.

John Dow died in Vermontville, September 30, 1885, aged eighty-one years and eight months. Mr. Dow was born in Somerset county, New Jersey, in 1804. He moved to Michigan in 1837, and settled in the township of Roxand, being one of the earliest settlers of the township. In 1838 he was elected supervisor, and held the office in that town for thirteen consecutive years, when he moved to Sunfield, and was elected supervisor of that township for thirty years, until old age and declining health compelled him to decline farther responsibilities in that field. He removed to Vermontville a few years before his death.

William W. Wolcott died on the 12th day of October, 1885, aged seventy-eight years and nine days. He was born in Austerlitz, Columbia county, New York, October 3, 1807. He was married on January 29, 1832, to Miss Elizabeth Baldwin, who survives him. Mr. Wolcott moved his family to Michigan in the summer of 1837 and settled on the land which he had located two years previously to that time, and where he continued to reside until his death. He reared a family of six children, five sons and one daughter. Mrs. Wolcott and five sons are still living. He was a model farmer and successful business man, respected by all his acquaintance.

Emily Robinson was born in Bennington, Vermont, March 31, 1806, and was married to W. N. Martin at Bennington, August 26, 1835, with whom she removed to Vermontville, Michigan, May 25, 1838. She died December 17, 1885. Mrs. Martin was a woman of firm and independent mind, of few words, but full of good deeds, a beloved wife, an honored mother. Unselfish to a fault, her life was spent in the service of her Master in Heaven, her family, to which she was devoted, the church she loved so well, the poor in her town, and all claims of society of right aims.

GENESEE COUNTY

BY J. W. BEGOLE

MRS. MARGARET PAGE

Mrs. Margaret Page died at the residence of her niece, Mrs. James Hart, in Brooklyn, N. Y., Tuesday, January 30, 1883. To her intimate friends in Flint Mrs. Page's death was not altogether unexpected, having been a sufferer for some time past from a disease sure to prove fatal, yet the hope that ever lingers, even after the fates have made their decree, caused the sad news to be received as if unanticipated. Mrs. Page was one of the very few early settlers of Flint. She was one of the first two or three members of St. Paul's Episcopal Church, organized in 1839, and although for some time past her home has been mostly in Brooklyn, her name is still on the church register as an active member. Her quiet and energetic church work was ever felt and appreciated. Mrs. Page was one of the most efficient members of the Ladies' Library Association organized in 1851, having held the positions of president and librarian longer than any other member of the organization.

The remains arrived in Flint Thursday evening, and were taken to the residence of Mr. and Mrs. Jerome Eddy, old and warm friends of the deceased. The day following a large number of friends followed the hearse to St. Paul's Church, where the funeral services were held. The rector, Mr. Seabrease, in a few remarks, paid a deserved tribute to Mrs. Page's faithful and close connection with the church from its foundation. To the still living two or three present who partook of that first communion it was as the voice of the past telling its tale of days long gone by.

JOHN C. MATHEWSON

John C. Mathewson died at his home in Mundy, June 6, 1886, in the eighty-second year of his age. Mr. Mathewson was born in Smyrna, Chenango county, N. Y., June 1, 1804. At an early age he removed to Franklinville, Cattaraugus county, where, in 1829, he married the youngest daughter of General Joseph McClure of that place. In 1848 he removed with his family to Michigan, settling in Mundy on the farm which has since been his home, and where he died. He may therefore be considered as one of the pioneers of the county, not only by virtue of long residence, but also from the hardships and privations which he endured. In 1856 his first wife died. In 1858 he married the daughter of Mr. John Slaght, of Mundy, and she died in 1881. He had five children by his first wife, all of whom survive him. The eldest is Mr. Stephen Mathewson, of this city. Two sons and a daughter reside in Mundy, and a married daughter lives in Chesaning. Mr. Mathewson enjoyed and deserved the respect of his neighbors during all the years of his residence in Mundy, and his death is much regretted. He had preserved his faculties to a remarkable degree, and appeared much younger than he really was. During his residence in Mundy he held almost every township office in the town. He was a consistent member of the Congregational Church for more than fifty years.

EDWARD H. THOMSON

Edward H. Thomson was born June 15, 1810, at Kendal, in Westmoreland county, England. While a small child his parents moved to Boston, Mass. He entered White Plains Academy in New York State and remained there four years. In 1830 he began the study of law in the office of Millard Fillmore, who was subsequently elected President of the United States. At twenty-two years of age he opened a law office at Buffalo, but subsequently removed to Cleveland, Ohio.

In 1836—7 Michigan received a large number of immigrants from other States and among them was Col. Thomson, who reached this State in '37, and located at Atlas, which was then a part of Lapeer county. Governor Stevens T. Mason, Michigan's first governor, appointed Mr. Thomson prosecuting attorney of Lapeer county. He remained there but one year, however, when he removed to Flint and went into partnership with Jno. Bartow, who was then register of the United States Land Office here. The firm of Bartow & Thomson was probably at that time the leading firm of lawyers in northern Michigan. In 1845 and 1846 he was the prosecuting attorney of Genesee county. In 1847* he was elected to the State senate, his district embracing Genesee, Oakland, Lapeer, Shiawassee, Saginaw and Tuscola counties, and also the entire Upper Peninsula. He was also the father of the bills which located the Institution at Flint, and the Asylum for the Insane at Kalamazoo.

Governor Ransom, recognizing Mr. Thomson's services in passing a bill for the encouragement of immigration to Michigan, appointed him commissioner of immigration, with headquarters in New York City. Subsequently it was deemed wise to send Mr. Thomson to Germany, and his headquarters were changed to Stuttgart, Wurtemberg, Germany. By his energy and eminent social qualities, he made himself a favorite there, as always elsewhere, and Michigan gained nearly thirty thousand hard working German citizens by his personal endeavors. In 1851 Mr. Thomson was appointed United States deputy commissioner to the World's Exposition, held that year in London, England, and by his ability, courtesy and liberality, made large numbers of friends. In 1858 he was elected to the house of representatives in this State, and his former experience as chairman of the committee on the judiciary, chairman of the committee on minerals, and a member of the committee on state affairs in the senate, equipped him for effective work in the lower house, where he was made a member of the committee on the judiciary and of state affairs. At the outbreak of the war Gov. Austin Blair appointed Mr. Thomson a member of the State military board, and when Gen. A. S. Williams resigned the chairmanship of that board to go into active service, Col. Thomson was made its chairman.

In the city of Flint the Colonel has been an active member of the school board, and mayor of the city in 1878.

It will be seen from this rapidly prepared sketch that the Colonel has always been a man of affairs, but whether as lawyer or politician, he has always found ample time to cultivate the graces of life, and as a social, genial gentleman he will long be remembered by his hosts of friends, not only here but all over our State and country. In 1880 the Colonel was nominated by the democrats for the lieut.-governorship, and although he had little hope of success he labored earnestly for the election of his ticket.

---

*See appendix

He was a ripe Shakespearian scholar, and his magnificent Shakespearian library, which now graces the University of Michigan, is one of the finest private collections ever made in the United States. His private library, pictures, and souvenirs of public men and distinguished women, forms a most complete and delightful collection.

Col. Thomson died at his spacious mansion on Kearsley and East Streets, February 2, 1886. His only daughter, Mrs. A. B. Witherbee, of Washington, D. C., was with him during his sickness until recalled to her home by the illness of her daughter. In addition to this daughter the Colonel leaves one son, Edward H., and a devoted wife.

He was engaged in the preparation of a new lecture on Shakespeare, to be delivered during the winter, when he was first attacked with what has so sadly proved to be a fatal illness.

Entertaining, generous, genial, gentle Col. Thomson is dead. His loss will be felt by all classes of people in the community, and it may be said of him truthfully, in the words of a distinguished divine of Flint: "Colonel Thomson had more and readier excuses for the short-comings of men than any man I ever knew." He was charitable in the best and broadest sense of the word. But he has gone forever. This is no place for moralizing, but we cannot refrain from adding that while Col. Thomson failed to secure a large fortune as estimated by commercial standards, he held a place second to none in the hearts of his friends, his neighbors and fellow citizens.

RICHARD H. HUGHES

Richard H. Hughes died February 11, 1886. Mr. Hughes was deputy state oil inspector, and had been called to Bay City on official business. He was not well when he left home, and was so ill on reaching his destination as to be obliged to take to his bed almost immediately on his arrival. His wife being notified of his illness went at once to him, and was soon joined by her brother, Frank Dullam, both of whom remained with him until he died. A number of the members of Governor Crapo Post, G. A. R., were also with him in his last hours.

Mr. Hughes was born in Oakland county in this State in 1840, but his family moved to Flint when he was yet a lad. Most of his early youth was spent on a farm in Mt. Morris township. At the outbreak of the rebellion he enlisted in Captain S. C. Randall's company in the 23d Michigan Infantry, and fought through the war. In 1869 he married a daughter of Mr. R. W. Dullam, who, with four children, survives him. While residing in Mt. Morris he held several township offices, including treasurer and supervisor. Some years ago he disposed of his farm and engaged in business in Flint. He built and operated the apple evaporating factory near Begole, Fox & Co's mill. He was a member of the Genesee Commandery Knights Templar, also of the A. O. U. W. and several other societies, including Governor Crapo Post, G. A. R., of which he was past commander. He was personally popular, and deservedly so, and made friends wherever he went, and his death is widely deplored.

Upon the arrival of the remains at Flint they were met at the station by the G. A. R. post and numerous citizens. The funeral occurred on Sunday at two P. M. at the Court Street M. E. Church, under the auspices of the post, Rev. I. N. Elwood officiating. The Knights Templar and the A. O. U. W. attended the funeral in a body in uniform, in addition to the G. A. R. The attendance of citizens generally was very large.

The community has lost a good citizen, and his family an affectionate and devoted husband and father. Peace to his memory.

O. HEMPHILL

Orin Hemphill came from Mt. Morris, New York, to Burton, Genesee county, Mich., in 1837, where he has since resided. He was an industrious and energetic farmer, and did his full share toward making Genesee county one of the very first counties in the State. He took an active part in our Agricultural Society and was for many years county superintendent of the poor, and was always a worthy and highly respected citizen. He died February 11, 1886, at his late home in Burton township.

HILLSDALE COUNTY

BY E. O. GROSVENOR

In making a report of the deaths of pioneers in this county since date of my last report, which, I believe, was in 1884, I am unable, owing to the very large number who have passed away, to give more than the name, age, time of death and residence. Some of them were members of the State Pioneer Society, most of them members of our county society, and all were residents of the State and county.

Some of them have filled prominent positions in the county and State, and deserve more than a passing notice. In such cases I doubt not you have received and placed on file suitable obituary notices, which have appeared in our local and State papers.

I commence my list June 1, 1884 and bring it down to May 31, 1886.

John C. Robertson, Cambria, died June 7, 1884, aged 82 years.

Mrs. Electa Townsend, Litchfield, died June 18, 1884, aged 85 years.

Nathaniel McCurdy, Adams, died June 18, 1884, abed 85 years.

John S. Drake, Amboy, died June 28, 1884, aged about 60 years.

Charles Carmichael, Wheatland, died June 28, 1884, aged 84 years.

James R. Curtis, Hillsdale, died July 6, 1884, aged 53 years.

Mrs. Wm. Curtis, Wheatland, died July 14, 1884, aged 81 years.

Mrs. Anna Simmons, Pittsford, died July 30, 1884, aged 91 years.

Mrs. Mary L. Curtis, Hillsdale, died August 4, 1884, aged 49 years.

A Warner, Reading, died August 6, 1884, aged 61 years.

Benjamin F. Credit, Jonesville, died August 8, 1884, aged 78 years.

Mrs. Rhoda Wright, Jonesville, died August 16, 1884, aged 94 years.

Mrs. Maggie McDougal, Litchfield, died August 16, 1884, aged 57 years.

W. H. Comfort, Woodbridge, died August 18, 1884, aged 71 years.

Orville Curtis, Litchfield, died August 19, 1884, aged 75 years.

William H. Brandwell, Litchfield, died August 27, 1884, aged 73 years.

Jacob Barnhart, Scipio, died August 30, 1884, aged 56 years.

Mrs. Mary E. Hewitt, Allen, died September 7, 1884, aged 58 years.

Horace Osborn, Wheatland, died September 16, 1884, aged 56 years.

Walter B. Parks, Fayette, died September 19, 1884, aged 82 years.

Anson R. Wisner, Jonesville, died October 3, 1884, aged 66 years.

Mrs. William B. Hawkins, Jonesville, died October 5, 1884, aged 58 years.

Mrs. Matilda Blatchley, Scipio, died October 15, 1884, aged 85 years.

Mrs. Abagail Lockwood, Hillsdale, died October 28, 1884, aged 64 years.

Thomas Warner, Hillsdale, died November 7, 1884, aged 83 years.

Luther R. Wisner, formerly Jonesville, died November 14, 1884, aged 58 years.

Levi Todd, Litchfield, died November 16, 1884, aged 71 years.

John R. Cook, Hillsdale, died December 15, 1884, aged 72 years.

Daniel Murray, Reading, died December 20, 1884, aged 77 years.

John E. Wooster, Wheatland, died December 28, 1884, aged about 70 years.

Harley J. Olds, Jonesville, died January 9, 1885, aged 69 years.

Ephraim Baker, Ransom, died January 6, 1885, aged 84 years.

George W. Greek, Ransom, died January 18, 1885, aged 84 years.

Samuel Wescott, Somerset, died January 25, 1885, aged about 80 years.

Mrs. Ann Sibbald, Jonesville, died January 25, 1885, aged 76 years.

David Young, Allen, died January 27, 1885, aged 81 years.

Henry Blount, Allen, died January 28, 1885, aged 61 years.

Mrs. Mahala Sprowles, Adams, died February 3, aged 71 years.
Mrs. Mahala Darling, Jonesville, died February 3, 1885, aged 49 years.
Mrs. Eunice Woodruff, Jefferson, died February 8, 1885, aged 80 years.
Alonzo B. Strong, Somerset, died February 8, 1885, aged 60 years.
Mrs. Samuel Fellows, Litchfield, died February 10, 1885, aged 81 years.
Mrs. Ann M. Kesselring, Cambria, died February 10, 1885, aged 66 years.
James J. Baker, Ransom, died February 10, 1885, aged 83 years.
James A. Strong, Somerset, died February 8, 1885, aged 65 years.
Mrs. Mary E. Farnam, Hillsdale, died February 11, 1885, aged 61 years.
John Wilkins, Allen, died February 16, 1885, aged about 75 years.
Mrs. Emily Hicks, Allen, died February 16, 1885, aged 61 years.
Chester Cole, Adams, died February 16, 1885, aged 74 years.
Mrs. Cornelia Russell, Hillsdale, died February 16, 1885, aged 82 years.
James T. Bassett, Jefferson, died February 17, 1885, aged 79 years.
Mrs. Lydia A. Fondly, Ransom, died February 20, 1885, aged 73 years.
Mrs. St. John, Woodbridge, died February 21, 1885, aged 93 years.
Frances Harris, Reading, died February 25, 1885, aged 70 years.
William P. Carrel, Hillsdale, died February 28, 1885, aged 60 years.
Mrs. Maria M. Simmons, Moscow, died March 1, 1885, aged 74 years.
Isaac C. Vaughn, Moscow, died March 9, 1885, aged 71 years.
Haynes B. Tucker, Jonesville, died March 12, 1885, aged 68 years.
Mrs. Hannah Bolles, Hillsdale, died March 21, 1885, aged 84 years.
Lewis Riggs, Jonesville, died March 24, 1885, aged 70 years.
A. M. Kellogg, Litchfield, died April 5, 1885, aged 64 years.
Jacob Dibler, Litchfield, died April 8, 1885, aged 66 years.
Lorenzo D. Green, Jonesville, died April 10, 1885, aged 63 years.
James H. Thorn, Pittsford, died April 11, 1885, aged 69 years.
Warner Bunday, Litchfield, died April 20, 1885, aged 85 years.
Mary E. Cutler, Pittsford, died April 25, 1885, aged about 80 years.
Mrs. Maria Kellogg, Litchfield, died April 28, 1885, aged 71 years.
Mrs. Betsey A. Janes, Cambria, died May 4, 1885, aged 69 years.
Leman Strong, Litchfield, died May 6, 1885, aged 75 years.
Mrs. Harriet Strong, Litchfield, died May 12, 1885, aged 75 years.
Sewell E. Blackman, Adams, died June 10, 1885, aged 77 years.
Mrs. Sarah Jefferay, Hillsdale, died June 13, 1885, aged 59 years.
Mrs. Phoebe Bond, Hillsdale, died June 14, 1885, aged 81 years.
Mrs. Elizabeth A. Timms, Hillsdale, died June 15, 1885, aged 40 years.
Mrs. Martha Campbell, Hillsdale, died June 16, 1885, aged 83 years.
William Andrus, Jonesville, died June 20, 1885, aged 75 years.
Samuel Foote, Cambria, died June 27, 1885, aged 87 years.

Mrs. Mary A. Gaige, Jonesville, died July 6, 1885, aged 55 years.

Erastus Hagen, Jonesville, died July 8, 1885, aged 75 years.

Mrs. Eunice Mason, Litchfield, died July 28, 1885, aged 79 years.

Daniel Lincoln, Mosherville, died August 18, 1885, aged 75 years.

Mrs. Malinda Cozens, Fayette, died August 23, 1885, aged 79 years.

Daniel Huff, Bankers, died August 26, 1885, aged 61 years.

John Washburn, Allen, died August 27, 1885, aged 60 years.

Mrs. Rachael Scott, Moscow, died August 30, 1885, aged 86 years.

Bishop A. Johnson, Jonesville, died September 2, 1885, aged 65 years.

John W. Ferris, Hillsdale, died September 3, 1885, aged 70 years.

Rachael Bolles, Hillsdale, died September 3, 1885, aged 61 years.

Joseph Hancock, Cambria, died September 8, 1885, aged 75 years.

Mrs. Louisa Eddy, Somerset, died September 20, 1885, aged 64 years.

Mrs. Harriet Crossman, Litchfield, died September 20, 1885, aged 67 years.

Philander Mead, Hillsdale, died September 20, 1885, aged about 70 years.

Mrs. Electa B. Chilson, Osseo, died September 29, 1885, aged 86 years.

Mrs. Mary Rea, Jonesville, died October 2, 1885, aged 77 years.

Moses Culver, Scipio, died October 10, 1885, aged 88 years.

Mrs. Barnes, formerly Jonesville, died October 15, 1885, aged about 75 years.

Benjamin T. Farnum, Hillsdale, died October 17, 1885, aged 84 years.

Eason Wilbur, Adams, died November 30, 1885, aged 81 years.

James Anderson, Hillsdale, died December 7, 1885, aged 89 years.

Peter Hughes, Hillsdale, died December 8, 1885, aged 83 years.

Charlotte Lockwood, died December 11, 1885, aged 75 years.

Thomas Hayward, Cambria, died December 23, 1885, aged 52 years.

Samuel Smith, North Adams, died December 27, 1885, aged 75 years.

Ozan Keith, Pittsford, died December 27, 1885, aged 87 years.

Mrs. Catherine Cook, Hillsdale, died January, 1, 1886, aged 82 years.

Mrs. Matilda Nutten, Moscow, died January 4, 1886, aged 52 years.

Frank M. Culver, Scipio, died January 8, 1886, aged 56 years.

Mrs. Charles Ten Eyck, Litchfield, died January 10, 1886, aged 40 years.

Mary A. Courtright, Jonesville, died January 10, 1886, aged 65 years.

Phoebe Arch, Montgomery, died January 19, 1886, aged 79 years.

Mary Copeland, Montgomery, died January 23, 1886, aged 79 years.

Mrs. Cornelia Tiffany, Jonesville, died January 27, 1886, aged 64 years.

Enoch H. Goodrich, Ransom, died February 2, 1886, aged 74 years.

Ransom Bullard, Litchfield, died February 2, 1886, aged 80 years.

Mrs. Benj. Franklin, Moscow, died February 3, 1886, aged 68 years.

Mr. Fish, North Adams, died February 1, 1886, aged 69 years.
P. S. Bugbee, Osseo, died February 6, 1886, aged 62 years.
Mrs. Rachael Hicks, Adams, died February 7, 1886, aged about 80 years.
John Moore, Litchfield, died February 12, 1886, aged 80 years.
Joseph Bulger, Litchfield, died February 15, 1886, aged 58 years.
William Moreland, Jerome, died February 15, 1886, aged 68 years.
Ezra J. Hodges, Scipio, died February 18, 1886, aged 59 years.
Frank Kelsey, Jonesville, died February 20, 1886, aged 49 years.
Mrs. Aurelia Stone, Allen, died February 25, 1886, aged 81 years.
Mrs. Eliza Traver, Litchfield, died February 27, 1886, aged 67 years.
Mrs. Penella E. Curtis, Hillsdale, died February 28, 1886, aged 81 years.
Mrs. Hannah Trumbull, Wheatland, died February 28, 1886, aged 60 years.
Mrs. Rudolph Rozelle, Litchfield, died March 2, 1886, aged 68 years.
J. S. Stowell, Fayette, died March 4, 1886, aged 70 years.
Mrs. Malinda Wilkinson, Litchfield, died March 5, 1886, aged 64 years.
John Cole, Osseo, died March 5, 1886, aged 98 years.
Harley C. Clark, Osseo, died March 5, 1886, aged 77 years.
Daniel Murdock, Litchfield, died March 6, 1886, aged 78 years.
Mrs. Mary Mosher, Hillsdale, died March 16, 1886, aged 58 years.
Mrs. Elizabeth Mann, Litchfield, died March 25, 1886, aged 72 years.
Samuel Gilmer, Jonesville, died March 25, 1886, aged 61 years.
Zebulon W. Parker, Cambria, died March 21, 1886, aged 69 years.
Stephen W. Watson, Litchfield, died March 26, 1886, aged 75 years.
Mrs. Thorne, Osseo, died March 29, 1886, aged 87 years.
Mrs. Ann Wood, Wheatland, died April 7, 1886, aged 85 years.
Mrs. Phoebe Knight, Moscow, died April 15, 1886, aged 79 years.
Mrs. Sarah A. Reiley, Hillsdale, died April 16, 1886, aged 75 years.
Mrs. Woolson, Adams, died April 19, 1886, aged 68 years.
Hiram H. Baker, Amboy, died April 23, 1886, aged 72 years.
Mrs. Joseph Woolson, Adams, died April 30, 1886, aged 73 years.
Joseph Huff, Osseo, died May 7, 1886, aged 67 years.
Charles C. Wells, Allen, died May 9, 1886, aged 73 years.
Asa T. Woodworth, Hillsdale, died May 14, 1886, aged 72 years.
Mrs. Alice D. Harding, Jonesville, died May 22, 1886, aged 34 years.
Mrs. Mary E. McCune, Hillsdale, died May 24, 1886, aged 62 years.
Mrs. Bridget McKinney, Jonesville, died May 28, 1886, aged 58 years.
Joshua M. Chase, Moscow, died May 28, 1886, aged 69 years.
Amasa C. Allen, Hillsdale, died May 31, 1886, aged about 65 years.

This makes the large number of one hundred and fifty-four pioneers who have died in this county from June 1, 1884, to May 31, 1886—two years. Of the whole number but six are named who died under fifty years of age, and these are included because, being children of early settlers, their entire lives have been passed in this State, and most of them in this county. A tabular statement is given below, in periods of ten years, showing relative number who died within the ages named, and the average age of the entire number:

Died under 50 years of age	6
Died between 50 and 60 years of age	17
Died between 60 and 70 years of age	41
Died between 70 and 80 years of age	48
Died between 80 and 90 years of age	38
Died between 90 and 100 years of age	4

The oldest died in his 99th year. Average age of entire number, 71½ years. Aggregate age of entire number, 10,987 years.

Since the foregoing was written, the following has been received for insertion in connection with this report:

REV. LEVI H. CARSON

Rev. Levi H. Carson, for the last thirty years a resident of Jonesville, rector and clergyman of Grace (Episcopal) Church, called on the morning of February 23, 1884, at the store of Button & Munsell in this village, and while sitting in a chair conversing, ceased for a moment to speak, gasped once or twice and was dead. He was born at Saco Bay, Maine, July 3, 1801, graduated from Amherst College, 1829; ordained deacon in Hartford, Conn., 1831; priest in 1833. After twenty years' service as rector in various places he came to Jonesville as rector of Grace Church, May 28, 1854; has lived here ever since, and most of the time as rector of the church. He was also a prominent member of the Masonic Fraternity, belonging to Lafayette Lodge No. 16, Jonesville Chapter and Council, and Eureka Commandery No. 3. Has been presiding officer of Lodge, Chapter, and Council. Was married is 1831. His wife and three sons survive him.

INGHAM COUNTY

BY C. B. STEBBINS

The following are statistics, such as I have been able to gather, of pioneer residents of Ingham county who have passed away since our last meeting:—

Mrs. Rebecca S. Brown, June 12, 1885, aged 71 years; a resident of Lansing 30 years.

Mrs. Eunice Hart, Lansing, August 4, 1885, aged 82 years.

Rev. B. W. Blanchard, August 10, 1885, aged 75 years; a resident of Lansing 21 years.

Ezra Harris, Lansing, August 14, 1885, aged 75 years.

J. H. Tenney, Lansing, August 18, 1885, aged 75 years.

Henry Lederer, August 27, 1885, aged 62 years; he was born in Austria, came to America when 23 years of age, and resided in Lansing 33 years.

Mrs. M. Irwin Carpenter, Lansing, August 26, 1885, aged 73 years; she had resided in the State 39 years.

Oliver Keith, October 15, 1885, aged 62 years; a resident of Lansing 21 years.

John W. Holmes, Lansing, October 15, 1885, aged 83 years.

Appleton Ballard, October 27, 1885, aged 76 years; a resident of Lansing 38 years.

Henry H. North, Delhi, October 31, 1885, aged 69 years; a resident of Ingham county 48 years.

Mrs. Louise M. Peake, November 13, 1885, aged 85 years; she had resided in Bunkerhill 41 years.

Mrs. Fannie W. Warren, Lansing, November 22, 1885, aged 39 years; born in Portland, Michigan.

Mrs. Mary E. Sears, Lansing, November 24, 1885, aged 84 years.

Mrs. Laura Reed, Lansing, January 23, 1886, aged 85 years; a resident of the State 32 years.

Mrs. Lavinia Simons, Lansing, February 1, 1886, aged 80 years; she was born in Canada, and resided in Michigan 46 years; she left nine children living.

Mrs. Charlotte Ekstein, March 29, 1886, aged 54 years; she was born in Austria, and resided in Lansing 42 years.

Mrs. Sarah Kingsley, Lansing, March 30, 1886, aged 89 years.

Mrs. Barbara Blasius, April —, 1886, aged 69 years; she came from Germany in 1843, and resided in Lansing 27 years.

Mrs. Martha M. Molineaux, April 25, 1886, aged 52 years; she had resided in Lansing 22 years.

Dr. Alvin S. Dingman, Lansing, April 27, 1886, aged 38 years; a resident of Michigan 28 years.

Samuel Beck, May 13, 1886, aged 59 years; he was born in Bavaria, had been in this country 34 years, and resided in Lansing 20 years.

Mrs. Emily Elliott, May 16, 1886, aged 64 years; she resided in Lansing 22 years.

Mrs. Fidelia A. Howell, Lansing, May 21, 1886, aged 38 years; she was born in Howell, Mich.

Mrs. Eliza Moots, May 22, 1886, aged 84 years; she was born in Germany and resided in Lansing 36 years.

Of these twelve were over 70, ten over 75, one over 80 years of age. But four were under 50 years. Six were natives of foreign countries; but two were born in Michigan.

IONIA COUNTY

BY HAMPTON RICH

The following biographical sketches have been collected by me for the past year:

NATHANIEL BEATTIE

Nathaniel Beattie, who had been confined to his house for the past eight years, died on Friday, January 15, 1886. He had a paralytic shock the week before, which was the immediate cause of his death. Mr. Beattie was one of the oldest and most highly esteemed residents of Ionia, and the family have the sympathy of a host of friends in their affliction. The funeral services took place Sunday afternoon, and were attended by a large number of our citizens. The deceased was born in Coldenham, Orange county, N. Y., February 29, 1815. He removed to Bloomfield, Oakland county, in this State, in 1829. He was married April 9, 1839, to Catherine Wallace, who survives him, and removed to Ionia county in 1839. He settled in the township of Keene, where he followed the business of farming until 1853, when he removed to Ionia, where he afterward resided. Mr. Beattie was regarded as an honorable business man, and he was very successful. For nearly ten years he was ill, so as to incapacitate him almost entirely for any labor, for eight years being confined to the house, much of the time in bed, and requiring the constant care of a devoted wife and family. He was for many years a member of the M. E. Church. In politics he was a staunch democrat, and his last visit outside his sick room was to vote his party ticket.

RICHARD DYE

Ionians were shocked Thursday evening, February 4, 1886, by the announcement of the death of Richard Dye. He left his office, where he had been engaged all the afternoon in business matters, about five o'clock, and was in good spirits and apparently in excellent health. Going to his home, he went out to fill the coal scuttles, and was discovered by J. W. Baldie a few minutes later lying upon his back in the snow with one foot inside the coal house door. His eyes were closed, and he had apparently died without a struggle. Rheumatism of the heart was perhaps the cause of his sudden demise. Deceased was one of the earliest settlers of this county. It is fifty years, this year, since he first located in Ionia. He was born in Herkimer village, N. Y., October 23, 1810, and was therefore in his 76th year. His father was a thrifty farmer and a pioneer of Herkimer county, who served in the revolutionary war, and came from Rhode Island when a young man. In March, 1832, the subject of this sketch married Miss Polly Welch, daughter of Vine Welch, a substantial Herkimer county farmer. Mr. Dye was a cabinet maker and worked at his trade in Herkimer until 1836, when he came to Ionia in company with Simon and John B. Welch, his wife's brothers, and Philander Hinds. They walked from Detroit. Mr. Dye selected a quarter section of land in what is now the township of Keene—the farm owned by William Gunn—and going to the United States land office, then at Kalamazoo, located it. Returning to the east in the fall he came back in the spring with his family, consisting at that time of his wife and two children, George H. and Mary E., and went to work on the farm. He had brought with him a lathe and an outfit of tools for cabinet making, and these he set up in the upper part of his log house and manufactured many articles of common household furniture for the settlers. In 1832 he removed to Ionia and started a shop on what is now the corner of Dye and Washington streets. The population of Ionia was then only about 150 souls. In 1859 he and his brother Nelson engaged in mercantile pursuits under the firm name of R. & N. Dye; later the late A. F. Carr was associated with them as the company of the concern. Seven years later Mr. Dye withdrew and retired from business, having acquired more than a competence, and has since given his attention to the care of his real estate and personal property. He has been a life-long and ardent democrat, and in 1845 was appointed postmaster by President Polk, and has been a member of the city council. He has been identified with the masonic fraternity thirty-seven years, or since 1849, being a member of Washtenong Lodge, Ionia Chapter No. 14, and Ionia Commandery No. 11. In these bodies he has almost always been the trusted treasurer. He united with the Church of Christ (Disciples) in 1861, under the ministrations of Rev. Isaac Errett. The characteristics of the deceased as a business man were industry, frugality, sterling honesty and rugged common sense. He was a devoted husband and father; a true, sincere friend; an exemplary citizen. His constitution was rugged and he was rarely, if ever, sick, and at the last stepped from one life into the other, without a moment's premonition that the slender link that bound him to a long and useful life was about to be snapped in twain.

The obsequies were held Thursday afternoon at the Church of Christ. An immense concourse of citizens attended, among whom the faces and whitened heads of scores of old citizens and friends of the deceased were conspicuous. The funeral sermon was by Rev. R. S. Groves, pastor of the church of which Mr. Dye was a member, and for many years a trustee. He was assisted in the service by Rev. D. Van Alstin, D. D., pastor of the Baptist Church, and Rev. Job Pierson, D. D., Rev. L. Master and Rev. W. S. Potter were also present. Ionia Commandery No. 11, sixty-five strong, turned out as an escort.

Brief services were held at the house before going to the church, in accordance with the Templar ritual, which were conducted by Sir Knights John B. Hutchins and A. H. Heath. The remains and family were then escorted to the church by the commandery, the following acting as pall-bearers; Sir Knights H. H. Hinds, Wilmer Bishop, A. F. Kelsey, O. H. Heath, G. S. Cooper and William Steele.

At the church the services were as follows: Hymn by the choir, "Come, Ye Disconsolate;" Scripture lesson, 90th Psalm; prayer; "Over There," favorite hymn of deceased, by the choir; sermon, text: I. Corinthians, xv., 12.

At the conclusion of the sermon the choir sung an anthem, "Prepare to Meet Thy God," and then the Knights filed out and the mournful procession moved to Highland Cemetery, where the last sad rites of the order were observed, as they laid the remains of their departed Sir Knight away in their last resting place on earth. The entire ceremonies were very solemn and impressive, the universal regret at the departure of "Uncle Richard Dye" being unaffected and profound.

HON. E. H. STANTON

It was with a feeling of sorrow and regret that the citizens of Ionia learned of the death, May 8, 1886, at his home, of Hon. Erastus H. Stanton. Erastus H. Stanton was born at Durham, Greene county, N. Y., November 13, 1817. His grandfather moved from Connecticut to New York in 1790. The family is of Welch descent. His mother was a daughter of Henry Niles, a descendant from a Scotch family belonging to the sect of Quakers or Friends. They were persecuted for their opinions under the reign of Charles II., and fled to a new continent that they might enjoy that freedom of opinion denied at home. Mr. Stanton was educated in the common schools and academy of his native town. An early developed taste for reading was gratified by access to a circulating library. At the age of sixteen he was placed, at his own request, with a mercantile firm at Rensselaerville, Albany county, where he acquired a knowledge of the business. He began business for himself in 1837 at Greenville, Green county, where he remained twelve years. Here he was married, September 2, 1840, to Miss Mary Sanford, who survives him. Owing to the ill health of Mrs. Stanton he removed to Illinois, purchasing a farm near Rockton, only a mile from the Wisconsin line. He remained there engaged in farming, banking and merchantile pursuits until 1867, when he came to Ionia and again embarked in mercantile pursuits, in which he remained until he began lumbering operations at Sheridan. This business occupied his time and personal attention until within the past three or four years, when he gave up the cares of active business life.

In 1838 Gov. Marcy of New York commissioned Mr. Stanton quartermaster of the 37th brigade of State troops, a position he held for four years. In 1861, being then in Illinois, Gen. Yates, afterwards governor of the State, appointed him as his military aide, in which capacity he visited the several Illinois regiments in the department of north Missouri, his duty being to see that the troops were properly equipped with arms, clothing, etc. During his residence in New York and Illinois he was several times elected supervisor, and held other positions. Always a public spirited and enterprising citizen, the people of Ionia were not slow to recognize his character. In 1872, when the Ionia and Stanton railroad project was inaugurated, Mr. Stanton was elected a director and the first secretary and treasurer of the company, which position he filled until the road was consolidated with the Detroit, Lansing, and Lake Michigan company. He took a lively interest in the completion of the road, taking upon himself many arduous duties, and as an officer of the company he proved himself a capable and energetic official.

In politics Mr. Stanton was a staunch republican, severing his political ties with the democratic party as early as 1856. In 1879 he was elected mayor of Ionia, his competitor being James M. Kidd, and the following year he ran against A. F. Bell and was re-elected. In 1880 he was elected to represent the then twenty-fourth district in the State Senate, in which body he was a leading, influential member. In 1882 he declined to be a candidate for renomination, but at the urgent solicitation of numerous friends allowed his name to go before the State convention as a candidate for State treasurer. He was too modest and sensitive to make a personal canvass, and even refused to go to Kalamazoo to aid his own candidacy, and although he received the cordial and unanimous support of the Ionia delegation, and made a creditable run, was not successful. Those who were intimate with

Mr. Stanton know how much he was hurt at the result, not because he was not nominated, he did not value office for its own sake, but for the reason that, as he believed, friends who had encouraged him with proffers of their support, failed him in the convention. He was the soul of political honor himself, as he was an exampler of business integrity. He never failed to carry out his own pledges, or held out false hopes to his friends. But he was perhaps of too confiding a nature, and placed too much stress upon talk, judging others by his own high standard of morals. He was often spoken of as an available candidate for other and higher positions, and there was no man in Ionia county, to say the least, who had a warmer personal following, based on genuine good will and respect for his high qualities of manhood. But he was modest and retiring in his disposition, and lacked the ability, not to say the disposition, to push himself to the front.

As a neighbor he was kind and considerate to others, as a citizen upright and just, as a business man honest and honorable in all his dealings, as a legislator incorruptible and fearless, as a friend ever true. He was childlike in his faith, his implicit confidence in others, and it shocked him to find that all men are not as simple, as direct and ingenuous as he was himself. He had many friends who were knit to him by bonds of steel, and of the many good men who have gone from Ionia to the land of shadows within the last decade or two, none will be more kindly remembered or deeply regretted. Farewell, friend. May you rest in peace.

BETSEY F. COMSTOCK

Betsey Fuller Comstock, born in Exeter, Otsego county, New York, August 11, 1800, died in Ronald, Ionia county, June 1, 1886. She came to Michigan in 1842. She was mother of twelve children, nine sons and three daughters.

JACKSON COUNTY

BY CHESTER TAYLOR

Mrs. Eliza Dixon, Pulaski, died February 17, 1885, aged 80 years.
Ezra Barnes, Parma, died March 8, 1885, aged 76 years.
John Whittaker, Concord, died March 22, 1885, aged ——.
Chas. Atwell, Hanover, died April 15, 1885, aged 65 years.
Mrs. Stephen Miles, Hanover, died April 24, 1885, aged 44 years.
Mrs. E. Burt, Concord, died April —, 1885, aged 44 years.
Marshall Fisher, Concord, died April —, 1885, aged 73 years.
Barnabas Fay, Norvell, died May 15, 1885, aged 68 years.

Mrs. Prescott, Hanover, died May 28, 1885, aged 71 years.
Mrs. S. Sweesey, Norvell, died September 6, 1885, aged 75 years.
Thomas Tucker, Hanover, died September 8, 1885, aged 85 years.
William Mitchell, Concord, died September 9, 1885, aged 61 years.
T. J. Drake, Hanover, died September 14, 1885, aged 68 years.
William W. Wolcott, died October 12, 1885.
Mrs. R. D. Hendee, died October 17, 1885.
William Knickerbocker, Jackson, died October 19, 1885, aged 86 years.
Mrs. Rachel Elmer, Arland, died October 21, 1885, aged 81 years.
Wordthorp Harrison, died October 23, 1885.
Samuel Lendrum, Blackman, died October 24, 1885, aged 75 years.
James Worth, Spring Arbor, died October 26, 1885, aged 80 years.
John French, Spring Arbor, died October 26, 1885, aged 74 years.
Elizabeth Waterstreet, Napoleon, died October 27, 1885, aged 70 years.
Mrs. Mary Heffner, Rives Junction, died October 28, 1885, aged 87 years.
Mrs. Henrietta Clark, ———, died November 12, 1885, aged 70 years.
Mrs. Amanda Britton, died November 12, 1885.
Allen Green, Napoleon, died November 16, 1885, aged 96 years.
John Putman, Leoni, died November 30, 1885, aged 81 years.
Mrs. Marlan Scutt, Norvell, died December 13, 1885, aged 64 years.
Phillip Smith, Parma, died December 20, 1885, aged 81 years.
Jeremiah Marvin, Jackson, died December 22, 1885, aged 81 years.
Thomas Mayett, Blackman, died December 25, 1885, aged 95 years.
S. Holland, Hanover, died December 25, 1885, aged 73 years.
Mrs. Ruth A. Harwood, Jackson, died December 26, 1885, aged 64 years.
Norman Webster, Concord, died December 28, 1885, aged 79 years.
Hiram Tuthill, Liberty, died December 28, 1885, aged 77 years.
Spaulding Welch, Parma, died December 30, 1885, aged 59 years.
Jacob Rhines, Sandstone, died January 20, 1886, aged 82 years.
S. C. Crafts, Blackman, died February 3, 1886, aged 71 years.
William Jackson, Casnovia, died February 4, 1886, aged 72 years.
William H. Darling, died February 5, 1886, aged 62 years.
Mrs. Mary Hawkins, Parma, died February 7, 1886, aged 91 years.
Mrs. Hulda Landon, Leoni, died February 10, 1886, aged 70 years.
Alonzo Ferris, Saginaw, died February 10, 1886, aged 89 years.
Abram V. Berry, Jackson, died March 24, 1886, aged 82 years.

WILLIAM W. WOLCOTT

William W. Wolcott, one of the pioneers of Michigan, was stricken with paralysis while walking along the streets of Eaton Rapids, Wednesday, October 7, and died Monday, October 12, 1885, at 6:30 P. M., aged seventy-eight years and nine days. Mr. Wolcott was born in Austerlitz, Columbia county, N. Y., October 3, 1807. His family long resided at Weathersfield, Connecticut, and the old building is still standing where his great-grandfather used to do business. In 1825 his father moved to Genesee county, and it was on the famous hunting grounds of the Seneca Indians that Mr. Wolcott acquired his love for hunting, that formed the chief pastime of his life. January 29, 1832, he married Miss Elizabeth Baldwin, who was born November 4, 1808, at Dorset, Bennington county, Vermont. She still survives the loved companion of more than half a century. He first came to Michigan in 1834, and having formed a traveling acquaintance with an old gentleman, they walked from Detroit to Ann Arbor. The cholera was raging in Detroit at that time. From Ann Arbor they took a stage to Jackson, following the trail which crossed the Grand River near the present site of the State prison. A man named Russell kept tavern at the crossing. Mr. Wolcott could have bought the prison site for $300 at that time. John M. Dwight kept a variety store, and Bill Bothwell was landlord of the Thompson House, which had Indian blankets for windows. Messrs. Blackman, Hamlin, Bailey, Moody, Durand, Russey and Allen were also residents, and constituted the nucleus of the present prosperous city of Jackson. The surveyors were running the Clinton road through Jackson when Mr. Wolcott arrived, and they were camped on the hill where Gov. Blair's residence now stands.

Mr. Wolcott and his friend, George Woodworth, followed the surveyors over the new road, through snow and rain, to Tompkins Center, where they resolved to locate a mill in the wilderness; but after retracing their steps to Monroe to visit the land office, they ascertained that the land they wanted was taken by another man. Thoroughly discouraged, Mr. Wolcott went to York State, but returned the following year and located the fine farm in the town of Hamlin, Eaton county, where he continued to reside for fifty years. At the time of his arrival a man named Booth, living at Onondaga, was the only white man in Ingham county. The land office was located in Kalamazoo, and Mr. Wolcott had to go there to secure his homestead, most of the journey on foot.

They were selling town lots in Battle Creek at that time for $25 each. Mr. Wolcott then went to Detroit and washed out a bushel of apple seeds at a cider mill, with which he started a nursery on his new farm, and furnished many of the present orchards in this section, but the project was not a financial success. He returned to New York for his family in the fall of 1835, but came back in the spring of 1837 to build his house and fix up before

7

moving here. He then went to New York State, bought a fine team, and with his family traveled through Canada to Detroit, and thence to Jackson, where he sold his team for $375 to Paul B. Ring and D. B. Hibbard, who used them in the stage and mail business. It was the finest outfit ever brought to Jackson at that time. Mr. Wolcott's subsequent adventures with wolves, bears and other wild animals would, if written out, form an interesting volume. He was very fond of hunting, and easily supplied his table with delicious game, but the hardships attending those days were numerous and severe. His trusty rifle was for years his steadfast friend when he came on foot to Jackson to get his mail, and it never failed him in encounters with wild animals.

Mr. Wolcott reared a family of six children—Grove H., William V., Mark S., Thomas C., Charles C., and Josephine. The latter died in 1861.

This aged pioneer who has gone to his rest was all through life a man of strict integrity and genial, kindly nature. The funeral took place from the late residence of the deceased Wednesday afternoon, October 14, and was largely attended by his many neighbors and friends, who loved and respected him as an upright citizen.

MRS. R. D. HENDEE

Mrs. R. D. Hendee died at the residence of her daughter, Mrs. H. M. Cole, 803 Waterloo avenue, Saturday evening, October 17, 1885, at nine o'clock. Deceased had lived in Jackson county since 1836, and had been a member of the Baptist church since its organization here.

WILLIAM KNICKERBOCKER

William Knickerbocker died at his home, 101 N. Blackstone street, October 19, 1885, aged eighty-six years, after a short illness. Deceased had lived in this county 49 years, locating in Pulaski in 1836. He was born in Dutchess county, New York, December 24, 1799. He was well and favorably known in this county, where he lived an honorable, upright life, and was one of the best of citizens. He was the father of Charles R. Knickerbocker and Mrs. Morris Knapp.

MRS. RACHEL ELMER

Mrs. Rachael Elmer, wife of Franklin Elmer, died October 21, at her home in Arland, Michigan, in the eighty-first year of her age, leaving an aged husband and five children to mourn her departure. Mr. and Mrs. Elmer were married in 1829 and have walked the path of life together for fifty-six years. He was the first town clerk at Leslie, and built the first frame house there. He served in the U. S. army from 1826 to 1837. Thus he breasted the storms of pioneer life and lent an earnest and helpful hand to the development of our State. The mourning husband and children have the sympathy of a large circle of friends.

WOODTHORP HARRISON

Woodthorp Harrison, so long known as the hotel-keeper at Napoleon, died October 23, 1885, from a cancerous affection of the face. Mr. Harrison came to this state from England and located at Brooklyn, in this county, some time about 1852, and by his own energy acquired a fair competency. He made many friends, and although he had almost reached the three score and ten years, yet his vigorous constitution would have carried him along some years more had he not been attacked by this fatal malady.

JOHN FRENCH

John French died at 1 o'clock on the morning of October 26, 1885, at his residence, in the township of Spring Arbor, of paralysis, in the seventy-fifth year of his age. The funeral took place at the church in Spring Arbor, Tuesday morning at 10:30. Deceased was a pioneer of Jackson county, coming to Spring Arbor from Ontario county, N. Y., more than fifty years ago, where he took up a farm from the government and has lived in the same place for half a century. He leaves a wife and five children, namely Moses J. French, Elizabeth, wife of John Denton, of this city, Maria, wife of John Cogswell of Spring Arbor, Martha French and Joseph A. French, of Spring Arbor.

ELIZABETH WATERSTREET

Elizabeth Waterstreet, wife of Christopher Waterstreet, died October 27, 1885, at the residence in Napoleon, of paralysis, aged seventy years. Deceased leaves a husband and sister to mourn her loss. She had been a resident of Napoleon for nineteen years.

ALLEN GREEN

Allen Green, of Napoleon, died Monday, November 16, 1885, at his residence, aged ninety-six years. He was one of Jackson county's pioneers, coming here from Oneida county, N. Y., in 1836, and settling in the township of Napoleon, where he resided for almost half a century.

JOHN PUTMAN

John Putman, of Leoni, died at 2:30 P. M., November 30, 1885, of paralysis of the brain, at the age of eighty-one years and four months. He leaves a wife, three sons and a daughter, Mrs. J. W. Solomon, of this city. He had resided in the township forty-five years and came there from Rochester, N. Y.

JEREMIAH MARVIN

Jeremiah Marvin died at his residence on Lansing avenue, Dec. 22, 1885, at 7 o'clock, P. M., in the eighty-first year of his age. He came to Jackson at a very early day, from Stafford, Genesee county, N. Y. His property was at one time estimated at $50,000, a considerable portion of it being 500 acres of land lying partly within the city limits, and 900 acres in Mississippi, which he willed, five years ago, to his wife. He leaves a wife and one child.

THOMAS MAYETT

Thomas Mayett died at the residence of his son, Thomas Mayett, Jr., in Blackman, on Christmas day, aged ninety-five years, nine months and thirteen days. He was born in Buckinghamshire, England, and came from there to Michigan in 1834, and has been a resident of Jackson county over forty-nine years. He was a member of the First Baptist Church and always a zealous Christian. He leaves one son and three daughters.

S. C. CRAFTS

S. C. Crafts died Wednesday, February 3, 1885, at his home in Blackman, aged seventy-one years. He came to this county from New York, in 1846, and was for some time in the grocery business in the city of Jackson.

GEN. WILLIAM JACKSON

William Jackson died at the residence of his brother, James Jackson, at Cazenovia, N. Y., at 11 o'clock A. M., Feb. 4, 1886. For nearly fifty years Gen. Jackson was a resident of Jackson county, coming to Leoni in 1838 and to this city in 1852. He was born in Cazenovia, N. Y., in February, 1814; he entered Union college at Schenectady, N. Y., when very young, where he was a classmate of ex-Gov. Austin Blair, and here, it is said, he gained the title of "general" from Dr. Knott, which has always clung to him. In 1844 he was a candidate for the legislature from this county and was defeated by an error in reporting the votes, which fact elected his competitor, Austin Blair. In 1852 he opened a grocery store at the corner of Main and Mechanic streets. After three years he moved across the street and located where Webb's drug store now stands, and continued there until 1860. He then, in company with Benj. Mosher, built a brick block, with a large hall above, on the site where the Pratt & Myers stores are now standing.

It was destroyed by fire in 1869, but the block was shortly after rebuilt in its present form. In 1859 Gen. Jackson was elected mayor of Jackson, and in this capacity he attained a wide reputation as a progressive executive. Gen. Jackson was a firm friend to many struggling young men and helped them to various positions where they subsequently achieved distinction and honor. He had a highly cultivated mind and has left many mementoes in prose and verse of rare literary excellence. Gen. Jackson never married. About a year before his death, having amassed a comfortable fortune, and being warned by a severe illness, he closed his business in Jackson and returned to his native village to die amid the scenes of his youth.

MRS. MARY HAWKINS

Mrs. Mary Hawkins, of Parma, aged ninety-one years, died of old age, Sunday afternoon, February 7, 1886. She was a native of Vermont, and came to this State half a century ago. One of her sons, L. D. Hawkins, is a resident of this city.

ALONZO FERRIS

Alonzo Ferris came to Jackson in 1846, and was agent at the State prison for one year, and afterwards keeper for thirteen years, and was appointed in 1847 as one of the State commissioners to establish the capital grounds at Lansing. He died in Saginaw on Wednesday, February 10, 1886, and his remains were taken to Jackson for burial. Mr. Ferris was born in Bennington, Vermont, in 1797, and was therefore nearly ninety years of age. He came to Michigan in 1833 and settled at Flint, where then there were but four families. When he took charge of the State prison in 1846 there were only 120 convicts confined. He leaves a son in Saginaw, with whom he lived while there, and two daughters in the city of Jackson, while many relatives and associates also mourn the loss of an old and valued friend.

A. V. BERRY

Abram V. Berry of Jackson died March 24, 1886, aged eighty-two years. He was born in Berona, N. Y., August 29, 1804. He was appointed colonel of a New York regiment before he came to Michigan, by Gov. Clinton, and has been known as Colonel Berry by the people of Michigan. He has been known to most of the inhabitants from one end of the State to the other by his public work as a contractor and explorer. He, in a common forge, made the first bar of iron made from Lake Superior iron. He was the first president of the village of Jackson, and its marshal for several years, and held the office of weighmaster when he died. A special meeting of the city council, March 25, passed resolutions of merit and condolence, and the council attended the funeral in their official capacity.

KALAMAZOO COUNTY

BY HENRY BISHOP

Martin Turner, died June 19, 1885, aged 81 years.
William Skinner, died July 1, 1885, aged 80 years.
Thomas Van Guilder, died July 14, 1885, aged 77 years.
John B. Ide, died August 15, 1885, aged 74 years.
George Crooks, died August 27, 1885, aged 81 years.
Robert R. Campbell, died July 13, 1885, aged 84 years.
Wilber A. Cooley, died August 17, 1885, aged 70 years.
Elizabeth Weller, died September 24, 1885, aged 80 years.
Gilbert Higgins, died September 1, 1885, aged 82 years.
Lucina Armstrong, died September 14, 1885, aged 73 years.
Samuel Prayles, died October 10, 1885, aged 79 years.
John Hogeboom, died October 24, 1885, aged 75 years.
Melankton Freeman, died October 24, 1885, aged 86 years.
Preston I. McCrary, died October 30, 1885, aged 80 years.
George A. Goodrich, died November 1, 1885, aged 61 years.
Susan Barney, died November 1, 1885, aged 76 years.
Adelia A. Clifford, died November 15, 1885, aged 72 years.
Joseph Skinner, died November 21, 1885, aged 84 years.
Hamilton Wyman, died December 9, 1885, aged 86 years.
Horace Sawyer, died December 29, 1885, aged 79 years.
James Mason, died December 28, 1885, aged 85 years.
Eli Johnson, died January 21, 1886, aged 88 years.
Benjamin Toby, died —, aged 89 years.
Harriett Watts, died February 9, 1886, aged 85 years.
Benjamin F. Smith, died May 1, 1886, aged 82 years.
Peter Knip, died May 14, 1886, aged 78 years.
Philo D. Clark, died May 20, 1886, aged 71 years.

KENT COUNTY

To the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:

The delegates from The Old Residents' Association of the Grand River Valley respectfully report that Robert Hilton, the President of that Association, who was also one of your Vice-Presidents, has deceased since your last meeting and with your permission present a copy of the memorial and resolution adopted, on motion of Thomas B. Church, on the occasion of his funeral, on the 16th day of July, A. D. 1885.

MEMORIAL

Robert Hilton, our late President, was born in New Hampshire, 1799; his youth on a farm was one of labor and limited school privileges. He was early apprenticed to learn the carpenter trade, and in that day apprenticeship meant hard work, strict discipline and careful instruction.

He pursued this vocation when duly admitted, in Boston, then in Utica, then in Detroit. In the latter city he, in partnership with H. H. LeRoy, took a high position in the trade. In 1836 he came with his family to the little settlement of Grand Rapids, in which place, subsequently a village, and then the present city, and its vicinity he has ever resided. He purchased a tract of land in the now town of Walker and commenced improvements thereon, and the "Hilton Farm," under his energetic management, soon became a noted point on the "Lower River." In 1848 he sold out and returned to Grand Rapids, where, as well as at Grand Haven, he had meanwhile superintended the erection of many buildings, then regarded as of much importance.

For several years he continued engaged in his trade principally, and St. Mary's Church (west side), a purely Gothic structure, is a durable monument of his skill. Vigorous in body and mind, he soon became quite prominent in social positions; in the religious circle, as a New Churchman and a Universalist; in politics, a firm and aggressive democrat. He was chosen one of the commissioners who, before the creation of the board of supervisors, governed the county. During his administration the court house was built on Fulton street park. He held several other offices in county, village and city with credit to himself and benefit to constituents. In his greater age he began a business more suitable thereto, and as agent for owners of real estate, and as a dealer therein, has been especially known to the present generation of our people. Living plainly, he accumulated a property, the product of frugality and industry, untainted by exaction and speculation. He lived without fear or favor of anyone, fulfilled conscientiously all trusts, earned high respect, which, amongst those who could review years of companionship with him as old settlers, and as age softened the originally positive and somewhat combative features of his character and conduct, became a warmer sentiment, and drew the hearts of his old associates to him as well as their judgments.

He repeatedly asked to be excused from the cares of the presidency of this body, filled by him many years, as he was bent down more and more under the inevitable burden of age; but this organization really seemed incomplete without that staunch-made, thorough-rigged, live-oak old man in the chair, and he was annually re-elected.

At the head of our column he goes calmly and even rejoicingly into the breach of death. Over his departure we cannot mourn; it is the natural, desirable close to such a life. Those near to him in blood relationship have cause of felicitation, not of grief, in the career and close thereof of this sturdy exemplar of the best hereditary characteristics of his native New England. Therefore

Resolved, That this Association do now proceed to the funeral of Robert Hilton, our deceased president, and render our last tribute of regard to him; recognizing the virtues of his life, the manly courage and christian submissiveness with which he passed away.

LENAWEE COUNTY

BY FRANCIS A. DEWEY

DEATHS IN JUNE, 1885

Jane Knight, Blissfield, aged 67 years.
Margaret Holliway, Adrian, aged 60 years.
Clinton Kelly, Macon, aged 56 years.
Jane Sheeler, Cambridge, aged 75 years.

DEATHS IN JULY, 1885

Edward Landon, Tecumseh, aged 70 years.
Rollin Hill, Morenci, aged 85 years.
Henry Gross, Riga, aged 70 years.
William Taylor, Rome, aged 70 years.
Levi Sherman, Rollin, aged 77 years.
Isaac Deane, Adrian, aged 74 years.
Homer Turner, Addison, aged 75 years.
Mrs. J. C. Clough, Tecumseh, aged 65 years.
Mrs. Wm. Knight, Blissfield, aged 80 years.
Joshua Kuder, Clinton, aged 74 years.
Mrs. Mary A. Lancaster, Franklin, aged 87 years.

DEATHS IN AUGUST, 1885

Mrs. Eliza Phillips, Fairfield, aged 74 years.
Mrs. T. T. Kneeland, Tecumseh, aged 73 years.
Ephraim Willard, Adrain, aged 74 years.
Mrs. Hannah Prettiplace, Madison, aged 92 years.
Mrs. Wm. Britton, Macon, aged 77 years.

DEATHS IN SEPTEMBER

Mrs. Phoebe Austin, Addison, aged 75 years.
Mrs. Lydia L. Seelye, Medina, aged 77 years.
Mrs. Alva Holt, Morenci, aged 69 years.
Artemita Merrick, Adrian, aged 75 years.
Whitman Ripley, Rome, aged 86 years.
Jonathan Lapham, Adrian, aged 69 years.
Emiline Himes, Fairfield, aged 53 years.
Mrs. O'Brine, Hudson, aged 83 years.
Nancy Van Fleet, Hudson, aged 86 years.
Reuben I. Bird, Clayton, aged 74 years.

DEATHS IN OCTOBER, 1885

Ellen Hagerman, Fairfield, aged 75 years.
William Bills, Hudson, aged 60 years.
Jonna Coryell, Clinton, aged 70 years.
Thomas Cripps, Blissfield, aged 70 years.
Thomas Blacker, Ridgeway, aged 78 years.
P. T. Hough, Rome, aged 75 years.
Seth W. Fenton, Madison, aged 78 years.
Deacon Farley, Medina, aged 80 years.
Helen Miscer, Adrain, aged 58 years.
Martha A. Childs, Hudson, aged 70 years.
John C. O'Dell, Fairfield, aged 74 years.
C. Bennett, Adrain, aged 83 years.

DEATHS IN NOVEMBER, 1885

Anson Fisher, Palmyra, aged 76 years.
Sylvester Slater, Canandaigua, aged 70 years.
Alice Hough, Rome, aged 77 years.
Mary L. Sheldon, Blissfield, aged 66 years.
Mrs. Lydia Furgeson, Cambridge, aged 80 years.
Mrs. Wm. Graves, Adrian, aged 82 years.
Mrs. E. N. Nichols, Tecumseh, aged 87 years.
Mrs. Elizabeth Quackenbos, Tecumseh, aged 70 years.
Mrs. Augustus Montgomery, Ridgeway, aged 76 years.
Mrs. Maria P. Lebaron, Tecumseh, aged 78 years.
Uri Decker, Rome, aged 80 years.
Wm. Word, Rome, aged 80 years.
Edward D. Pearson, Hudson, aged 66 years.

Isaac D. Miller, Ridgeway, aged 85 years.
Susan Drake, Woodstock, aged 74 years.
Mrs. Close, Medina, aged 75 years.
Stephen Spear, Seneca, aged 77 years.
Archibald Brown, Fairfield, aged 81 years.
Joseph Binns, Rollin, aged 76 years.
Mrs. John Brooks, Rome, aged 51 years.
Mrs. Almira Morse, Tecumseh, aged 74 years.
Mrs. Nicholas Stafford, Cambridge, aged 83 years.
Samuel Rose, Clinton, aged 79 years.
Ira J. Hagerman, Fairfield, aged 70 years.
Mrs. Russell, Macon, aged 75 years.
Mrs. Philip Morse, Fairfield, aged 81 years.
Bridget Kelley, Clinton, aged 74 years.
Alexander Pierce, Hudson, aged 80 years.
Eliza Taylor, Cambridge, aged 82 years.
Joseph W. Gray, Tecumseh, aged 81 years.
Amelia Brownell, Rollin, aged 76 years.
Clark Hall, Raisin, aged 77 years.

DEATHS IN MARCH, 1886

Wm. Freeman, Ogden, aged 90 years.
James Berry, Adrian, aged 75 years.
Mrs. Peter Clement, Adrian, aged 76 years.
Mrs. Anso Bakus, Adrian, aged 70 years.
Austin Thayer, Fairfield, aged 90 years.
George H. Mills, Hudson, aged 70 years.
Dwella M. Clapp, Adrian, aged 80 years.
Eveline Wilson, Madison, aged 85 years.
Orrin Hiscock, Raisin, aged 84 years.
Mr. Hardy, Franklin, aged 80 years.
Shubel Mosher, Tecumseh, aged 87 years.
Jesse Fleming, Adrian, aged 75 years.
Hannah Van Aiken, Hudson, aged 85 years.
Christopher Collwell, Hudson, aged 65 years.
M. Hendricks, Weston, aged 76 years.
Levi Stevens, Rome, aged 75 years.

DEATHS IN APRIL, 1886

Mary Lobraige, Tecumseh, aged 83 years.

Caroline L. Tindall, Tecumseh, aged 71 years.
Mr. Deane, Adrian, aged 80 years.
Geo. H. Kedzie, Deerfield, aged 66 years.
Catharine Soper, Dover, aged 75 years.
John Kessler, Clayton, aged 64 years.

DEATHS IN MAY, 1886

Mrs. David Coryell, Ridgeway, aged 70 years.
Geo. P. Wood, Blissfield, aged 70 years.
Noah K. Green, Medina, aged 82 years.
Mary Lapham, Rome, aged 96 years.
Albert Southworth, Raisin, aged 70 years.
Samuel Sweet, Adrian, aged 85 years.
Ezra De Puy, Clinton, aged 67 years.
Rebecca Chandler, Riga, aged 81 years.

One hundred and five pioneers have died in Lenawee county during the last twelve months, and we can most truly record that they were among the most estimable citizens of Michigan. The average age of the one hundred and five was seventy years. The oldest was Mrs. Mary Lapham, of Rome township, aged ninety-six years; there were thirty-two who died between eighty and ninety years of age; four over ninety.

MARQUETTE COUNTY

BY PETER WHITE

Mrs. Mehitable E. Everitt, wife of Philo M. Everitt, was born at Concord, N. H., December 8, 1818, and died at Marquette, December 1, 1883. She came to Michigan in November, 1840, and settled at Jackson, where she lived ten years. She resided at Marquette from 1850 to the time of her death.

OAKLAND COUNTY

BY O. POPPLETON

The following pioneers of Oakland county have died since the last meeting held in June, 1885:—

Names.	Place of Birth.	Year of Settlement.	Town.	Date of Death.	Age.
Alger, Josiah H.	Bloomfield, Ont. Co., N. Y.	1823	Troy	Dec. 17, 1885	75
Butler, Harvey	Covington, N. Y.	1844	Orion	Dec. 17, 1885	57
Buckner, S. D.	Warren Co., N. Y.	1836	Orion	Dec. 17, 1885	66
Bartlett, Dr. Richard	Glastonbury, England	1839	Independence	May 28, 1885	62
Cobb, M. G.	Manlius, Onon. Co., N. Y.	1833	Independence	July 19, 1885	73
Crawford, John	Donegal, Ireland	1839	Milford	Nov., 1885	78
Downey, Alexander	County Down, Ireland	1836	Groveland	Nov. 3, 1885	85
Draper, Albert F.	Marlborough, Mass.	1833	Pontiac	April 3, 1886	68
Deveraux, S. M.	Rensselaer Co., N. Y.	1847	Pontiac	June 19, 1885	83
Green, Ruth	Newark, N. J.	1834	Novi	Sept., 1885	87
Green, Polly	Springwater, Liv. Co., N. Y.	1824	Farmington	Feb. 27, 1886	83
Hardenborg, Helen		1822	Pontiac	June 3, 1886	69
Howard, Horatio N.	Pittsfield, Berks. Co., Mass.	1828	Pontiac	May 3, 1886	80
Horton, Henry W.	Oswego (May 31, 1797), N. Y	1830	Groveland	April 3, 1886	88
Hunter, James G.	Montgomery, Or. Co., N. Y.	1837	Bloomfield	Oct., 1885	75
Knight, Mrs. Potter	Bennington, Vt.	1836	Farmington	Mar. 3, 1886	67
Lapham, Norton	Palmyra, N. Y.	1825	Farmington	Jan. 1, 1886	79
McKnight, David	Hebron, N. Y.	1833	Oxford	Nov. 26, 1885	76
McKinley, John G.	New York City	1836	Commerce	April, 1886	51
Morehouse, Matthew	Canada	1837	Holly	Nov., 1885	72
Sprague, James M.	Seneca Co., N. Y.	1831	South Lyon	July 6, 1885	66
Stuart, Orlando G.	Sherman, Fairfield Co., Con.	1834	Avon	May 21, 1886	68
Toms, Martin M.	East Bloomfield, N. Y.	1826	Troy	Oct., 1885	76
Toms, Ira	Great Barrington, Mass.	1824	Troy	May 7, 1886	92
Tyler, Noah	Chili, N. Y.	1845	Orion	June 19, 1885	61
Wilcox, Lyman G.	Rome, N. Y.	1824	Avon	July 31, 1885	82
Armstrong, Theodore C.	Tyne, Seneca Co., N. Y.	1836	West Bloomfield.	Sept. 7, 1885	66
Barnum, William	Utica (Nov. 20, 1807), N.Y.	1836	Wayne Co	Nov. 18, 1885	78
Burch, Electa	Pomfret, (Feb. 11, 1803) Vt.	1832	Commerce	April 13, 1886	83
Benedict, Delia E.	Albany (1803), N. Y.	1851	Detroit	Nov. 14, 1885	82
Cox, Mrs. Harriet	Orwell, Vt.	1840	Southfields	Jan. 23, 1886	96
Clark, Mrs. Ester	Maine	1830	Troy	Feb., 1886	78
Everts, Mrs. Miles	Broome Co., N. Y.	1826	Bloomfield	Oct. 23, 1885	81
Fosdick, Mrs. Alvin	Kingsborough, Mon. C., N. Y	1842	Bloomfield	Dec. 31, 1885	75

PIONEERS OF OAKLAND COUNTY.—*Continued.*

Names.	Place of Birth.	Year of Settlement.	Town.	Date of Death.	Age.
Fosdick, William B	Clinton, Duchess Co., N. Y.	1833	Oakland	April 17, 1886	78
Fuller, Benjamin	Orwell, Vt	1825	Southfields	June, 1885	80
Frink, Mrs. Susan	Cohoctah, Steuben Co., N. Y.	1835	Troy	Aug. 6, 1885	73
Ganong, Rebecca Cole	Sussex Co., N. J	1835	Waterford	Mar. 11, 1886	81
Lockwood, John O	Albany, N. Y	1843	Highland	Aug. 14, 1885	70
Leland, Daniel	England	1840	Waterford	April 5, 1886	82
Olmstead, Harley	Pillstown, Ren. Co., N. Y	1830	White Lake	Oct. 1, 1885	82
Phipps, Chester M	Rochester, Oakl. Co., Mich	....	....	Nov. 27, 1885	53
Merryweather, Horatio	Yorkshire, England	1853	Springfield	Sept. 9, 1885	85
Ripley, Whitman	Hoosac Falls, N. Y., 1802	1836	Lenawee Co	Sept. 21, 1885	83
Rice, Benjamin A.	Grotton, Allegheny Co., N. Y	1848	Pontiac	Nov. 14, 1885	61
Selby, Warren B	1819	1849	Farmington	Nov. 12, 1885	66
Sandbrook, William	England, April 30, 1807 (killed by R. R. train)	1835	Bloomfield	Nov. 17, 1885	78
Sandbrook, Mary Ann	England, Oct. 26, 1814	1835	Bloomfield	Nov. 17, 1885	71
Sinclair, Laura H	Vermont, Sept. 16, 1804	1847	Lyon	Jan. 7, 1886	81
Shea, Mrs. Rebecca	1799	....	Pontiac	Nov. 22, 1885	86
Whitsell, George B	Warren Co., N.J.,Feb.2 1805	1853	Orion	Dec. 21, 1885	80

I have been enabled to collect the data and report the names of 51 pioneers whose deaths have occurred during the past year in the county. Aggregate number of years, 3,778. Average age, 74 1-13. Oldest, Mrs. Harriet Cox, 96. Next oldest, Ira Toms, 92.

BRIEF SKETCHES

Lyman G. Wilcox was born in Rome, N. Y., 1802, came to Michigan in 1823, returned to New York the same year, and in 1824 returned to Michigan and settled in Rochester, Oakland county. Died July 31, 1885. He was one of the earliest settlers in his township. Was ever noted for his enterprise, business capacity, integrity and benevolence. He had witnessed and assisted in the development of his county, which ranks second to none in the State.

Noah Tyler, born in Chili, N. Y., October 19, 1821. Came to Michigan in 1841. Settled in Orion on a farm. Moved to Pontiac in 1868. Was elected secretary of the Oakland County Agricultural Society for fourteen consecutive years. He was an efficient, capable, faithful officer. He died June 19, 1885.

Mrs. Polly Green, widow of Wardell Green, was born in Springwater, Livingston county, N. Y., September 26, 1802. Married in 1820. Settled in Farmington in 1824. Was the second white woman who settled in the township.

Ira Toms, aged ninety-two years, one month and twenty-six days, died at his home in Birmingham, May 7, 1886. Born in Great Barrington, Mass., March 12, 1794. Removed with his parents to Bloomfield, Ontario county, N. Y., in 1800. From there he went to Yarmouth near Kettle Creek, Canada West, in 1820, where he married Mima Crawford, daughter of David Crawford, December 9, 1821, with whom he lived until her death, May 2, 1866. He became a member of the Presbyterian Church, in Bloomfield, Ontario county, N. Y., in 1818, and assisted in organizing a society in Birmingham in 1834. Mr. Toms was a pensioner of the war of 1812, having been engaged in the service of his country, in the defense of the Niagara frontier, where he contracted a permanent disability. In 1824 he removed from Canada and settled in Troy, Mich., locating the w ½ of the s w ¼, sec. 28, town 2 north, range 11 east, and assisted in developing said township. He subsequently sold this farm and purchased on sections 29 and 32 in the same township, moving upon the lands in 1832. In 1856 he removed to Birmingham, where he lived until his death. Thus passed away one after another the very early pioneers of the State.

Henry Wisner Horton, born in Oswego, N. Y., May 31, 1797. Married Ada Jennings, in Pennfield, N. J., January 31, 1819, who died January 20, 1856. In 1830 with his wife and three children he came from Royalton, Niagara county, N. Y., by land, with a covered wagon and team, settling in Groveland, Oakland county, Michigan. Was elected town clerk at the first election held in the township in 1835, holding many offices of trust and responsibility in his township. He was the last of the old pioneer settlers of his township to pass over the river. He was one of the original stockholders of the Oakland Chronicle; was strictly a temperate man, and early took issue against the use of alcholic liquors as a beverage; was a member of the M. E. Church. In him was witnessed a pleasing example of happy old age. He died at nearly the age of eighty-nine years.

Harley Olmstead was born June 19, 1803, in Pittstown, Rensselaer county, N. Y. He made the first entry of government land in White Lake township, building its first house in 1832. He died October 1, 1885.

Horatio Merryweather was born in Yorkshire, England, August 20, 1800. Came to the United States in 1851, was employed in the government survey of Lake Superior country; settled in Springfield in 1853; served as surveyor for Oakland county for four years; died in Springfield, September 9, 1885.

DR. EDWARD BARTLETT

Dr. Edward Bartlett, a well known and much respected physician of northern Oakland, died at his home in the village of Springfield, Friday night, May 28, 1885, of consumption, aged sixty-two years.

The deceased was born in Glastonbury, Somersetshire, England, in 1824. He came to America with his parents in 1829, living in Onondaga and Cayuga counties, N. Y., until 1839, when he came to Michigan, and this county, with the family, settling in the township of Independence, on new land north of Clarkston village. Here the deceased spent his boyhood and struggled hard to obtain an education, the crowning motive of his early life. He read medicine with Dr. Abbey in Clarkston, and attended lectures at the medical department of the Western Reserve College at Cleveland, Ohio, Dr. W. G. Elliott, of this city, belonged to the same class. From this college he received his diploma and began practice in Springfield, Clarkston, and vicinity, where he practised until prostrated by disease. For almost a quarter of a century he had been postmaster, and had been town clerk several terms.

The following ante mortem poem was written by Dr. Bartlett in 1846, and published in the *Gazette,* to which he was a frequent contributor. While the sentiment as applied to mankind is of universal application, it is a fitting and appropriate benediction on his own life, and in his case the sentiment, "O that I may die with my friends," was gratified, and he passed to his long home amid the tears and caresses of those he loved most.

ANTE MORTEM

"What 'vails it where we barter life."

"O that I may die with my friends,"
  Is often expressed with a sigh;
But when grim death with his message attends,
  It will matter not where we die.
The place where we barter our life
  To pay the great debt which we owe,
Tho' it even would be in battle's strife
  Where life's last breath shall go.

Are there any who truly would grieve,
  Or for my departure would care?
I would be far away when my soul takes its leave,
  Their feelings I gladly would spare.
Let not a tear moisten the eye
  When my life shall be drawn near a close,
For I'd cheerfully live and as cheerfully die
  As the weary would seek for repose.

And if there are none to deplore,
  Sincerely to grieve when I'm dead,
Then, too, would I die on some distant shore;
  No false-hearted friends near my bed
To shed the deceitful tear
  With a cold, unfeeling heart.
I would rather the stranger alone should be near
  When this spirit from earth shall depart.

Aye, little, I ween 'twill avail
  Where we are when that debt becomes due,
We have lived, we must die, 'tis an oft told tale,
  Yet to us, as to others, 'tis true.
But when we are borne to our rest,
  Be it here or afar o'er the sea,
If we're fondly remembered by some feeling breast,
  How blest will our memory be.

SAGINAW COUNTY

BY CHARLES W. GRANT

CHARLES A. LULL

Charles A. Lull, one of the oldest pioneers of the county, died at his residence in Bridgeport, July 11, 1885. His demise was the result of no special disease, but rather the wearing out of the physical frame that had endured past the allotted three score years and ten.

Mr. Lull was born in Windsor, Windsor county, Vermont, May 17, 1809. He was the son of Joab Lull, also of Windsor. His father was a lieutenant in the war of 1812, and his grandfather was a captain in the revolutionary war. Mr. Lull received a liberal education for those days and learned the mason's trade. On reaching young manhood he went to New York State, where he worked a short time at his trade. In 1832 he came to Michigan and settled in Oakland county. The next year he removed to Saginaw and located eighty acres of land in section one, of the town of Spaulding, and became the first farmer to locate on the east side of the river in this county. He lived here eighteen or twenty years and then located one hundred acres in the town of Bridgeport, where he lived ever afterwards. After he located his farm in Spaulding he went to Detroit to enter it, and made the journey back with a yoke of oxen and a cart which he purchased there. He was married October 3, 1835, to Roxy Whitney, of Nelson, Madison county, N. Y., who died in January, 1880. They had three children, all of whom are living. They are Mrs. D. A. Pettibone, of Bridgeport, C. L. Lull, who occupies the farm in Spaulding, and Mrs. Isam Simons, of Bridgeport. In 1882 Mr. Lull married Miss Ward, of East Saginaw, who survives him. The hardships endured by this pioneer family were many. Mr. Lull raised the first wheat grown in Saginaw county. He took it to Waterford, Oakland county, to be ground, carrying it on a sled drawn by two yoke of oxen. On his first trip to Saginaw he came from Flint by canoe, and on arriving here was entertained under the hospitable roof of the late Judge Jewett, at Green Point. There were no roads from here to Flint at that time, nothing but Indian trails. Mrs. Lull made the first cheese and first woolen cloth ever made in this county. After Mr. Lull removed to Bridgeport he built a saw mill, which he operated for a short time, and in 1863 he sunk a salt well. He built the Center House at Bridgeport, which he kept for many years. Mr. Lull was an honest, upright, square dealing, highly respected citizen. In politics he was a republican, and during the war was a member of the Union League.

GEORGE A. FLANDERS

Wednesday evening, August 26, 1885, about 8 o'clock, George A. Flanders, a well-known lawyer of East Saginaw, died at the house of his father-in-law, Francis Krause, of 107 North Third street. He had been confined to his bed for thirteen weeks by an illness of a complicated nature. Mr. Flanders was born in New Hampshire in 1833, but moved to Michigan when but a boy. Later on he graduated from the Michigan University. When the war broke out he left for New Hampshire, and at once enlisted and went to the front. He retired from active service wounded and gazetted with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He then returned to Michigan and settled in East Saginaw, where he resided ever afterward. He held various offices, being elected justice of the peace in 1868, which he held until 1871, and prosecuting attorney in 1876, for one term. He was also at one time city attorney. Col. Flanders was a lawyer of marked ability, a genial gentleman and excellent linguist. He leaves three children, two girls and a boy, aged twelve, nine and six years, respectively. Four years ago his wife died, and since then he has resided with his father-in-law, from whose residence on the street mentioned the funeral took place on Sunday afternoon following his death.

A representative of the Saginaw *Courier,* in conversation with a gentleman who had visited Col. Flanders during his last illness, learned that the Colonel had given a history of his life to the gentleman, who related it to the reporter.

Some little time ago I sat all night as a watcher by the bedside of Col. Flanders. He was almost constantly in great pain, and in order to make the pain at all endurable, it was necessary for the watcher to keep up an incessant pressure with his hands upon the locality of the pain. The night was hot and oppressive, and sleep was utterly impossible. To while away the time during the weary watches of the night we conversed of many things. That is, he talked and I listened. In agony, and, as even he himself realized, stretched upon his dying bed, I was astonished at the elegance and purity of his language. To any one who listened to him, if even for but a moment, it was evident that he was a man of splendid education and even more than ordinary attainments. His sentences, albeit frequently interrupted by groans, were as finely constructed as those of any college professor in the land. Among other things he told me the story of his life, and as I sat there and listened to it, it was one of the most interesting tales I ever listened to. With the garrulousness of a sick man, he told many things which he perhaps under other circumstances might not have spoken. Such are sacred.

But some of the most interesting incidents of his life it will be no breach of honor to repeat, and a few of these I will relate.

He was born upon a small farm in the central part of New Hampshire 52 years ago. His father was a poor farmer, and it was all that he could do to furnish his children with the bare necessities of life. His eldest brother, an engineer and machinist by trade, some time in the '40's had emigrated to New Orleans, and by the year 1853 had amassed a comfortable fortune. He was engaged in the manufacture and sale of sugar-making machinery, and was the largest dealer in that line in the South. In the last mentioned year the Colonel was taken under the wing of this brother, with the promise that when he had completed his education and graduated from college, he was to go to New Orleans and become a partner with his brother. When he had completed his preparatory course and looked about him for a college, he chose the Michigan University, for the reason that the then professor of French at Ann Arbor was the best known writer of French text books in the United States. He made the study of French a specialty, as expecting to spend the remainder of his life among the Creoles of Louisiana, he knew it would be of great advantage to him. He also studied Latin and Greek, and was proficient in both those languages. He also made some study of the German language while at college, but in the main his knowledge of that language was gained after leaving college. In order to perfect himself in French, his summer vacations during his college course were spent at a little village near Montreal, where not more than one or two of the inhabitants spoke English, in the family of a well-to-do Frenchman, none of whose family talked anything but French. In the summer of '59 he graduated from the University of Michigan with high honors, in the same class with Prof. Adams, recently elected President of Cornell University, who, as I can testify, speaks in the highest terms of the Colonel's record while at the university.

As soon as he had graduated he expected to go at once to New Orleans to begin the business that was to be his through life. "But man proposes and God disposes." And as at this time the war clouds had already begun to gather, acting upon the advice of his brother, he concluded that it would be best to wait until the storm should blow over before proceeding south. In order that the time spent in waiting for the political horizon to clear should not be lost, he entered a law office, and for a year and upwards engaged in the study of mercantile law. This slight incident was the one which determined the profession which he should follow through life. After a little the storm which had so long been brewing culminated, and before the people of either the north or south realized, the war had actually begun. Almost with the first gun, the Colonel entered the army and soon rose to the rank of captain. After some little service in Virginia, he was ordered with the rest of the regiment to the Gulf, with the expedition under Farragut. His brother, who had been so long a resident of New Orleans, for a long time refused to aid the confederates, although offered high rank in their service. At last, however, as the conflict became more bitter, he consented to act as chief inspecting engineer of the confederate flotilla in and around New Orleans and as such had under his charge the engineers of all the transports, etc., of that department. When New Orleans had itself been evacuated, the officer in command suddenly remembered that, in the hurry of retreat, no steamer had been sent to bring away the garrison of the small fort that guarded the inlet from the gulf into Lake Ponchartrain. A transport was soon found, but the engineer had deserted, and none was to be found. At this juncture Chief Inspector Flanders came to the rescue, and himself took the throttle. The garrison was safely rescued and landed at Mississippi City.

The brothers had not heard from one another for many months, but within an hour after the steamer, at whose throttle stood one of them, had steamed away from the fort with the garrison in gray, another steamer landed at the fort a detachment in blue, among whom, in the uniform of captain, was the other.

A few days after, as Captain Flanders was walking down one of the streets of New Orleans, he found himself face to face with his brother. They stopped and looked at one another in silence.

His brother was the first to speak. "My God, George!" he said, "how could you have the heart to come down here to kill me and my friends?"

"It is not for that I am here," he answered; "I am fighting to preserve the union."

"Well, never mind," said his brother, as with tears rolling down their cheeks they clasped their hands, "we will not talk about that now, let us talk of home."

And so, in the captured city, these two brothers, and yet enemies, the one victor, and the other vanquished, sat them down in the shadow of the Louisiana palms, and talked of the brown farmhouse, nestling amid the granite hills of old New Hampshire, around whose hearthstone they had played so many years ago; of the father, no longer young, who still tilled the barren mountain soil; of the sister, now almost grown to womanhood, whom one remembered but as an infant at their mother's breast; and lastly of the gray-haired mother who had smiled above their cradles as she sang them with sweet lullabys to rest, who had sent them forth into the world even with her blessing, who had prayed for them as they knelt in unison beside her knee, and who, please God, beneath the northern stars, was praying for them yet, rebel and loyal alike.

Small wonder that they forgot that they were enemies and had sworn allegiance unto different flags.

A few hours they talked, and then they parted, the one to continue in the army, the other to become an exile in foreign lands.

"I cannot," said the elder, "take up arms against my blood relations, neither can I fight against my southern friends, and so there is no room for me under either the rebel or the union flag."

"He died," said the Colonel to me, "about a year after. The doctors gave his disease a learned Latin name, but I knew better—he died of a broken heart."

Soon after the fall of New Orleans Captain Flanders was promoted to major, and was placed in command of a regiment, the Colonel being upon detached service.

For upwards of a year he was the commanding officer of his regiment, which did good service in the swamps of Louisiana. At last his name was sent in to Washington by the general commanding that department with the recommendation that he be promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. The recommendation was approved at Washington, but the governor of New Hampshire, Walter Harriman, refused to sign his commission.

Learning of this he wrote the governor a caustic letter, resigned his commission, to take effect in thirty days, procured a furlough for that time, and came home. He went first to Boston to see his eldest sister, and found her in tears, and when he asked her what she had been crying about, she handed him a paper over which she had been crying. It was a copy of his commission as Colonel, signed but two days before, which had been sent her from Concord. He applied to the War Department to be assigned to duty in the army of the Potomac, but was curtly ordered to report for duty with his regiment in the Department of the Gulf. This he at once did, and served there until the close of hostilities.

Much more he told me that I cannot now relate. And now he is dead; at last he has solved the great conundrum of the ages: "After death, what?". A man of genial presence and a kind heart; a brave soldier, who served his country well; an honest man, he has run his race and has now fallen asleep. May he rest in peace.

CHARLES C. MILLER

Yesterday, September 24, 1885, another of the pioneers of Saginaw City was called to join the majority. Charles C. Miller died at his home on Bates street about 10:30 o'clock. The announcement was quite unexpected, as Mr. Miller had been around until within a day or two. On Monday Mr. Miller was at work on a residence he was building at the corner of Jefferson and Mason streets. He took a heavy cold that day, which settled on his lungs, and which confined him to his house, though not to his bed. Yesterday morning he ate breakfast with his family, and thought he would be able to get out and look after his building in the afternoon. About 10 o'clock he walked up and down the room a few times, saying that he wanted to exercise a little and gain some strength. In a few minutes he sat down and complained that it was difficult for him to breathe. Something apparently of the nature of paralysis followed, and in thirty minutes he was dead. Mr. Miller was sixty-three years of age on the 3d of July last, was a native of Germany, and had been a resident of this city for thirty-two years.

He was a builder by trade, and many of the business blocks and residences of the city were built by him. At one time he owned and operated a large planing mill and sash, door and blind factory, in what was known as the old red warehouse, which was destroyed by fire some ten years ago. Mr. Miller invested considerably in real estate, and at one time was counted well off. The loss of his mill by fire and the general depression in general business bore heavily on him financially. For the past few years he has been carrying on building on a smaller scale. Politically, Mr. Miller was formerly a republican, but for many years past has identified himself with the greenback party. He was its candidate for sheriff in 1876. He was under-sheriff during Henry Miller's last term as sheriff. He was at one time city treasurer. He leaves a family of a wife and seven children—five daughters and two sons. Three of his daughters are married. They are Mrs. George Spindler, Mrs. Fred King and Mrs. J. S. Furgeson.

DR. M. C. T. PLESSNER

The older citizens of Saginaw county, as well as many of the younger generation, were shocked on hearing of the death of Dr. M. C. T. Plessner, the venerable German pioneer and widely respected citizen. For years deceased had been troubled with an affection of the heart from which he died at 10:30, September 24, 1885. He was at the supper table, as usual, and in apparently good spirits. He retired at 10 o'clock, and thirty minutes later answered the summons that comes once to all the living. Drs. Ostrom and Davis were in attendance. He leaves a wife and ten children, having lost two children some time since.

M. C. T. Plessner was born in Striegau, Prussia, October 20, 1813, and was a son of Prof. Henry Plessner, of the university at Breslau, who died in 1835. The literary education of the subject of this sketch was received at the gymnasium, and his medical course at the University of Berlin. In 1849 he removed to America, locating in Saginaw City on August 10 of that year. From 1852 to 1860 he was justice of the peace and superintendent of the poor. In 1859 he received the appointment of captain of a company of State militia in Saginaw, but resigned the following year. He was president of the board of education ten years, and in 1868 was elected presidential elector. Dr. Plessner was one of the oldest members of the Masonic order in America, having been initiated in 1835, and organized the first lodge in this country, and had taken the thirty-third degree. He was also the oldest practicing physician in Saginaw county, and has always been noted for his progressive character and activity in every enterprise calculated to enhance the material prosperity of Saginaw. In 1881 he was elected president of the German Pioneer Society of the Saginaw Valley, and at that time delivered an able and interesting address, full of historical data.

EBENEZER THURGOOD AND WILLIAM BARBARIN

Two pioneers of this county were buried from the M. E. Church at Freeland yesterday. Ebenezer Thurgood died at the residence of his son, E. P. Thurgood, near Freeland, at 10 P. M., September 25, and William Barbarin at the residence of his son, George Barbarin, at Freeland, at 8 P. M., on the same day. They were both old pioneers of Saginaw, having resided in this county forty years. They were both warm personal friends, both Englishmen, and both died of old age. Mr. Thurgood was aged seventy-one and Mr. Barbarin seventy-eight years. Mr. Thurgood had known of the sickness of Mr. Barbarin, and only two hours before his death inquired for his friend.

THOMAS S. KENNEDY

Thomas S. Kennedy, a resident of Saginaw for forty-one years past, died from the effects of cancer, November 4, 1885.

Mr. Kennedy was born at Painesville, Ohio, December 1, 1820, and was consequently sixty-four years, eleven months and three days of age. He came to Saginaw in the fall of 1843. Two years later he returned to Ohio, returning here in 1847. In that year he was married to Mary E. Sitterding, the daughter of a German resident and a prominent mover in the affairs of Saginaw in its early days. He leaves a wife, one daughter and a son, Stewart Kennedy, the deputy controller, to mourn his demise. In the summers of 1847 and '48 Mr. Kennedy sailed the schooner Julia Smith, and was well known upon the lakes as a vessel captain. The Smith sailed upon the lakes, making all the shore points, and going as far as Buffalo. As captain, Mr. Kennedy brought to this city many old residents, among whom are P. C. Andre, George Streeb and others. Giving up the life of a sailor, he settled down in this city, and has lived here ever since. In the '60's he held positions under the city government of more or less importance. He served as marshal from 1862 to 1864, discharging the duties of that office faithfully and efficiently. He was the last marshal under the elective and the first under the appointive plan. He served for four years as deputy sheriff and as constable for many more. During recent years a cancer gathered upon his neck, which steadily and surely shortened his days.

OTTO ROESER

At 10:30 A. M., November 18, 1885, Judge Otto Roeser, one of Saginaw county's best known and most esteemed German citizens, died at his home in Saginaw City. The announcement was not surprising to those who knew the deceased best as they were well aware that for six years past he had been suffering from a complication of diseases that had made serious inroads of late upon a once strong constitution. The sad news came unexpected, however, as Mr. Roeser had been confined to his bed only about two weeks, and while his condition was worse at times than at others, none thought the end would come so soon.

Judge Roeser was born in Halle, Prussia, November 18, 1823, and was therefore 62 years of age on the day of his death. He graduated from the University of Halle in 1846, first entering the university in 1841; the first two years he took a theological course, afterwards commenced reading law and graduating as a law student, and being admitted to the bar in the court at Appille in 1849. In 1850 he emigrated to America from Saxon Russia, and arrived in Saginaw in June of the same year, settling on a farm on the Tittabawassee river in the vicinity of Freeland, where he followed farming for ten years. He was elected justice of the peace, and served the township in that capacity for four years, and for two years acted as township clerk. In 1860 he removed to Saginaw City and was appointed deputy register of deeds, which position he held for two years. In 1863 he was elected justice of the peace in Saginaw City, and appointed superintendent of the county poor, and in 1864 he was elected to the office of judge of probate, which he continued to hold until a year before his death.

Judge Roeser was a charter member of Germania Lodge, No. 79, and also of the Teutonia Society, Saginaw City, and for fifteen years had been a prominent member of the school board of that city, having acted as secretary of the board for eight years. The deceased leaves a wife and seven children, three boys and four girls, five of whom are minors. William Roeser, a brother, resides at Freeland.

CHARLES B. CHOATE

Charles B. Choate, a resident of East Saginaw a quarter of a century, died Jan. 11, 1886, at his residence on North Jefferson street, quite suddenly. Mr. Choate has been sorely afflicted with asthma several years, and that disease is attributed as the immediate cause of death. It is said that he had only been confined to his house two days. The writer is not in possession of the exact data, but in 1864 deceased was a member of the hardware firm of Shaw, Reynolds & Co., of this city, and subsequently he became the sole member of the firm, the other partners retiring, and Mr. Choate continued in the business up to the time of his death. He was born in St. Lawrence county, New York, and lived some years in Milan, Ohio, serving one term in the Ohio Legislature. From Milan he removed to East Saginaw. He was 67 years old, was a good citizen, retired and unostentatious in temperament, and in all the relations of life above reproach.

ALBERT M. ROOT

Albert M. Root was a native of Madison county, New York, and came to East Saginaw from Syracuse, early in 1863, in company with his partner for many years, the late A. J. Midler. They commenced business in a building just south of the free bridge. In 1872 the firm purchased the steamer L. G. Mason and subsequently the Daniel Ball, both of which were put upon the Saginaw River route between the Saginaws and Bay City, and when the Ball was destroyed by fire some years later they built the Wellington R. Burt. Mr. Midler died several years since and Mr. Root continued to carry on the business, subsequently purchasing the interest of the estate of Mr. Midler therein, although the firm has always been styled Root & Miller. The wholesale and retail liquor and tobacco house was removed from Water street to a building purchased by Mr. Root on Genesee avenue, and the trade of the house largely increased, aside from the boating business. Last year the business of the firm considerably exceeded $100,000, having an extent covering the entire northern portion of the State. While his business integrity was above reproach, personally Albert M. Root was a most companionable gentleman, always easy and courteous in his demeanor. He represented the second ward in the common council, and performed the duties of the office with conscientious fidelity, his term expiring last spring, and he would have been re-elected but for his positive declination. In the varied relations of life he was a useful and respected business man and citizen, and his private life was as quiet and unostentatious as it was spotless. Few citizens in this city had so wide a circle of warm personal friends, and his death was the source of profound regret. Mr. Root was 48 years old on June 17 last, and was a Master Mason. He leaves a wife and one daughter, Mrs. John Greenway, of Syracuse, N. Y. In his death, which occurred June 22, 1886, the city loses a public spirited, enterprising and generous business man, and his family a model husband and affectionate father.

GEORGE SCHMIDT

George Schmidt, a resident of Saginaw City for many years, died at his residence on Webster street, between Jefferson and Madison, Feb. 2, 1886. After months of patient suffering and lying at death's door for hours at a time, he at last succumbed to the inevitable and breathed his last at the time indicated above. The deceased was born on Jan. 27, 1827, at Kitzingen-on-the-Main, Germany. He attended the schools in that city up to October, 1840. In May, 1841, he went into the employ of a firm in Regensburg as salesman, in which occupation he continued until May, 1844. He then removed to a neighboring city and continued in the same occupation for about five years more. In May, 1850, he removed to this country, and in 1860 commenced farming near Vassar, Tuscola county. In 1853 he removed to Frankenmuth, where on January 3, 1854, he was married in the German Lutheran Church to Margaretha B. Bauker [Banker]. The result of their union was nine children, of whom six are living. In 1858 he removed to this city. He had served as township supervisor for seven years. Soon after removing here he was elected to the office of register of deeds, which he held for two years. At the expiration of his term of office he went back to farming. In 1861 he was elected as county clerk, which office he held for four years. About this time his health commenced failing and gradually grew worse. He soon gave up the life of a farmer, and removing to this city engaged in the real estate business. Since that time he has visited his native home in Germany twice, seeking the restoration of his declining health. He was affected with a complication of diseases, which ultimately were the cause of his death.

FERDINAND DIECKMANN

February 2, 1886, shortly after 11 o'clock P. M., Ferdinand Dieckmann, who for the past thirty-seven years has been identified with East Saginaw as one of its most esteemed citizens, breathed his last. He was taken ill about twelve days ago with an attack of pneumonia, and Dr. Hesse, his family physician, was called in to attend him. Mr. Dieckmann at first improved, but had a relapse and his disease developed into an attack of typhoid pneumonia from which he died at the time mentioned. Deceased was born at the town of Hovestadt, province of Westphalia, Prussia, Dec. 2, 1811, and when quite young learned the business of surveyor. He held later on a position under the government as surveyor of highways, and at one time was a non-commissioned officer in the Prussian army. In 1848, when not connected with the military department of the government, and in his character of a private citizen, Mr. Dieckmann, who had become strongly imbued with republican principles, joined in the rebellion against the government to establish a republic in Germany. The agitation which made that year memorable in the history of the German nation ended in the victory of the government, and those concerned in the rebellion had to flee for their lives. Mr. Dieckmann, who had been elevated to a position as commander of a large body of the insurgents, was followed closely and went first to Alsace, then a part of France, and thence he fled to Switzerland, narrowly escaping capture, finally arriving at Genoa, in Itlay, from which port he sailed for the United States in the latter part of this most eventful year of '48. The narrow escapes and adventures experienced by him before reaching the sea coast have been frequently told to many of his friends, and are of a very interesting nature. He first landed in New York, staying there but a brief time and then going to Cheboygan, in this State, where he remained about a year. Having purchased some property in East Saginaw, he came here to reside. This was in the year 1849, and our city had a decidedly primitive appearance. Many a time has the writer had long and interesting talks with the deceased over the days of East Saginaw's infancy, and he has told how he used to shoot deer on the site of what is now the Bancroft house. As a mark of the esteem in which he was held in those days it might be mentioned that he was elected by the citizens as a sort of arbitrator of differences between them, a grateful tribute to his judgment and recognized integrity. Shortly after coming to this city he engaged in the business of floriculture, and also of gardener and dairyman, and this business he has carried on up to the present time. In the summer of 1884 he with his wife went over to Germany and resided there until within a few months ago, when they returned to their home here. He was a member of the Germania society and was buried under its auspices on Friday afternoon at 2 o'clock, the Rev. Conrad Volz officiating. He leaves a wife and four children, two boys and two girls, all grown up, and departs this life at the age of seventy-four, respected, and universally liked by all who knew him.

ST. JOSEPH COUNTY

BY H. H. RILEY

O. W. Wilcox, Centreville, died July 2, 1885, aged 81 years.
Francis Gorden, Mendon, died July 31, 1885, aged 71 years.
John Huntington, Leonidas, died July 22, 1885.
Elizabeth McElrath, Mendon, died June 19, 1885, aged 84 years.
Jane Ann Proudfit, Constantine, died August 26, 1885, aged 74 years.
John Bower, Mendon, died September 15, 1885, aged 85 years.
Joseph Titus, Three Rivers, died September 18, 1885.
George W. Potter, White Pigeon, died September 17, 1885, aged 80 years.
William Wheeler, Flowerfield, died September 10, 1885, aged 75 years.
William T. Clark, Mendon, died November 19, 1885, aged 78 years.
Elizabeth Hill, Colon, died November 22, 1885, aged 84 years.
Isaac W. Price, Leonidas, died November 25, 1885, aged 52 years.
Horace Sawyer, Centreville, died December 29, 1885, aged 85 years.
Samuel Bear, White Pigeon, died January 2, 1886, aged 64 years.
Mrs. Chambers, Florence, died January 3, 1886, aged 83 years.
John Shears, White Pigeon, died January 7, 1886, aged 70 years.
Julia A. Doud, Mottville, died January 9, 1886, aged 77 years.
Benjamin Perrin, Parkville, died April 5, 1886, aged 74 years.
John Anderson, Centreville, died April 22, 1886, aged 86 years.
Henry H. Brown, Mendon, died March, 1886.
Captain Frederick Sweetland, Sturgis, died September, 1885.
Mrs. Joseph Code, Sturgis, died February 23, 1886.
Samuel C. Murdoch, Sturgis, died March 3, 1886.
Catherine Briggs, Sturgis.
Mrs. Henry Snook, Colon, died June 17, 1885, aged 56 years.
John Liddle, Colon, died November 11, 1885, aged 83 years.
Mrs. Dr. I. Sides, Colon, died June 27, 1885, aged 67 years.
Mrs. George Fister, Colon, died November 20, 1885, aged 84 years.
Elisha Hill, Colon, died November 22, 1885, aged 83 years.

Mrs. Michael Yetter, Colon, died November 25, 1885, aged 46 years.

Samuel Ensign, Colon, died January 25, 1886, aged 67 years.

Rev. Franklin Gage, Colon, died January 1, 1886, aged 76 years.

Mrs. George Harbster, Colon, died January 5, 1886, aged 58 years.

Mrs. Henry Grabber, Colon, died April 2, 1886, aged 66 years.

Isaac Eberhart, Colon, died April 28, 1886, aged 73 years.

David Shimmel, Centreville, died May 23, 1886, aged 66 years.

Miss Ewings, Constantine, died May 18, 1886, aged 85 years.

Mary A. Shepard, Constantine, died May 18, 1886, aged 77 years.

James D. Burr, White Pigeon, died May 14, 1886, aged 43 years.

Mrs. William McCormick, Centreville, died March 24, 1886, aged 79 years.

Eunice Mathews, Leonidas, died July, 1885, aged 83 years.

Mrs. A. Wetherby, Fabius, died October, 1885, aged 83 years.

Barak O. White, Fabius, died November, 1885, aged 70 years.

Mrs. Weld, Florence, died July, 1886.

Mrs. Horace Jones, Mendon, died April 12, 1886, aged 84 years.

Joseph Olney, Mendon, died June 1, 1886, aged 66 years.

Charles Casement, Constantine, died May 2, 1886, aged 78 years.

Charles Shucks, Constantine, died August 7, 1885, aged 45 years.

John E. Force, Constantine, died July 24, 1886, aged 65 years.

Aaron Heckman, Constantine, died March 9, 1886, aged 71 years.

Mrs. Richard Barnard, Constantine, died March 23, 1886.

Samuel Hass, Constantine, died July 19, 1885, aged 70 years.

Mrs. Adam Gentzler, Constantine, died August 20, 1885, aged 55 years.

James Houston, Constantine, died March 13, 1886, aged 66 years.

Thomas Broadley, White Pigeon, died in Illinois, 1886.

Mrs. Gilbert Foot, Leonidas, died September 16, 1885, aged 73 years.

Mrs. Eliza Ennes, died May, 1886, aged 70 years.

Mrs. C. Rosenhoeser, White Pigeon, died September 23, 1885, aged 49 years.

Mrs. Thomas Catton, White Pigeon, died October 1, 1885.

George Biesel, junior, White Pigeon, died December 29, 1885, aged 42 years.

Mrs. Nettie Clapp Van Fleet, White Pigeon, died March 28, 1886, aged 37 years.

Joseph Theurit, White Pigeon, died April 9, 1886, aged 77 years.

Mark Roach, White Pigeon, died April 11, 1886, aged 68 years.

Josiah White, White Pigeon, died May 8, 1886, aged 44 years.

Huldah Bryant, Burr Oak, died November 18, 1885, aged 86 years.

Mary Martha Adams, Burr Oak, died November 30, 1885, aged 66 years.

Mrs. Didoma Plumb, Burr Oak, died July 20, 1885, aged 73 years.

George Harts, Burr Oak, died February 24, 1886, aged 73 years.

Mrs. Nancy Kelley, Burr Oak, died March 18, 1886, aged 90 years.
Mrs. Harriett Young, Three Rivers, died November, 1885, aged 68 years.
Lewis Thomas, Three Rivers, died November, 1885, aged 79 years.
Mrs. Benjamin King, Three Rivers, died March, 1886, aged 75 years.
James Crawford, Lockport, died December, 1885, aged 65 years.
D. S. Hale, Flowerfield.
Francis S. Brown, Sturgis, died October 17, 1885, aged 61 years.
Elisabeth Hibbard, Sturgis, died October 13, 1885, aged 66 years.
Anna Jacobs, Sturgis, died November 23, 1885, aged 70 years.
Bracy Toby, Sturgis, died April 24, 1886, aged 85 years.
Jehial Palmer, Sturgis, died February 19, 1886, aged 57 years.
Malachi Roat, Sturgis, died April 24, 1886, aged 52 years.
Mrs. William Fitzsimmons, Centreville, died July 1, 1885, aged 55 years.
Mrs. James Adams, Centreville, died November 21, 1885, aged 66 years.
Mrs. Henry Lohr, Centreville, died February 19, 1886, aged 60 years.
Mrs. Aaron Schall, Three Rivers, aged 73 years.
Hugh Morton, Three Rivers, aged 64 years.
John Hamilton, Mendon, died July 30, 1885, aged 77 years.
Mrs. Samuel Coon, Mendon, died August 7, 1885, aged 85 years.
O. D. Hall, Mendon, died December 6, 1885, aged 78 years.
Mrs. Sarah Goss, Mendon, died December 22, 1885, aged 71 years.
Mrs. John Sinzley, Mendon, died February 15, 1886, aged 55 years.
Barbery Ansook, Colon, died June 2, 1886, aged 56 years.
Mrs. William Scherhorm, Nottawa, died June 8, 1886, aged 70 years.
Jonathan Hoats, Park, died April 17, 1886, aged 81 years.
John Hoats, Park, died June 7, 1886, aged 79 years.
Mrs. Samuel Frankish, Mendon, died May 1, 1886, aged 72 years.
Francis Gooden, Mendon, died July 31, 1885, aged 71 years.

TUSCOLA COUNTY

BY JOHN BAKER

(Secretary of Tuscola County Pioneer Society)

Jacob Russan, died about October 30, 1885.
Buell French, died about November 30, 1885.
Charlotte French, died about December 30, 1885.
Alford Tivy, died about January 8, 1886.
Ira Tappon, died about March 5, 1886.

Mrs. Hannah, died about March 9, 1886.
Granny Gunnell, died about April 27, 1886.
William Ayliffe, died about May 2, 1886.
Nathan Potter, died about May 6, 1886.

All of these were early pioneers in this county. Their ages ranged from 56 to 82 years.

VAN BUREN COUNTY

BY EATON BRANCH

THOMAS B. IRWIN

Died, at his residence in Paw Paw, on Sunday morning, November 27, 1885, at six o'clock, in the sixty-ninth year of his age, Mr. Thomas B. Irwin. Funeral services were held at the house on Wednesday, the 2d December. Mr. Irwin was one of our old residents, having lived in the county upwards of forty years. He was widely and favorably known, having been, until within a few years past an active and energetic business man. He was a man who possessed more than an average amount of ability and was endowed with a wonderful degree of originality. His apt, fitting and quaint comparisons and illustrations will not soon be forgotten by those who were intimate with him during past years. At one time he was the owner of a considerable amount of property, but during the later years of his life, he met with some financial reverses, that deprived him of much of his means. He carried a life insurance of $3,500, which will place his widow beyond the reach of want. Politically, Mr. Irwin was a radical republican, and was once regarded as one of the leaders of the party in this county. In 1858 he was elected to the office of register of deeds, and was re-elected to the same office in 1860. About 1870 he was appointed postmaster at Paw Paw, which position he occupied for about two years, when he was attacked with a severe illness that nearly cost him his life, and, being unable to attend to the duties of the office, he resigned in favor of Mr. G. W. Matthews. Although he apparently recovered his health, his intimate friends could see that he never recovered his full mental vigor. For the last few years of his life he was continually failing, both mentally and physically, and for some months past he has required almost constant care and watching. His bereaved family and friends will receive the most heartfelt sympathy of the entire community, in this their hour of sorrow and affliction. Tom, as he was familarily known, genial, social and hospitable Tom has left us. Let us hope he has found a better home, where sickness and death, care and sorrow, can never enter. This world would be a better world if it contained no worse men than our lamented friend, T. B. Irwin.

MRS. H. S. ALLEN

Mrs. H. S. Allen died in Lawrence, December 9, 1885. She was born in New York State in 1812, and came to Michigan in 1846. She was the mother of three sons, all of whom survive her.

MRS. H. C. WELLS

Mrs. H. C. Wells died in Lawrence, January 24, 1886. She was born in New York State, September 25, 1811, and came to Michigan in 1853. She was the mother of ten children.

MRS. MARGARET SAXTON AND MRS. ADELIA SAXTON BUTLER

The following is the prelude to Pastor Fish's sermon at the funeral of Mrs. Saxton and Mrs. Butler, at the First Baptist Church, on the words found in I Corinthians, xv., 56, 57, 58. Mrs. Margaret Saxton was born in 1807 in the town of Hector, Tompkins county, New York. She was converted in her youth and lived her religion all the remainder of her life. She died February 6, 1886, aged 79 years. She came west with her family about the year 1839, and settled in the town of Sandstone, Jackson county, Michigan. After about four years the family removed to Reading, Hillsdale county. Some six years afterward they came to this county and settled a few miles west of Paw Paw. She was a woman of good mind, and used it to the best advantage. Seeing things as they exist at a mere glance, her quick perception and ready way of speaking and acting, threw her into the front rank of active women. So prompt was she in decision and action, it made her life appear almost as one of impetuosity. Her convictions were all very strong, and her ideas well defined when her mind was fully made up. But we are reminded that this is a double funeral. Mrs. Adelia Saxton Butler was born in 1825, at the same place as her mother, and made the same changes of residence, following her to the better land only twenty-three hours after the mother bade us her final farewell. She was converted at the age of 18 and always adorned her profession with a well ordered life, and Godly conversation. These two mothers in Israel had many virtues and traits of character in common. They were both scrupulously honest and critically correct, bold in holding to the right, and earnestly contending for it, yet mildness and urbanity characterized all their movements, public and private. They were ladies of strong attachments, so strong that we may well suppose that if their friends were to become their enemies, they would still love them, to the fulfilling of the Saviour's command in his great mountain sermon. Their faith in the doctrines of the Bible seemed to know no wavering or change. Their anxiety to have their children and relatives come to Christ and be saved, seemed to know no abatement to the last. Many of us will remember their choked utterances, as they have often asked us, in our prayer meetings, to continue to pray for them, as they themselves prayed for them daily. God grant to lay up those prayers as rose leaves in his book of remembrance, till the answers come in the conversion of the whole family. Their love for the sanctuary seemed to have resolved itself into a passion. They loved their church and their church loved them. The remembrance of their being with us only a week before their departure will always be pleasant, and the assurance that they exchanged the church militant for the church triumphant is equally pleasant, yea, even transporting. They have gained a victory over death, the last enemy, and are now and for ever at rest, sweet, sweet rest. By arrangement with Dr. West of Lawton, he was to preach Mrs. Saxton's funeral sermon. So she told me as I came from the doctor's funeral, adding, "Now you will preach it." How strange it seems that the time has come so soon. If these sainted ones were to speak to their loving pastor from their seats in glory, and dictate the subject for me at this hour, I imagine they would both say, "Tell the people what Jesus has done for the world, and how to trust Him in order that they, through His grace, may meet us in heaven. Tell them of our triumphs and victories, and how we won them."

WILLIAM JONES

Mr. William Jones was born in North Wales, in Devonshire, on the 2d day of May, 1814. He lived in Devonshire nineteen years, and emigrated to this country in 1833, with but one friend accompanying him. He stopped at Prairie Ronde, where he remained six years, marrying Lucy Heath in 1839, and shortly thereafter removing to what is known as the Jones farm, in Bangor. Three children were born to them, one of whom died in 1864. His wife died in 1862, and 1869 he removed to Arlington, and, in January of the next year, was married to Melissa Johnston, who passed from earth in 1882. Mr. Jones was a hard-working man, and by prudence, careful management and honest dealing had accumulated a competency, which will be inherited by his two daughters, Mrs. Celia Eastman and Mrs. Lovisa Tweed.

ORRIN SISSON

Orrin Sisson, who died Sunday morning, April 11, 1886, was born June 1, 1809, in the town of Greenfield, Saratoga county, New York. He had been a resident of this State forty-two years, of Van Buren county forty years and of the township of Hartford seven years. A number of times he served his township in the capacity of supervisor and justice of the peace, and at an early day he took an active interest in the agricultural affairs of his county. He was a man of great industry and thrift, but was called to suffer heavily from fire a number of times, at one time losing over $6,000 in a single conflagration. Mr. Sisson was twice married, the first time to Roxanna Neygus and the second time, in 1869, to Mrs. Alvira Van Ingen, who survives him. Tuesday morning following his death, in the presence of a large company of the older citizens and pioneers of the township, his funeral services were attended and he was carried to Paw Paw for burial. The day was unusually fine and a number of his old neighbors from the vicinity of his former home, near Paw Paw, fell into the procession and assisted in laying his remains gently to rest in the old yard north and east of the village of Paw Paw.

LYMAN M. WITTER

Lyman M. Witter died in Lawrence, April 30, 1886. He was born in New York State in 1820, and came to Michigan in 1842. He was a thrifty farmer and a worthy citizen much respected.

MRS. FANNIE R. TAYLOR

Passed to the higher life, May 15, 1886, Mrs. Fannie R. Taylor, aged seventy-nine years and seven months, at the residence of her daughter, Mrs. A. D. Stuyvesant, of East Valley, Decatur. She was born in the town of Berkshire, Vermont. At the age of nine years she, with her parents, removed to Dunham, Canada East, where at the age of eighteen, she was married to H. Randall, and there became the mother of seven children, four sons and three daughters. In 1836 she emigrated with her family to Allegan, Michigan. In the year following they settled on Grand River, in Ottawa county, then a wilderness, principally inhabited by Indians, where she lost her husband and three children within one year. During her widowhood, her life was threatened by Indians, and, sick and alone, she defended herself and little ones as best she could, and there occurred her marriage with Alvin Taylor, whom she has survived seven years, and by whom she had six children. Her surviving children are Benjamin Randall of Des Moines, Iowa, Maynard Randall of New Tacoma, Washington Ter., Mrs. Sabra Auton of Paw Paw, and Mrs. Anna Stuyvesant of Decatur. Of her father's family of ten children, only three survive, one brother and two sisters. At the meridian of life she became a firm believer in the spiritual philosophy, of which faith she was ever a fearless advocate and in which she remained firm to the last. She was a faithful wife and a kind mother, ever ready to aid the sick, the needy and the afflicted.

JOSEPH PACKARD

Joseph Packard died in Hamilton township, Van Buren county, May 31, 1886. He was born in New York State in 1812, and came to Michigan in 1836.

WASHTENAW COUNTY

BY E. D. LAY

Thomas Shaw, died June 7, 1885, aged 75 years; a resident of York 55 years.

Mrs. Lucretia Knickerbocker, died June 12, 1885, aged 76 years; a resident of Saline 31 years.

Daniel Forshee, died July —, 1885, aged 75 years; an old resident of Saline.

Hon. Edwin Lawrence, died June 26, 1885, aged 77 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 50 years.

Ira Bassett, died June 8, 1885, aged nearly 86 years; a resident of Lodi 46 years.

Mrs. Ellen Maloy, died June 25, 1885, aged 81 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 50 years.

James McMahon, died July 10, 1885, aged 65 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 48 years.

Mrs. Elizabeth Hutchinson, died July 14, 1885, aged 88 years; a resident of Ypsilanti town and city 50 years.

Melancthon Sanderson, died July 29, 1885, aged 83 years; a resident of Augusta 32 years.

Arthur Coe, died August 18, 1885, aged 83 years; a resident of York and Ypsilanti city 49 years.

Edwin A. Platt, died August 21, 1885, aged 85 years; a resident of Pittsfield 52 years.

James O'Neil, died August 29, 1885, aged 105 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 45 years.

James Hicks, died September 22, 1885, aged 61 years; a resident of Lodi 55 years.

Mrs. Harriet Crane, died September 20, 1885, aged 53 years; a resident of Saline 53 years.

Hiram McCartney, died September 27, 1885, aged 83 years; a resident of Augusta 47 years.

James O. Thompson, died October 5, 1885, aged 92 years; a resident of Superior town 53 years.

John Switzer, died October 15, 1885, aged 83 years; an old resident of Saline.

Mrs. Hannah Wiard, died November 12, 1885, aged 81 years; a resident of Ypsilanti town 52 years.

Henry W. Kellogg, died November 17, 1885, aged 74 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 40 years.

Mrs. Coon Redner, died November 28, 1885, aged 80 years; an old resident in county.

Daniel Donahue, died November 27, 1885, aged 60 years; an old resident of Augusta.

Addison Fletcher, died December 12, 1885, aged 75 years; a resident of Ypsilanti 35 years.

John Van Fleet, died December 2, 1885, aged 76 years; a resident of Dexter 46 years.

Mrs. Maria Temper, died December 9, 1885, aged 83 years; a resident of Scio 53 years.

Mrs. Timothy Showerman, died December 21, 1885 (age not known); an old resident of Ypsilanti city.

William Densmore, died December 22, 1885, aged 70 years; a resident of Ypsilanti town 60 years.

James B. Arms, died December 17, 1885, aged 85 years; a resident of Webster 51 years.

Miss Martha E. Wellman, died December 9, 1885, aged 69 years; a resident of county 52 years.

George Gill, died December 31, 1885, aged 77 years; an old resident of Superior town.

Mrs. Maria Forsyth, died December 31, 1885, aged 69 years; a resident of this county 52 years.

Mrs. Abigail Ewers, died January 5, 1886, aged 90 years; a resident of Augusta 50 years.

Samuel M. Vought, died January 3, 1886, aged 68 years; a resident of Superior and Ypsilanti 51 years.

John McIntyre, died January 6, 1886, aged 96 years; a resident of Northfield 55 years.

John Quigley, died January —, 1886, aged 55 years; a resident of Northfield and Ann Arbor 50 years.

James M. Nichols, died January 12, 1886, aged 75 years; a resident of Pittsfield and Ypsilanti city 54 years.

Mrs. Phebe Wycoff, died January 14, 1886, aged 86 years; a resident of Salem 60 years.

Orrin Thatcher, died January 20, 1886, aged 62 years; an old resident of Chelsea.

Judson Wilson, died January 25, 1886, aged 66 years; an old resident of this county.

Henry Hammond, died February 1, 1886, aged 79 years; an old resident of this county.

Mrs. Patty Kenney, died February 2, 1886, aged 94 years; an old resident of this county.

Chester Perry, died February 10, 1886, aged 87 years; came to Ypsilanti nearly 60 years since.

Miss Amy K. Churchill, died February 6, 1886, aged 72 years; a resident of Ypsilanti city and town 60 years.

Mrs. Edward Beadner, died February 7, 1886, aged 66 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 46 years.

Mrs. R. G. Laubargayen, died February —, 1886 (age not known); old pioneer of Lima.

Mrs. Ann E. Hammond, died March 6, 1886, aged 70 years; a resident of county 50 years.

Ira Waterbury, died March 12, 1886, aged 81 years; a resident of Ypsilanti town 32 years.

Mrs. Calista Davis, died March 27, 1886, aged 62 years; a resident of Ypsilanti city 52 years.

Bernard Peyton, died April 5, 1886, aged 60 years; an old resident of Ypsilanti town.

Frank McConnell, died April 13, 1886, aged 84 years; a resident of county 44 years.

Mrs. Catharine Donovan, died April 9, 1886, aged 69 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 46 years.

Josiah Rundall, died April 13, 1886, aged 77 years; an old resident of Pittsfield.

Mrs. Harriet N. Rexford, died April 16, 1886, aged 70 years; a resident of Ypsilanti city 49 years.

Mrs. Phebe L. Hunt, died April 26, 1886, aged 85 years; a resident of Lodi 58 years.

Homer Lake, died April 26, 1886, aged 70 years; a resident of the county 53 years.

Mrs. W. H. Dell, died April 16, 1886, aged 73 years; a resident of Saline 41 years.

Allen Crittenden, died May 10, 1886, aged 76 years; a resident of Pittsfield 55 years.

Mrs. Elizabeth Nichols, died May 10, 1886, aged 69 years; settled in Pontiac in 1822, and had resided in Ann Arbor the past 25 years.

Peter B. Ingalls, died June 1, 1886, aged 73 years; an old resident of Superior town and Ann Arbor.

The oldest person was James O'Neil, died August 29, 1885, aged 105 years; a resident of Ann Arbor 45 years.

The average ages of the deceased are as follows:

Over 100 years of age	1
Between 95 and 100 years of age	1
Between 90 and 95 years of age	3
Between 85 and 90 years of age	7
Between 80 and 85 years of age	11
Between 75 and 80 years of age	11
Between 70 and 75 years of age	7
Between 65 and 70 years of age	11
Between 60 and 65 years of age	4
Between 55 and 60 years of age	1
Between 50 and 55 years of age	1
Whole number	58

Average age, 76 1-8 years.

There are none of those persons that have died within the last year who were members of this society, but some of them were members of the Washtenaw county pioneer society, and the following three persons were prominent persons in society in the county:

Hon. Edwin Lawrence, of Ann Arbor, died June 26, 1885, aged 77 years; resident of Ann Arbor for 50 years. He had been circuit judge of that district for several years, and had held other important offices besides, being one of the best counsellors in the county.

James McMahon, died July 10, 1885, aged 65 years; resident of Ann Arbor 48 years. Mr. McMahon had held the office of county clerk one or more terms, supervisor several years, circuit court commissioner and other offices in the county, and almost all the time was called to fill some important office in the county.

Allen Crittenden, died May 10, 1886, aged 76 years, resident in Pittsfield 55 years. Mr. Crittenden had held the office of supervisor 15 years, and was one of the directors of the Washtenaw insurance company for several years, was frequently called upon to settle estates, and was one of the ruling elders in the Stony Creek Presbyterian Church for several years; and was one of the elders of the Saline Presbyterian Church at the time of his death.

WAYNE COUNTY

BY PHILO PARSONS

CHAUNCY HURLBUT

Chauncy Hurlbut died peaceably at his residence, No. 661 Jefferson avenue, at 5 o'clock P. M., September 9, 1885. He was born in 1803, in New York, and came to Detroit in 1825 with Cullen Brown, worked at his trade of harness maker for a few years, and then formed the copartnership of Dean & Hurlbut. The firm had carried on the saddlery and harness trade for three years when Mr. Hurlbut left it to go into the grocery business with his brother-in-law, Alexander McArthur. The firm had an existence of but a few years, Mr. McArthur leaving the city for Corunna. In 1837 Mr. Hurlbut built the store at No. 50 Woodward avenue, where he engaged in the general grocery trade up to a short time before his death. His public services began in 1840, when he served a term as alderman of the second ward, and again in 1841. In 1857 he was appointed sewer commissioner, an office to which he was reappointed in 1859. In 1861 he was appointed to the board of water commissioners in place of John V. Reuhle, who entered the army, and was reappointed to this board in 1868, at the expiration of the term of S. G. Wight. He had been attached to the water board ever since, and was its president when he died.

In 1837 he was elected foreman of engine No. 1 of the old fire department, was appointed chief engineer of the department by the council in 1837, and again in 1842. He was always an active member of the Detroit mechanics' society, and was its president in 1835. When the merchants' exchange and board of trade was formed, at a meeting over which C. C. Trowbridge presided, he was chosen one of the directors with John Owen and B. L. Webb. In 1863 he assisted in organizing the Second National bank, and was a member of the board of directors continuously from its organization. He leaves a wife, whom he married in 1831, and a brother, Francis Hurlbut, who resides in Booneville, N. Y. He had no children.

The following letter, which is characteristic of the man, is preserved in Farmer's History of Detroit:

DETROIT, MARCH 31, 1841.

John Owen, President Fire Department:

DEAR SIR—Inclosed you will find a warrant on the city treasurer for $100, which I received for services as chief engineer of the fire department. Being a believer in Franklin's doctrine that no man should grow rich by the emoluments of office, I remit the warrant to you for the benefit of the fire department.

CHAUNCY HURLBUT.

GEORGE C. BATES

Hon. George C. Bates, a Detroit pioneer, and in many respects one of the most prominent men originating here, died Thursday night, Feb. 11, 1886, at Denver, Col., of inflammation of the bowels, after an illness of a week. Mr. Bates was in his seventy-fourth year, but hale and well preserved. He was all his life a successful practicing lawyer, and did a large legal business in Denver. He died however in comparatively poor circumstances.

George C. Bates was born in Canandaigua, N. Y., in 1812. He worked on a farm and attended common schools until his twelfth year. He prepared for college in the Canandaigua Academy. He graduated from Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y., August 5, 1831. He studied law in the office of John C. Spencer in New York for some time. He arrived in Detroit May 13, 1833, and that fall entered the office of Cole & Porter. May 5, 1834, he passed an all day examination and was admitted to the bar. One of the examining committee was Hon. Daniel Goodwin, still living in Detroit. He practiced law in Detroit for several years. President W. H. Harrison appointed him district attorney for Michigan. He held the office four years. For several years following his retirement he was largely engaged in defending suits brought by the government. He was the Whig candidate for congress in this district in 1848 but was defeated. In 1849 he was again named district attorney. He held this place until 1852 when he resigned. In this year he stumped California for Scott. In the campaign of 1856 he spoke throughout Michigan, Illinois, and Wisconsin for Fremont. He was one of the most celebrated campaign orators of those exciting times in national history. He practiced law in Chicago from 1861 to 1871, and lost much property in the great fire. In 1871 he was appointed by President Grant United States attorney for Utah. He acted efficiently in this position, and on his retirement became the counsellor of the Mormon Church for two years. In January, 1877, he returned to this city and resumed the practice of his profession. In the days of the great Leadville excitement he removed there and thence went to Denver, where he died. He was a brilliant public speaker and a fine and ready writer. Mr. Bates was representative from Michigan to the whig National Convention held at Harrisburg in 1839, at which Harrison and Tyler were nominated, and was the oldest surviving delegate to the national convention from Michigan. He was also one of the earliest alderman of the city of Detroit. His last visit to Detroit was in the fall of 1884. His only son, Major Kenzie Bates, died here about two years ago.

HENRY N. WALKER

After a long illness Henry N. Walker, an old and prominent citizen of Detroit, died at his residence, 1016 Jefferson avenue, at 2.45 A. M., February 24, 1886. Mr. Walker has been closely identified with the history of Detroit since 1835, when he came here from Chautauqua county, N. Y. He brought with him a diploma from an academy at Fredonia, and entered the law office of Farnsworth & Bates as a student. In due time he was admitted to practice, and finally to a junior interest in the firm. Mr. Farnsworth was eventually elected circuit judge and withdrew from the firm, and a few years afterwards Mr. Bates retired from active practice. The firm was then reorganized under the name of Walker, Douglas and Campbell. Mr. Walker in early life identified himself with the temperance movement and was closely allied to it up to the day of his death. In 1845 he became attorney-general of the State, a position he held two years. Afterwards he was appointed to the honorary position of historiographer of the city of Detroit, and while in that position collected many valuable manuscripts which are now in possession of the public library. In 1844 Mr. Walker was elected to the lower branch of the State legislature, and was afterward appointed reporter to the supreme court. In 1849 Mr. Walker resigned this position and organized the Detroit Savings Bank, of which corporation he was elected president. In 1856 Mr. Walker became president of the Detroit and Milwaukee railroad, a position he held until 1863. In 1859 he was appointed postmaster, but was removed when the republicans came into power in 1860. After his retirement Mr. Walker became connected in an editorial capacity with the Detroit *Free Press,* but in 1875 resigned his position upon the paper and the western associated press, which had been organized while he was connected with the *Free Press.* Mr. Walker was also identified with the first organization of the Canadian Great Western railway, the first direct railway route to the seaboard ever built from Detroit. Mr. Walker married, late in life, Miss Emily Norvell, a daughter of United States Senator John Norvell. He leaves a widow and three children.

Relative to Mr. Walker, the Detroit *Free Press* said: In the death of Henry N. Walker, whose brief biography we published yesterday, the *Free Press* loses a firm and steadfast friend, whose counsel and experience were always at its service and always highly prized. He was for many years our honored chief, and loved no less than honored. During that period he made himself a place, not only in journalism, but in the hearts of his associates. A kinder man or better friend never drew breath. He was not by nature or temperament an active man; but in the service of his friends he became the very incarnation of activity and energy. And as he had many friends—as many probably, as were ever vouchsafed to any man—his life up to the time of his retirement from business was a life of ceaseless activity. As a journalist Mr. Walker was earnest, fluent and forcible. He never jumped rashly to conclusions; but when he had traced with the keen eye of the trained lawyer the exact ground to be covered he covered it without any circumlocution or evasion. He strengthened materially during his connection with the *Free Press* the ties that bound it to the democratic party with whose principles he was in sincere and ardent sympathy. And it is to him and his influence that the *Free Press* is largely indebted for the commanding position it has so long held and now holds in the councils of the party. In his public life Mr. Walker was wise, able and faithful. He had in no ordinary measure the faculty, as valuable as it is rare, of imbuing men, even utter strangers, with his own confidence, his own faith and hopes. An ardent believer in the future of Michigan he impressed that belief upon others and greatly aided thereby in building up the State in many directions. In despite of those reverses of fortune which came to him in later life and which might have been expected to embitter him, Mr. Walker steadily maintained his cheerful habit and even multiplied his enjoyments to the best and most rational and lasting and satisfying pleasures of life—the pleasures that surround a man who retires from the world's irritating bustle into the atmosphere of a happy home, to whose happiness he himself has been a generous contributor. He had partaken of public honors; had felt the thrilling inspiration of popular applause; had been a leading actor in many of the largest commercial adventures of his day; had seen all Europe; had known life in its most alluring aspects, and had earned by zeal, directed by ability and judgment, those dignities according to the measure of which men largely reckon on success. Yet home, family—the placid peace of an ideal domestic relation—was to him more than honors, more than fame, more than material fortune. It is for the qualities of head and mind and heart which made this possible that Mr. Walker will be longest remembered.

LIST OF MEMBERS OF MICHIGAN PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

(Continued from Page 119, Pioneer Collections, Vol. 8.)

Number.	Names.	Place of Birth.		Date of Birth.	Place and Date of First Residence in Michigan.			Present Residence.	
		Town or Village.	State.		Town.	County.	Date.	P.O.Address.	County.
634	Thomas M. Wilson	Shelburn, Franklin Co.	Mass.	Jan. 6, 1821	New Baltimore	Macomb	July, 1855	Lansing	Ingham.
635	Edward W. Peck	West Bloomfield	New York	Mar. 19, 1807	Troy	Oakland	Oct. 1, 1851	Pontiac	Oakland.
636	Dr. Henry H. Hurd	Union City	Michigan	May 3, 1843	Union City	Michigan	May 3, 1843	Pontiac	Oakland.
637	John S. Huston	Geneva	New York	Oct. 19, 1823	Ann Arbor	Washtenaw	Aug., 1830	Williamston.	Ingham.
638	Alonzo H. Owens	Steuben	New York	Dec. 5, 1823	Grand Blanc	Genesee	Aug., 1835	Venice	Shiawassee.
639	George M. Dewey	Canandaigua	New York	Jan. 1, 1817	Detroit	Wayne	1837	Flint	Genesee.
640	Ellen C. Dewey	Batavia	New York	July 8, 1828	Flint	Genesee	1842	Flint	Genesee.
641	Mrs. Clarissa Van Every	Eaton	New York	Mar. 15, 1815	Bruce	Macomb	June 9, 1832	Jackson	Jackson.
642	Enos Goodrich	Sempronius	New York	Aug. 11, 1813	Atlas	Lapeer	May 20, 1836	Fostoria	Tuscola.
643	John C. Patterson	Eckford, Calhoun Co.	Michigan	Mar. 27, 1838	Eckford	Calhoun	Mar. 27, 1838	Marshall	Calhoun.
644	Edwin W. Keightley.	Van Buren	Indiana	Aug. 7, 1843	White Pigeon	St. Joseph	April 24, 1865	Constantine.	St. Joseph.
645	Benjamin F. Hinman	Castleton	Vermont	Aug. 27, 1811	Detroit	Wayne	Sept., 1836	Battle Creek	Calhoun.
646	Frank A. O'Brien	Monroe	Michigan	June 7, 1851	Monroe	Monroe	June, 1851	Kalamazoo	Kalamazoo.
647	George A. Smith	Danbury	Conn.	Mar. 8, 1825	Somerset	Hillsdale	June, 1839	Somerset	Hillsdale.
648	L. D. Watkins	Keene	New Hampshire	Oct. 13, 1828	Columbia	Jackson	May, 1834	Norvell	Jackson.
649	Henry B. Baker	Brattleboro	Vermont	Dec. 29, 1837	Bunker Hill	Ingham	1849	Lansing	Ingham.
650	Wolcott B. Williams.	Brooklyn	Conn.	Aug. 13, 1823	Charlotte	Eaton	Dec., 1853	Charlotte	Eaton.
651	F. H. Conant	Albany	New York	Sept. 19, 1815	Coldwater	Branch	June, 1865	Coldwater	Branch.
652	M. K. North	Lansing	New York	Oct. 8, 1826	Lansing	Ingham	June 5, 1839	Alaiedon	Ingham.
653	Martin Hudson	East Hempsted	England	May 4, 1819	Lansing	Ingham	1859	Lansing	Ingham.

654	Sarah T. Merrifield...	Penn Yan.........	New York......	Oct. 23, 1832	Lansing.......	Ingham.....	Oct. 28, 1848	Lansing.....	Ingham.
655	Mrs. Jerome Walton..	Gorham...........	New York......	Aug. 31, 1827	Oakland......	Oakland....	Mar. 3, 1839	Ypsilanti...	Washtenaw.
656	Alice J. Watson......	Plymouth.........	Michigan........	June 3, 1845	Plymouth.....	Wayne.....	June 3, 1845	G'd Rapids..	Kent.
657	Mrs. H. P. Pratt.....	Homer...........	New York......	May 10, 1834	Flint.........	Genesee.....	Sept., 1837	Lansing.....	Ingham.
653	David Clark.........	Castleton..........	Vermont........	June 13, 1817	Pontiac.......	Oakland....	July, 1833	Eagle.......	Clinton.
659	Laura E. Burr.......	Pembroke.........	New York......	Feb. 29, 1824	Lansing.......	Ingham.....	Aug. 11, 1847	Lansing.....	Ingham.
660	Charles Baldwin.....	North Crawford....	Conn...........	Oct. 9, 1803	Avon.........	Oakland....	Sept. 20, 1830	Pontiac.....	Oakland.
661	James Gould........	De Peyster........	New York......	Nov. 24, 1831	Moscow.......	Hillsdale....	July 19, 1836	Jackson.....	Jackson.
662	William Drake.......	Lyons............	New York......	Mar. 22, 1828	Amboy.......	Hillsdale....	Dec., 1838	Amboy.....	Hillsdale.
663	Cyrus G. Luce.......	Windsor..........	Ohio...........	July 2, 1824	Gilead........	Branch.....	Aug., 1849	Gilead......	Branch.
664	Albert G. Dorrance...	Briste............	New York......	May 21, 1827	Howell.......	Livingston..	Oct., 1842	Lansing.....	Ingham.
665	Frederick Fowler....	Perry............	Ohio...........	Feb. 5, 1816	Adams.......	Hillsdale....	Nov. 10, 1834	Reading....	Hillsdale.
666	E. M. Cutcheon......	Dryden..........	New York......	Aug. 8, 1845	Albion........	Calhoun....	May, 1846	Oscoda.....	Iosco.
667	J. G. Wait..........	York.............	New York......	Nov. 22, 1811	Sturgis.......	St. Joseph..	1833	Sturgis.....	St. Joseph.
668	S. F. Brown.........	Loudon Co........	Virginia.........	Dec. 31, 1819	Schoolcraft....	Kalamazoo..	Dec., 1830	Schoolcraft..	Kalamazoo.
669	Ira Peake...........	Starksborough.....	Vermont........	Oct. 11, 1811	Richland......	Kalamazoo..	Nov. 13, 1832	Richland....	Kalamazoo.
670	Caroline B. Peake....	Weathersfield......	Conn...........	Mar. 2, 1818	Marshall......	Calhoun....	April, 1835	Richland....	Kalamazoo.
671	Benjamin Pierson....	....	New York......	Oct. 4, 1802	Livonia.......	Wayne.....	May, 1836	Farmington.	Wayne.
672	William Hull........	York.............	New York......	April 26, 1823	Florence......	St. Joseph..	Dec., 1840	Centerville..	St. Joseph.
673	Charles M. Wood....	West Brookfield...	Mass...........	Sept. 29, 1826	Ann Arbor....	Washtenaw.	Oct., 1835	Anderson...	Livingston.
674	W. L. Bancroft......	Martinsburg.......	New York......	Aug. 12, 1825	Port Huron...	St. Clair....	Nov., 1832	Port Huron.	St. Clair.
675	J. H. Arnold........	Greece...........	New York......	May 28, 1817	Canton.......	Wayne.....	Sept., 1827	Eaton R'ds..	Eaton.
676	S. W. Fowler........	Cooperstown......	New York......	April 29, 1829	Detroit......	Wayne.....	July, 1841	Manistee....	Manistee.

PAPERS READ AT ANNUAL MEETING 1886

A QUARTER CENTURY OF EDUCATION IN MICHIGAN

BY PROF. HENRY A. FORD

In the early days of August, 1860, I came to Michigan by the happy accident of acquaintance with the Hon. John M. Gregory, the Superintendent of Public Instruction, to become a teacher in the business school of his brother, Mr. Uriah Gregory, at Kalamazoo. My interest in education here has since been steady and earnest; my labors in its behalf frequent, and I trust, notwithstanding many errors, not altogether ill-directed. It has been a good State for that kind of work—its people kind and helpful, the leaders in education for the most part hospitable and friendly, in the spirit of that liberality which a so-called liberal education implies.

In the year of grace 1860, many capable, and some eminent men, were, or very recently had been, in pedagogic service here. Dr. Gregory, as I have noted, was leading the common school host with great efficiency and success, though with many hindrances and under many severe labors. Mr. C. B. Stebbins, then alone sufficient for the clerical duties of the office, was his deputy, and remained at the post for twenty-two years. Dr. Tappan, *clarum et venerabile nomen,* was at the head of the State university, on the roll of whose faculty were the distinguished names of Frieze, Williams, Boise, Winchell, Wood, White, and others. Adams, now President of Cornell University, was an undergraduate at Ann Arbor. A. S. Welch was principal of the State Normal School, aided by Sill, his latest successor, Ripley, Carey, Pease, still teaching there, Mrs. Aldrich, Miss Susan Tyler, of the famous family, and perhaps others. Dr. T. C. Abbot was Professor of English Literature, and L. R. Fiske of Chemistry in the Agricultural College, of which the former, still connected with the school, was so long the distinguished head. Dr. J. A. B. Stone and his accomplished wife, who are even yet at work in the higher education, but in quiet, private ways, were in charge of the Kalamazoo College, and among their teachers were Olney, the renowned mathematician, and the young Prof. L. E. Holden, now a Cleveland millionarie. The celebrated Asa Mahan was president of Adrian College, whose buildings had been opened but a few months before. Thomas H. Sinex was in the executive chair of the Wesleyan Seminary and Female College, now Albion College. E. B. Fairfield, then considerably in republican politics, and lieutenant-governor of the State for one term, was president of Hillsdale; M. W. Fairfield at Olivet. Prof. Hosford, since, and for eight years, State superintendent, held, as he still holds, the chair of mathematics at Olivet. Louis McLouth, who came to be a large figure in Michigan education, had just completed his first year in charge of the Lapeer Academy. Burrows, now the eloquent and influential Congressman, ruled the Richland Seminary in Kalamazoo county; Rev. T. J. Poor, the Dickinson Institute in Romeo, from whose building the public schools have but recently been removed; the lamented Rev. E. J. Boyd, the Young Ladies' Seminary and Collegiate Institute at Monroe; Mr. O. Moffat, the Colon Seminary; James Cochran, the Disco Academy; and Herr F. Vireoke, the German-English School in Detroit. The since famous Female Seminary in that city, of which J. M. B. Sill was Principal for years, had been started but the year before by the Rev. J. V. Beers, of Worcester, Massachusetts. The Michigan Female College at Lansing, so pleasantly remembered by many ladies of the older generation, was admirably conducted by Misses A. C. and Delia Rogers.

The growth of the high school system has caused most of the old time academies and seminaries to disappear. The names of those that still survive will be readily recognized. On the other hand, the college system has grown. The only colleges then in existence in Michigan were the State university and those at Hillsdale, Kalamazoo, Olivet, Adrian, and Albion. The Detroit College (Roman Catholic), and the schools of this character at Battle Creek and Holland (Hope College), are of later growth. The theological departments of Kalamazoo, and perhaps of other denominational colleges have, however, disappeared. Naturally, the faculties and the several corps of students have greatly strengthened.

The university in the academic year 1859-60, had but twelve full professors, two assistant professors, three instructors, and 519 students, of whom 90 must be credited to the law department organized at the beginning of that year. The same institution, twenty-five years after (1884-85), had more than 80 members of its several faculties and 1296 students in its various departments, of whom 196 were women. I need not add, but still desire to put on record in this rapid survey, the fact that this great school is the most worthy of the "university" name of any west of the Alleghanies.

Twenty-five years ago, Detroit had no superintendent of Public Schools, in the present acceptation of the term, and had not until Mr. Sill's accession in 1864. The larger school buildings, however,—there were only the old capitol, now the high school, the Bishop, and the Barstow,—were in the competent hands of such men as Chaney, Nichols (who survived to be the oldest graded school teacher in the State by continuous service, and died full of years and honors); and Olcott, who is still on duty, but in the Upper Peninsula. Among the primary teachers were two young ladies who have since achieved distinction as principals of ward schools—Miss Sarah Russel, just retired, but temporarily, we may hope, from one of the most remarkable pedagogic careers any woman has had in this country; and Miss Caroline Crossman, of the Barstow School, almost the sole survivor in Detroit schools of the teachers of 1860. The entire corps in the city then numbered but 63, against about 300 at the present time. The total attendance of pupils was then 4,490; it is now 21,325.

In those days J. B. Danforth, later and now one of the foremost educators in the Empire State, for some years its deputy superintendent of public instruction, and since in charge of the Elmira schools, was directing the teachers at Grand Rapids. Estabrook, so long and still in valuable service among us, was in command at the Ypsilanti Union Seminary, the fine central school building then new and much admired, and even yet an ornament to that centre of public education. Putnam, an eminent name in our efforts to this day, which should stand at the very head of the Normal force to the hour of his death or retirement, was head master at the "Old Union," then the new one in Kalamazoo. Daniel B. Briggs, since superintendent of public instruction for two terms, now living in retirement in Detroit, had just closed a brief term of superintending in Ann Arbor, where his next predecessor had been Claudius B. Grant, at present a distinguished judge in the Upper Peninsula. Professor Payne, a young and strong man, had the schools at Three Rivers, where his work is still vividly and affectionately remembered. It was about this time that a conversation with Dr. Gregory, as they rode together on some professional errand, opened to him the fruitful field of the philosophy of education, in which he has since become the foremost worker west of the mountains. Sadler was at

Sturgis; Bellows, now our well-known Normal professor and mathematician, was about to return to the Constantine schools from a year or two of teaching in northern Indiana; Silas Betts was at Niles; McGowan, since a congressman and now a Washington lawyer, was then, or soon after, Principal of the Coldwater high school. Frank G. Russell, a Normal graduate, now a Detroit attorney, had in charge the "Middletown union school" at Lansing. S. M. Cutcheon, also a prominent Detroit lawyer, and for some years United States district attorney, had been at the head of the Ypsilanti high school, but returned in the summer of 1860 to Springfield, Illinois, to begin legal practice. Edwin Willits, who, so fortunately for himself and the State, has returned to educational service, had dropped into law and politics at Monroe, and was about to be elected prosecuting attorney for his county. George Willard, who had been a professor in Kalamazoo college, was a low church Episcopal clergyman in the Burr-oak village. Horace Halbert was principal of the high school there.

A few day after I came to the State the ninth annual meeting of the State Teachers' Association occurred in Ypsilanti, and I was priviledged to attend that meeting. It was presided over by Principal Poor, of Romeo, in the absence of E. J. Boyd, of Monroe, and was attended by an excellent representation of the pedagogic force of the State, and by many intelligent citizens. That great and now venerable thinker and worker in education, the Rev. Thomas Hill, then President of Antioch College, Ohio, and for a time at the head of Harvard University, was the sole distinguished visitor from any other State, and in an evening address presented his original and practical views on "The True Order of Studies," which have since been made widely familiar through various publications. Principal Welch, of the Normal School, had also one of the main addresses of the occasion, on "The Natural System of Instruction," and a lecture was delivered by the Rev. Dr. Hogarth, pastor of the Jefferson avenue Presbyterian Church in Detroit, on "The Use of the Affections as a Mental Stimulus." Papers upon various topics were read by Prof. Olney of Kalamazoo, and Carey of the Normal School, Superintendents Danforth of Grand Rapids, Sadler of Sturgis, and Betts of Niles, and by Miss A. C. Rogers. The address of welcome to the association was given by the late Chauncey Joslin, Esq., who was said as a boy of sixteen (in 1829) to have delivered the first lecture ever pronounced on free schools in the United States, endeavoring to establish the proposition that universal education should be maintained by universal taxation. Reports from committees were made on "Text Books" by Prof. Abbot of the Agricultural College, and on "Reforms in School Laws," by State Superintendent Gregory. An interesting discussion was had upon the subject of "School Prizes," in which Dr. Hill and Mr. Danforth favored the system, and Messrs. Putnam, Estabrook, and others also joined in the debate. They were able men who were present at this meeting, most of them in the prime of life, and full of manly vigor and enthusiasm. The most vivid impressions left upon my own mind, aside from the *personnel* of the convention, relate to the philosophy of child nature, especially to the early development and culture of the perceptive faculties, as underlying first procedures in all rudimentary branches by means of object lessons. Dr. Hill's address and Mr. Danforth's paper on "Elementary Instruction," with many remarks in other addresses and papers, and in the discussions, opened a new world in education to me, and helped to new departures in my own work. Dr. Gregory's presence and active participation in all transactions were also exceedingly inspiring and helpful to the young auditor.

The roll of officers-elect at this meeting adds some names to those of our previous summary of the Michigan educators of twenty-five years ago. They were:—

President—Prof. E. L. Ripley, then of the Jackson public schools, afterwards a teacher at the Normal.

Vice-Presidents—George H. Botsford of North Adams, afterwards county superintendent of schools in Hillsdale county; Superintendent Sadler of Sturgis, L. J. Marcy of Detroit, Messrs. Abbot, Olney, Poor, Danforth, Wm. Travis of Flint, H. A. Pierce of Owosso, H. Bross of Newaygo, and J. G. Everett of Ontonagon.

Recording Secretary—John Richards of Albion.

Corresponding Secretary—D. Putnam of Kalamazoo.

Treasurer—J. M. B. Sill.

Executive Committee—Messrs. Hosford and Welch.

Writing but sixteen years afterwards of the history of this association, Professor Putnam indulged in this reflection: "One is forcibly reminded of the fact that most of the active members of that time have disappeared from our ranks, and many of them from our State. The compensation is found in the new and fresher blood, which, from year to year, has flowed in to give a quickened life to the current." The meetings of the society were steadily maintained amid the alarms of war, and have never, I believe, been intermitted. It has justly been regarded as prominent among the educational forces of the State and as ranking fairly in the ability of its members, and the strength and freshness of its work with any similar body in this country.

To the State association, indeed, may be placed the beginnings of several important reforms in our system of popular education that, ultimately, were crystallized in legislation. The county superintendency of schools, undoubtedly the most efficient plan of local supervising yet adopted in any State or county, and which was the Michigan plan from 1867 to 1873, had its rise in this State in discussions by and reports to this association, beginning as early as 1855 and running through no less than twelve years. After the failure of the superintendency through serious defects in the organic act, and very likely in the administration of the officers appointed to execute it, various tentative efforts have been made to find a satisfactory system of examination of teachers and inspection of schools, issuing at last in the present scheme of county boards of examiners. The course of legislation in this matter does not require extended review.

On the 3d day of July, 1869, appropriately just before the celebration of "Independence Day," the educators and more intelligent citizens of Michigan rejoiced in the abolition of the rate bill—that relic of barbarism, as Dr. Gregory had long before called it. The act of repeal took effect on that day, and thenceforth the public schools of our State have been absolutely free and open to all comers from the district in which the school is situated. But the repeal was the result of agitation which had been maintained ever since 1850, the year of our present State constitution, which plainly contemplates a free school system, and of efforts by the State association, dating back at least eleven years, to the Niles meeting of 1858.

Compulsory school attendance was ordained by the State legislature, in 1871, with no important effect; and sundry later attempts at amendment and strengthening of the law have not produced appreciable results in the increase of figures of attendance in our school reports. It may be doubted whether the conditions exist in Michigan, or indeed in any American State, for the general enforcement of a compulsory education, or more properly school attendance law.

These are the principal measures of legislation bearing upon our common school system during the last quarter century. Within little more than half that period, the next most notable changes have occurred at the State university. In January, 1870, the following resolution was adopted by the governing board of that institution:

Resolved,—"That the board of regents recognize the right of every resident of Michigan to the enjoyment of the privileges afforded by the university, and that no rule exists in any of the university statutes for the exclusion of any person from the university, who possesses the requisite literary and moral qualifications."

This peculiarly worded resolve had but one intent and purpose, which might have been more bravely and distinctly expressed—to open the doors of the university at once, and it may be hoped, for ever, to the admission of women. The first graduate under this just and liberal provision, now Mrs. Madelon Stockwell Turner, of Kalamazoo, has proved a noble exemplification of the capacity of woman to receive and her ability to apply for the benefit of society a thorough-going university culture.

The later establishment at Ann Arbor of a chair of pedagogy, the first of the kind in any similar institution in this country, and its continuous occupation by the original incumbent, Professor W. H. Payne, have been truly efficient forces in the general uplift of the teaching profession, and so of popular education in this State.

A brief paragraph must be given to educational journalism in Michigan. In 1860, the Michigan Journal of Education had been published for nearly seven years, most of the time in the editorial care of Dr. Gregory. The various arrangements of the State Teachers' Association for its continuance, including one prevailing in 1860, for its management by twelve editors, one for each number of a volume, did not tend to its strengthening or permanence, and a really useful publication ceased to exist near the close of the next year. The issue of the Michigan Teacher began in January, 1866, at Niles, as the personal venture of Professor W. H. Payne and C. L. Whitney. John Goodison, H. L. Wayland, and H. A. Ford, were successively added to its staff, and at the opening of 1871, just before his retirement from the county superintendency, it fell exclusively into the hands of the last named, by whom it was sold to the Educational Weekly, of Chicago, at the close of 1876. Another monthly, entitled The School, edited and published by Professors of the Normal School at Ypsilanti, was issued from January, 1872, to the end of 1876. In about four years thereafter, the Michigan School Moderator was started at Grand Rapids, since removed to Lansing, and now, as a semi-monthly in the hands of Professor H. R. Pattengill, lately appointed to the faculty of the Agricultural College, it has become one of the ablest and most useful journals of the kind in the land. Several other but minor and generally unimportant attempts have been made in school journalism in a sporadic and transient way, calling for no detailed notice here. During the brief period of the county superintendency some spirited and well-intentioned little papers were published by superintendents to forward their local work, in which much matter of permanent value appeared.

In 1860 there were but 94 union or graded school districts in the State; twenty-five years afterwards, by the official returns of 1885, there were 440. The graded and ungraded districts numbered 4,094, against 6,492 of ungraded districts alone last year. Of children of school age 246,684 were enumerated, against 595,752, or a little more than twice as many, in 1885. The enrollment in public schools was but 192,937, against 411,954. The number of men teachers in the schools was 2,599, against 3,876; of women teachers 5,342, against 11,482. The ladies have evidently been forging in force to the front in the pedagogic profession, relatively regarded. The respective totals of public school teachers are 7,941 and 15,358. The aggregate wages of teachers were $467,286.50 in 1860, and $2,785,280.16, showing an increase quite out of proportion to the numerical increase, being, indeed, more than three times as great. The average number of months taught in the schools for the year grew from 6.2 in 1860 to 7.6 in 1884, which unaccountably decreased by one-half of one per cent in 1885.

I must pause here, for I did not set out to write a volume, but only a preliminary essay or outline sketch, which some one may some day fill. The changes in the teachers' institute system, and some other reforms, are too well known to need notice. The condition of both the popular and the higher education in our Peninsulas may be regarded as exceedingly fortunate, and the State is to be congratulated, in general, upon its educational men and measures. The university, the colleges, the few old-time seminaries and academies that remain, and the public schools of all grades and no grade, are for the most part competently officered and intelligently conducted according to standards increasing in efficiency and practicality year by year. We have one man in education—Professor Payne of the State university—who is named in high eastern quarters as "in a position to become a national authority"—a high honor, truly, for any man or any State. In the Rev. Dr. Nelson we have a superintendent of public instruction, who, if continued in office and measurably restored to health, may revive the glories of the Gregory regime. We have many others who are reputably known in the councils of the National Association and in the ranks of text book, and miscellaneous writers or compilers, and are likewise distinguished in their home work. Michigan is a felt influence in the education of the country, but more importantly in her own colleges of the people, the free public schools. I am glad to have lived upon her soil, and to have labored in and for her most of the years of the last quarter century; and am thankful to the authorities of the State Pioneer Society who have kindly allowed me thus to put on record some of my impressions and reminiscences.

REMINISCENCES OF THE SURVEY OF THE NORTHWESTERN LAKES

BY JOHN H. FORSTER

This survey, extending through a long series of years, has been brought to a successful close. It was a work which perhaps never attracted much attention on the part of the general public, but it was, nevertheless, one of great magnitude and importance. It was conducted upon the highest scientific principles and by skilled and practical men. The commerce of the lakes and our internal improvements, such as river and harbor and light-houses, have been greatly aided and benefited by these surveys.

The topography of the far-reaching coasts of our great lakes, including islands, bays, harbors, rivers and river mouths, straits and channels, have been traced with great minuteness and beautifully delineated upon charts. The hydrography of these great inland lakes has been no less skilfully executed by close soundings near the shore as well as by deep sea soundings reaching across the lakes in diagonal lines, from shore to shore, giving to the mariners a complete map of the bottom, indicating all reefs and shoals and profound depths. The charts thus produced, and within reach of all having business in these waters, are very complete, including moreover, sailing directions, courses and distances, the location of light-houses, harbors and ports of refuge.

Meteorological and astronomical observations were also carefully made, with practical application to the surveys. Secondary and primary triangulation constituted a part of the survey, and lines from fifty to ninety miles were measured.

The rise and fall of the lakes ascertained by daily observations, at many places, for many years, were carefully noted. These observations are found to be of great practical advantage in the building of harbors, dredging rivers, construction of locks and other engineering operations. It is an interesting fact, made certain by these observations, that while there are, on the great lakes, no regular tides as in the ocean, yet their waters rise and fall daily, yearly, and through a greater period, measured by fifteen to twenty years.

Something like tides have been noticed, but such pulsations have been erratic and not fully explained. Standing upon the shore of Lake Superior, upon a perfectly calm day, I have seen a single wave a foot or more in hight, roll in and dash upon the sands, then all would be smooth again. The phenomenon was startling. Other waves were expected but none came. Again, twenty-four hours before the occurrence of a heavy gale, with the wind off land, I have repeatedly witnessed an inrush of waters against the wind, of great violence driving up into canals, or streams, raising the surface level several feet.

But it is not my purpose, in this necessarily brief paper, to indulge in any extensive remarks upon the scientific features of the scenery of the lakes.

If I am not mistaken the work has already been well done by one well qualified to discharge the duty, Mr. Farrand Henry, of Detroit. If not in the archives of this Society, his paper will be found, I think, in the collection of the Detroit Historical Society.

My present humble attempt will be the presentation of some sketches relating to the early history of the survey. Our surveyors may justly claim the title of pioneers in their line, for they were in the field, according to my knowledge, forty-three years ago; indeed, they were at work before that, but I was not a worker with them. I relate only what I know myself. The field of operations was, at that early day, confined for several years to northern portions of Lakes Huron and Michigan, including Green Bay and the Straits of Mackinac, although Lakes Erie and Ontario, lying nearer to civilization, had not been surveyed. That portion of our State was then reposing in almost primeval silence. Nothing could be more wild and solitary than those northern coasts, which it was the duty of our surveyors to trace.

The surveys were made under orders from the War Department and conducted by United States topographical engineers, aided by a corps of civil engineers, named assistants.

In those days headquarters were at Buffalo, New York. In early spring, or as soon as the ice would permit of navigation, the several parties, fitted out with instruments, tents, boats and supplies for a season's work were embarked on steam or sail vessels and conveyed to their assigned stations or fields. Then they were hastily dumped ashore in a howling wilderness, and left to the tender mercies of black flies and mosquitoes until winter. Towns, cities, human habitations, had long before reached the vanishing point. But briskly uprose, beneath some pleasant pine grove, in full view of the blue lake, a small village of white tents, with boats and batteaux anchored in the offing, or reposing on the banks of a small stream. The smoke of the camp-fires was curling above the tree-tops and our surveyors were cheerfully dining upon pork and hard tack, before the vessel that brought them had disappeared from sight. Happy, self-reliant surveyors.

En route, our surveyor quickly after leaving Detroit, began to have a view of the wilderness before him. St. Clair River did not present the pleasant picture of cultivated fields and handsome towns and cities that it does to-day, but the banks of the noble stream were for the most part clothed in primeval forests, with here and there a break and settlement. Reaching Lake Huron he sailed northward,—on his right hand a wide expanse of water, like the ocean; on the left a seemingly interminable stretch of densely clothed forest-land, without notch or clearing to denote the presence of squatter or settlement. A closer inspection might, perhaps, have revealed the presence of some forlorn pioneer, who in later years, became a lumber baron.

As he advanced farther north beyond Saginaw Bay, (a gulf of terror in those times,) the scenery became so wild and forbidding, the country so poor, that he hesitated not to predict that a century must certainly elapse before the crowded people of the east, in desperation, would seek homes in this remote section.

In the year 1844 I found myself one of a large party encamped on the south shore of the straits of Mackinac. The camp was near the site of old Fort Mackinac which was surprised and destroyed by the followers of the great Indian chief, Pontiac. Cedar pickets, protruding from the sands, were pointed out as the remains of the ill-fated post. As we rowed over the shallow waters of of the straits we would occasionally see a small cannon ball, much corroded, lying at the bottom. In this vicinity to-day we see the busy hamlet of Mackinac City, the terminus of two important railroads, growing into prominence. But in the times of which we write, there was no shadow of civilization and the poor, sandy soil nourished a mixed growth of trees and underbrush. The outlook upon the straits was the only thing cheerful in the landscape. The clear blue waters, dotted with numerous islands, conspicuous among which Mackinaw looming in the distance, with lime-stone hights and whitewashed stone fort, presented an ever inviting picture.

The business of our party, thus posted, was to establish and measure a base line for triangulation. This line was four miles long, one hundred feet wide, crossing the dense forest. The timber was chopped, cleared out and burnt. Twenty feet of the line was grubbed and graded so as to be very carefully measured.

At the termini of the base, two lofty stations, triangulation points, were built for observations. The entire work was laborious; exceeding care is always required in the measurement of base lines. Steel rods were used, held by tripods, aligned by a transit, moved with delicate adjusting screws, plumbed with weights suspended in buckets of water, so that there should be no vibration. So carefully was the work performed, that each of the four ten-foot long steel rods, with attached thermometers, were tested at each setting, in order to ascertain and note down the expansion or contraction. The multiplication of notes, during twelve or fourteen hours' work was enormous. Those who may think that Uncle Sam's men do not earn their rations should have some of this experience. The daily routine was as follows: Turn out at 4 A. M.; breakfast on hard tack, fried pork and black coffee, as soon as ready. Then a sharp tramp, by trail, through the underbrush to the base line. Here, without intermission, save an hour at noon, with a cold dinner served on a log, the work went on during the long, long days of that northern latitude. The mosquitoes and black flies fairly swarmed in that close, hot, forest-lined avenue, termed the base line, base in more senses than one. Without the protection of shields over the face, buckskin gloves, and top boots, it would have been impossible to work in such a place. Thus muffled, with the thermometer sporting in the nineties, we were roasted; had the pains of purgatory within and without. Return to camp after sundown—supper same as breakfast. Then came the hardest task of all. A young fellow, about my size in those days, had a standing order to copy before morning, in ink, in neat hand, all the multitudinous figures recorded during the day. Seeking his low soldier's tent, and seating himself upon a buffalo robe and blankets, his usual bed, pen in hand, a barrel head supported on his lap for a table, a dip tallow candle for a light, at it he went. Already tired out with his day's work, he summoned up a new courage for his hard task. The snoring of his fellows in adjoining tents was all that broke the profound silence. They were happy in the oblivion of dreams; he was the unhappy plodder. The next moment the call turn out rings out. Our scribe finds himself limply reclining on his couch, fully dressed, with pen grasped in his hand, just as he tumbled over some time in the night 'Tis morning and the call, "turn out," summons him to a new day of toil. In this fashion several months were expended. The only relief—let-up—came with Sunday. This sacred day was devoted to the washing and mending of clothing and general repairs.

The following year found our surveyors plunging through the marshes of distant Green Bay. Here all the charms of solitude were realized. At the head of the bay were some old French settlements; at the mouth of Fox River we found Fort Howard without a garrison; opposite these were two straggling villages named Navarino and Astoria. Indians were numerous and Indian traders seemed to occupy the principal business places. These were evidently frontier settlements.

The western shore of the bay northward to Bay De Noquet was bordered with wide belts of marsh land, covered with rushes and wild rice, and cut by numerous small sluggish streams. Save on the Menominee, the largest stream north of Fox River, there were no settlements. Some distance above the mouth of the Menominee were two saw-mills, pioneers of the great lumber establishments found at that point to-day. Back of the marshes, on higher ground, were belts of magnificent pine forests, in which lay the future wealth of all that region. The east shore of Green Bay, including the islands, was of an entirely different character, being high, broken, and resting upon a limestone formation.

Wherever we could find a dry ridge near the bay, we pitched our camp. There was a force of sixty men; to shelter so many, with stores and provisions, required a large number of tents.

The engineer officers had wall tents; the men the small soldier tents. There were also tents for the cooks and for mess rooms. There were several six-oared boats, designed for speed and for sounding; there were Mackinac boats and batteaux for transportation purposes. The crews of men were chiefly made up from those expert boatmen known as Canadian Frenchmen. They were a hardy, patient, untiring set, always cheerful and obedient. After rowing all day, in hydrograph work, at sundown, with ten miles between them and camp, they would bend cheerily to their oars as though inspired with new vigor, sending their cherished boat through the water with a bone in her mouth, all the while the stroke of oars keeping time to their Canadian boat songs.

The Indians and half breeds found in the party were less tractable and were often mutinous,—restive under discipline. They gave us a good deal of trouble. Besides the regular topographical and hydrographical work, we cut out a base line on the west shore of the bay. The line crossed a belt of magnificent pine timber: these stately trees, "fit for the mast of some tall admiral," were ruthlessly cut down and burned. We found game and fish abundant; they were an agreeable change from monotonous hard bread, beans, and pork.

Our commanding officer was Captain Williams, of the corps of topographical engineers U. S. army, whose headquarters were on board the little iron side-wheel steamer Albert, familiarly known in camp as the Polliwog. Captain Williams was a very accomplished officer, graduating from West

Point, was of commanding presence, not affable, a strict disciplinarian, but warm hearted and generous. In the Mexican war, a few years later, he fell mortally wounded under the walls of Monterey.

The next in command was Lieutenant Gunnison, a native of New Hampshire, a graduate of West Point Academy, and officer of the corps of topographical engineers. He was tall in stature, slim and active; he was talented, energetic and enterprising. He delighted to act as pioneer, to lead the party in his shirt sleeves, with an axe, cutting down trees and clearing the underbrush. An indefatigable worker, he tired out the rest of his party. His young civil assistants, to use a modern expression, thought him too much of a rustler. But he was brave, generous and considerate in trouble and sickness. He asked no one to go where he would not lead; he was always pleasant and cheerful, thoroughly practical and sensible, without any trace of the martinet in his manners. Above all he was one of the most sincere Christians the writer ever knew,—active in all good works. He soon became a captain and made a survey of the Great Salt Lake Valley in Utah. On his return he wrote an interesting but temperate book on that peculiar people, the Mormons, thereby incurring the enmity of that fanatical sect.

Subsequently, while surveying a government line of railway which crossed Utah south of Salt Lake City, he was slain by the Mormans disguised as Indians. With a small party, without military escort, he was running a side line up Sevier river. In the morning, before breakfast, while saying his prayers in his tent, he was startled by the discharge of guns and the shouts of his men. He rushed to the front of his tent, saw that his party were being massacred, and holding up his hands he cried to the supposed Indians to desist, "that he was the good captain," (a name that the Indians had given him). He immediately fell upon his face pierced with thirteen arrows. Save one person, who escaped to the main party to tell the tale, all perished. Captain Gunnison's body when found was sadly mutilated by wolves. His right hand was missing. Later, it was ascertained by the captain's brother, who gave the writer the information, that a friendly Indian chief, who loved the captain, had secured the hand, dried it, and preserved it as a memento. Thus perished this brave and good man. But for a providential accident, the present writer would have been in this party, and doubtless would have shared the same fate.

Some years after the survey of Green Bay, which was interrupted by the Mexican war, your writer having returned from the survey of the Mexican boundary line, found himself in the spring of 1855 again attached to the survey of the lakes. With Mr. Wm. H. Harding and others he was ordered to make a survey of Beaver Island and the north shore of Lake Michigan in the Upper Peninsula. Captain Macomb was chief engineer in command of lake surveys at the time. But in the winter he was relieved by Captain Meade, better known in history as General George G. Meade, commander of the Union forces at Gettysburg.

Beaver Island, the largest of a group of islands belonging to the State of Michigan, washed by the lake of the same name, is, in greatest measurement, thirteen miles long and six miles wide. Its shape is somewhat like a beaver with his head pointing north. At the northeast extremity of this island there is a good nearly land-locked harbor, and, at the time of which I write, nestling on the west side of the harbor, we found the hamlet of St. James. This place was the residence of the notorious King Strang. He was an active, energetic man of considerable ability and education. He was forty-five or fifty years of age, with the hope of many years of vigorous patriarchal honors in store. On the untimely death of Joseph Smith, the Mormon prophet, Strang claimed that the mantle had fallen upon him. He therefore assumed the triple title of prophet, priest, and king. A majority of the church of the Latter Day Saints not recognizing Strang's claims, but adhering to Brigham Young, Strang, with such followers as believed in him, retreated to Beaver Island, and there set up a kingdom, and he carried it with a high hand. He and his saints were poor in this world's goods, but they seemed to be industrious. We found good roads on the island, laid out with skill; also many improved farms under different degrees of cultivation, with some good crops growing, good fences and out-houses. There was a decided appearance of thrift and industry.

At St. James there was a little cluster of log buildings; a temple of square-hewn pine logs, of large size, but incomplete; a dry goods and grocery store, several dwelling houses and a good dock, with warehouse and wood piles. The sale of cord wood to passing steamers was quite a profitable business. The island furnished fine maple timber.

King Strang's house, shaded by native trees, was a large and comfortable building, though plain and without ornament. We called there on business and saw the King seated at his dinner table with his six wives* and many children to cheer him. He had the air of a well-to-do patriarch, but for some unknown reason he did not extend to us the hospitalities of his table. Perhaps his religion forbade him giving salt to the Gentiles. We passed through a suite of rooms, in each one of which was a double bed and a cradle. The cradles were mostly occupied. These evidences of domestic felicity were pleasing to us bachelors who were obliged to pass our time in solitary camps. The king had an office down town, where he said he would prefer to meet us. To that place we adjourned and found therein a printing press, type, etc., and found out that our many-titled friend was also an editor.

---

*Vol. 32, p. 202, states that Strang had five wives.

In his office Strang was more genial than in the midst of his harem. He was shrewd enough to extend us the freedom of the island, always outside of his house, however. He was much interested in the surveys he assured us, but with a little too much effusion we fancied. We complained that we found the saints, scattered over the island, very reticent, disobliging, if not hostile. They would give us no information. Living upon unpaid for or stolen lands, these saintly people thought, doubtless, that our purpose there was to spy out the land and report the state of affairs to the government. Of course they were mistaken; their suspicions were unfounded. King Strang excused his people, said they were ignorant, and that he would rectify matters. He was as good as his word, and we had no further trouble, except from the unkindness of the young "saintesses," who incontinently fled to cover every time we meandered their pleasant country roads, with a theodolite in hand.

Strang visited our camp often. He refused not to partake liberally of certain stores in our medicine chest. He became quite jolly and delighted us with his free and easy stories about the saints. From a prophet they were quite remarkable, and would not bear comparison with those of the seers of other times. He praised his wives lavishly, declared that they were fond of him, and the institution of polygamy. Two of his wives were sisters; they agreed perfectly in their devotion to him and to each other. They were educated, cultivated ladies, and spent their leisure hours in the sweet consolations of poesy. Such was his story. His lawful wife resided in Wisconsin, and was not a believer in plural numbers. As is well known, Strang was afterwards shot to death by one of his own people whom he had cruelly treated. His tragic taking off resulted in the destruction of his kingdom on Beaver island, and the dispersion of his band of saints. Strang was undoubtedly unscrupulous and dishonest, if not a robber and murderer. With few exceptions his followers on the island were the lowest kind of white trash, ignorant, superstitious, and licentious.

After we left the island we found among the fisherman and traders on the main land the utmost hostility to the Mormons, and the general expression was that Strang was a proved thief and robber and a very dangerous man. By repeated piratical expeditions, in armed boats, he had robbed their fisheries and taken their boats and nets away. Strang was a member of the legislature of Michigan, and was well-known to many of our citizens in his *role* of statesman. It was a bullet well-aimed that removed him from his earthly kingdom.

AN OLD-TIME TRIP

BY F. R. STEBBINS

Thirty-five years ago. These words awaken in the minds of the young people of to-day, no personal memories of the past, and have to them only the significance of a mention of the times of "long ago," the times away back of their first look upon this fair land, the region of the great lakes. Our children listen to the simple story of our experiences thirty, forty and fifty years ago, with great interest, but can never realize the full import of our narratives; but to such of us as have been, during these years, the actors in this labor of moulding and working out, in fact largely creating the great material, social, and political grandeur of this fair home of ours, which we found a wilderness, these words awaken many memories. How does the mention of these years bring to our minds a flood of recollections, of the sorrows and the joys, the failures and the successes, the toils of all, and the resting from their labors of so many, who once aided us in this great work of founding a new and noble State. Now, as we look around our well-furnished homes, our smiling farms, our stores, our manufactories, our schools, and school-houses, and churches, our railroads and wagon roads, the memories of the times of forty and fifty years ago seem a dream only, and a record of those times, as they pass, only a page from the romance of the novelist; and yet how that page glows and enlarges, and how even romance is dimmed by the stranger realities, as the individual experiences of those years are related in the many volumes of our pioneer collections, you all know. I have, in this paper, no strange tale to tell, no startling romance, and perhaps very little interesting reality to record; but, thinking that the incidents of a trip to our truly great lakes in 1851 might not be entirely devoid of interest, I present them on this occasion.

Early in the month of August, 1851, it was my good fortune, through the kindness of Sheldon McKnight, in company with my wife and two young daughters, to find myself and family pleasantly settled in a good stateroom on board the steamer London, one of McKnight's line of boats, at Detroit, bound for Sault Ste. Marie, where we were to be transferred to a "propeller" of his line on Lake Superior. The charm of such a trip to these then new and wild sections of our State, for the first time, to our party, can hardly be described: but that such a tour, with quiet water on the lake, was one of pure enjoyment, I have no doubt many pioneers present, who have taken such a trip, can easily believe. The few isolated settlements, with their rude wharves, and scattered and cheaply-constructed houses along the St. Clair River, and the land on the south and west shores of Lake Huron, to our eyes gave little promise of their present beauty and population, Port Huron was just beginning to be recognized as a stopping place of a few of the lake steamers, and Lexington and Sand Beach were of no account to mariners, with Forester, Forestville, and other points, now visited by nearly all the coasting steamers, either having no existence at all, or being usually avoided as dangerous localities for steamers.

On the west shore of the lake, beyond Saginaw Bay, the wilderness was still more unbroken. Where now stands Alpena, with its thousands of population, and its great lumber and fishing enterprises, a solitary pioneer, or fisherman's shanty, marked the spot—the Indians having prevented all attempts of settlement—and there, as along the coast, the great pine forests came down to the water's edge. All was unbroken wilderness, with its wealth of timber. A small and very rude settlement only at Cheboygan and Duncans.

What a world of memories of the traditions and the romantic histories of the far-famed Mackinaw region came over us as we steamed by beautiful Bois Blanc, and came out in view of old Mackinaw, Point St. Ignace, and the gem of all, the peerless Mackinaw Island. All was new to many of our company, and save the fort and framed houses, and the rude wharf and modern vessels, instead of Indian wigwams, and the beach lined with bark canoes, much the same as when Marquette first looked upon the same scenery nearly two hundred years before. It did not detract from the interest I took in this beautiful island, when I remembered how, in my boyhood, in the old school-house spelling bees, in Vermont, so many of us used to wrestle with the old name "Michilimackinack," and I am not sure that I can spell the word correctly even now. After a short stop we steamed away for Detour, and entered the river St. Mary. By this time our passengers became pretty well acquainted with each other, and we could call the roll for the then Governor John S. Barry, Auditor General John Swegles, John Harmon, a State senator, A. Harvie, Mr. Harris, editor of the *Cleveland Herald*, and we were joined at the Sault by Hon. Mr. Henry, from Vermont, and Hon. Truman Smith, U. S. Senator from Connecticut. The fact that four of us were staunch whigs, and four dyed-in-the-wool democrats, did not mar in the least our pleasant intercourse during the trip. Governor Barry, from his sedate countenance, in the early voyage, had been set down by the stranger passengers as a missionary to the Indians, on the way to join his charge, and we had to joke the governor on his missionary work, all of which he took without offense. To those of us who knew John Harmon in those days, I need not say he was not taken for an assistant missionary, although a listener might sometimes hear him exclaim, "I assist."

At the "Soo" we left the London and took quarters at the hotel, waiting a day or two for the arrival down of the propeller Monticello, upon which we were to take our voyage on Lake Superior. During our stop I had the pleasure of catching a string of speckled trout, in the rapids, fishing from the shore. The population of the village of Sault Ste. Marie at that time was made up largely of Chippewa Indians and French and Indian half-breeds, and a few soldiers at the United States military post, and contained very little enterprise or trade beyond saloons, and stores for Indian supplies. There was no canal, and all transit to Lake Superior, and from the lake to the river, around the rapids, was overland about one mile, by teams, or by a tram railway, with platform cars; and the two and only steam vessels on Lake Superior had been taken over this portage from St. Mary's river. What a contrast with to-day, when it is stated, on good authority, that the tonnage of grain, metals, ores, merchandise, etc., through the great locks at St. Mary's, was during the last year, larger than that passing through that great world's highway, the Suez canal. The next morning, after leaving the Sault, we were in sight of the Pictured Rocks. And who can describe the sensation of a traveler whose eyes for the first time rest upon these wonderful pictures of nature's handiwork? And who shall describe the pictures as they appear? Weird, wonderful, beautiful is all we can exclaim. Passing Pictured Rocks, we tied up to the shore of Grand Island. Here was one house and a little clearing, where a solitary family was struggling for a living, by cultivating a few vegetables and furnishing fuel for the propellers on Lake Superior.

Gov. Barry was here taken with a fainting attack; but he was taken on board and soon recovered, and we proceeded on our way.

Our next landing was at the present site of Marquette, then called "Carp River." A settlement had just commenced there, but the bluff was covered with pine and spruce trees, with a few modest cabins, the whole presenting as dismal a looking pioneer beginning as one could find anywhere. A little iron ore had been quarried and smelted there, but the greatness of this industry and mineral wealth, since developed under the fostering care of protection to home industry, was not dreamed of, even by the most sanguine of the enterprising men who even then saw great things for the newly-discovered mineral wealth of the Lake Superior region. Seeing Marquette, as I did then as Carp River, with no wharf, almost no settled population, a mere opening in the wilderness, I was not prepared for the wonderful change I saw when I visited it some thirty years afterwards, in the great ore docks, and an almost continuous line of cars, discharging into the boats the rich ore from Negaunee and Ishpeming, and the busy, beautiful city, with its brick blocks, costly residences and iron works, and other industries. To no one man, probably, has Marquette more reason to be grateful for her wonderful growth and prosperity, than to a member of this society, and one who has often added to its interest in recitals of accidents connected with the early settlement of the Upper Peninsula, the Hon. Peter White.

Giving Carp River a parting gun from a small cannon on our deck, we steamed away up the lake to Eagle Harbor. This was also a very small beginning of a settlement, with a few rude buildings scattered among the pine trees. Our next stop was at Eagle River. Here was no harbor and no wharf, and the steamer anchored some distance from shore, and the passengers went ashore in row boats. Here the steamer "landed" some cattle, which was done by pushing them overboard at the gangway, the cattle swimming ashore. Eagle River was the landing place for the Cliff and North American copper mines, which were located some three miles away, the road to the mines passing over a high land ridge some six or seven hundred feet in height. The Cliff mine that year was thought to have done a great work in the shipment of 1200 tons of copper. Another mine, since that, has shipped 18,000 tons in one year.

Another parting gun, and we headed direct for La Pointe. Soon after starting, we met and saluted heartily the other steamer on the lake, the propeller Manhattan, little dreaming of the coming events of our next meeting.

Our approach to La Pointe was one of great interest to many of our party, the larger part having never before visited the region of the Apostle islands.

On shore we saw the old mission house, a large trading house, a few other buildings, with a large sprinkling of Indian wigwams. From all parts of the little settlement we saw coming towards the landing a few white men, and a motley crowd of Indians, including squaws, and young and older children, all clad in Indian costume, or a mixture of Indian and white men's clothing, the advent of a steamboat being at that time an uncommon event at La Pointe.

We were much pleased to learn that old Chief Buffalo was at home, and that a hundred or more wild Chippewas were encamped in the woods near by, adding no little interest to our visit. We were soon all on shore, and exploring the settlement.

Of course the first objective point, for a few of us, was the Indian wigwams, made either of skins or bark, with the usual architecture of Indian skill, and the usual decoration of dirty blankets, kettles, and skins. Meanwhile the dancing portion of our party were entertaining a large party of the natives with a white man's dance, in the trading house, which soon suggested an Indian dance; the first intimation of which I received by the arrival of the lord of a wigwam, the interior of which I was inspecting, who turned me out of his "castle," peremptorily, with the excuse, imparted mostly by signs, that he wished to dress for the war dance. We found when we recognized the gentleman of the woods later, at the dance, that his "dressing" consisted in taking off what few clothes he usually wore, and painting his body with all manner of devices, rudely made with his several fingers for a paint brush.

We all lost no time in gathering at the mission house before which, on a wide lawn of short grass, the dance was to be held. Ere long we heard in the direction of the woods, where the wild Indians were encamped, the peculiar thump of the "tom-tom," or Indian drum.

The excitement of the white tourists now became intense. We all knew we were to look upon a genuine war dance—all but the war—not by some mountebank company, but principally by the woods Indians, who so far had refused to be civilized and Christianized into doubtful saints, at the Jesuit mission stations. We all moved outside, and arranged on the wide platform in front of the house, which from a gentle elevation afforded a fine view of the dance ground. On one part of the platform were placed chief Buffalo, seated in the only arm chair to be found, with Governor Barry and the other dignitaries on either side of him. Chief Buffalo could only express himself through an interpreter, and he sat in stoical silence, without a movement of facial muscle during the whole dance. The rest of our party were standing on the other part of the platform, with our ladies in front, all in eager anticipation of the appearance of the Indians; and certainly not the least interested in the coming procession were our tourists who enjoyed the front seats, where nothing could obstruct a free vision of the warriors. On came the red men. First is seen the motion of the elevated staff adorned with large eagle feathers, borne by an aged warrior; next an old torn American flag; and soon, with steady tread, to the measured beatings of the Indian drum, the whole band comes in view. Now came a new sensation. The ladies had not been informed of the peculiar features of the elaborate ball dress of the Indians, and no sooner had the much-painted warriors come in sight, than the longest-sighted lady, shading her eyes with her hand for a moment, to get a better view of the details, was suddenly taken ill, and, hastily pushing our rear ranks of gentlemen asunder, she fled into the house. Nearer came the Indians, and another lady was attacked with the same disorder, and escaped inside. Thump, thump, lounder sounded the tom-tom, nearer and nearer came the Indians, when another lady was attacked with the strange contagious disease, and then another, and another, quickly followed by a stampede of every lady on the platform, for which was made an open rank movement, and we, the men, were left alone on the platform to admire Indian warriors' toilets. Now the motley band halted before us, the tom-tom ceased, and the naked loveliness of these forest dancers appeared, even to the most short-sighted beholder. Notwithstanding our great interest in the display, we could not help being anxious about our ladies, in the house, whose sudden illness was depriving them of an equal share in the entertainment. Our great regrets were uncalled for; and if we had in those earlier years of life known what riper experience has taught us, that the ladies, although timid at the start, on any great and unusual display of strange forces will always find a way to overcome the timidity, and push again to the front, and be the last to leave the conflict, our anxiety for these would have been less. And so it was on this occasion. My mind, reverting in sympathy to the unfortunate indisposition of our ladies, I naturally cast my eyes back towards the windows of the room in which they were concealed, just as the drum commenced to beat again for the grand dance; and what was my astonishment to see six distinct female faces instantly dodge back from six window panes, they were plainly and closely pressing. Soon, another fair face appeared, looking over the shoulders of the gentlemen in the doorway. The gentlemen naturally made way for the fair one to get a better view, and the lady improved the kindness. Another lady filled her place, and soon, in her turn, advanced for a better view; occupying the place of the first lady, who had now moved on nearer the front, and this movement went on by the ladies, until, in succession, as quickly, as they had been attacked by the strange disorder, the invalids were all recovered, taking their old positions in the front, "fighting bravely until the last gun was fired," and then complaining that the battle of the "breech-cloths" did not last longer.

The warriors in this dance, as they moved around in a circle in close single file, presented a variety of dress enough to suit anyone. Very many of them had no dress, save the breech-cloth, and paint. One old warrior was dressed in a wolf skin, with the wolf head forming a head covering. Another, with spare spindle shanks, trotted around with a bright scarlet shawl on his shoulders, worn folded, with the corner points dangling at his heels. One nobly-formed savage wore, suspended on his bare breast, two large silver medals, presented by the U. S. Government in 1825, one stamped "peace and friendship," the other, "John Quicy Adams, President of the United States." The old men simply gave an occasional grunt, as they moved around with measured tread of spare and tawny limbs unclothed, in solemn dignity. The younger braves were profuse in grotesque postures and whoopings, barkings, wolf howlings and discharging their guns in the air. Some were dressed only in deer-skin breeches, with the usual ornaments of beads, tassels and feathers, and some had red shirts only.

After the dance the great Buffalo signified his desire to have a talk with Gov. Barry. State Senator Harvie introduced the Governor, who said: "The great chief of Michigan is glad to meet the great chief of the Chippewas. He desires to meet him as a friend and a brother, but not to confer upon political subjects. Let this meeting be one of friendship between the people of the great chief of Michigan and the people of the great chief of the Chippewas, and nothing more." This was repeated to Buffalo in the Chippewa language, sentence by sentence, by the interpreter.

The great Buffalo replied, through the interpreter, as follows: "My father, I am glad to meet you here, on this land where my fathers lived, and the land which they have left me, and where their bones repose. Especially am I glad to meet you at this time, when on account of some things, my heart is sad. I was told I should be paid off here, in this place, twenty-five years ago; and now, before the time is half gone, I am told I must go to Sault Ste. Marie. It is a great way; I am old and cannot go. The man who sold these lands was but a child. Buffalo did not do it. My father knows the ways of the white man and the ways of the red man. In view of all this, the great Buffalo feels sad. I wish you to look at these papers."

Here the chief took from beneath his dress a copy of a treaty with the Chippewas and handed it to the Governor, who, after looking at the title, handed the papers back to the chief, and replied:

"The chief of Michigan is only chief of another great tribe, and has no power in the matter of this treaty. He will do all in his power to promote justice and right, and he advises the great Buffalo to do as his great father, the President, directs, as he will do right."

The same old "taffy," as the boys now call it, always dealt out so liberally to the Indians. The "great father" at Washington no doubt "did right," by enforcing the wrong in the bogus treaty with the "child," of whom Buffalo spoke. As Buffalo told Gov. Barry, "he knew the ways of the white man." I think we all know pretty well of the wrongs so many times enforced in accordance with the terms of fraudulently obtained treaties with the Indians by the government, which the wronged natives are told "always does right."

The pipe of peace was then passed around, and the "talk" was over. At this point John Harmon and the mercurial Senator Harvie had concluded the scheme of a little joke upon a peculiar financial characteristic of Gov. Barry. It was well known that the Governor, although wealthy, was very prudent with his means, in his expenditures of money, and it required very adroit management to open his purse strings on any common occasion. But here was a very uncommon call, and when John Harmon suggested to the Governor that it was customary in such cases to make some small present to the Indians, the Governor, thrown off his guard by the excitement of the dance, and the words small present, in Harmon's suggestion, replied: "Very well, gentlemen, make them such a present as you think suitable for me." Harmon and Harvie sped away to the trader's store, and the small present speedily distributed to the red men and their squaws, would have insured the Governor at least six votes each from the braves had they resided in Chicago or New York at the next election. But when, just before we were to embark for our departure, the bill, to the amount of some forty or fifty dollars, was presented to the Governor, those of you who knew him can imagine the pent up wrath which his dignity, before another great chief, restrained from explosion; but it cast over his dark features a look which reminded one of a black thunder cloud which seemed just ready to burst asunder with terrific lightning and thunder. He paid the bill in portentious silence, and said not a word; but had he, about that time, caught John Harmon and Senator Harvie alone, I think I would decline to record the merited rebuke he would have given them in his well known vigorous language, when occasion called for it. The clouds of the affair hung over him a long time; and when we landed at Ontonagon, the Governor would not go ashore, for fear, I suppose, of more Indians, to receive "small presents."

We left La Pointe with regret, having our time so much occupied by the red men that we had no time to thoroughly explore the locality where Marquette was located about 1669, when only thirty years of age.

We were obliged to anchor nearly a quarter of a mile from shore, at Ontonagon, on account of the shoal water; and a part of our company went ashore in row boats. An old barn-like warehouse, a low double log house, one or two other log cabins, and a small frame house in process of construction, was all there was of Ontonagon; and we were soon on board and steaming down the lake.

We made two other landings on our way back, and as the last sunset we would be able to enjoy on Lake Superior bade us a golden good night, we gathered around the cabin lights, and congratulated each other upon the unvarying beautiful weather for the entire week we had passed upon this great water; and retired to our state rooms for peaceful rest, and the landing in the morning at the Sault. It was a beautiful starlight night, and when about five miles off Whitefish point, at midnight, we were all awakened by a terrific crash, and concussion of the boat, which nearly threw us out of our berths. Such of us as were thus rudely awakened, supposed we had struck a rock. On entering the cabin from my state room, I found the floor around the dining room table strewn with broken crockery, food, and glassware, which the collision had thrown from a table where the captain and the choice spirits of the passengers were having a farewell supper; and the passengers were running to and fro in great alarm. We soon found we had come in collision with the other and opposition steamer on the lake, the Manhattan, but did not know for a short time of intense suspense if one or both steamers would go to the bottom, which was soon found to be beyond soundings. Very soon, we heard our captain, Jack Wilson, call out to Capt. Colwell, of the other steamer, "For God's sake hurry your passengers aboard my boat, for you are sinking."

In the midst of intense excitement, the few men, women, and children, were hurried from the sinking Manhattan, and lifted from the small boats on board the Monticello, nearly all of them in their night clothes, barely escaping with their other garments in their hands.

We saw the doomed steamer gradually sinking deeper and deeper in the water, and waited with anxious eyes for the moment, soon expected, when she would take the final plunge. She was soon down to the upper deck, and just as we held our breath to see the water engulf her, some one cried out, "She floats!" And so it proved. The boat was heavily loaded with lumber and wood, and, just sinking to her upper deck floor, floated, from the bouyancy of the loading. We took the wreck in tow, and the next morning, within a few miles of the landing at the Sault, I saw her keel plow into the sand bottom, in twenty-two feet of water, and the rest of that season, "our line" had no opposition.

It is often very amusing, even in the midst of events full of ruin and disaster, to witness the ludicrous acts of individuals.

A lady was brought on board our boat, who sank upon the cabin floor, in her night clothes, and, clasping her hands as if in utter despair, exclaimed, "Oh, dear! my trunks are all lost, and my two new silk dresses in them, and I have been way down to Massachusetts to get them; but I don't care if I can get my new teeth! I left two new sets in my state room, and I *must* have *them!* Do tell somebody to get my teeth before the boat sinks. If I can only get my teeth, I don't care for anything else!" One man came through the cabin, crying out to the passengers, "Get out of the way; she has powder on board, and will explode in a minute!"

As we all knew that powder was, at that time, ten feet under water, he did not alarm us much. But it was very touching to see the mothers clasp their children in their arms, when they realized their safety, and with tears streaming down their cheeks, thank God for their deliverance from the sinking boat. There were many tearful eyes in that cabin, besides those of the rescued. Before we left the wreck aground, I went aboard and found the stem of our boat had struck the Manhattan about midship, and almost at right angle, cutting completely into her hull and deck some seven or eight feet. As a piece of naval war practice, this collision would have been a great success. But as a peaceful meeting, on the broad, deep lake, on a bright, starlit night, I suppose the courts must have decided on its merits. I never learned the subsequent fate of the Manhattan.

We found the London at the wharf, below the St. Mary's Rapids, and the tram railway soon transferred us to the new quarters on board. We took a direct course for Detroit from Mackinaw, in the face of a strong wind; and the next morning, when somewhere off Thunder Bay, it was blowing a gale, and the waves made our boat groan in every joint. The captain very prudently put about and made for Presque Isle harbor, where we remained all day, until the storm subsided. There was one board dwelling house at Presque Isle, and the old unbroken forest came down to the lake shore.

A pleasant ride down to Lake Huron, and we entered the River St. Clair, at Fort Gratiot, in the afternoon, well contented to enjoy the beautiful quiet waters of the river, after the somewhat uncertain waters of the lake; and at night we went to our state room for our last sleep on the steamer, before we should again walk the streets of Detroit, with its already known dignity as a city, and rejoicing that on our now fast closing tour we had safely escaped all the perils of collisions, the wild Indians, and wilder waves of the great lakes. But events proved it is not judicious to balance your books before your accounts are all posted. In my berth that night, while quietly enjoying the steady movement of our boat in the still water, I heard a low grating sound coming up from the bottom of the boat, and by a little attention soon discovered it was the keel of the boat scraping acquaintance with the gravel of the shoals in Lake St. Clair, and I was rather enjoying the novel entertainment, when, all at once, there came a crash below our room that shook the boat as if a torpedo had been exploded under us.

You may well believe the satisfaction I felt, at that moment, in the knowledge that the solid earth was not six inches below our boat's keel was of no little magnitude, and as the wheels soon began to move, and the boat evidently was again on her course, we kept our berths, and slept until morning, counting two collisions on one trip of no small importance in the list of our adventures, for we found, in the morning, we had collided with the bowsprit of a large schooner, breaking it off, and it in return completely wrecking the cook room and pantry of the steamer.

The pleasant memories of that two weeks' trip to Lake Superior, in 1851, are green in my memory yet; but with them is mingled the sad reflection that of the twelve persons of our party mentioned in this paper, only three remain, John Harmon, my oldest daughter, Mrs. Colvin, of Adrian, and myself. Oh how our pathway through the departed years is shaded by the many willows we have planted along the way, over the graves of our friends and loved companions. Fellow pioneers, our turn to stop and rest, as these have done, is not far away. May our lives be such that when it comes, kind hands may plant the cypress and the willow over our resting places with the same sincere regard we have cherished for the dear ones who have gone before us. On through the coming years we seem to see the unclouded brightness of the pathway, for those who shall fill our places; but let our children remember that an unbroken line of the cypress and the willow will follow them, as it has followed us, as the years move on, until we all gather on that shore, where there can be no shadows, because there is no sun; "for the Lord our God is the light thereof."

RECOLLECTIONS OF PIONEER LIFE IN MICHIGAN

BY JOSEPH BUSBY

While on a vist to my old friend, Judge Albert Miller, of Bay City, in the fall of 1885, we were talking over matters of "Auld Lang Syne," as we were accustomed to do whenever the opportunity occurred. He suggested that I should write something of my early experience as a pioneer of Michigan, and as I have always taken a deep interest in the pioneer movement, I readily consented to do so, and in doing which I may have to speak often of myself, but hope not to be thought egotistical.

My father kept cows, sold milk, and kept a store for the sale of butter, cheese, and eggs, etc., in London, England, for many years. His life was a laborious one; often during the summer he would have to rise at midnight and ride six or eight miles, to milk his cows, as pasture could be obtained better and cheaper at that distance; he would get home with the milk by five or six o'clock in the morning, then he would have to serve the milk to out-door customers, and that would take two persons (my father and younger brother), until nine o'clock; then, if he could, he would have one or two hours' sleep, and after a lunch or early dinner, would have to start again to milk, and on his return would go round again to serve the milk, as his customers all expected to be served twice a day. I was apprenticed at that time and lived away from home. My mother attended to the store and house affairs; they kept one servant of all work. As I said before, it was very hard on father, and it was not so easy to change into any other business then. In the early part of 1830, a gentleman from Canada was visiting a friend of mine, and from him I received a glowing account of that country. I also secured books and pamphlets, written by William Cobbett and others, relating principally to farming interests in the United States, and advising persons to go there instead of to Canada. I used to read these works to the folks at home, and urged my father to sell out and try his fortune in that new, distant, and to us unknown country, as I felt badly to see him work so hard, and thought he might do better there, and finally he advertised and sold out his business, and after bidding all our friends farewell, we sailed for New York (quite an undertaking in those days), in what was then considered a large vessel, a packet ship of 500 tons. We were forty-four days upon the water, and sometimes pretty well shaken up. I have seen it so rough that nearly every one was sea-sick, even the animals, for in those days they always took a cow, sheep, pigs, and poultry. I remember well the turkeys were sick, also the cow. Every day or so they would kill a pig or sheep for fresh meat. I could tell of many incidents of the voyage, and the perils, etc., but I will only mention two. Once there was an alarm of fire, which caused quite a commotion for a time, but it was soon extinguished, to our great relief. A ship on fire at sea is something awful to think of. It was caused by ashes from a pipe carelessly thrown among some inflammable matter. At another time we were nearly run down by another vessel in the night, and were only saved from a terrible disaster by the vigilance of the captain. The vessel was coming down before the wind, and was near cutting us in two, as our ship was tacking, and was within a ship's length of us, but the captain happened to come on deck in the nick of time, and got the ship round so that only the rigging of the two vessels became entangled. It was a very providential escape. My mother was very sick all the way over. She felt very badly at leaving all her family, father, mother, brothers, and sisters behind, without any prospects, as she supposed, of ever seeing them again. A voyage across the broad Atlantic in those days was a great undertaking, and especially to come to an unknown country, among entire strangers. Now we can cross in comparative ease in less than seven days. I could tell a great deal more about our journey, but it is unnecessary here, as I started out to tell of our early experience as pioneers of Michigan, but thought it might be interesting to some to know why we left our native land.

We were very glad to set foot on *terra firma* once more, and were delighted with New York (what we saw of it), but did not stay long, as my father's intention was to get a farm; so we started for Utica (I believe one of our fellow passengers was going there to a brother), where he made a short stay, and there heard that in Michigan eighty acres of good land could be purchased for one hundred dollars. Father thought that was just the thing, so he concluded to go there. Emigration then was setting that way. Very few now living can realize what traveling was in those early times. In the first place, on leaving New York, we took steamer from there to Albany; then by the Erie canal (which had been finished just five years) to Buffalo, and from there to Detroit by lake steamer. We crossed the lake in the old Superior, and arrived in Detroit without mishap. It was the only way we could go, as there were no railroads then. Time from New York, over two weeks; now it takes twenty-three hours. It was a long and tedious journey with a family of seven, and very expensive; no competition. My father hired the half of the house, I think on Woodward avenue, just above Jefferson avenue, as it was cheaper than going to a hotel, and he had to economize. We then began to look around and make enquiry about the country, and after waiting a day or two, father and I started out to "view the land." We were advised to go westward, and went on foot to Ypsilanti (30 miles). The country and roads were new; the road muddy, with a clay soil, which made it heavy walking. We passed several small houses on the road, occupied by new settlers, and I think in every house we found some one sick, and in one or two the whole family were down. We stopped for information, but it was very discouraging to find so much sickness; but we kept on, as we intended to go as far as Ypsilanti, and perhaps farther, if we liked the country. But night overtook us about six or seven miles from our destination, and a darker night I think I never saw. And what made it worse, it commenced to rain in torrents, accompanied with thunder and lightning, and the road was horrible (wet clay), with a dense wood on each side. The lightning showed us our road occasionally, and what made it still worse, we heard the howling of wolves, first on one side, then on both sides, and also behind us. We had heard and read about wolves, but never had them so unpleasantly near before, and I must confess we were somewhat alarmed—not knowing what they might do. It was so dark we could not see them, but I carried a loaded fowling piece, and intended to give them a warm reception if they came too near; but they did not molest us, and in due time we arrived at the tavern in Ypsilanti, and related our experience, before a rousing fire, such as we had never seen before, and after getting a good supper, instead of making one for the wolves, and drying our clothes, we retired to bed, and made up our minds we had seen enough on that road and the next morning started back to Detroit rather discouraged. We then became acquainted with a Mr. Lawson (an Englishman), living about four miles out on the Pontiac road, who had a log house on his farm that was unoccupied, and which he offered to us free of rent until we could decide where to locate,—the offer was gladly accepted. We also had the privilege of cutting what firewood we needed, and also if we chose to cut cord wood, for which we were to be paid. I remember going out with my father one morning to cut down our first tree. We selected a good sized one, probably fourteen inches in diameter; we cut into it and all around it, without any idea which way it would fall. Mr. Lawson came up while we were at work and told us we were in danger, and explained to us how we should do it, but we did not make much headway at that kind of work and gave it up. Father, by Mr. Lawson's advice, leased a house on Woodward Avenue, a few doors below the Grand Circus, or rather where the Grand Circus is now. At that time it was a mud hole, and after a heavy shower the water would cover the road. I remember one Sunday afternoon seeing a young Irishman and his sweetheart who wanted to go across and he took her on his back and carried her over. We fitted up the house during the winter for a hotel and moved into it in the early spring, raised the sign with a spread eagle on each side and called in the Eagle Tavern. That was in the spring of 1831. We had a good run of custom, all we could accommodate (the house was not large), and sometimes more. Some days all the hotels would be crowded, and people would come in and be content to lie even on the floor rather than stay out of doors all night. Detroit then was a small place of about 2,200 inhabitants, and had few of the conveniences of modern times. No water-works. I had to take the horse and cart and empty barrels every morning and drive down to and into the river, and then with a pail fill the barrels, which, by the time I got home, would not be more than two-thirds full, owing to the rough road, and sometimes I would have to go twice in one day. How different now. The roads of Detroit were bad. There was a stage ran from there to Pontiac, on a very fair road in summer, but in the spring and fall almost impossible to get through with an empty wagon, and often the stage would stick fast in the clay soil up to the hubs, and the driver would have to get help to pry it out, the passengers having to get out at the worst places and walk. It was a standing joke, at the time, that the passengers had to carry rails with them to help the stage out of the mud. I will mention an incident that occurred while keeping tavern (I might relate many others but it would occupy too much space). It was customary for father or myself to meet the steamers as they came in from Buffalo and to take passengers to our house. Sometimes they would land thousands in a day, and on one occasion he brought a lady and infant a few weeks old. She said her husband left the boat for a few moments to procure some necessity, and got left behind, but that he would take the next boat. So the next day she left the child at the house and went to meet her husband, as she said he would not know where to find her, and that was the last we ever saw or heard of her, so the baby was left on our hands. Of course we did not want any babies, and should have sent it away, but one of the guests who had no children of her own took pity on the little thing, and agreed to take it and bring it up, and in a few days left with her husband, Mr. Spare, for Saginaw. I believe it lived for one year and then died.

My father succeeded very well that year, but the next year, 1832, the cholera broke out and raged fearfully in Detroit; business generally was stagnated and a great number left the city. I remember well one man and wife (strangers) came there. He left his wife and went to look for a place in the country. He came back in three days. In the meantime his wife had died and was buried. And one gentleman, a resident of the city, sent his family away, but stayed himself to attend to business, but all his family died except himself. There were also many cases of small-pox and bilious fever. I was taken down with the fever and was very low indeed, and not expected to recover, and it was a long time before I regained my strength. The doctor who attended me died himself of cholera. About this time the Black Hawk war broke out. It caused quite an excitement in Detroit, and they drafted about three hundred men who went to join the forces against the Indians. My brother James volunteered to go with them. They were in command of Colonel Brooks, and were encamped on the common, back of our house, and made it quite lively for some days. That company went about sixty miles and then received orders to return. I afterwards saw the chief and his sons, and some more of the Indians in Detroit. In the early part of 1833, my sister was married to James Fraser, who afterwards concluded to remove his family to Saginaw, where he had bought land, and he prevailed on my father to do the same. So in the fall of that year he sold out the tavern business and accompanied the Frasers to Saginaw, then a very new country, and but few white settlers there. I, and a young man named Edward Brown (whose family were to be neighbors) went out first and took a drove of cows and oxen, etc., and a horse each. I think we slept three nights on the road (it might have been four); I am not certain now where we stopped or how we fared the first part of the road, but when we got to Flint we stopped with John Todd, the only house we could stop at. There were two other houses and I think that was all. The next day we drove to the Cass river, not much more than a trail through the woods. We arrived there after dark, the cattle and horses very tired; we could not see whether we had them all or not. An old Frenchman (I think his name was Campau) lived across the river, and we called him to bring over his canoe, and after taking the bridles and saddles off the horses we let them go and crossed with the Frenchman, and got supper, and then laid down on the bare floor in front of a good fire, and being tired slept soundly till morning, and then, after breakfast, crossed the river again and found horses and cattle all there. They had been too tired to go away far, so after swimming them over we started on our journey again, and after going eleven miles arrived at Green Point. Here the river was wide,—the Shiawassee and Tittabawassee rivers make a junction with the Saginaw, about two miles above the city of Saginaw,—and here I met for the first time my good friend, Judge Albert Miller, and his brother-in-law, Mr. E. Jewett. Mr. Miller was then a young man and lived with his mother (a most estimable lady, whose kindness of heart and hospitable welcome to new comers was well remembered and highly appreciated). We received very great and timely assistance from Messrs. Miller and Jewett in swimming our cattle across the wide stream. We then proceeded on our way and arrived at our destination on the Tittabawassee before dark. My father had purchased the place opposite James Fraser's (now the Paines farm), so the families could be near each other. There was a house on the place adjoining occupied by a family named Tuft, with whom we stayed until we could get a house up on father's place. In the meantime my brother James had come out to assist me, and we cut logs for a house 20 by 30, and hewed them on two sides, and then invited the neighbors for miles around (and it took about all there were) to the raising, and we got the walls up that day and began to feel proud of our house. We obtained shingles from Detroit by water, and split out oak ribs to nail them to, so we had a good tight roof, and then we had plank floors. I think the Judge has said something about that in an article written by him. He spoke of being a part of the first saw mill in the country; well, I was the other half. I believe we two sawed the first plank ever sawed in the Saginaw valley. He was pitman and I was top sawyer. We sawed plank for two floors out of green pine (the saw my father brought from England with a number of farming implements that he had better have thrown overboard, as the freight from New York cost more than they were worth). It is needless for me to describe the building of the chimney (of sticks and clay) and finishing of the house, as these things have so often been described before. Suffice it to say we received great and timely assistance from Judge Miller all through, and when it was done we felt proud of it, and if you could have been at the house-warming and witnessed the dancing, and heard the singing, I think you would have said we were a happy family. I never heard my father utter a word of regret at leaving England; he seemed perfectly contented. My mother felt very badly at times, the separation from all her family, with very little prospect of ever seeing any of them again in this life. But after a time those feelings wore off and she became perfectly reconciled. While I and my brother were staying at Tuft's (who was a very superstitious man) he awoke us one night in great alarm, and called to us to get up and come down, for the world was coming to an end. Of course we got up at once and went out and witnessed a very beautiful sight, the meteoric shower of 1833. We watched until daylight, it was indeed a sight worth seeing and never to be forgotten. I have never seen anything so grand since, and would not have missed it on any account. My brother James was married in that house to the eldest daughter of Captain Malden, and Judge Miller married them (the first couple he ever married), and we had a rousing party on that occasion, such as had never been seen in that part of the country before. My brother, who had learned the carpenter trade in Detroit, went with his wife to reside there.

We were very much annoyed at times by the wolves, and often kept awake at night by their howlings. Sometimes there would seem to be fifty or more at once, generally when they were chasing deer. The bears also were troublesome at times, and would kill our hogs. One of our neighbors, D. McClennand, heard one night a great commotion among his hogs in the pen, and getting up to ascertain the cause, saw by the light of the moon a large bear making off with one of his fat hogs weighing about 200 lbs. which he had taken out of the pen. He immediately seized his gun and went out through the snow just as he got out of bed, but the bear dropped the hog (which he had killed), and made for the adjacent woods, but the next day the Indians followed the tracks and killed the bear. Speaking of hogs, I never but once saw a real drunken hog (I mean a four-legged one), and that was at the raising of a log barn or shed on Fraser's place; it was customary in those early days to furnish liquor at all gatherings, especially at raisings, as the neighbors turned out to help without pay, and that day a large tin pail of whisky was brought and set down a short distance off by the fence, when, on turning my head that way, I saw a hog with his head in the pail, and before we could prevent he had imbibed the whole, and it made him quite frisky. He would jump around something like a dog after his tail, then he would fetch on his nose, stagger, and fall and squeal, in fact was drunk; but I don't know if he suffered from headache afterwards, as he never mentioned it.

We were never molested by the Indians, but always on friendly terms with them. We would trade with them occasionally for venison, fish, or cranberries. Once two strapping fellows came to the house late in the evening and wanted some whisky, and made us understand that his squaw had got little papoose. We very seldom let them have liquor, but as that seemed to be a special occasion we let them have some, but they did not seem in any hurry to go home, but laid down on the floor and slept until daylight. They were very quiet. Sometimes they would pitch their wigwam near the house and then we could get very little sleep. They would have a pow-wow, and keep it up all night, with a monotonous drumming and singing (after their fashion), but beyond that we were not disturbed. There was one thing we missed very much and that was religious instruction; we had no preaching for about two years, and sometimes I would find parties at work who did not know what day of the week it was until I told them.

I used frequently to go from the farm to Saginaw, on Sunday, to the post-office for mail matter. The mail carrier used to come on horseback from Flint once a week, and cross the river at Green Point, the only crossing at that time. I remember meeting him once, and as he had some errand to our house I accompanied him. He did not want to be troubled carrying the mail bag there and back, so he pitched it into the bushes until he returned. At that time the mail was not a heavy one.

We underwent many privations in those early days of the settlement. We had to get our supplies from Detroit, and as they could not be brought by land they came by water, and only one small vessel, the Scrage, at that time. If late in the season it would get frozen in the ice in the bay, and then we would have to wait until the ice would bear a team. Meanwhile, we would be out of flour and meal, etc., and would have to borrow from those who were more fortunate, who always divided cheerfully with those who had none. I have pounded corn in a mortar, made from a hollow log cut off and set up endwise, and a pestle fixed to a spring pole fastened across under the beams.

I can't say the meal was very fine. We would blow away what chaff we could and the rest we had to eat in the mush. Sometimes we would use a large grater, but that was too slow a process; and then to make the flour hold out we would boil potatoes and mix with the flour, half and half, which did very well. One thing we had plenty of—good milk and good appetites. In the winter we would make up sleighing parties, and the ice on the river being sound we would make eight or ten sleigh loads and go ten, fifteen, or perhaps twenty miles, and call on a neighbor, and all get out and have a dance, and then come home by moonlight. I have had my fingers frozen driving but we enjoyed the sport.

In 1835 my father left the farm and moved to Saginaw and opened a boarding house. A great number had moved there from the east, which made business lively. I took the farm to run on my own account. I had some very choice crops in the ground which looked well and promising, but the water rose and overflowed the banks of the river and destroyed them. I waited until the ground became dry enough and replanted, but the water rose a second time so I could take my canoe and paddle all over the ground. I then became discouraged and gave up farming, and went to Saginaw and engaged in other business. About this time there was quite an excitement caused by the advent of the first steamboat ever seen in those waters. We heard that the Governor Marcy was actually coming up the river with a large company on board. And on she came, sure enough, and everybody was out to see her and give her a welcome. I went on board with a number of others and we went up the river, and up the Tittabawassee, until she touched bottom just below John Brown's (Scotch Brown's), for we had two John Brown's, and to distinguish them called one Scotch and the other Yankee Brown.

There are one or two things I forgot to mention before. The early settlers will remember what a pest the blackbirds were, and what a trouble we had to keep them from destroying the crops, especially the corn, just when it was soft and milky. They would flock there by the million, and it would take all our time and attention, until the corn got hard, to keep them off. Day after day, from daylight in the morning until the middle of the day, and again from two hours before sundown until dark, I have had to run up and down the field, until as wet with the dew as if I had been in the river, firing at and hallooing at them to keep them from alighting, and by doing so would succeed in driving them over; but they would come, one flock after another. We would build stages some distance apart, and take an empty barrel, and beat with a stick, or anything to make a noise. Only by such means could we get a crop. If we could keep them on the wing, they would pass over to the wild rice fields till towards evening. I have known whole fields destroyed in a day or two by neglecting it. Another great pest was the mosquitoes. They were very thick and troublesome, and we had to make fires around the house and keep them off by the smoke; but sometimes it seemed they could stand as much smoke as we could. Then came the fever and ague, brought on by exposures (and I don't wonder at it). Almost every new comer would have it at some time. I had it, at one time, for two months, and would shake every other day; one day I would go to work, and the next shake, but I finally shook it off. I never had it more than three or four days at a time after that, and then quite light. I will merely state further that I continued to reside in the Saginaws until the fall of 1839; in the meantime, learned the carpenter's trade. I helped to raise the first saw mill (the Williams mill), and worked on a number of the best houses of that time, and could have had plenty of business, but there was a great scarcity of money. I finally raised enough to carry me to New York, where I resided until the spring of 1846, when I bought and removed to Williamsburgh, now Brooklyn, Eastern District, where I carried on business as a builder, part of the time in partnership with my brother James, until in 1869 I went into the real estate and insurance business, from which I retired two years ago, and since that time have been traveling through this country and some parts of Europe.

In conclusion, I would say that I am much interested in the pioneer movement, and in reading the reports and doings of the society. I write from memory, having no notes to refer to. I often regret not having made some memoranda at that time, but what I have written is too deeply impressed on my mind ever to be forgotten. I should have been very much pleased to have attended your next social gathering, but expect to be in Europe at that time; but if spared another year, shall endeavor to be present. I take great pleasure in reading the volumes of "Pioneer Collections." Many of the names and incidents I am familiar with. And now, wishing the society every success, I must bring this paper to a close.

In reference to the preceding paper, Judge Albert Miller, of Bay City, has furnished the following:

Many of the incidents mentioned in the foregoing article I well remember. The "Eagle Tavern" must be remembered by the early settlers of Detroit, and by those who traveled north from Detroit in 1831 and 1832. The difficulties incident to travel in those days are well described. I remember the trouble we had in swimming the cattle (mentioned by Mr. Busby), across the Saginaw river. In swimming, cattle are prone to follow a leader; there were quite a number in the drove mentioned, and they were all driven into the river together, and, following their instincts, instead of striking for the opposite shore, they formed themselves into a circle and swam after each other, till with great difficulty, we succeeded in breaking the circle and heading one animal for shore, where he landed, followed by the rest of the drove, after having been drifted by the current far below the regular landing place.

Mr. Busby mentions the sawing done by him and myself as being the first done in the county. He is mistaken in that; for there was hand-sawing of lumber done by the U. S. troops long before he or I ever saw Saginaw. In mentioning the subject in my address to the pioneers of Saginaw, I said it was the only saw running in that locality at the time mentioned. The house raising, chimney building, house warming and wedding, are well remembered by the writer.

ALBERT MILLER

THE DIOCESE OF DETROIT—WHAT IT WAS—WHAT IT IS

BY THE REV. FRANK A. O'BRIEN, OF ST. AUGUSTINE'S CHURCH, KALAMAZOO

Mr. President, Ladies and Gentlemen—

The Diocese of Detroit is no small factor in the history of the Catholic Church in the United States. Not only on account of present importance, but on account of its history as well, dating as it does, a long way back. The Catholic settlements in Michigan were very early, and the annals of that church are unique. A diocese means a certain territory assigned to the spiritual jurisdiction of one bishop. He is the head of all within his diocese, accountable to God and Rome only for its administration. Detroit, and its adjacent territory, which meant all the northwest, was successively under the jurisdiction of Spanish, French, English and Canadian bishops till the establishment of the See of Baltimore in 1789, when it became a department of that See. Then, as the church grew, and new Sees were erected, it became subject in succession to Bardstown, Ky., and finally to Cincinnati. So rapid was the growth of the church, or rather, so much had been done by the early missionaries, that the northwest seemed to be an enigma to the bishops who had not visited it. Scarcely would one See be created, but the new bishop would inform his seniors that more were needed; that his share was too large to manage properly. So it was, in a particular way, with Michigan, which was thought to be outside the limits of civilization; not only in Europe, either, as it is so thought there, in some localities, even now, but in our own country, especially "down east." Bishop Fenwick was consecrated Bishop of the Diocese of Cincinnati in 1823, and assumed control of Michigan as part of his diocese. In the following year, in making his episcopal visitations, he was astonished at what he saw in Michigan; churches were where he had not thought of, schools flourished, alike for white and Indian. The Indian schools at Green Bay, Mackinaw and L'Arbre Croche were wonders. The latter had put on the airs of an academy, and the good Bishop, on examination, found several of its scholars fit for the university. He immediatly volunteered to defray the expenses of all of this class who felt like enjoying the benefits of such a course. Two Indian youths availed themselves of this offer, William Maccodabinese and Augustus Hamlen. Bishop Fenwick sent them immediately to the University of the Propaganda at Rome, where they were received with open arms. They were studious, and profited of the chance given them, as many testimonial letters to Bishop Fenwick testify. Among the warm friends whom they found in Rome was a young priest, of rare talent and remarkable ability, who took them under his protection, and gained for them many favors, which otherwise they would not have had. This person was Father Frederick Reze, afterwards the first bishop of Detroit. William Maccodabinese studied for the priesthood, but died before ordination. Augustus Hamlen returned to his tribe an accomplished civil engineer. Perhaps they are the only natives that ever completed a university course. Bishop Fenwick, after his five months' visitation tour in the Michigan portion of his diocese, returned convinced that Detroit must have a bishop. He made this the object of a trip to Baltimore. He consulted with the bishops of Baltimore, New York, Bardstown, Philadelphia and Charlestown, and from the arguments he used, they agreed to unite with him in a petition to Rome for a division of his diocese with Detroit as the See city. They united in commending Father Gabriel Richard as a suitable candidate for its first bishop. Rome, it seems, was fearful that the Church was spreading too fast. Its creed is to make haste slowly. It was, no doubt, astonished to receive this petition, which was but a repetition of what had come when Cincinnati was erected into a diocese only three years previous. Its answer of April, 1826, was gracious, but decidedly unsatisfactory to Bishop Fenwick, who counted on relief. The letter went on to state that, while they felt that Detroit would one day be a See, yet they were doubtful if the opportune time had arrived. Father Richard was known at Rome; his zeal, piety and labors were held in high esteem at the Roman court, and they felt sure he would do honor to the position. Still, Rome did not possess sufficient knowledge in regard to Michigan to make this important move. Would Bishop Fenwick and the other bishops be so kind as to send along the number of Catholic churches, priests, and what sources of revenue there were for the support of a bishop in a becoming manner, who is always a prince of the church. Rome also called their attention to the fact that there should be some order followed in the nomination of bishops, who were increasing in America. The nomination of a single individual, no matter how worthy, was not in keeping with the laws and customs of the church. Hence, they suggested that, as it must come soon, let it begin with Detroit, that the bishops nominate in the future three worthy priests for a vacant or new See, saying which was worthy, more worthy, and most worthy, and Rome would select one of the three. In this case Gabriel Richard's name must be one of the three. This method suggested for the election of the first bishop of Detroit was the one adopted by the Second Provincial Council of Baltimore and observed even till our own day.

Good Bishop Fenwick was disappointed; his work was growing; his co-laborers were not numerous enough; each of them was doing double work. The spiritual affairs of his vast district he could manage by delegating, to a great extent, but the continually growing temporal interests were almost too much. A visitation trip consumed, as a rule, six months. At every step he was greeted with, "Will you send us a priest?" What could he do? When he returned home, business which had accumulated during his absence kept him very busy, so that, finally, instead of going from place to place, as had been his wont to execute deeds etc., he gave power of attorney to individuals for each specific work. A specimen of such a power of attorney may be of interest, the original being in the Bishop's own handwriting.

"Know all men by these presents, that I, Edward D. Fenwick, Bishop of Cincinnati, have made, constituted and appointed, and by these presents do make, constitute and appoint Michael Cummins, rector of St. Antony's Church, Monroe, Mich., my true and lawful attorney, for me and in my name and in my place and stead, to sell, lease, let or devise so much of that parcel of ground conveyed to me by Martin Nadeau, trustee of St. Antony's Church, as comprehended between the road leading to the upper settlement on the north side, and the River Raisin on the south, being one chain 89½ links along River Raisin, and then to the track confirmed to Jacque and Francois Leipelle on the east, and that owned by Gabriel Richard on the west, that is between the middle of the sixty feet broad road leading to Rocky River and aforesaid tract owned by Gabriel Richard. The money arising from lease, sale, rent, or devise of aforesaid, to be employed in finishing the new brick church of St. Antony.

"In witness whereof, etc., etc. EDWARD D. FENWICK."

This mode of proceeding aided him somewhat, but he felt the burden was too great to bear alone. He concluded to go to Rome in person to state his case, in preference to visiting each bishop again, as the time consumed would be about equal. He had also in view the augmenting of the number of clergy in his diocese by volunteer missionaries of Europe, whom he could solicit in person, and also the funds which he might collect to aid along works of charity in his rapidly growing diocese. He accordingly set sail, and met with a very favorable reception from the Holy See, who spoke encouraging words, endeavored to enlist volunteers in his service, and furnished him with aid for his missions, but his favorite theme, the new Diocese of Detroit, was referred to a council of bishops, which Rome desired to meet in Baltimore as soon as the time would permit. While in Rome a young Hanoverian priest, whom we have before mentioned, of noble family, who had graduated with the honors from the Urban College, an institution of the highest standing, visited him and stated he had concluded to return to his diocese with him. Bishop Fenwick at this announcement was surprised as well as edified. Young Reze was looked up to in all circles and promised great things for the future. His talents and gentle bearing had won for him a high position in church circles at its very centre. Naturally he could look forward to all the honor the church could give, and to see him willing to forsake all for the wilds of the northwest astonished the good Bishop of Cincinnati. Before leaving Rome, January 13, 1827, Bishop Fenwick officially appointed him his chancellor and vicar general. Bishop Fenwick returned to his diocese, having arranged before leaving Rome, that Father Reze was to go on a collecting tour through Europe.

In this he was very successful. Many clergymen listened to his earnest appeal for more laborers and cast their lot with him. The number of church ornaments he collected helped materially to adorn many a church in the northwest. The works of art, paintings, etc., he gathered form the treasure of a number of churches. Among such works is a masterpiece of Van Dyke, "The Crucifixion," now in the bishop's private chapel in Detroit. Besides these items he succeeded in collecting very large amounts of money. His great work was the organization of the Leopoldine Society in 1828, at his home, which gradually spread through the whole of the old German Empire. The object was the aid of the poor American missionaries. Everybody joined it. The dues were a penny a month, and it took like wildfire. This idea was not original with him, however. The French had such a society organized in 1822, called the society of the "Propagation of the Faith," which is still in existence, with its headquarters at Lyons, and subdivisions in every quarter. The latter society collected for many years from $500,000 to $1,000,000 annually, about $250,000 of which went each year to the poor American missions from the formation of the society till about 1850. In 1830, much of what came to America was used in Michigan. The society organized by Father Reze was named after the Archduchess Leopoldine of Austria, who became its protectress. The Archduke Rudolph and the Archbishop of Omulty heartily endorsed the movement and for many years this society furnished from $15,000 to $25,000 a year to the American missions, the bulk of which was distributed by Father Reze. If it was not for the help thus obtained from Europe the schools, etc., could not be maintained; the missionaries would be without support, lands which were required for the future could not be had, few churches would be erected, and our glory to-day would not be. Time and again had missionaries and bishops applied and petitioned for aid to the United States government, for the Indian schools, but it was steadily refused till about the advent of Bishop Reze in 1833. Then the government allowed $1,000 yearly, payable quarterly for the maintenance of all Catholic Indian schools in the northwest, which cost more than ten times that sum. The lack of co-operation on the part of the government, was the reason why the school books, dictionaries, etc., of our schools at that time were printed at Layback, Illyria. While speaking of these societies it might be well to state what was received one year, as a criterion. Take a year at random, 1834, for instance. From the society at Lyons, $14,000, from the Leopoldine's society, $20,000. This was all used in the Detroit Diocese and will account for such buildings as Ste. Anne's, old Trinity Church, about which there has been so much talk recently, and other churches in the Diocese, paid for by foreign money.

But to the subject. Shortly after the return of Bishop Fenwick to America he made a pastoral visit to the northwest, presumably to get the required information for the council soon to assemble at Baltimore. He was at this time more than six months on the trip and visited nearly every nook in that region. He was received at each Catholic settlement with great eclat. At L'Arbre Croche a total abstinence society of forty-two members, in regalia, came quite a distance to meet him. The attention of our temperance people is called to this society, in existence twenty years before the advent of Father Matthew, or the beginning of the temperance work in America. The first Provincial Council of Baltimore met in 1829. Bishop Fenwick earnestly advocated the erection of the Diocese of Detroit, and the nomination of a bishop for it. The council recommended it unanimously and nominated candidates. The documents were duly forwarded, but the answer was a "long while a coming." In the meantime Bishop Fenwick redoubled his energies in working for the new diocese. Father Reze had arrived with missionaries and funds, and a new fire, as it were, was enkindled all along the line. Father Reze himself became an active worker; he soon mastered the Indian language, as well as the English, and labored zealously in the cause. He established several new missions, and became the great favorite of the Pottowattomies. He began a school and church at Pokagon settlement, and attended it for some time, as well as doing the work of Vicar-General during the absence of Bishop Fenwick from his See. The last visit of this venerable prelate to his favorite field was in the spring of 1832. His register tells of his visits to the different schools and with what affection he was greeted, and what care he administered to his cherished flock. The number of confirmations are also recorded, viz.: 105 at Green Bay, 84 at L'Arbre Croche, etc., etc.

His arduous trip over rough ways, his duties of encouraging, advising, rebuking, and the hardships he underwent on this trip, aided to bring on a severe attack of dysentery. Upon feeling symptoms of ill-health he immediately started for home, but the cholera overtook him a short distance from Cincinnati and he died amid strangers, September 27, 1882, without the consolations of the faith he served so well, and before he saw the realization of his cherished desire. He was an earnest, zealous soldier of the Cross, and his name will be ever held in benediction.

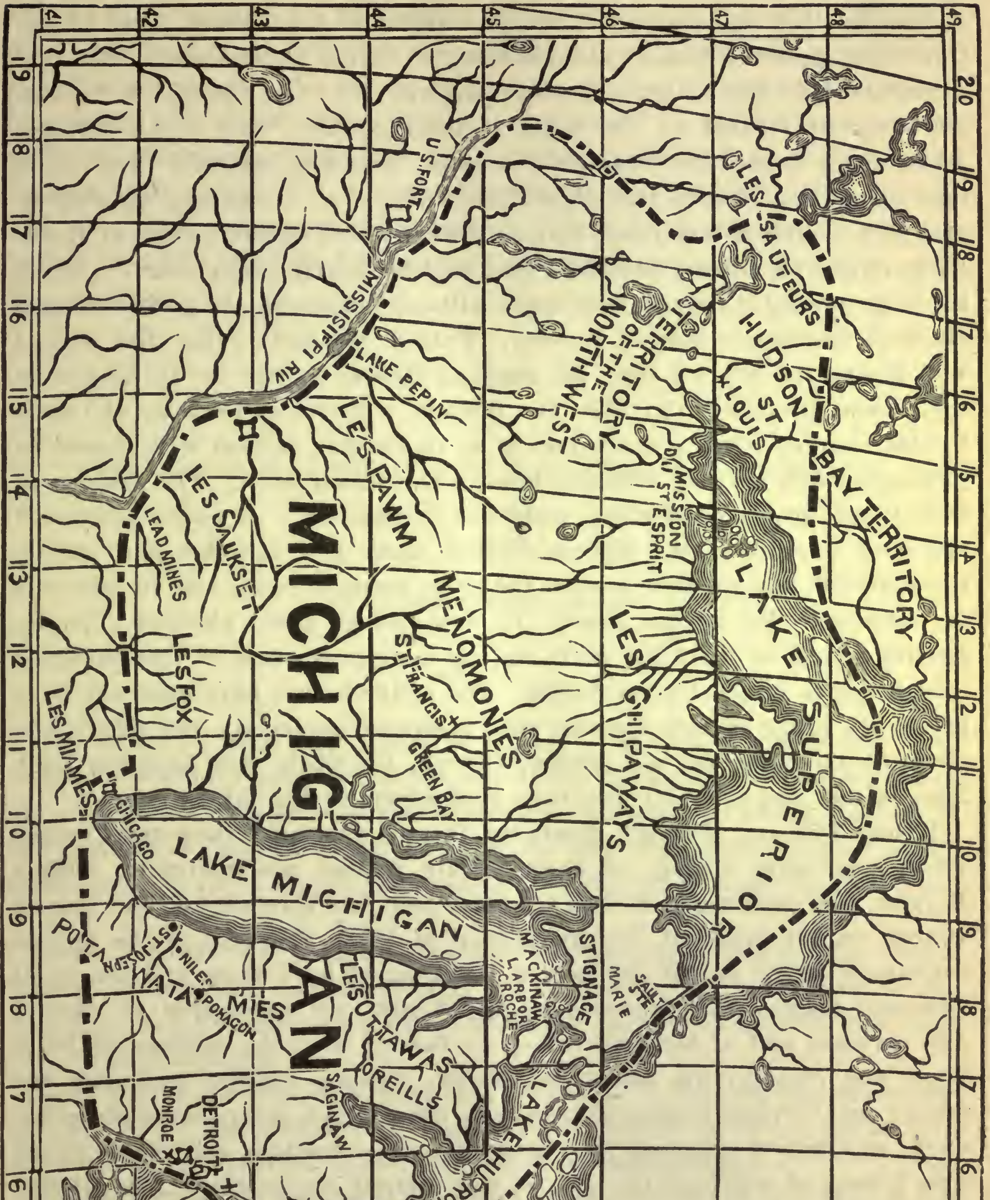
Father Richard, too, during the year before the Bull reached him, which would make him a prince of the church in the country he loved so well, laid his life on the altar of sacrifice, for his flock. Father Reze became administrator of the Diocese of Cincinnati, and all the Northwest. While filling this post with credit, he received from Rome, under date of May 18, 1833, the particulars of the canonical erection of the new Diocese of Detroit, and his appointment as Bishop of the newly erected See. The diocese comprised that territory bounded on the east by Lakes Huron, St. Clair, and Erie; north, Lake Superior and Hudson Bay territory; west, Mississippi River, and south by a line from the mouth of the Maumee River until said line intersected the Mississippi; in other words all of which is at present Michigan and Wisconsin, part of Minnesota, and a small portion of what is now Illinois, Indiana, and Ohio, as may be seen from the accompanying map, which has been copied from one issued by the Society for the Propagation of the Faith in 1835. Father Reze was consecrated Bishop of Rt. Rev. Dr. Brute, in Cincinnati, October 6, 1833, seven days before the consecration of the late Archbishop Purcell. He immediately left Cincinnati for the Second Provincial Council of Baltimore, held that year; after which he came to Detroit and labored indefatigably for the welfare of the diocese committed to him. To be brief. The great work and care of this large province from 1833 to 1837 proved too much for the physical strength of the Bishop. The exhaustion was so great that he was unable to attend properly to the business of the diocese for at least a year before the assembling of the Third Council of Baltimore, in April, 1837. He determined to surrender the charge which had made him a physical wreck. On the assembly of that body he declined to sit at its private sessions till his resignation would be acted on. It was as follows:

"Most Reverened Fathers, in Provincial Synod assembled:

"It is known that I reluctantly accepted episcopal consecration, and as I soon learned by experience, that the erection and administration of the new diocese, with its numberless difficulties and cares springing up on every side, were a burden too great for me to bear, I have accordingly frequently entertained the intention of resigning my diocese into the hands of His Holiness, the Sovereign Pontiff, or at least soliciting a suitable coadjutor from the Holy See. This intention I desire to carry out by these presents, and for this purpose I have empowered my actual vicars-general Rev. Messrs. Baden and DeBruyn, to exercise joint jurisdiction in my absence and until further arrangements are made. * * * * I beg you to aid to the fullest extent in your power to obtain the successful realization of my desires, if it shall seem good to our Lord. Your brother, etc.,

"FREDERICK REZE,
"Bishop of Detroit."

The council resolved unanimously to recommend the acceptance of his resignation to the Pope, and made provisions, in case of its acceptance, for a successor. Rome refused to accept the resignation, and ordered Bishop Reze to Rome to state his reasons in person for so requesting. He obeyed the order and arrived in Rome in very feeble health in 1839. A softening of the brain was threatened, or had already set in. On seeing the condition which he was in, Rome immediately retired him, but never took away his title as Bishop of Detroit. Although he lived for more than thirty years thereafter he was ever Bishop of Detroit. He remained in Rome with his mind so shattered that he was hardly able to attend to any business till the



MAP OF THE DIOCESE OF DETROIT, 1883.

revolution of 1849. He then returned to his home, where he died in 1871, a lunatic. He was cared for at the expense of his diocese. Rev. J. M. Odin was appointed bishop administrator of Detroit in December, 1840, but a position that had crazed a worthy man was not to be thought of by him. He positively refused it. The Bulls, so tradition says, were sent to another whose name I have not been able to learn, who also declined. They were sent for a third time to Rev. Peter Paul Lefevre, a zealous, worthy missionary, with a premonitory order that no refusal would be entertained at Rome. He governed the diocese prudently and well for nearly thirty years. During his reign several divisions were made without weakening the parent diocese. He died universally beloved in 1869. Father Hennaert ruled the diocese well during the interval from the death of Bishop Lefevre till the advent of the present incumbent, Rt. Rev. Dr. Borgess, a native of Prussia, who came to this country when a child, and is so thoroughly imbued with American principles that we may consider him to the manor born. The Diocese of Detroit has grown wonderfully under his management. A native priesthood has been introduced, the diocese divided, many new churches and institutions erected, and we have learned the great lesson of being able to take care of ourselves. No foreign money is now being used whatever. To-day Detroit stands in the front rank, and no more prosperous or less burdened diocese exists in the United States. The children that have gone out from her in the shape of new dioceses have prospered amazingly and reflect new glory on their honored old mother, Detroit, for whom they have the kindliest feeling, and of whom they have good reason to feel proud.

Bishop Lefevre, although governing Detroit for more than twenty-eight years, was never Bishop of Detroit, only Bishop administrator. Bishop Borgess was consecrated Bishop administrator, but succeeded to the title of Detroit on the death of the first bishop in 1871. The seal of the diocese consists of an A and M interwoven, surmounted by a cross and the usual episcopal insignia, the letters meaning "Under the protection of Mary." The personal seal of the first Bishop of Detroit were the emblems of faith, hope, and charity; his motto, the words. Bishop Lefevre used only the official seal. When Bishop Borgess was consecrated, the remarkable coincidence occurred of adopting as his seal the same emblems and motto of the first bishop, of which at the time he was entirely unconscious. The Diocese of Detroit at the present time comprises the counties of the Lower Peninsula south of Ottawa, Kent, Montcalm, Gratiot, and Saginaw, and east of the counties of Saginaw and Bay. It has 156 churches, one bishop, 133 priests, a Catholic population of about 110,000. A retrospective glance of what Detroit was when it set out for itself as a new diocese in 1833, and what it is, or rather what the territory it occupied at the start, is, to-day, as far as the growth of Catholicity is concerned, may be comprehended better by a few statistics. In 1834 we had in the diocese of Detroit one bishop, 30 priests, and 20,000 of a Catholic population. In 1885 we had in the territory comprising the diocese of Detroit in 1833, two archbishops, nine bishops, 920 priests, and a Catholic population of 802,000. This growth will be a matter of astonishment to many, but it is as near accurate as can be got at. The hundred fold yield of the good seed sown has been more than realized.

CONVIVIAL HABITS OF THE PIONEERS OF SAGINAW

BY JUDGE ALBERT MILLER

One object of these publications is to give some idea of the manners and customs of the pioneers of Michigan, and of the lights and shadows of pioneer life. In former articles I have mentioned the propensities of the pioneers of the Saginaw Valley for social enjoyments; but there were rougher sports participated in only by the male portion of the inhabitants which deserve notice.

Aside from the few families located at the fort and vicinity there were a number of employés of the Messrs. G. D. & E. S. Williams and of the American Fur Company that were an element in the community that must have their recreations.

Christmas in the west, especially that portion of it that was earliest settled by the French, has always been observed as a holiday to be celebrated in a manner that is congenial to the tastes of those celebrating.

My brothers-in-law, Jewett and Rumrill, as well as myself, had been raised in New England, in a locality where but little attention was paid to Christmas, Thanksgiving day being the great holiday of the season in that locality. On Christmas day, 1833, we had been at work till near the close of the day, when we took a large canoe and paddled down the river two miles, from Green Point to Saginaw or to the Fort (as Saginaw City was then usually designated), where we had business at the store of Messrs. G. D. & E. S. Williams. On entering the store we found we were in for it. We had no sooner passed through the door than it was locked and a guard placed to prevent our egress. Jewett, understanding the situation at once, gave us the wink to be ready to escape the moment an opportunity presented. On looking around we found that all the male portion of the inhabitants, after carousing all day, had gathered in the store to have a night of it. We entered into their sport with such pretended zest that they soon relaxed their vigilance over us, and we stood together at the door when it was opened and we darted out and ran for our canoe. We were no sooner outside of the door than a dozen men were after us, and the foremost one was about laying his hand on the prow of our canoe as we shoved off the shore, and being determined to prevent our escape he waded into the water in pursuit till it reached his waist, which, under ordinary circumstances, at that season of the year, would not be considered very fine holiday sport, but, failing in his attempt, a large canoe was soon maned and started in pursuit of us; no steamboat had ever disturbed the placid waters of the Saginaw at that time, and I will venture to say that no water-craft had previously passed over the two miles' space in a shorter time than those two canoes on that Christmas night. It was an even race, we keeping the start we had gained at the outset, and when we landed, instead of going to our houses we ran to the woods, where we remained till the noise of our pursuers frightened the inmates of our houses, when we came out and faced them. I had recently built a frame house, and one of the party seized a club and commenced hammering the siding, calling to me to come out or he would tear my house down, it would only cost him five or six hundred dollars. They undertook to force us into their canoe to carry us back to finish the night, but we entered into a good natured scuffle with them, and after a while that, with the exercise of paddling their canoe, sobered them, so they were willing to enter their canoe without us; and they returned to their respective homes, where they peacefully retired to spend the balance of the night in repose, instead of making it hideous with their orgies.

That was my initiation into the mysteries of a Saginaw "train," as those drinking bouts were usually termed, but between that time and 1838 I witnessed many scenes of conviviality, usually participated in by a more select party, whenever there might be a seeming occasion for them. The arrival in the place of some friend of a resident, or of a distinguished stranger, or of some individual contemplating settling there, an advantageous sale of property, etc., were considered fit occasions for convening a champagne party. They were not entered into so much for the love of drink as for a desire for social enjoyment, and for keeping up the reputation of the place for hospitality and good cheer, which was proverbial. The flow of champagne would soon loosen the tongues for song, anecdote, repartee, and smart speeches, and the conviviality would continue till "the wee sma' hours ayont the twal," when the company would disperse and spend the next day suffering with a "sair head," as the Scotchman would say. The last one of the series participated in by the writer was in February, 1838, soon after his marriage; gotten up expressly to "lay him out" as the phrase was. On the morning after a night spent in social enjoyment with a large party at the opening of the Webster House, at Saginaw City, I was awakened by a number of voices calling to me from the outside of my house. Suspecting what was intended, I was too well acquainted with the company to think of shirking the ordeal. I quickly arose and met the company of about a dozen men at the door, when they took me into Jewett's hotel, which was next door, and presented me with a bottle of champagne; not waiting to uncork the bottle I broke the neck of it on the stove and put it to my mouth and allowed the contents to run down into my boots. I told them if they would allow me to finish dressing I would go with them wherever they desired. We started in sleighs and drove to every place in town where liquor could be obtained. I generally took the lead, called for the bottle, and prepared myself with a bumper of cold water ready to drink with them when they had their glasses filled. I feigned drunkenness, which I could easily do, for I had plenty of patterns before me, and in the afternoon when I went with the company to my own house to partake of some choice wines that I had, my wife and mother were greatly surprised and shocked at my apparent condition of inebriety, but not more surprised than they were a short time afterwards when I returned without a show of liquor about me. I had scarcely swallowed a drop of liquor during the day, and was not in the least under its influence, but my companions were all ready to retire from the field before night. I became convinced of the folly of such operations, and as the hard time came on, after the great financial crash of 1837, the people generally, if they had the disposition to do it, had not the money to spend foolishly.

After the great temperance reform inaugurated by Father Matthew, in Ireland, the Catholics generally throughout the United States took up the theme, and their priests distributed the Father Matthew pledge among their people in almost every community. About the year 1844, I think it was, Father Kundig, of Detroit, came to Saginaw, and instituted a series of temperance meetings among the Catholics, a large number whom took the pledge, and, so far as my observations extended, religiously kept it. I have two notable instances in my mind, Louis Major, a Frenchman, who had been a former employé of the American Fur Company, and had previously been employed by the Hudson's Bay Company, when he married an Indian woman and came to Saginaw, where he had a large family of respectable half-breed children, but himself had become so besotted that he daily became a loathsome spectacle, living on the streets, sleeping off the effects of the large draughts of whisky that he had taken and was no longer able to carry. He took the pledge from Father Kundig, and all the ingenuity of rum sellers and former drinking associates could never induce him to break it. He lived many years, faithfully attending the ferry at Saginaw City, till he was injured by a vicious horse and thrown from his ferry boat and drowned. The other was an Irishman, Barney McArdle, an honest and industrious man till the demon alcohol got full control of him and bound him so fast that there was no hope of his escape, but he took the pledge and was as firm as a rock in keeping it. He was a character in his day, full of Irish wit and quaint sayings; he lived to a good old age, and passed away respected by all who knew him.

The Protestant portion of the community, not wishing to be outdone by their Catholic fellow-citizens in so laudable an undertaking as a temperance reform, inaugurated total abstinence societies at the city, and in all the school districts in the vicinity. The Washingtonian temperance move was in vogue about that time. One of the original Washingtonians, who signed the first pledge at Baltimore, settled at Saginaw.

An effort was made to enlist the young on the side of temperance so they would grow up without acquiring a taste for intoxicants. I recollect an instance where I met a neighbor's son, a lad about fifteen years old, at a temperance meeting at a country school-house, whom I knew had never drank liquor, and I advised him to sign the pledge so that he might never have a desire for it; he willingly did so, but the next morning his father came to me with wrath in his countenance desiring to have his son's name taken from the paper, he wanted him to have the privilege of drinking when he desired. The father's request was granted, and the son, thinking it such a great privilege to drink whisky, soon acquired the habit of it; and the last act of that father before retiring to his bed in his last sickness was to rescue his son from a drunken brawl that he had been engaged in during the night. The son two or three years afterwards was accidentally killed, which probably saved him from a drunkard's grave.

HISTORY OF ST. ANDREW'S CHURCH AT ANN ARBOR

BY THE RT. REV. G. D. GILLESPIE

NOTE.—This history of St. Andrew's Church, Ann Arbor, is from a sermon of the Rev. G. D. Gillespie, November 7, 1869, then the rector of the parish (now bishop of Western Michigan). The occasion was the last service in the old parish church building just prior to taking possession of the new and more commodious stone edifice just completed, and the history was given as follows:—

This building is so identified with the history of the parish that it seems appropriate that as we are leaving it as our usual place of worship, some notice should be taken of the past of our existence as a parish. My materials are too meagre to allow of a full sketch, since I have to rely chiefly on the reports of the various rectors as they appear in the convention journals, and it has been prepared in the hurry and anxiety of arrangements for the convention.*

The earliest notice I find of the parish is in connection with the labors of the Rev. Richard F. Cadle, in Detroit. In 1824 the Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society appointed the Rev. Mr. Cadle its first missionary in Michigan. His labors succeeded those of the Rev. Alanson W. Welton, the first clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the territory, and who removed to Detroit in 1821, but in the providence of God was permitted to exercise his office in that city but a few months when he was removed by death. Mr. Cadle repared to the scene of his future labor in the summer of 1824, and there served the Church with fidelity and success for the space of five years. During this time he was the only Episcopal clergyman in the Peninsula of Michigan. In his labors the church and her institutions were planted with judgment and nurtured with care. Though residing in Detroit, and chiefly officiating in that city, his valuable labors were extended to various places in the adjacent country. Washtenaw county participated in these missionary tours. In an article published in the Spirit of Missions, 1837, it is recorded: "At Ann Arbor and other places in that county he found many scattered members of our communion. The stated services of a missionary there seemed to be loudly called for, and a prospect of much usefulness to be presented." In the spring of 1828 St. Andrew's Church, Ann Arbor, was organized, the third parish in Michigan. Mr. Edward Clark, the only survivor of the participants in this formal planting of the vine in which we now rejoice, now resident among us,* furnishes us with the following particulars.

---

*The consecration of the new church took place a few days later.

After the organization lay reading was sustained for six months by a candidate for orders, named Merchant Huxford, in the southeast corner of the Chauncey S. Goodrich, built by Judge James Abbott, of Detroit, in 1824 or 1825, on the southwest corner of block one, north of Huron street, and range five east. Probably the orders referred to, when in the report of the Bishop of Michigan, 1829, it is stated, that they have agreed to appoint a missionary to Ann Arbor as soon as the person who has been selected by the members of the church there shall obtain ordination.

The Rev. Mr. Bury, the successor of Mr. Cadle, in St. Paul's, Detroit, reports having visited the parish in 1830, preached to a congregation of fifty in a brick building, which he calls the Academy.

The Rev. A. H. Cornish furnishes memoranda of the early services, in a letter to a member of the parish, dated Pendelton, S. C., April 9, 1859. Renewed solicitations were now made for a missionary to be established in Washtenaw county. Whatever nursing care, it was said, should be extended to it would be amply repaid in the enlargement and prosperity of the church, and by the sure foundation which would be laid for the permanent support of the principles of truth and order. The first regular services seem to have been under the Rev. S. W. Freeman, who in 1830, became the missionary to Ann Arbor, Dexter, and Ypsilanti. In these places, and others in the vicinity, he officiated for about three years. In notes of the history of the church in Michigan, in the Spirit of Missions, it is recorded, "Mr. Freeman appears to have devoted himself with much zeal to the work entrusted to him. Yet the end of that ministry was not in death, but in the awful discipline of the church. He was deposed for intemperance. From the few documents in my hands, I gather the following names of early churchmen: Mr. Edward Clark and his mother, Mrs. James Kingsley, Philip Brigham, M. D., William A. Fletcher, Henry Rumsey, Edward Munday, Matthew F. Gregory, George W. Jewett, George Miles, Robert S. Wilson, Andrew Cornish, W. G. Tuttle, Gideon Wilcoxson, Zenas Nash, Charles Tull, Wm. G. Brown, Olney Hawkins, David Cleveland, Samuel Denton, E. Platt, A. Platt, Elisha Belcher, Marcus Lane, Nathaniel Noble.

In May, 1834, Rev. John O'Brien reports to the convention, having spent some Sundays in Ann Arbor. To the same convention Rev. W. N. Lyster reports: "I have preached at Ann Arbor four times and baptised six persons, one of whom was an adult; also administered the holy communion." To the convention held in Detroit, in 1834, May 3, the following delegates were elected of whom the two first named were present, George W. Jewett, Henry Rumsey, Charles Tull, William G. Brown, and Philip Brigham.

---

*Mr. Clark is still, (November, 1885), living at Ann Arbor.

In August, 1834, the Rev. John I. Bausman, of the Diocese of Ohio, became the missionary at Ann Arbor and other places. He resigned in October, 1835. His only report, made June 13, 1835, states that on his arrival here, he found the church in a weak and languishing condition. Few came to her solemn feasts. Her gates were desolate and she was in bitterness. To be instrumental in effecting a change, he has endeavored, in season and out of season, both publicly and from house to house, to teach and preach Jesus Christ, and although unable to state any immediate fruit of his labors, he humbly trusts that they have not been in vain in the Lord. Laboring under great disadvantages in regard to a convenient place of worship, he has urged upon the people of his charge to erect a church as early as practicable. To accomplish this very desirable object about $1,500 has been subscribed, and the delightful hope was entertained that before this period the work would have been considerably advanced. "His hope has not been realized, and when the head stone shall be brought forth with shoutings, grace, grace unto it, is altogether uncertain. A Sunday school has been established but is not flourishing." The number of communicants at this time was twenty. Several months since there fell into my hands a subscription list with this heading, "The members of St. Andrew's Church in Ann Arbor have with great exertion obtained subscriptions at that place amounting to $1,300 towards the expense of erecting a church edifice, the cost of which is estimated at about $2,000. For the difference between these two sums they rely upon the sister churches in the diocese, but more particularly upon the well-known liberality of St. Paul's Church in Detroit, and they take this method, through their pastor, Rev. Mr. Bausman, to declare their wants in the hope that their expectation will not be disappointed. February, 1835." The sum subscribed on the paper is $267. Of the twenty-four subscribers only six remain to this day, among them, the first on the list, Mr. C. C. Trowbridge of Detroit, $50, of whom it has lately been written, "Next to his bishop he is gratefully recognized as the father of the diocese," and I may add, this generous contributor of thirty-four years ago was one of those who most kindly and liberally met my late application in Detroit for provision for students pews.

The Rev. Mr. Bausman died in Baltimore a few months since. When making a collection of photographs of the former rectors in 1862, I addressed him a letter and received one in reply, and in a communication made to the same parishioners, who were addressed by Rev. Mr. Cornish, he gives some particulars of his ministry here.

. During the vacancy in the missionary charge the diocese received her first Bishop. As early as 1827, Bishop Hobart, of New York, visited Detroit, and laid the corner stone of the church, and in August, 1828, he again visited that city and consecrated the church, on both occasions administering confirmation. His visit was confined to that city. At a later date, probably in 1833, the diocese which had been organized in 1832 was placed under the charge of the Rt. Rev. C. P. McIlvaine, Bishop of Ohio. The first and only visitation the Bishop made was in April, 1834. In his address to the convention the next month, he states that, leaving Detroit for a visitation to Troy, where he was brought at the close of day, over a most difficult and dangerous road, he was seized with a return of the ague and fever in consequence of the fatigue of the journey. Returning next day the carriage was overturned, and the consequent exposure immediately renewed the fever, so that the whole plan of visitation was deranged. He adds in reference to "the parishes of Ann Arbor, Dexter, and Ypsilanti, it was exceedingly painful to think of omitting them after having come so far to visit them." At the annual convention at Tecumseh, June, 1835, the Rev. H. J. Whitehouse, D. D., of Rochester, N. Y., was elected Bishop of Michigan. He having declined, a special convention in November of the same year, finding itself canonically incompetent, by reason of clerical removals, to elect for itself, made application to the house of Bishops to elect a Bishop for the diocese. The Rt. Rev. S. A. McCoskry, D. D., rector of St. Paul's, Philadelphia (the expressed choice of the diocese), was thus elected and was consecrated in that church July 7, 1836. When in the following September, the newly elected chief pastor visited the infant churches, he found St. Andrew's, Ann Arbor, under the charge of the Rev. Samuel Marks, as a missionary, dividing his time between this place and Dexter. Mr. Marks had come out with the Bishop from Philadelphia, and on arriving here in August found the church but just enclosed. "The basement was filled with shavings, and boards, and stones, and brickbats." He adds in the letter from which this statement is taken, "these were cleared away, and a floor laid, and you would have smiled at the primitiveness of my pulpit." Mr. Marks left before the church was finished. In his report to the convention, October, 1836, he states: "At Ann Arbor I found sixteen communicants; five had been added since I came. I cannot close my report without the remark that I have reason to bless God for having led me by His Providence into this new and rapidly increasing diocese. Too often the minister of the gospel is left to grapple with poverty, and to groan under the weight and care of an increasing family. Here, to the praise of our parishioners be it spoken, those fears are removed, and those complaints silenced. Nothing has been left undone by the people of my parishes and others, to raise my spirits and spur me on to the faithful performance of my duty. These remarks are not made with a view to flatter, but to encourage the laborer to sow in hope and the laity to contiuue in well doing." In his subsequent report he thus refers to the commencement of his ministry here: "Until we could procure the basement story of the church we were subjected to much inconvenience, and somewhat retarded in our progress. I found but few attached to the church from an enlightened and conscientious belief that the ministry, doctrine, and discipline were according to the Scriptures and apostolic times. In fact, my prospect was dim and my congregation few in numbers. My head hung down and my heart was discouraged. Honor to the sacred name of God, the prospects of my parish have brightened, the house is full, and my person is well sustained. I can truly say 'the lines have fallen to me in pleasant places.' It was expected that our church would be consecrated at this convention; but owing to adverse circumstances it must now be delayed to the middle of November next. The room of our edifice will accommodate about three hundred, and for neatness, we think will not be exceeded by any in our village. It gives me great pleasure to say that between the members of our own church and other societies, there exists the kindest of feeling. It is with pleasure I add that, connected with the church is a Sunday school well indoctrinated. Communicants, twenty-six; marriages, six; baptisms, ten; funerals, eleven."

Mr. Marks resigned in 1838, removing to Clinton. In 1840 or 1841 he accepted the charge of Christ's Church, Huron, Ohio, and in a parish which to-day only numbers thirty-three communicants, and pays a salary of only four hundred and twenty dollars, he has spent nearly twenty-five years; a beautiful instance of calm contentment in doing good in an humble sphere—a lesson to the restless pastor—and a fact that will answer, in some degree, the charge of instability in the ministry. Had I the space I would quote in his honor Timothy Dwight's lines, "The Country Pastor." You will be gratified with me to learn that this almost father of the parish will, God willing, be with us on Wednesday next. In October, A. D. 1838, the parish came under the charge of the Rev. F. H. Cumming. From this time the church assumes more the due proportions of a parish. In his report to the board who had commissioned him he thus gives his first impressions: "The congregation is a highly respectable one. As to size it bears a fair proportion to others in villages of the same class with that in which this would be ranked. Myself and family have been treated with much kindness by the inhabitants of the village generally. The village is healthy, and beautifully situated, inhabited by an enterprising and intelligent people and is fast rising into consequence." The communicants were reported to be fifty-four. Two interesting services marked the commencement of this rectorship—the institution of the new rector, Sunday, November 13, 1838, and on the same day the consecration of the new church. It is noteworthy that the consecration of the first church took place just thirty-one years ago less eight days. This must have been indeed a happy day to the little flock. In the previous period we traced their services in the southeast corner of the Goodrich House, in a school-house on Fourth street, near where, until a few years since, the old academy stood; in a mansion or store then on Main street, which, after sojourning for several years on Huron street, opposite the Presbyterian Church, was not allowed to pass its advanced years in peace, is now rejuvenated, and is the dwelling of our fellow-citizen, Mr. A. M. Schoff; in the court house, the common home for all infant parishes; in a little building fitted up for services with a temporary pulpit, near the site of the Congregational Church; and finally in the basement of this edifice. The first collection for this building was probably that referred to in the heading of the subscription paper dated February, 1835, already read. I have no means of ascertaining the cost of erection, as the record book of the vestry in my hands only dates from 1843. As our narrative follows the track of time we shall find this edifice undergoing various changes and enlargements until it reaches the condition in which it is now left by us. The Bishop, in his address, referring to the consecration, states: "This congregation has made a praiseworthy effort in relieving themselves from all embarrassment, and in securing to their rector his support independent of the miserable system, which has been heretofore pursued, of relying upon subscriptions oftentimes from those who feel but little interest in sustaining the ministers of Jesus Christ." In 1840, the rector is happy to state that the temporal affairs of this parish are in a much better condition than they have ever been. The debt with which it was embarrassed (amounting to about $2,800), has been entirely liquidated by the efforts exclusively of the parishioners. A parsonage house is nearly finished, towards which they have contributed about $600. Our services have been well attended, with marked seriousness on the part of the congregation generally. In 1841 we are told: "The parsonage alluded to in the report last year, I am happy to state, is entirely finished and is universally admired for its beauty and convenience, and for the economy observed in its construction." I may remark in passing that it is one of the least happy traditions of the parish, that this, its only rectory was sold, and the money diverted to other purposes. I venture to say that every subsequent rector, subjected to the inconveniences of the hired house, and perhaps compelled to secure a house from which he might not be expelled, has sighed for that rectory. The report continues: "The ladies of the parish have, by most untiring exertions, succeeded in raising money enough, principally by means of the needle, to procure a very handsome silver communion set. The act was certainly creditable concerning the position of the parish. Probably there are not to-day six silver communion sets in the diocese." Mention is also made of the sacred edifice having been very seriously injured by fire, and an appeal made to the friends of the church at the east having been promptly and generously responded to, so that it has been entirely repaired. The organ, too, had been rebuilt and very much improved. The Bishop, in his address, speaks of the church as "one of the most beautiful edifices in the west."

The years 1842-43 added to the property of the parish a bell costing $320, probably the same that now summons us to the house of prayer, and a fence around the church as the lot then was. In October, 1843, Dr. Cumming resigned, removing to Grand Rapids, where his remaining years were spent, dying August 26, 1862. His five years told on the stability and growth of the parish. As one test of growth he found twenty-eight communicants and left seventy-six. Coming to an unfinished edifice he left a church properly equipped for service. Other statistics of his ministry are: Baptisms, adult, 13; infants, 38; confirmed, 48; marriages, 20; funerals, 43, contributions, $4,065.69. His remarkable missionary activity made the church known in all the neighboring region. In the language of one of the numerous obituaries his death called forth: "Dr. Cumming was no ordinary man. United to great respectability of talents and acquirements he possessed a native energy of character which contributed to his success in the ministry. Whatever objects he thought worthy of his attention he pursued with an unfaltering purpose and the most untiring industry, and seldom failed of their attainment. As a preacher he was sound, direct, plain, and forcible. There was an earnestness of manner both of preaching and conducting the services of the church that could not fail to arrest and hold the attention of a congregation. As a parish minister he had few equals in the church. His supervision of his flock was most faithful. His parish work was wonderfully systematized, and he had the happy faculty of enlisting his people in his plans and securing their cordial coöperation in their execution. In the chamber of sickness, in the house of mourning, and in the dwelling of want he was a frequent and welcome visitor. While the death of such a man is a loss to the whole church, to the Diocese of Michigan it is one that cannot soon be repaired." Upon the resignation of Mr. Cumming the Rev. W. N. Lyster supplied the church with ministerial labor about one half the time for five months. The parish may well be proud of having thus in the roll of its shepherds, one whose record is so noble. Coming to this country in 1833 from his native land, Mr. Lyster has not only given his energies with apostolic zeal to building up the church in this Diocese, but his purse, once ample, has been freely opened to lay her foundations. Ever a missionary by choice he has dignified that noble name. Faithful even to the end in his chosen lines, to-day, at an advanced age, he serves at his missionary posts. I know no more beautiful illustration of simple, self sacrificing devotion in the vineyard of our Lord. There are records of the ministry that will be read by a greater number, but few that more deserve to be known and perpetuated.

For entries in the vestry minutes, I judge that this interregnum was a period of weakness and embarrassment. When will vestries and congregations learn the injury to their parishes of long vacancy in the rectorship? Scarcely a parish can bear to be subjected to this trying ordeal. The Rev. Mr. Lyster having declined the permanent charge, the vestry extended a call to the Rev. Charles C. Taylor of Rhode Island, who accepted and entered on his duties July 22, 1844. His first report records the payment of a floating debt of $700. His report for 1845-6, mentions the parish having raised $400 for additional land to improve the church lot, $120 for a well at the rectory, the adoption of a plan of weekly collections on Sunday morning, the need of additional pews, and that God, in a peculiar manner, was following with His blessings, the solemn fastings and services of Lent. That for 1846-7, improvements on the church, and a parochial singing school, and repeats the demand for more and better accommodations for the comfort and convenience of those who wish to attend our services. That for 1847-8, the expenditure of $250 in repairs; on Sunday afternoon after prayers an hour devoted to catechetical instruction and singing; more than one-half the present number of communicants added during the last four years; the prevalence of an unusual, alarming, and fatal disease, by which some of our most efficient members have been removed from the church militant. The Bishop in his address remarks of Ann Arbor: "Here a new church is much needed, or else an extension of the old one." "There is a limit now placed to growth by want of church room." The report of 1848-9 notes the interest taken in the Sunday school, Bible class, and catechetical instruction. That for 1849-50 speaks of a debt of $200 to $300, which has assumed such a form that it can no longer be neglected without great peril to the prosperity of the parish. It has also this important record: "The parsonage has been sold and the payments amply secured or safely invested, to be held in readiness as a sacred fund for the erection of new buildings at some future day when needed. In the sale of the parsonage, the vestry were influenced by the consideration that the house was suffering for the want of extensive repairs, and was neither conveniently located nor occupied by the rector." For the years 1845-6-7-8 I have no sources of information but the parochial reports, for it is a singular and painful fact, that instead of minutes of the vestry, there are blank pages left. Some indifferent scribe probably made his minutes loosely and was never at the pains to transcribe them.

Mr. Taylor resigned in 1850, and the tone of all his reports is encouraging, and it is evident that under his ministry the parish had been flourishing. Yet it is also evident that, whether by force of circumstances or want of due liberality, the parish was struggling with pecuniary difficulty. Inadequate means is the keynote of the vestry proceedings. This explains the very peculiar position in which St. Andrew's was placed on his removal. The report to the convention of 1850 made by Mr. John A. Willis states: "Since the resignation of the rector, Mr. Taylor, there has been no settled pastor in this parish. In the interim an invitation has been extended by the vestry to the Rev. George P. Williams of the university. He has faithfully and gratuitously performed the services and all the various duties appertaining to the sacred office, notwithstanding his arduous professional engagements, and he has in this way become the largest contributor toward the payment of a debt of $460 incurred some years since." This debt of gratitude remains to this day wholly unimpaired. And this is only one of the very many acts of kindness and liberality for which this parish is indebted to this esteemed brother. His residence here has been parallel with four rectorships. To his unsparing exertion, to his diligent care I doubt not that it is owing that the parish has been sustained in long vacancies. Never formally an assistant minister, he has been, I can well believe, to others what assuredly he has been to the present incumbent, the truest assistant, in his warm sympathy, his generous effort, and his wise counsel. His name is indeed brightly inscribed in the annals of your parish.

The report from which the above extract is taken proceeds: "The parsonage fund, amounting to $720, is safely invested in bonds and mortgages, and with the avails of lots valued at $250, will be applied to the sole purpose for which the money was originally given. In addition to the present church lot which can hereafter be used for the parsonage, the parish owns an acre of ground adjoining, which is designed for a new church." (I presume this is the lot purchased in 1845-6 for $400.) "The subject of building one worthy the place is now beginning to be agitated. Is it not worthy of consideration on the part of the church at large whether we should be assisted to enlarge the place to an extent which will accommodate with free sittings such of the students of the university as may be inclined to attend the services of our church." Thus was the policy we have followed, marked out nearly twenty years ago by a wise layman interested in the parish, now entered into his rest.

The following year, 1852, finds the late rector, the Rev. C. C. Taylor, returned to the flock, and "the parish are contemplating an immediate effort for the erection of a new church." Prior to his return, the parish had made no less than four unsuccessful attempts to secure a rector. The report of the returned rector for 1852-3 is very favorable. Nearly $200 have been raised by the ladies of the sewing circle. About $150 have been received by the rector and his family, in donations. The Easter report showed that for thirteen months preceding, there remained not one cent of repudiated or unpaid rents for pews. Every pew was rented—two-thirds of them occupied by more than one family. The income of the parish had equaled its expenditures; it was free from debt; the parsonage fund was $900; the ladies had $450, for the purchase of an organ. The rector states that, during his connection with the parish, nearly as much has been expended in repairs and improvements upon the old edifice and organ as could now be realized by the sale of them. He also remarks: "Half enough to build a new church might have been expended in enlarging and repairing the present edifice had I not ever conscientiously and earnestly disapproved of the measure." Notwithstanding the favorable circumstances enumerated, the rector closes his report with the mention of his resignation. Probably the cause is to be found in this statement: "The greatest, and I might say the only, cause of discouragement to me has been the doubtful prospect of the erection of a church adequate to the importance of the position and the wants of the community."

Mr. Taylor then gives the statistics of his ministry: Baptisms, 144 (adults, 41; infants, 103); confirmations, 91; marriages, 21; burials, 80; number of communicants, 98; contributions, $2,667.25. Mr. Taylor died at Kalamazoo, February 1, 1855. No doubt a just estimate of his character and labors is furnished in the funeral discourse of the late Rev. D. T. Grinnell, D. D. In the vacancy following, the parish seems to have been partially supplied by the Rev. A. S. Hollister, then without parochial charge. The Rev. David S. Lumsden, of Connecticut, was called, and entered on his duties, March 12, 1854. In his first report the new rector states, "We have taken the preliminary steps towards erecting a new church, and are now waiting for the architect to place in our hands his plans and specifications.

The building is to cost $8,000, of which $6,000 is now subscribed, $1,000 is promised, and the remainder is in a fair way of being obtained." The purpose of erecting a new church must have been subsequently changed to that of enlarging the present edifice, as we find the vestry, April 9, 1855, taking action in these premises, and the church, as enlarged, was consecrated May 18, 1856. The report of 1855-6 records: "Our liabilities seem to be about $4,700 to $5,000, the organ and furniture included. The ladies furnished nearly $600 for the organ and $200 for lamps and carpets. The vestry records show the organ to have been built by F. G. Merritt, of Detroit, and to have cost $1,000. The report of 1856-7 has nothing worthy of mention. That for 1857-8 mentions sixty-five persons confirmed. An extraordinary religious interest had pervaded the country, in which this place and parish had participated.

I must add, as my own conviction, that it is well that a new church was not erected at that time. Doubtless it would have been an improvement upon the present edifice in size and architecture, but it could scarcely have been equal to the structure now erected. Architecture, even fourteen years ago, was far behind what it is now, and the probable result would have been an edifice inferior in character, and yet not susceptible of marked improvement. Let me add I have heard it remarked that sufficient had been expended on this structure to build a new church. I think that this is a mistake. Of course in thirty years there has been a large expenditure in the way of ordinary repairs, but, as far as I can judge, the several enlargements have not exceeded in cost $6,000, and all this has been judiciously expended. Of the number of confirmations in 1857-8 less than one-fourth now remain in connection with the parish. Some of them are among the most earnest communicants, yet a review of the list only confirms the impression to which I have been led, that while in those so called revivals souls are undoubtedly awakened to a permanent interest in eternal realities, they tend to a mere excitement which, while it wears the appearance of Divine grace, is often no more than animal sensibility. A minister's position is very painful at such a time. With the utmost care and wisdom he will fail to discover what is of nature and what is of grace, and often he feels compelled to admit to holy profession those of whom he stands in doubt. It is not strange that with such an addition, many of them from without, the rector should speak—"it is now time again that we should enlarge our house of worship." Building a transept for the students is the plan proposed, and a strong and just appeal is made to the church in the diocese and abroad to accomplish the measure. The report of 1858-9 mentions the death of Dr. Ticknor, of the U. S. Navy, "one whose place will never be filled, a man devoted to the Gospel of Christ, full of faith and good works." In the previous twelve months, resort was had to a subscription to pay a pressing indebtedness of $430, and the erection of a parsonage on the church grounds was agitated. Mortgaging the land on which the parsonage should be built and the whole church property, for a loan of $2,000, was proposed, but the plan it seems did not invite investment, and the object failed. The vestry records show that gas had been put in the church at an expense of about three hundred dollars.

Mr. Lumsden resigned at Easter, 1861. A grand step onward had been made in the enlargement of the church, for which he had earnestly labored. Probably this was accomplished at no less sacrifice and exertion on the part of rector and people than our late enterprise. The Bishop thus notices his removal: "Since my visitation the rector, after seven years of laborious and active duties, has resigned the charge of this parish. To him we are indebted for the neat church edifice, and for the many evidences of taste in and around the building, and I hope also for the addition of many to the fold of Christ. The statistics of Mr. Lumsden's rectorship are: Baptisms, adult, 64; infants, 71; confirmed, 120; married, 47; funerals, 48; communicants increased from 98 to 119. The contributions are not uniformly furnished.

My own ministry commenced October 10, 1861. I do not design to speak particularly of my relations to the parish. The annual discourses have informed you minutely of our parish progress, and the personal observations of most of you have extended over this period. The church edifice has been twice enlarged; first, by the removal of the organ from between the doors, thus giving room for ten new pews, and the improvement of the chancel, and subsequently by the building of the porch, which, if it has not added to the beauty of the structure has afforded an ample vestibule and a very useful room over it. The expense of these improvements was about seven hundred dollars. Chancel chairs have been purchased for $53.50 and a font by the Sunday school for $61.35; also furnaces for $270. In 1863 a floating debt of several years' standing, amounting to $600, was paid. The statistics to the date of the last convention, June, 1869, are: Baptisms, adults, 49; infants, 187, total 236; confirmed, 110; communicants admitted, 120; marriages, 74; funerals, 141; contributions, exclusive of pew rents and the cost of the new church, not yet reported, are $7,769.84. The number of communicants has increased from 119 to 181. I trust that it savors more of thankfulness than of pride, when I say that under my charge the parish has grown. It ought to have grown, the place has increased. I have endeavored to throw my whole self into the work, and God has given me health and strength. I speak now as a man. And much has been owing to the good common sense, gentlemanly Christian tone of the vestry. We have had no bickerings, no obstinate individual assertion. For myself, ever wont to give my own counsel with freedom which may need the apology of fervent interest in the parish, I have ever been listened to with the utmost respect. My counsels have been allowed weight fully up to my wishes, especially in the erection of the church; placed on the building committee with no experience or knowledge of the task, I have been consulted in all details. I shall ever look back with pleasure to my intercourse with the vestry and the building committee. Had there been a different spirit in the board of control, any individual or clique spirit, I verily believe that this church stood not there to-night. And much has been owing to the determination of the rector and congregation, each to keep within his own lines. You have recognized me as over you in the Lord, as in virtue of office, of experience, of responsibility, competent and entitled to assume the direction of the parish in all its arrangements for edification. That my judgment has always been yours, was not to be expected, yet you have left me to pursue my path. And so I, on the other hand, have never meant to interfere in what belonged to you. The result has been peace, and peace is closely allied with prosperity.

Thus have I traced the way the Lord has led you on as a parish for more than forty years. Many reflections are suggested, especially to those whose lives have run parallel with the church's being and progress. To my mind, the history of this parish, while not without its clouds, is by no means a dark one. I account it a note of prosperity that the parish has, in general, had long rectorships: Rev. S. W. Truman, three years; Bausman, fourteen months; Marks, nineteen months; Cumming, five years; Taylor (with an interval of sixteen months), six years and seven months; Lumsden, seven years, and the present incumbent, eight years. One of the great satisfactions of my own ministerial life is, that I have, in general, labored long in each spot of the vineyard assigned to me, and I am well persuaded that, under ordinary circumstances, those parishes are built on sure foundations, and have in them the elements of stability and growth where the shepherd has long kept the flock. Frequent clerical changes entail weakness upon the parish, and they sadly impair ministerial usefulness. While at times the church edifice has been insufficient, enlargement has eventually come. There have been no very serious reverses in the parish; the parish has, in the usual proportion of our churches, kept pace with the church.

We are led to reflect on the good this parish has accomplished. In its long existence, how many souls have been brought under the influence of the church. There have been successive congregations. Consider two items, baptisms, nearly 500, and confirmations, nearly 400. I have not the data for calculation, but you may conceive how large, how great a number have communed at this altar. The parish, considering the constant incoming and outgoing of young men, is especially entitled to this reflection. We often lose sight of this consideration, and value a parish merely for what it is—what is shows to-day. In this review, we are reminded of what is due to former pastors. Our present is a consummation attained by their labors, their sacrifices, their prayers. The Master would tell him who addresses you, "One soweth and another reapeth. Other men labored and ye have entered into their labors." I trust that, in this day of rejoicing, we are all mindful of the former shepherds of the flock. It is touching to read the reports of Bausman and Marks, showing their hearts in the day of early struggle. The meek Bausman, the untiring Cumming, the erudite Taylor, have entered into their rest. We know not but that in spirit they shall be with us. But in all our gratification we shall commemorate their work and the days when they went in and out among you, when their voices were heard within these walls.

I can but remark, in closing this sketch, that our satisfaction is unalloyed by what is the common experience of a congregation erecting a new church. Many of us have very tender memories connected with this spot. A deep shade of sadness would pass over our spirits, were we to rise and leave this place with a final farewell, were this the last service within these walls, and the place was to become as a house of God no more forever. We shall yet worship here; we shall often come hither for some of our most tender services, and henceforth this church will be dedicated to the sacred purpose of leading the lambs of the flock in the green pastures of God's truth and the Church's ways.

And now, beloved, suffer the word of exhortation. We have been engaged in a great enterprise. It has had its difficulties; it has tried the hearts and wearied the hands of those engaged in it, and it is an enterprise which has allowed much difference of opinion. And as in all such enterprises, all views could not be met. Sometimes opinions have come in conflict. There may have been some heart burnings, some irritations. But now, the good hand of God upon us, our work is done. Let us lay aside as to any wrath or anger, or malice, or bitterness, or evil speaking, all prejudice, preference, complaint. Let us sink all these in a feeling of pleasure among ourselves and gratitude to our God. Could they who early struggled to plant this vine look down upon it in its stately proportions, how would they bid us dismiss any other thought than of unity, peace and gratitude. Let us go into that temple an Israel of God at unity in itself. Let its gates open to receive us, a band of earnest Christians; or earnest churchmen, with new thoughts of devotion to the church; of service to Jehovah with generous impulses, with the deep feeling that we are candidates for a temple not made with hands, eternal in the heavens, for which all the ministrations of this house we have builded is to prepare us.

"The Lord our God be with us, as he was with our fathers; let Him not leave us, nor forsake us; that He may incline our hearts unto Him, to walk in all His ways, and to keep all His commandments and His statutes and His judgments, which He commanded our fathers."

RECOLLECTIONS OF EARLY MINISTERS OF WASHTENAW COUNTY*

BY REV. LORENZO DAVIS

REV. ELIJAH HOLMES PILCHER, D. D.,

was born in Athens county, in southern Ohio, June 2, 1810, and therefore is seventy-six years of age. He professed religion and joined the Methodist Episcopal Church when he was ten years of age. He was a student for some time in the Ohio University at Athens, and entered the ministry of the Methodist Episcopal Church, in connection with the Ohio Conference, in August, 1829. That year he was appointed to Nicholas circuit on the head waters of the Big Kanawha, in West Virginia, which was then a new country. At the next conference, in September, 1830, he was appointed to the Ann Arbor circuit, which then for the first time appears on the records of the church, as junior preacher, with Henry Colclazer. This was the only time in an active ministry of more than fifty years when he was in a subordinate position. Mr. Pilcher has done a good deal of pioneer work. At one time his circuit took in all the settlements in the west half of Washtenaw, all of Jackson, Calhoun, Branch, Hillsdale, and Lenawee counties. He has carried an axe, blazed his own way where there was no road. He swam his horse across rivers, wallowed through marshes and swamps, and has slept in the woods, being serenaded by the wolves.

---

*This is a continuation of a paper presented at a former meeting, and printed in Vol. VIII. of these Collections.

Mr. Pilcher's first district, as presiding elder, in 1838, extended over Hillsdale, Branch, Calhoun, Jackson, Ingham, Eaton, Barry, Ottawa, Kent, Ionia, Clinton, Shiawassee, the west half of Genesee and the west half of Lenawee counties, making thirteen full counties, with no cross roads to connect the northern territorial road with the south. The esteem in which he has been held is shown in the positions he has occupied. He has been stationed at Adrian four years, at Jackson, Battle Creek, Kalamazoo, Ann Arbor five years, and in Detroit First or Woodward avenue, two years. He has served as secretary of the conference for nine years and a half; and as presiding elder of a district for twenty-one full years, and four fractional years, bringing him into the bishop's cabinet for twenty-five years. He represented his conference, as delegate to the General Conference, for five sessions, and served as one of the book committee of the Western Book Concern for four years, and might have been appointed another term had he not declined in favor of another.

Dr. Pilcher received the degrees of M. A. and D. D. from the Ohio Wesleyan University, and M. D. from the University of Michigan; he was admitted to the practice of the law at Adrian in 1846. He identified himself with the cause of education at an early day. He, with Dr. B. H. Packard and H. Colclazer, as early as 1834, originated the idea of a Methodist institution, which has culminated in Albion College, and served as one of the trustees of that institution for many years, and drafted its present charter. He was appointed a regent of the University of Michigan in 1845, and served for six years. He made the first move towards breaking down the old "branch system."

Dr. Pilcher has been a man of indomitable perseverance and zealous for the cause; and a successful evangelist as well as pastor, and a wise administrator in the presiding eldership.

He made the tour of Europe and the Orient in 1868-9, and corresponded for the *Detroit Tribune* weekly during the time. His letters were considered a valuable contribution to literature. His other articles published in various periodicals are voluminous, besides his large volume, entitled "Protestantism in Michigan." And now that he is laid aside by paralysis of the entire right side, he continues to write, having learned to write a beautiful hand with his left hand.

In many respects Dr. Pilcher has been a remarkable man. For thirty-three successive years, prior to being taken down with paralysis, April 5, 1882, he has lost one Sabbath for the want of health. He has four sons. One a book merchant; one an eminent surgeon in the city of Brooklyn; another a missionary in China; and the youngest is a surgeon in the United

States Army. The three last are graduates of universities. Dr. Pilcher, by his writings, was the principal instrument of securing the constitutional provision for the establishment of the Michigan Agricultural College.

I will close this sketch of Dr. Pilcher by relating the following incident: The writer was stationed at Jackson in 1839. The Doctor was his presiding elder. The first quarterly meeting for the year was held in a small brick school-house on the east side of the river. At the close of the services on Saturday, the presiding elder gave the notices of the Sabbath services, consisting of lovefeast, public preaching, sacrament, etc. The lovefeast was to commence at nine o'clock sharp. He urged the people to be present at the hour appointed, and stated that the rule of discipline would be carried out, and that those who wished to enjoy the meeting must be on hand or the doors would be closed, and to emphasize his exhortation, said that he should not blame the preacher in charge even if the presiding elder should not be on time, if the doors should be closed against him. The time came for the meeting to commence, but the presiding elder was not in sight or hearing. The preacher opened the services promptly at the hour appointed. The brethren and sisters were all present in obedience to the urgent request of the presiding elder. After the preliminary forms had been observed, as was the custom, the doors were opened to admit any who were waiting. A few came in, but the presiding elder was not among them. We were of course surprised knowing, as we all did, his habits of promptness, and our surprise was greatly increased in consideration of his affectionate exhortation of Saturday. The doors were again closed not to be again opened even for a bishop. The speaking commenced. The members in relating their christian experience had become somewhat joyful, forgetting apparently that the presiding elder was not present. But they were soon apprised of the fact that the presiding elder was at the door seeking admission, but the preacher in charge said he must comply with the rule and he did, and probably for the first time in the history of the church a presiding elder was shut out of a lovefeast by the enforcement of the law of the church. At the close of the lovefeast the presiding elder came in with a smile upon his face, and commended the preacher for his promptness in enforcing the rule, though the presiding elder was a sufferer thereby.

The reason given for his tardiness was the strange fact that the clock where he was staying had put itself upon its dignity and had adopted standard time, which was half an hour behind the Lord's time. The Methodists of those days in their ignorance supposed that His time was the governing time.

REV. C. G. CLARK

Rev. Mr. Clark was one of the most laborious and useful ministers in those early days in this county. Rev. Charles Grandison Clark, one of the pioneer ministers of the Presbyterian church in this State, was born in Preston, Conn., April 8, 1796.

He was the only son of Shubael Clark, a sea captain, and Esther Tracy Clark. His father died at Charleston, S. C., when the subject of this sketch was an infant. At nine years of age he went to live with a farmer in his native town, where he remained until he was fourteen years of age, when he was apprenticed to learn the carpenter's trade. Working a short time at the trade he met with an accident, which nearly deprived him of the sight of one of his eyes. Afterward he went to live with his uncle, Edward Clark, a retired sea captain, at Plainfield, Conn., where he received a common school and an academic education. After he was twenty-one years of age he spent some years in teaching a select school near Fredericksburg, Va. At the age of twenty-five years he was converted, and immediately commenced studying for the ministry. He received his college education at Amherst College, Mass., where he graduated in 1827, and soon entered the Auburn Theological Seminary, and completed his education in 1829. He was ordained Sept. 9, 1829, by the Oneida Presbytery, at Madison, N. Y. He was offered several desirable positions in the state of New York, but he preferred a new field of labor, and on the fourteenth day of September, 1829, he left Auburn for the new Territory of Michigan, arriving in Detroit, Saturday, September 19. He preached his first sermon in that place on the following day. From Detroit he went to Monroe where he stayed about one month, when he came to Ann Arbor. After supplying the Presbyterian pulpit in the little village of 400 inhabitants for a few weeks in the absence of the pastor, he located in the town of Webster, November 27, 1829, and made his home with S. H. Mathews. January 17, 1830, a Presbyterian church was organized in that town and he became its pastor.

On the 30th day of August, 1830, he was married at Ann Arbor to Miss Elizabeth Platt. She was a woman of rare christian attainments, universally esteemed by all who knew her, as a model friend, companion, mother, and pastor's wife. Much of the success of Mr. Clark as a minister was due to her quiet, consistent, earnest and beautiful life, during a period of more than twenty-eight years. He continued pastor of the Webster church until February, 1848, when he tendered his resignation. During the next two years he labored at Kensington and New Hudson in Oakland county, residing on his farm in Webster. Returning to his home in Webster in the spring of 1852, he soon after received a call from his old church to again assume the pastorate, which he did, remaining with them until the spring of 1858, when he was obliged to resign on account of failing health, and his active ministry ceased.

While pastor at Webster his labors extended to all the adjacent towns, and many of the churches in this and adjoining counties were organized by him. When he arrived in the Territory, in 1829, there were but four Presbyterian and Congregational ministers within its bounds, and he was fully identified with the pioneer work in this vicinity. As a minister he preached the gospel he believed with simplicity and earnestness, laboring to give his hearers pure doctrine rather than for worldly popularity, and although he was instrumental in bringing a large number into the church, the burden of his life was that he was never able to do more for the Master. From the very first he was a leader in the temperance cause and was always ready to do all in his power to forward any good work. He was a man of strong and earnest feelings, quiet and unobstrusive in his manner, and universally estimated and loved by those who knew him best. In 1860 he removed to Ann Arbor that he might better enjoy social and religious privileges in his declining years. He died October 2, 1871, aged 75 years.

His dear friend and associate in the ministry, Rev. Ira M. Wead, of whom a biographical sketch was given in a former paper, preached his funeral sermon.

HENRY COLCLAZER

I regret that I have not the material with which to give a more extended sketch of Rev. Henry Colclazer, one of the most eloquent and useful ministers among the early Methodist preachers in this county. Of his early history I know but little. He was born in Georgetown, D. C., September 1, 1809.

In Dr. Pilcher's history I find the following statements: "At the conference in September, 1830, Ann Arbor appears in the list of appointments for the first time. Henry Colclazer and Elijah H. Pilcher, the former only twenty-one years of age and the latter much younger, were appointed to it. The church felt that it was supplied with boys indeed. But though they were young they were zealous, and filled the appointments, and had some revivals and accessions to the church." In further speaking of these young men the Doctor says: "In the first week in October, 1830, two well dressed young men, well mounted on horseback, carrying all their wardrobe and library [the library consisting of a well-worn and well-read Bible, a Hymn book, and Discipline, and not much else.—*Writer*] in their saddlebags, might have been seen towards evening riding into the new and scattered village of Ypsilanti, inquiring for the house of Eleazer Smith, with whom they expected to find entertainment, and from whom, when found, they received a cordial welcome. These young men had come, one from central Ohio, the other from the mountains of West Virginia, having been appointed together in Ann Arbor circuit, which included Ypsilanti. They were Henry Colclazer and Elijah H. Pilcher. They were the only ministers who rendered regular services in Ypsilanti at the time. Very soon after Mr. Colclazer commenced his ministry in the Territory he took a leading position in the church, and among his brethren in the ministry he held and maintained that position during his entire connection with the conference."

Mr. Colclazer had not the advantages of a liberal education, which of course was somewhat of a hindrance to his success, but he made the best use of his limited attainments in this respect, and in all his public ministrations he succeeded in securing the attention of the learned as well as of the less informed. His language, always pure and well chosen, was clothed with the most beautiful rhetoric, and never failed to convey his thoughts in a manner to interest and captivate his hearers. In short, as a pulpit orator, he was the peer of any preacher in the country, and had he been blest with a liberal education, would have become one of the most eloquent preachers of his time.

During his ministry in this State he filled all the offices of the church, except that of Bishop. He was a delegate to the general conference at a number of its sessions. He was the first librarian of the university, when all the books might almost be packed in a traveling trunk.

He filled the pulpits of all the important places in the conference, and during his ministry in Michigan, served the church faithfully and well. I will close with the following amusing incident: Mr. Colclazer, as presiding elder, held a quarterly meeting some thirty miles north of Ann Arbor. In those days the quarterly meetings commenced on Saturday, with a sermon. People from all parts of the circuit attended them, and it was the custom to entertain the people over Saturday night, and it often happened that the limited dimensions of the houses were not favorable for great comfort and convenience. The love feast was held early Sunday morning, making it necessary for the friends to be astir quite early.

Brother Colclazer was to stay with Brother Boutwell. There were also many of the brethren and sisters stopping at the same place. When the time of retiring arrived, Brother Boutwell took the presiding elder to his room for the night, which was at the head of a ladder, in a log house, with sheets hung up for partitions. Mr. Colclazer thanked the good man for his good bed. Mr. Colclazer said good night, said his prayers, took off his wig—for he was quite bald—and hung it on the bed-post at the head of his bed, and soon composed himself to rest. Mr. Boutwell was the first up in the morning, and stepped up the ladder to call his daughter, who occupied a room in the chamber, to get up quickly, for they had so many to get breakfast for. He was so near the top of the ladder that he saw the elder's wig on the post, and it being the only one he ever saw, he was badly frightened, and thought that the Indians had scalped the minister. So he halooed, "Oh, the Indians! the Indians!" This aroused the presiding elder, who was also greatly alarmed, and rose up quickly in bed, forgetting his bald head in his fright. This was too much for Mr. Boutwell. He now was sure that the Indians had been there, and, scared almost to death, he screamed murder! murder! at the top of his voice, which brought all the family from below, and the guests from above, to the scene. When all was explained, and the unoffending wig placed in its legitimate position, all were merry at Brother Boutwell's expense. Poor man; he was so chagrined that he rushed below, and did not appear at breakfast, or at the meeting that day.

Dr. Pilcher is a member of the Detroit conference, and resides at No. 4, Monroe street, Brooklyn, N. Y. Mr. Colclazer died in Philadelphia, December 16, 1884. He was a member of the Wilmington conference at the time of his death.

The only apology, if one is needed, for the length of these sketches of three of our pioneer ministers, is that their labor and usefulness demands it.

FROM BUFFALO TO MICHIGAN IN 1829

BY F. A. DEWEY

When we look back to the scenes of over fifty-seven years ago, although a pleasure, it requires deliberation to bring the mind to bear on scenes and incidents which transpired when the writer was eighteen years of age. Long shall I remember the bright and beautiful day, the first of September, in the year 1829, when I left the pleasant and historic village of Buffalo, which had been my home for several years, and took passage on the steamboat "Enterprise," Captain Miles, for the celebrated lands of Michigan. The steamer carried about thirty cords of four foot wood to make fire with instead of coal, as at the present day. Several landings were made on the route to change freight and take on fire-wood. The weather was delightful on the lake until we neared Sandusky Bay, then the winds appeared to roar and howl; many passengers were sea-sick. Capt. Miles very gracefully said to those who were sea-sick, "this change of weather and the loosening of bile will save each of you a hundred dollars' doctor bill when you get to the low lands of Michigan." The third day we were safely landed at the small wharf in Detroit. Thence taking the marked out road, on the line surveyed in the year 1824, called the United States military road, between Detroit and Chicago, I was led to Ypsilanti, where I found very good fare at the log tavern kept by Mr. Whitmore, thence west through the Saline River, near the salt springs. On the west side of the river were remaining parts of the military barracks built by a portion of General Harrison's army in 1814, with a square plot of ground of about one acre, cleared from every grub and stump for parade. Here, in the winter of 1814 and '15, a regiment was stationed to keep the Indians back. From this place I took the Indian trail, past the house of Orrin Parsons, through the dense timbered lands, going twelve miles without finding a house, then I came to the admired and fertile oak openings of Tecumseh, where my father, Simon Dewey, two months previous, had bought, one mile west of this forest hamlet, six eighty-acre lots of land, comprising four hundred and eighty acres of land with a log house and ten acres of clearing, but no laid out road within a mile. Here I was to stay until October, when my father's family was expected to come. I would here say that in 1832 the U. S. LaPleasance Bay military road was surveyed and made the great turnpike, passing through the centre of the lands. It was my good privilege here, with dog and gun, to range the woods where game was plenty. At the present day what was the wild wood forest fifty-seven years ago, now comprises the beautiful, productive, and well managed plantations of our highly esteemed citizens, Walter Adams, the widow and son of the late L. D. Dewey, also of Samuel Bryan, W. K. Waldron, Thomas Boyd, and Marvin Howard, men not surpassed in farming, all of whom are pioneers of Lenawee county.

My boarding place was with the family of William H. Hoag, who was afterwards one of the side judges of the circuit court, and also had large contracts in making military roads. After making my home there until November first, and not hearing from my father, I took a seat with Joseph Camburn in a lumber wagon, drawn by two yoke of oxen, for Detroit, the third day we arrived and stopped at Campbell's tavern. November 10 I took passage on the staunch top-sail schooner "Commerce," Captain Simeon Fox, for Buffalo, we had a favorable trip of three days to the grand old harbor of Buffalo, and there learned that my folks had been gone two days on the "United States," schooner, Captain Whitaker. I will here state, that large vessels were thirteen days on the lake without going into harbor until they reached. Detroit. My mother said it was a great relief to get on the land once more. November 19, Captain Fox, of the "Commerce," said his vessel was loaded for Detroit, but it being Friday, he would not start until after twelve o'clock at night, though the wind and weather were favorable. I had a good berth in the cabin, and after a sail of over 200 miles on the lake, a great gale began at midnight, which swept the decks of the loading, smashed in the stern windows, and a deluge of water came into the cabin, upset the stove, broke the jolly boat loose from the davits, and seemingly made a general wreck; the storm of wind and snow being fearful. The Captain did not hesitate to open his mouth in the use of some of the most tremendous words, that were never learned in the spelling book. The close reefed fore-sail was all the vessel could stand up under. After five days in this wild, terrific snow storm, buffeting the big waves, and trying to make a harbor in that desolate Canadian region, near Long Point, at night the anchor was dropped in Buffalo Creek. The next morning we saw that ice had formed, and boys were already skating. It now seemed, as the Captain said, that the end of navigation on the lakes; for 1829, had come. Thus do I look back to those scenes as the perils of the inland seas. Now it seemed to me my only chance was to take the land route, so I made up a small bundle of shirts and stockings, with a good pair of shoes, a pair of boots, and a fair traveling suit, not omitting a few dollars in money. Thus equipped, on November 25, on foot and alone, I started over the cold and long road, through Pennsylvania and Ohio for Michigan. The second day I reached a farm house west of Dunkirk. In the morning my feet showed signs of enlargement as a result of the rough traveling, the fourth day I passed through a forest of chestnut trees, where was a plenty of nuts on the ground. At evening there came a fierce snow storm. I called at a log house where they had a splendid fire, but where I was very modestly told that there was but one room and one bed in the house, but a quarter of a mile west was a house with more room. I reluctantly went on, which seemed a full mile in that fierce evening snow storm. That night I slept on the floor. After a wearisome travel on foot of over two hundred miles, I reached the far-famed village of Cleveland, December 5. Here the only bridge over the river was of floating logs.

At Huron there was a large number of wagons and teams on the common, resting for the night, loaded for Columbus. They bought twenty bushels of corn to feed the horses that night. I took a few days' rest at what was sometimes called the "Doctor's Cabin." One bitter cold midnight there came a loud rap on the door. The doctor got up and admitted a man, who came in, sat down on the floor before the large, open fireplace, and said that he had a tooth to be examined. A jug was placed by his side and he was told to take a drink; the irons were warmed by the fire, and the doctor then placed the man's head between his knees, and, by the light of the fire, put the instruments in his mouth, and suddenly the tooth was out. The doctor put some salt in his mouth, and told him to take another drink, then start for home, and not to stop until he had got home. My cot was close to the fireplace, and I could see and hear all the prescriptions. This was Ohio doctoring. At Milan river I took two hours' time to view the large circular embankments, full fifteen feet high, which are supposed to have been built more than a thousand years ago. Thus did the lone traveler pass over the romantic and secluded forest road, frequently waiting many an hour for a boat to cross the river, until the noted and historic village of Monroe was reached. Here my sleeping room at the tavern was in a chamber without a window, and as a consequence, I remained in bed late in the morning. Starting again, I took the River road for Kedzie's Grove. I was somewhat encouraged to know that I was in Michigan, and with a quick step I hastened towards home. As evening came on and the sun went down behind the trees, there were still six miles, through a dense forest, with a blind trail, mostly covered with leaves, until a house could be reached. It was difficult to keep the line without stopping every few rods to brush away the leaves. Thus I pursued this lonely trail for nearly two hours in the dark, with howling wolves on both sides and seemingly but a few steps behind me, when, through the glimmering branches of the trees in the distance, I saw the welcome and cheerful light from the large open fireplace of Mrs. Kedzie's log house. Here I was cordially entertained. She had a family of four or five dutiful and intelligent children. Her husband had died a few months previous. Long shall I remember that pleasant evening. After a refreshing rest at Mrs. Kedzie's, I resumed my journey for Adrian and Tecumseh, with the cherished thoughts of meeting my brothers and sisters, with the ever kind mother. About noon I got to Mr. Dean's tavern, in Adrian, which was on the ground where the commodious and well furnished Lawrence hotel now stands. In the afternoon I stopped with my esteemed friend for half an hour, Hon. Darius Comstock, at the valley. Mr. Comstock had, previous to his coming to Michigan, been employed by the New York State Canal Commissioners to superintend a large force of men in blasting the Niagara ledge of rocks at Lockport, for the waters of the Erie canal, which took four years to accomplish. It proved a great benefit to the State, and he received several thousand dollars for his most excellent management. At his Pleasant Valley farm he had about six acres enclosed with posts about ten feet high to keep the wolves from his cattle and sheep. He was really and truly a philanthropist among the pioneers, and also was the main contributor toward the building of the first church erected in Lenawee county, which was dedicated to the Friend's Society. A little after sundown, I got to the house of Musgrove Evans, in Tecumseh. He was one of the first settlers of the county, and was a true friend to all. He said that our family was at the log house, and that they were greatly worried as to what had become of "the stray boy." Several vessels had "gone to Davey's locker" in the great gale on the lakes, and they feared that I had gone on one of them. With a cheerful step I walked beneath the spreading branches of the giant oaks, until within ten rods of my father's house. Here, on this serene December evening, nature seemed to smile from the bright starlit sky upon the great forest and the little log house, and I sat down for a moment by a tree, and calmly reviewed and mused over my long and wearisome journey. A few rods distant the candle burned brightly near the four-lighted window. I got up with my small bundle, brought by hand from Buffalo, and, with a firm step, went to the door and rapped. I was bid, "Come in." I answered, "Will you please open the door?" Then, at least four were there to welcome me home.

In conclusion, permit me to say, that I have cherished memories of Musgrove Evans and family. They were the first residents, and built the first house in Lenawee county. We fondly retain warm and lasting recollections of those who first settled in and around Tecumseh. For general intelligence and high moral character, no better or more deserving citizens were ever found in a new country. A large number here to-day have passed many years in Michigan, and have noted the changes in clearing away the forest and plowing for plantations. We have seen and harvested the bounteous fields of grain; also, in our midst villages and cities have been built, not omitting to keep pace with the improvements of the age. We have seen large and most excellent families grow up, and, with cheerfulness, we see some of them here to-day. (And, for myself, I look forward to the annual pioneer meetings with great pleasure—one of the most enjoyable times of the whole year.) An eloquent orator said but a few years ago: "I have lived longer than Methuselah; for, in his long journey between the cradle and grave, he did not see such changes as we have lived to witness." The wilderness has been cleared away by the woodman's ax, and in place of the birch bark canoe on our rivers and lakes, there float the beautiful iron steamers; also, the marked and lonely trail through the dense forest, which was the Indian's path, was quickly obliterated, and in its place magnificent railroads have been built, that carry our products to every part of the globe. Here also are admired and princely residences, which take the place of the log house, on many a fertile and productive plantation. Fifty years ago we wrote with quill pen to friends, and waited months for an answer. Now we can touch the electric wire, and back flashes the reply, even from across the broad Atlantic. We welcome, cherish and revere the pioneers of Michigan; they honor us by the history of their eventful lives. We are glad to commemorate them in their prosperity and beautiful homes. From the fathers and mothers, whom communities ought to be proud of, they have descended, and stamped intelligence, love and faith upon all; they infused a spirit of integrity into our public institutions. Our state is worthy of the citizens who founded her. The praise we render to those pioneers who have gone before is only gratitude for the blessings we now enjoy.

INCIDENTS OF EARLY DAYS IN MICHIGAN

BY EPHRAIM WILLIAMS

In a former article (published in Vol. 8 of Pioneer Collections), I gave a sketch of the location of Major Oliver Williams (my father), with his family upon the bank of the beautiful lake, which he named Silver Lake. In the fall of 1818 he purchased 320 acres of government land at two dollars per acre, one-fourth down, the balance in five years. Before the expiration of five years the government reduced the payments, so that he had only to pay one dollar and twenty-five cents per acre. In the fall of 1819, or summer of 1820, he caused to be framed and raised the first frame building in Oakland county, a barn, 40 by 40 feet, and it now stands upon the old homestead in good condition. The beams of this barn were 40 feet long and 12 by 14 inches of pine, which we drew from a small pinery about one and a half miles from Silver Lake, at the head of what then was known as Three Mile Lake. We drew from this pinery the logs to make the shingles, boards and plank to enclose and finish this barn. The shingles were made on the farm by the Graham boys (Benjamin and William Graham). Plank and boards were sawed on the farm with whip saw by Sykes and Batchelor, two discharged

U. S. soldiers from the 5th regiment, stationed at Detroit, in 1815 and 1816. They lived with father a number of years. After this time the Pontiac Company put a party of men into this pinery and cut and cleared off the entire pinery, and drew the logs to their saw mill at Pontiac. Thus ended Uncle Sam's pinery at the head of Three Mile Lake. The pioneers of those days, and for many years, felt at liberty to make free to use what they wanted of Uncle Samuel's timber (he being a very clever old gentleman, and no one to say "why do you so?" This little pinery created a desire among the few first settlers to look about for more pine timber.

North of Silver Lake (the old homestead) we could see a height of land, or a small mountain, that appeared covered with pine ('twas called the "little pine knob"), appearing to be some miles distant. The subject was talked up by the family (and by us boys more particularly), that we would take a trip to little pine knob and see what it was for pine. Accordingly one of father's hired men (David Corbin) and myself, being the oldest of the boys, decided to explore pine knob and its surroundings. After due preparations and all necessary arrangement for the great exploration, provisions cooked and provided by my good mother, one bright morning, with a little snow on the ground, Corbin and myself started (this was the winter of 1820 or 1821), with blankets, provisions, hatchets, pocket compass, etc., we took our course for pine knob. About noon we came to a small stream running from east to west, and joining Clinton river a few miles below. This creek was afterwards called the Shaw-she-bah, after an old Indian by that name. We crossed the stream, and in about one or two miles we arrived at pine knob. Ascending to its summit we found only a clump of small pines covering the entire surface, perhaps two or three acres of scrub pines. Disappointed, and a little fatigued, we struck a fire and took a lunch, and surveying the surrounding country from our little knob (which was quite a hill or a young mountain), we discovered in an easterly direction, and to the right of our line, what appeared a long stretch of pine timber running easterly several miles. We observed what appeared to be a large, heavy body of pine timber. After lunch we set our compass and made a bee line for the same. We found it located upon the creek we crossed on our way out, and in a valley of beautiful heavy timber, intermixed with large and very fine pine, this valley ranging from half to one mile wide. This valley and surrounding country in after years became one of the finest farming portions of Oakland county, and is now. It was known as the Shaw-she-bah settlement. We examined about and found we had struck into a splendid body of pine, which proved afterwards to be about the best of the long range of splendid pine, which proved a very useful element in the improvement of Oakland county, and some others. We marked many of the largest and finest trees with our *Totems* (as the Indian says), and as was the custom to mark bee trees when found, being a pre-emption or possession. We were, probably, the first whites ever upon these lands except, perhaps, the U. S. surveyors, and they in their field notes in the land office, in Detroit, had returned these, and all of Oakland county, as barrens and tamarack swamps.

We now, proud of our success, took our course for home, leaving the timber and pine lands. We soon struck the openings rising from the valley, upon quite high land, some distance east of our line out. Arriving upon the high land we saw two men, who had just come upon this high land, stood amazed, looking over this valley of pine, which they also had been led to explore *pine knob*. We found them our neighbors, Col. Calvin Hotchkiss and his father. They lived, perhaps, a mile below Pontiac, and were some of the earliest settlers of Oakland county. We told them what we had found; they were satisfied with our description. We then agreed to keep the matter a secret for our mutual benefit. They agreed to come the next day to Silver Lake and make such arrangements with father as might be thought best for securing what pine we wanted unbeknown to others.

The colonel and his father came to Silver Lake, and arrangements were made to start from Silver Lake and go north across Three Mile Lake at a narrow place and put a number of hands immediately to cutting logs, before hauling any out of the pinery, as the Pontiac company were on the look out for more pine timber. After securing a fine lot of logs, taking only the choicest, we commenced drawing on to the openings, in as secret places as possible, and convenient for drawing to the saw mill of Williams & Phillips at Waterford. About this time the Pontiac company found, or mistrusted father's men and teams, and Hotchkiss's men and teams and themselves and several laboring men in the neighborhood were missing from home, sent out men to search for our road, and in a few days found it, and followed it into our camp in the pinery where we were hard at work. It soon became known pine had been found; parties from Detroit and other places began to buy up the pine lands. We got our logs all off their lands, and working day and night, having bright moonlight, we soon were all right. Some mornings, when we happened not to have worked the night previous, we would find our logs marked with red chalk the name of a pretended purchaser, and with the words "touch not these logs;" but in twenty-four hours the logs would be one or two miles nearer the mill they were destined for, and on Uncle Sam's land, which we claimed as much right to as any one until purchased. Parties from distant parts of the county, in a few instances, moonlight nights, with teams, would load up some of our longest and best logs, draw them to Pontiac mill, or to their homes for shingles. Father found two of our best and longest logs at the Pontiac mill, left to be sawed; he made an arrangement with the sawyer that on a certain day he would take his men and teams and draw the logs on to the log way, and when sawed, load the lumber and take it home, nothing said; the one in possession in those days was the owner and best fellow; these transactions made any amount of fun and excitement. We had a fine run of sleighing that winter, which enabled us to bring about much work. Many's the night we boys and hired men and teams worked all night to secure our logs. We, however, succeeded in getting a fine number to the Pontiac mill, and to Williams & Phillips's mill at Waterford. We had a number of men and teams when we moved for the mills, often six or eight teams, for it became a little uncertain at times who would hold the logs. I recollect one morning we missed two very large fine logs for shingles gone from our number; being snow we took their track. After two or three miles, we came upon the logs: their sleigh had broken down, from being overloaded; they had left them beside the road and put for home. We reloaded them and took them home. The fellows who stole our logs lived near Birmingham, then called Piety Hill (a very pious place in those days). Next spring and summer pine lumber was in great demand, commanding good paying prices. Our logs had been sawed at Williams & Phillips's mill, and prepared for market. Parties came from Ann Arbor and purchased all our lumber, provided we would deliver it on the bank of the Lower Huron river, opposite what was then the old Wallrod house (a large log house), on the site of the present village of Commerce, Oakland county. We explored the route, and found an open plain from Waterford Mill to the Huron river, except perhaps forty rods of timbered land between the openings and the bank of the river, which was a sand ridge and bank, perhaps ten or fifteen feet high. We cut a road through this timber land, and cleared a place to pile the lumber. We then started two teams—myself and a man by the name of Welch—each a wagon and two yoke of oxen, or rather, a good heavy yoke of oxen on the tongue, and a yoke of steers on the lead. When we came to the timbered land, we took the steers off and chained them to a sapling, for they were young, and troublesome in the timber land. We had drawn several days, piling the lumber carefully on the bank of the river; one day, while drawing, was a very windy one, and by the time we reached the place of deposit it was blowing a gale. Of course we were anxious to unload and get out of the timber and on to the plains as soon as possible. We always took the oxen from the wagons and fed them while unloading—Welch at the front and myself at the rear of the load, passing the lumber from the wagon on to the pile as fast as we could. All at once my hat was crushed over my eyes and myself pressed to the ground, somewhat stunned by something. I got out, and, looking around, found a dead tree, a foot or more in diameter, had fallen across the load, settling the wheels a foot or more into the sand. After seeing what had happened, my thoughts and looks were, "where is Welch?" he not being in sight. I made for the front of the wagon and found a large limb had struck him upon his head, and he lay dead, as I supposed, upon the ground, blood running from his nose, mouth and ears. I got him out, and leaned him beside a large tree near by. I found there was life, and with our tin cup I ran to the stream, brought some water, bathed his temples and washed the blood from his face, and with bathing and rubbing I soon brought him to breathing, but unconscious, putting everything I had under his head to make him comfortable as possible, leaning him against a tree.

I then went to work to clear away the tree and unload the wagon. I was so frightened and excited, not a living person within miles of me to assist, and fearing poor Welch might breathe his last any moment, I hardly knew what to do—wind blowing a gale, trees and limbs falling around me—seeing no other alternative, ax in hand, I went to work to clear away, cutting the body of the tree into pieces, to get it off the load, and with fear and trembling, went to unloading the wagons, and I now think they were unloaded in a hurry, all the time looking after Welch, who lay unconscious and speechless.

I got unloaded and the oxen to their places on each wagon ready to leave, I hardly knew what I should do with Welch, with limbs and trees falling around me. I finally took some boards and laid them on the wagon, making a spring bed for him; after bathing him again I took him up and laid him on the boards, with what hay I could gather and what else I had, putting it under him, then with chains and ropes I bound him so he could not fall off; I started for the plains where the steers were left. Now came the trouble; how to get the steers before the oxen I could not imagine, for one yoke were young and wild, it requiring two to hitch them before the oxen. I went to Welch, he appeared comfortable, and I thought more conscious, but could not speak, and seemed hardly to know anything.

I now felt more at ease, as I was out of the timber land. I took a rest myself, giving Welch all the attention I could. I spoke and said I did not know how I should get the steers hitched up. With this, Welch, I thought, knew what I said, and made some motion which led me to ask him, if I carried him to the head of the oxen he could reach the chain and work it into the ring of the oxen, he intimated that he could, I had no confidence that he could, but I unbound him and carried him and sat him or laid him down under the heads of the oxen (they smelt of him, as they recognized their old driver). I then got the steers around in front of the oxen, holding them by their horns, I threw the end of the chain within the reach of Welch, and said, now Welch hook the chain if you can, at the same time fearing it impossible for him to do it. But to my surprise and great relief, he took the hook and hooked it into the ring, and sank back almost lifeless upon his back! Oh! what a happy moment for me, after the steers were hitched they would stand quiet. I then sprung, took up Welch and laid him on his board bed again, and secured him so he would ride as comfortable as I could make him under the circumstances. You may imagine I made for home as fast as an ox team could go, part of the time on a trot. Arriving at the mill, a physician was sent for from Pontiac; Dr. William Thompson came and found that Welch's skull was injured; it was many days before he was conscious and able to speak. Almost the first thing he said was to ask what Ephraim (myself) struck him for. It was a long time before he could be made to understand what was the cause of his injury. It was months before he was able to work, in fact, he never, poor fellow, fully recovered his health, and his mind was always a little off. He has long since gone to his long home. That was a day I never have forgotten and never can forget; such a day I never wish to experience again, and probably never shall. I have often thought there was a little pioneer life about this. We succeeded in banking all our lumber as agreed, and the parties came from Ann Arbor and rafted it down the Huron to Ann Arbor, putting it in small cribs from four to six feet wide. I suppose some, if not all of that lumber is now, 1885, in buildings in Ann Arbor.

Speaking of the Huron river reminds me of the fact that, in the early days of Michigan there were three rivers called the Huron, to wit: the Lower Huron, the Upper Huron, and the Huron of the North. Lower Huron, the present Huron; Upper Huron, the one passing through Pontiac, Rochester, and Mount Clemens to Lake St. Clair. Three Hurons caused much confusion as the country settled, consequently the names of two of them were changed. The Upper Huron was called Clinton River, after Gov. Clinton, of N. Y., and about the time (or at the time) of the Saginaw Treaty of 1819 by Gov. Cass, the Huron of the North was changed and called the Cass River, in honor of Gov. Lewis Cass.

The Indian name of the three rivers Huron was *O-not-O-way-See-bee,* after the tribe of Huron Indians, who were the *O-not-O-ways* (Hurons).* Even after the changes the Indians about Oakland county and the Saginaw valley, referring and speaking of the Clinton and also Cass rivers, always, even to this day, say—*O-not-O-way-See-bee.*

The seasons, so different now, of early days from 1815, for many years, we had very little cold weather, and rarely got but little snow until March.

---

*See appendix

After we moved on to the farm we could and did plow and do all kinds of farm work through January and February, as well as in May and June. We then had long and beautiful falls called Indian summer. No winters with 20, 25, and 30° below zero, and freezing the earth from 4 to 6 feet deep, as has been the case the last few winters. I will recite an instance: Two Irish laborers, one had been digging some post holes and found the frost very deep. The other says—"Well Pat, I think the divil a potato bug we'll have next summer (this was about the time the bugs were so destructive), for the frost must have killed them." "Indade, Jimmy, I think there will be plenty, for when I dug through the frost some four feet, I found about an inch or more of live bugs that had retreated before the frost, and lay there waiting to come to the surface to look after our potatoes next spring."

THE TOWN OF GREEN

BY C. D. RANDALL

[NOTE.—This paper was originally prepared for and read before the Branch County Pioneer Society, December 28, 1885, and afterwards read at the annual meeting of the State Pioneer and Historical Society.]

Mr. President, Ladies and Gentlemen:

The following interesting and touching correspondence I present here, after mature deliberation, for my preface and apology:

COLDWATER, Dec. 17, 1885.

Hon. C. D. Randall, Coldwater:—

DEAR SIR—Will you have the kindness to give our pioneers about a three minutes' talk on "The Town of Green" at our pioneer meeting the 28th inst?

Yours truly,
J. G. PARKHURST, *Pres.*

Reply.

Gen. John G. Parkhurst. President:—

MY DEAR SIR—Yours of the 17th inst., requesting me to tell in three minutes all I know of "The Town of Green," is at hand. The time suits me exactly. I am sure I can tell all I know about it in that time, and I will try to do so, relying upon you to help me out on the last minute, as I may not have material enough for the allotted time.

Yours truly,
C. D. RANDALL.

And now, fate, or the President of the society, has placed me on the program with this dry subject, right after the delightful music, right after the address of the "Old Man Eloquent," and the interesting and touching tributes to the memory of our fellow pioneers who have left us during the past year. I had a vague idea that the town of Green was lying about here somewhere, or had been here sometime, but just where and when I did not know. Consulting encyclopœdias brought no consolation. There was nothing in the American, Johnson's, Chambers' or Britannica about this ancient town. Almost as a last resort, I consulted the President's message, but although it contained everything else, he had, alas, forgotten to speak of the town of Green. Then I consulted the statutes of the Michigan Territorial Council, and talked with the oldest pioneers, who were in Michigan before I was born. We came here in 1835, but when we got here the town of Green had had its brief career and passed into history. We came to the place where this old town once was, but it was here no more forever. Yes, Branch county was once the town of Green. Not this county alone, but Eaton and Calhoun, and "all the country north of Eaton" composed this town. The section of this act, organizing this town, was approved November 5, 1829, and reads as follows:

> Sec. 5. That the counties of Branch, Calhoun and Eaton, and all the country lying north of the county of Eaton, which are attached to and compose a part of the county of St. Joseph, shall form a township by the name of Green, and the first township meeting shall be held at the house of Jabez Bronson, in said township.

The house where the meeting to elect township officers was held was in Bronson, named after Jabez Bronson. It was a long, low log house, but however low, such houses always had a chamber above for a sleeping room. I think it stood a little way back from the street, near where the flouring mill now stands. These large towns existed in the days when Michigan Territory reached the Mississippi and shortly after to the Missouri, as Michigan has always been a growing State. Counties sometimes were very large. I think Brown county once reached across the lake into what is now Wisconsin. The people were few and could not fill the land, and so the land reached out and took in the people.

There is said to be no record of the first and second meeting of this town. But the third meeting is recorded. It was at Pocahontas Mills, near Branch, April 2, 1832—over 53 years ago. An interesting feature of this meeting was the auditing of the account of John G. Richardson, the town collector for 1831-32. The amount presented showed he had collected taxes to the amount of $56.82 and had actually paid out $59.32, leaving his due $2.50. What a contrast between 1831-2 and 1885. I think the present assessed valuation of Branch county alone, which is not one-third of the old town of Green, is something over $17,000,000. This year our taxes are higher than usual, and if they are one per cent on the valuation, and they approximate that probably, then the amount of taxes we pay in 1885 will be about $170,000. Don't we, poor tax-ridden modern citizens, when thinking of these halcyon days of low taxes and little property in the days of yore, wish we were back again enjoying the "thirties?" There is, however, nothing so interesting to me as the consideration of the names and characteristics of the town officials of Green.

I know more about them than I do of the town which they survived. I well remember the ancient collector of taxes, John G. Richardson. My father bought his farm near Bronson village, and he then moved farther east into the woods. He was a strong, healthy hunter—never had the ague—killed many a deer—never did much farm work,—spent years in devising a perpetual motion, which never moved. But the greater dream of his life, in that long ago, was to go far away to the Pacific, to Oregon. But he died many years ago on his farm, on the west line of Bethel, near Bronson, and never saw his dreams of Oregon or a perpetual motion realized. His widow re-married, and I as solicitor, procured a divorce from her second husband on the ground of desertion. She was, I think, the first white woman who settled in Branch county, and in that part that it would seem was then about the most prominent in the county. At that town meeting others were elected to office, whose names are very familiar to us, who still survive, beloved and honored: William H. Cross, treasurer; Allen Tibbitts, commissioner of schools and assessor; and Harvey Warner, overseer of highways for Coldwater Prairie. It was voted at this meeting that the next town meeting should be held at the house of John Morse, which is the present old Phœnix House in Coldwater.

In 1832, on the re-organization of townships, the name of Green was dropped, the west half of Branch county being named Prairie River from a stream in the southwestern part, now called Hog Creek, while the east half of the county was called Coldwater. For some reason the name of Green had become unpopular, but why I have not learned. The name of Prairie River was soon lost for both town and stream, though the Hon. Wales Adams, who owned a saw mill on the creek, where it ran slow and up hill by the marsh to turn the wheels, strove to have the name retained, but it soon degenerated into "Hog Creek." I think the town was named for General Green, but I do not know. No pioneer I have asked can tell me. They were probably not consulted, not the town either, the Territorical Council, in their wisdom and discretion, fixing upon this name. In size the town must have had something over 1,800 square miles, to say nothing of "all the country lying north of Eaton," which unless explained by statute, reached to the north pole, and certainly to Mackinac. I have tried to find some good moral hid away under the ruins and names of this great old town, but, save the lesson relative to the brevity of all sublunary things, I find nothing fruitful for that purpose.

But after all, I think I do see a good lesson for the young in the names and lives of some of the old town officials of Green, who for over fifty years have survived their arduous labors. When we see to-day Mr. Cross, the treasurer, Mr. Tibbitts, the assessor and school commissioner, and Judge Warner, the commissioner of highways, hale and hearty in body and mind, enjoying their eighties, all alive to-day, it does seem as though there was after all something of advantage in good, honest, temperate lives, that makes men respected and gives them fulness and ripeness of years. So to-night for myself, and I think I may also in your behalf, extend to these survivors of the township officials of Green most hearty congratulations and best wishes for yet many years.

And to the memory of the town of Green, I say: "Hail and Farewell!"

NOTE.—Green township was organized November 5, 1829, Territorial Laws, Vol. 2, 787. Branch County was organized into two townships, Coldwater and Prairie River, June 29, 1832, Territorial Laws, Vol. 3, 949. Prairie River township was changed to Green township, April 23, 1833, Territorial Laws, Vol. 3, 1260. Prairie River township was changed to Bronson, March 11, 1837, State Laws, 1837, 44.

ANDREW NOWLAND: THE OLD PIONEER MAIL CARRIER AND TEAMSTER

BY A. D. P. VAN BUREN

Andrew Nowland came of an Irish family. He was born and reared to manhood in Benton, Yates county, N. Y. He was among the early emigrants to Michigan, for in the year 1828 we find him a resident of the rude village of Ann Arbor, and for a while he kept tavern in the lower town. At this early period he was the *avant courier* to the stage coach, mail carrier, and express man, for he not only carried the mail and passengers from Ann Arbor to Detroit and back, but he also carried baggage, or any goods that he could stow away in his wagon. He drove a splendid span of large horses, making three trips in a week to Detroit, going one day and returning the next.

Says A. R. Holcomb, who had known Nowland from a boy: "He was what some people call 'a hard case,' but he was only 'hard' to himself, other people were never injured by him. No man in this entire border was better known, more trusted, or had a stronger hold on the confidence of the early settlers than Andrew Nowland. He was a big friend to those he liked, and as big an enemy to those who sought to injure him." For years he was teamster, errand, and express-man between Ann Arbor and Detroit. He would take any message, package, or portable goods, and never failed to deliver them just as directed. He never seemed to lose patience, or to allow his kindly nature to refuse any demand on him. "I have known him," says Mr. Holcomb, "to receive money from different persons, wrapping each amount in a paper, an old rag, or a wisp of hay, and to keep stowing them away in his vest, pantaloon, and coat pockets, each with a slip of directions attached, till he looked like a burly Daniel Lambert." And he never made a mistake, or forgot to deliver money or message to the persons who were to receive them. Let him drink as much as he would he was always true to his trust. At one time a land buyer was sent to him. He gave Nowland the description of the land he wished to purchase, and, counting out the money, asked him for a receipt. "No, sir," said Nowland, "I give no receipts, go somewhere else if you can't trust me." The man sought others, but they all sent him back to Nowland. With this universal endorsement, he again sought the brusk old teamster, who took the money, and on his return presented the man with a certificate for his land. The stranger was surprised at his promptness, and threw him down five dollars. Nowland refused to take it, but the gentleman went off and left it.

This eccentric old pioneer was above the medium height, had black hair, blue eyes, and fair complexion. When he heard that A. R. Holcomb, his old friend and playmate, was coming to Detroit, on his way to Jackson, he made a special trip to that city, hunted up Holcomb, and presented his team to carry his family and household goods to Jackson. The latter thanked him, saying he had secured conveyance for his goods. But Nowland would hear to nothing of the kind. "You have been a big friend to me, Holcomb, and I owe it to you." Holcomb, when young in Benton, N. Y., had once saved Nowland from getting awfully whipped by three boys older than himself; and the sturdy teamster had never forgotten such a kind and brave act. Nowland died many years ago at Ann Arbor.

Of the many jokes that this old settler has perpetrated on different persons, and of the many anecdotes told of him, I can here give but few.

Says I. N. Hedden of Plymouth: "One could tell stories about Nowland from morning until night, and not exhaust one-third of the stock on hand."

Hearing some politicians one day in Jackson condoling over the scarcity of money, he, partly filling a quart cup with half and quarter dollar pieces walked along the streets scattering the silver coin about him as he exclaimed, "Don't tell me that money is scarce, here it is in abundance; walk up fellow citizens, walk up, here is plenty and to spare!"

A couple of young "sprigs" driving by on the road, one of them called out to him, "Turn out there, turn out, a couple of gentlemen are coming!" Nowland, leaning over from his high seat in the wagon, looked down upon them as he retorted, "Gods, I'm glad you told me, I shouldn't have known it!"

The old cemetery grounds in the upper town at Ann Arbor formed part of Nowland's farm, and as he must always do business in his own way, and was nothing unless odd or joking, he would give the committee of ladies a deed only on condition that they would come and take tea with him, which they did. There lived at Ann Arbor at this time a good and pious deacon of the Congregational Church by the name of Branch. Nowland, in handing over the title papers to the cemetery, stipulated that when he (Nowland) died he must be buried as far as possible from Deacon Branch's grave, so that when the Prince of Darkness came for Deacon Branch there might be no mistake made, and he, Nowland, be taken off instead.

William Hedden met Nowland one bitter cold day in December driving his spanking bays into Ann Arbor. Nowland was standing on the topmost box of his load, his coat and vest unbuttoned, his bosom bare, his hat in one hand with which he was fanning himself, his lines in the other; as Hedden came up the old teamster cried out, "Stranger, how far is it to a tavern?" "Some two miles," was the reply. "Is that so? Well, I'll try and stand it. But my God, stranger, I'm just sweltering!"

THE GOODRICH FAMILY REUNION

BY ENOS GOODRICH

On Thursday, the 20th day of May, 1886, it being the fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of the family in Michigan, the surviving members of the original Goodrich family, with as many of their descendants and kindred as could conveniently attend, gathered at the mansion of the oldest brother, Moses, near the village bearing the family name, and on the farm where the family had settled fifty years before. Parties were there whose homes are now far remote from each other. Kindred met kindred who had never met before, and who, in all probability, will never meet again. There were heartfelt greetings, there were minglings of pleasure and sadness, of joys and sorrows, of smiles and tears, as the recollections of bygone years were called up from the oblivion of the past.

The vicissitudes of pioneer life, the changes of the country from its wilderness state to its present condition of advanced improvement, the friends and neighbors of former times that have passed away, were among the interesting themes of discussion.

Aaron, the second brother, had come from his home in St. Paul, Minnesota, bringing fresh intelligence from the wonderful cities of the Upper Mississippi, as reverting in his happy manner to his sojourn in Belgium, and his travels in Italy, or to his heartfelt and sentimental visit to "Goodrich Castle," the ancient home of the family, on the banks of the river Wye, in the county of Herefordshire, England.

Enos, the next living brother, had come up from his home in Fostoria, to tell the story how the towering pines of Tuscola county had vanished and given place to grain fields and orchards and meadows, and to prove by the grip of his strong, calloused hand that he had not gone there to "play up gentleman," but to repeat his old time labors of the county of Genesee.

Reuben, the youngest and the last, had come from his home beside the lucid waters of Traverse Bay, to take one more look at his old stamping ground, to tell of the gigantic enterprises of Hannah, Lay & Company, and of Dexter & Noble, and of his recent pilgrimage among the orange groves, the Everglades, and the alligators of Florida.

The four grey headed but cheerful hearted brothers met (perhaps for the last time on earth), cheered and consoled by the consciousness of having, at least, tried to do something for the benefit of the world in which they had so long been permitted to live. The ages of the four brothers just met were as follows:—

Moses, born December 5, 1802,	age	83	years,	5	months,	15	days.
Aaron, born July 6, 1807,	"	78	"	10	"	14	"
Enos, born August 11, 1813,	"	72	"	9	"	9	"
Reuben, born June 28, 1819,	"	66	"	10	"	22	"

Total age of four brothers 302 years.

Our devoted parents, who left their eastern home to share our fortunes, had long since passed away, in mature old age, with complacent spirits and intellectual powers fully preserved to the very last. As their lives were passed principally in the eastern states their biographies, perhaps, do not properly belong to the pioneers of Michigan. I trust, however, they will pardon me while I mention the fact that my father, in twelve consecutive years' practice as magistrate in Clarence, an important town near Buffalo, never had one of his judgments reversed, and it is curious now to mention that, among the attorneys who pleaded law before him in his rude log court room, was no less personage than Millard Fillmore, afterwards President of the United States; and also D. V. Lord, the celebrated divine, who started his public life as a lawyer, and came out from Buffalo, somewhat of a greenhorn, to try his first cause.

Of the six sons of my father, all of whom emigrated to Michigan fifty years ago, a few words might be said.

Moses, our oldest brother, the man who now stands patriarch of the Goodrich family, has always strenuously resisted the allurements of ambition, beyond the business of his farm. This field has not been a narrow one, and to this he devoted himself with diligence, perseverance and success, and when called hence, as ere long we all must be, he need not be ashamed of the reputation he leaves behind,—"An honest man's the noblest work of God."

Aaron, the second brother, practised law in Tennesee, to which State he removed after a brief residence in Michigan, became a member of the legislature of that State, and Presidential Elector in 1848, chief justice of Minnesota in 1849, and subsequently spent eight years in Belgium, as secretary of legation.

Enos, your historian, has passed a life so closely occupied in hard work in the woods, in the lumber yard, in the flouring mill and on the farm, that it was with difficulty he could find time to help move the Capitol from Detroit to Lansing in 1847, and to represent his county in the Senate in 1853, and it was with equal difficulty he left the cares of the farm to meet you here to-day.

John was the student and scholar of the Goodrich family. First passing through a literary course of studies at Middlebury Academy, in Western New York, he next entered upon the study of law, in the office of the Honorable John T. Bush, of Buffalo. After removing to Michigan, he entered the office of Alfred H. Hanscom, of Pontiac, where, after completing his legal studies, he became a trusted partner in the law office of Hanscom & Goodrich. It was from this office that the lamented Col. Broadhead, as a student at law, went forth to die immortalized on a southern battle field. On the adoption of the revised Constitution of 1850, he was elected to the office of judge, but died on the 15th of October, 1851, before entering upon the duties of his office. His dust reposes beside that of his parents in the Goodrich cemetery.

Reuben was the youngest of the family, and came to Michigan in his early youth. Here he entered earnestly upon that active life which has characterized his later years. As a member of the Senate in 1855, and of the House in 1857, he brought to his task the same habits of industry which always characterized his action in private life, and, without pretension as a public speaker, few men at the time had greater influence in moulding legislation for the interest of the newer counties of the State.

Thus may be briefly written the history of a hard working family of Michigan's early pioneers, whose greatest satisfaction is to know that they have been humble instruments in building up the State of their adoption, and whose greatest regrets are that they are soon to leave it, without doing more to enhance its growing greatness.

JOHN SKINNER GOODRICH

BY ENOS GOODRICH

John Skinner Goodrich was the fifth son of Levi Hamilton Goodrich and his consort, Eunice Skinner, and was born at Clarence, Erie county, New

York, on the 7th day of October, 1815. At an early period in life he developed an intense desire for study, coupled with a memory of the most extraordinary character. The country was poor and the family were poor. At an early period in life, the boys, as was customary at that period, were put into the harness, and broken to the rugged and arduous pursuits of a new and heavily timbered country The subject of this memoir was by nature endowed with a healthy and robust constitution, but from the first the powers of his mind seemed to predominate over those of the body. Being an obedient son of much respected parents, he submissively bowed to all their mandates, and strove to fill his place in the industrious and toiling family, but it soon became obvious that his heart was not in the work. As he toiled in the field he would be reciting passages of history or classic poetry, and while his comrades paused to rest he would be solving mathematical problems on the ground with a stick. His parents having both been school teachers, afforded him all the instruction in their power, and all that could be obtained in the primitive common schools within their reach. But he soon passed beyond their reach of instruction. In the occupations of the farm, however, it was obvious to the most casual observer, he was not at home. His mind was wandering far away,—consequently he exhibited no tact or aptitude for physical labors. Whatever he did was done cheerfully, but it was done by main strength, coupled all the while with the intense labors of his never resting mind. Under this combined physical and mental strain, it was obvious that his strong constitution was failing at the age of twelve years. His parents now found it necessary to release him from the labors of the farm; but turning with greater intensity to the study of books, his health did not improve. At this time Middlebury Academy was the principal institution of learning in western New York, and he conceived an intense desire to go there. His parents, though in limited circumstances, and fearful as to the effect it might have upon his health, gave way to his persuasions, and mustered the necessary means for his outfit. It is probable that from the fifteenth to the seventeenth year of his life was spent at that institution. His progress in study was a wonder to his teachers, and a surprise to his fellow students. But his teachers soon discovered that his health was rapidly sinking under the enormous strain of his studies. Finding it impossible to restrain him while in school, they sent him home with sage advice and fatherly benedictions. They told him he must lay his books aside, and divert his mind from intense thinking. They advised him to walk in the open fields, inflate his lungs, and try to interest himself in sports and pastimes suited to his years. He tried mechanically to follow their instructions; but the bewitching and fascinating ghost of his studies would return.

His health did improve, and he returned with gladness, once more to renew his studies at the academy. He soon passed to where his teachers could give him no instructions, and with his books for his only guide, pushed forward with speed which was literally incredible. Mathematics was his favorite study, and having mastered all his books contained, in Hutton's immense edition, together with other customary academic studies, his teachers proposed that he wind up with a course of history,—and I will here record a circumstance illustrative of his extraordinary powers of memory. Having disciplined his mind to the subject, and by degrees increased his lessons, he was at length enabled to master forty closely printed pages as his daily lesson, and toward the close it only required one careful thorough reading to enable him to get up and recite, in his own language, every important incident.

His physical constitution now began to re-assert itself, and he returned home with improved health. On returning home, some time was spent in reviewing his studies, in general reading, and improving his health by gentle field exercises and amusements. Between the age of eighteen and twenty years he entered the office of Hon. John T. Bush, of Buffalo, as a student at law. I have no data in regard to the time he spent in his legal studies. It is known, however, that, though his mind had no natural affinity for the study of law, his progress was highly commendable, and he left the office with the most kindly feelings between him and his preceptor. In the year 1835 his parents sold out their farm on the "Holland Purchase," and in the following spring removed to Michigan, where the family settled and engaged earnestly and unitedly in agricultural pursuits, at the spot where now stands the quiet town of Goodrich, in the county of Genesee. John, the subject of this memoir, soon followed them, and after spending a little time with his kindred in the then northern wilds of our State, he determined to try his hand at civil engineering, and united himself with a party just setting out to survey the original line of the Port Huron & Lake Michigan railroad, or Northern Michigan, as it was sometimes called. It was thus he thought to gratify his mathematical tastes, for the law had never been congenial to him. It was cold wintry weather, and in wading the icy slopes and marshes of St. Clair county, he soon contracted a cold, which brought him home with inflammation of the lungs, and came very near costing him his life. When at last he recovered, he reluctantly abandoned the idea of civil engineering, but I have often heard him express his regrets that he could not have found some pursuit wherein he could have found scope for his mathematical genius. It was with reluctance that he returned to the study of law. The Honorable Alfred H. Hanscom, of Pontiac, was then looming up as one of the brightest stars in the legal horizon of our infant

State. Mr. Goodrich entered his office as a student, where he was most intimately associated in his studies with Thornton F. Broadhead, or "Thorn Broadhead," as he was then called, though afterwards world renowned as Colonel Broadhead, who died in the South, with the immortal utterance upon his lips, of "The old flag will triumph yet!" Thorn Broadhead was a most inveterate wag—everlastingly full of his jokes and his drollery; while Goodrich was quite the reverse, being generally sedate, and deeply absorbed in his studies. Still, the relations between them, as fellow students, were ever of the most kindly character. Time advanced, and the student became a partner in the firm of Hanscom & Goodrich. Mr. Hanscom himself was a rapid student, and endowed with an extraordinary memory, but in both these capacities he soon found himself distanced by his young partner. He was highly pleased with this state of facts, for his natural forte was that of a talker, and in this capacity Michigan has produced few men who were the equal of Alfred H. Hanscom. In searching the law, making up briefs, and preparing cases for the courts, young Goodrich developed extraordinary ability; while in presenting the cases to court or jury in the most plausible and fascinating language, Michigan had no man at that time who was Hanscom's superior. But about this time dissipation, that insidious fiend, which has struck the death blow to so many of the brightest geniuses of the State, was getting Mr. Hanscom fairly within its power. This circumstance rendered it necessary that young Goodrich should do more work in court. This was not congenial to his tastes; for he was diffident and awkward in his personal appearance, and no one knew it better than himself; and the more he knew it, the more oppressive it became to him. But not among the least of his characteristics was an iron will. I have heard him say that the hardest thing he ever attempted to do in his life was to speak in public. And, said he, "I know it is folly; for I have not the least fears of my ability to present the law, the facts and the argument." Still, diffidence rested like a mountain upon him; but in course of time, he overcame it, by dint of persevering effort, until he was enabled to stand before a jury and present his cause for five hours in succession, without in the least degree losing the thread of his argument.

It was early in October, 1851, when he was employed by his brothers, Enos and Reuben, who were transacting business at Goodrich, Genesee county, under the partnership name of E. & R. Goodrich, to go to Buffalo to adjust a disputed claim of theirs for insurance on a cargo of lumber they had shipped to a firm of that city, and which was burned at the wharf. He was taken sick on board the steamer before reaching Buffalo, but, regardless of his personal comfort, persevered to the full and final accomplishment of his mission. This was the last business transaction of his life. Returning to Detroit, he took lodgings at the Michigan Exchange, and never after left his room, until he was carried out in his coffin. At that time a telegraph office was kept at our business place at Goodrich, and we were promptly advised of his condition, when Reuben, our youngest brother, hastened at once to his bedside. How many there are who can bear sad testimony to the delusive and insidious symptoms of typhoid fever. For several days his Detroit physician did not consider the case dangerous. Finally, when conviction as to the nature of the disease forced itself upon those in attendance Dr. Robert D. Lamond of Flint, the family physician, was summoned to his bedside, and never left till death had placed his patient beyond the reach of earthly aid. It was the writer's fortune, after traveling all the previous night, to reach his bedside about noon, October 15, 1851. Just two weeks previous I had parted with him on board the steamer Atlantic at the Detroit wharf, as he was embarking for Buffalo in the full vigor of health. And now the unmistakable seal of death was upon his countenance. But his presence of mind did not forsake him. His reasoning faculties and his wonted cheerfulness were with him till the last moment of his life, and his last strength was exerted to its utmost in sending messages of friendship to kindred and absent friends.

His principal attendants were brother Reuben, Drs. Lamond and Eastman, and his old friend Judge Whipple. After many farewells and parting benedictions to present and absent friends, he sank in exhaustion from the effort and enjoyed a brief period of tranquil repose. As he aroused he inquired for Judge Whipple, who was then out of the room, saying, "I want to see the Judge. He has been a firm friend of mine from the beginning." The Judge was brought in, when, grasping his hand, he said, "God bless you, Judge, you have been a friend to me." Yielding to the solicitations of the Judge he consented to the calling of Bishop McCoskry. Presently the Bishop arrived. The sick man lent a kindly ear to his exhortations and benedictions. When the Bishop had retired he greeted his friends with one more last, final and universal farewell. His hour had come. His labored breathing became tranquil as that of an infant, and ceased forever.

Promptly upon intelligence of his death a meeting of the Detroit Bar was convened at the United States Court room, the result of which will more fully appear by reference to the following article which appeared in the next issue of the Detroit Advertiser, and was largely copied by the press of the State:—

DEATH OF JUDGE GOODRICH

It is with feelings of deep regret that we announce the death of Hon. John S. Goodrich, which took place at the Exchange Hotel, in this city, on Wednesday evening last, at 8 o'clock. Judge Goodrich had been elected in April previous to his death, to the office of presiding judge of the seventh judicial circuit of the State of Michigan, by virtue of which he would have assumed a seat upon the supreme bench upon the first day of January, 1852.

Judge Goodrich was born in Erie county, in the State of New York, but has resided in the State of Michigan since the year 1837. Soon after his arrival in this State he devoted himself to the study of the law, and was admitted to the bar at the spring term of the Genesee circuit, in 1841, before his honor, C. W. Whipple.

Having a clear and legal mind, great assiduity and power of application, combined with studious habits, his standing at the bar as a lawyer had been highly respectable from the date of his admission; while his strictly frugal and temperate habits, aided by a purely moral and irreproachable life, assisted to raise him very high in general estimation. While in pursuit of his studies, Judge Goodrich resided alternately at Goodrich, in the township of Atlas, Genesee county, and at Pontiac, in Oakland county, but after being admitted, he made the latter place his residence, until about two years since, when he returned to Goodrich, at which place his parents and several of his brothers reside.

The writer of this notice was for fourteen years upon terms of familiar acquaintance with the deceased, and bears willing witness to his upright character in private and professional life, as well as to the zeal, ability and success which marked his professional career.

The leading traits of his character were candor, earnestness, and a scrupulous regard for truth; in his heart he was kind and regardful of the feelings of those around him, and in his social intercourse was blameless and amiable. Few men, it is believed, had a better heart, and fewer still, a clearer head or sounder judgment.

Judge Goodrich, having been a short time absent from the State, returned on Sunday, October 5, to this city, in his usual health, in company with his honor, Chief Justice Whipple, and was taken ill on the evening of his arrival, with symptoms of intermittent fever, which continued till within two days of his death, when it assumed a typhoid or typhus form. His senses continued bright until near his end, and in his last hours the consolations of religion were administered to him, at his request, by Bishop McCoskry.

Thus falls in the strength of his manhood, at the age of thirty-six years, a valuable, active, and highly estimable citizen, whose place as a public servant in the capacity for which he was best fitted, and to which he had been called, it will be found hard to supply, and one around whom the hopes of many friends centered, looking to a long career of honor and usefulness.

He has gone, but in his early death his friends may not "mourn as those without hope"—

> "His youth was innocent; his riper age
> Marked with some act of goodness every day;
> And watched by eyes that loved him calm and sage,
> Faded his early parted breath away,
> Cheerfully he gave his being up and went
> To share the holy rest that waits a life well spent."

A meeting of the members of the bar of Detroit took place on Thursday, at 3 o'clock P. M., at the United States court room, at which, upon motion of Hon. G. V. N. Lathrop, his honor, Chief Justice Whipple, was called to the chair, and their honors, Copeland, Douglass and Witherell, were made vice-presidents.

Upon motion of Alex. Davidson, Rufus Hosmer and Col. John Winder were appointed secretaries.

His honor, Chief Justice Whipple, said:

I perform a painful duty in announcing to the gentlemen of the bench and bar, now assembled, the death of Hon. John S. Goodrich, one of the judges elect of the supreme court of this State; he departed this life at the Michigan Exchange, in this city, Wednesday evening. My acquaintance with the deceased commenced about the period of my accession to the bench. He was then prosecuting his legal studies, and was soon after admitted to practice, while I presided in the northern circuit. My official and personal relations with Judge Goodrich were constant and intimate, until I was called from the more immediate sphere of my public duties to the western part of the State.

No person perhaps, possessed a better opportunity of forming a juster estimate of his character than the individual now addressing you.

With a mind thoroughly disciplined by habits of laborious study and severe reflection, he made himself familiar with the great principles of that science, to master which, seemed the great object of his ambition.

His efforts at the bar always indicated that ample research and patient investigation for which he was always distinguished.

In his intercourse with the court and his professional brethren, he never forgot that he was connected with a learned profession, from whose members honor, integrity, and the attributes of the true gentleman should at all times be exhibited.

The qualities of mind and heart thus feebly sketched, made their impression upon his fellow citizens, and their appreciation of, and confidence in his character and abilities, resulted in his election as one of the judges of the supreme court of the State. He was, no doubt, looking forward to the period when the severe labors of the bar were to give place to the more important and responsible duties of the bench, with the profoundest anxiety. In this new theatre of action, he would have brought with him a vigorous and acute intellect, an honest heart and learning of a high order. But it has pleased an all-wise Providence to disappoint his expectations, and instead of permitting him to gather laurels in the new field, for which he was husbanding all his resources, he is stricken down in the maturity of his strength and manhood, and all that is left to us is the remembrance of his many virtues.

It was permitted to me, with several of his family, to linger around his couch, when his spirit was about to take its flight to another, and I have no doubt, a better world; the same gentleness and kindness which characterized his intercourse with his fellow men in the busy scenes of life, were manifested when Death had placed upon him his cold and icy hand. He bowed with submission to the will of God, and in humble trust that he had an interest in the blood of his Redeemer.

On motion of Mr. Lothrop, the chair appointed Messrs. Lothrop, Watson, Bishop, Emmons, and Buell, a committee to draft resolutions—who reported the following, which were unanimously adopted:

Resolved, 1. That the bar of Detroit have heard with deep sorrow of the death of Hon. John S. Goodrich, one of the judges elect of the supreme court of this State.

2.—That in this dispensation of Divine Providence we mourn a professional brother, who was distinguished for wide and varied attainments in literature and science, for the most thorough and comprehensive acquirements as a lawyer, for rare modesty of deportment, for a pure and manly character, and for those kind and generous qualities of heart, which not only endeared him to a wide circle of friends, but secured him universal respect wherever known.

3.—That our deceased brother possessed those accomplishments and qualities which would have enabled him alike to adorn and dignify the eminent position to which he had been called by his fellow citizens, and that his death at this juncture is a calamity, which not only the legal profession, but the whole State may deeply deplore.

4.—That as a testimony of our respect and sorrow, the judges and this bar, will in a body accompany his remains to the depot of the Detroit and Pontiac railroad, whence they are to be conveyed to his late home for interment.

5.—That a copy of these resolutions be transmitted to the family of the deceased, and be furnished for publication.

On motion, chair appointed Messrs. Lothrop, J. M. Howard and Geo. E. Hand as a committee of arrangements.

On motion of Judge Hand, the attorney general was requested to furnish a copy of these resolutions to the supreme court, and to the circuit court of the United States, and to move that they be placed upon the respective records of those courts. On motion adjourned.

Rufus Hosmer,
John Winder,
Secretaries.

On learning of the death of Judge Goodrich, the gentlemanly proprietors of the Detroit & Pontiac Railroad tendered the services of a special train to convey the remains of the deceased to Pontiac; where they were met by a cortege of friends and kindred, and conveyed to the Goodrich home in the county of Genesee. The Methodist church of Goodrich was then in process of erection,—enclosed but lacking the inside finish. A floor of loose boards was laid down, and the edifice was hastily prepared for its first dedication, in the most imposing and most numerously attended funeral ever yet held in the township of Atlas. An appropriate sermon was preached by the Rev. Mr. Brown; when all that was mortal of John S. Goodrich was deposited in the Goodrich cemetery.

HON. CHARLES UPSON

BY HON. THOMAS M. COOLEY

What a State is can best be known by studying the lives and characters of its leading and most influential citizens. And one of these in the State of Michigan, for more than a quarter of a century, was Charles Upson.

He was born at Southington, Conn., on March 19, 1821, and died suddenly at his home in Coldwater, September 5, 1885, from the bursting of a blood vessel in the pericardium. Like most of our leading men, he was the son of a farmer, and spent his summers on the farm, while in the winters he attended the public schools, until he acquired a fitness for teaching. For a time he took up that employment, alternating it with attendance upon the academies of Southington and Meriden. He was a diligent student, and when he attained the age of majority, he had a good practical education, and was well fitted by mental discipline for a professional career. He had early selected the law for his vocation, and in the spring of 1844 he began the study in the office of Judge Lowrey, in Southington. The winter following he spent in the law school of Yale, and in the fall of 1845 he sought the land of promise in Michigan. The village of Constantine was then one of the most prominent of western Michigan settlements, and had been one of the most prosperous, though now others are leaving it far behind. But no other town excelled it in intellectual activity, for here lived Gov. John S. Barry, at that time, with the exception of Gen. Cass, the leading democratic politician in Michigan, Joseph R. Williams, prominent among the whigs, and an able speaker and writer, H. H. Riley, already known to the country as the author of "Puddleford Papers" and other writings, and other men of strong and vigorous intellect, who, we may be sure, took notice of every bright young man who came to cast his fortunes with them, and according to their respective natures and methods lent him assistance. Young Upson was engaged to teach the village school the winter after his arrival, and among the youth who came to him for instruction, was John J. Bagley, destined one day to be Governor of the State, and to build up a fortune of unusual magnitude by his business tact, ability, and integrity. Master and scholar became life long friends, and their mutual influence upon each other was always beneficial and helpful. In the fall of 1846 young Upson was engaged to teach the village school at Centerville, and there he took up again his law studies, entering for the purpose, as a student under Gurney & Hammond, the leading law firm of the place. In the spring of 1847 he was licensed to practice on examination before the supreme court.

At this time begins his official life, and the list of offices held by him is a long one. Deputy county clerk to 1849; county clerk, 1849-51; prosecuting attorney, 1853-55; State senator, 1855-57; railroad commissioner, 1857-61; attorney general, 1861-63; representative in congress, 1863-69; circuit judge, 1869-71. He was also one of the commissioners appointed to examine and report upon the compilation of general statistics of the State in 1871, and was a member of the commission to revise the constitution in 1873. In 1876 he was tendered the appointment of commissioner of Indian affairs, but declined it. He had been so much in public life that his accumulations of property had been small, and to break in again upon his practice for a four year's term at Washington he probably felt would be more of a sacrifice than he could well afford.

Besides these marks of public favor, Mr. Upson had others which were almost equally flattering; he was several times prominently mentioned for the offices of justice of the supreme court and of United States senator, and though never chosen to either position it was always to his friends a pleasant circumstance that, whenever mentioned, no voice was heard to question his fitness or his ability, and his name was always received with kindness, and his candidature commented on with respect.

It is but common justice to say of Mr. Upson's official life that in none of the numerous positions held by him did he disappoint the public expectation, either in respect to the ability which he brought to the discharge of his duties, or the fidelity with which he performed them. He was a sound but not a brilliant man; he was a strong but not an eloquent speaker; he did not push himself to the front and crowd others back that he might secure leadership; but whenever he accepted public office it was a matter of conscience with him to perform his duties well, and his mind was upon his duties, and he had neither the faculty nor the desire to attract attention to himself by the common acts of the demagogue, or to magnify his official importance for his personal advantage. Those who were associated with him officially soon found that his strong common sense was generally enlightened by ample preparation for his work, and his fidelity and integrity were such that, to use the common expression, he was always "a safe man to tie to." In the two offices of prosecuting attorney and attorney general he was in the true sense the representative of public justice, and while faithful in prosecuting those he believed to be guilty, his desire for professional success never betrayed him into the prosecution of anyone. His short judicial career was highly honorable; he held the scales of justice with perfect poise; and though a little impatient at times of anything that appeared like occupying the attention of the court with frivolous points and unnecessary objections, he always so plainly had right and justice in view that public confidence and respect never failed him.

Mr. Upson entered congress at the very crisis of the national life, when the country was hopeful, but not entirely confident, and he remained there until the rebellion had been put down, slavery destroyed, and the most troublesome stages of reconstruction had been passed. He took a modest part with the great men of the day in settling the greatest and most perplexing questions the nation has ever been called upon to deal with, having for colleagues from this State among others, Jacob M. Howard, Zachariah Chandler, Austin Blair, and Fernando C. Beaman, all of whom respected him highly, gave him their full confidence, and were his trusted friends in congress and after he left it. He stood firmly by President Lincoln and his general policy; he as firmly opposed President Johnson and his leading measures; but while as a politician he was grounded on immovable foundations of principle, he was never a bitter or uncharitable partisan, and party feeling never ran so high but that he had warm friends among his political opponents who gave him full credit for his patriotism and integrity. His most important work in congress was on the committees; he did not often take the floor, though when he did he spoke with clearness as well as with force, giving his attention closely to facts, and making no effort at embellishment.

Such, in breif, were the facts of his official life. He had the inestimable privilege to form the acquaintance and to be in association with Lincoln and Chase, Sumner and Wilson and Fessenden, and other great men of the period, when they were winning immortal honor as the champions of freedom and national unity, and he bore himself at all times creditably as their supporter. His private life was equally praiseworthy, and perhaps not less useful. When he left the State senate, he removed to Coldwater, where he engaged in the practice of his profession, having for a time as partner, Lieutenant Governor George A. Coe. He won his way steadily to the leadership of the bar of the county, a leadership which was ungrudgingly conceded to him by his associates, and which he retained to the last. As lawyer, he was more conspicuous in counsel than in litigation, and more ready by prudent advice to save the estates of those who trusted him, than to display his legal abilities through the encouragement of their quarrels. Nobody knew better than he did that the most useful record which any lawyer is likely to make, is his record as peacemaker in the counsel room—a record, however, which it requires no little firmness to make, since, in a large proportion of cases, when a party goes for professional assistance, he is in that state of mind when he is ready to incur all the risks of litigation, and when nothing will be so congenial to his feelings as to be encouraged to do so. The lawyer who can see two sides to a quarrel, and who tries to make his client see both, is very likely, under such circumstances, to fall into disfavor. Charles Upson was a man of sympathetic nature, and quite sufficiently inclined to see the wrongs of his clients through his client's eyes; but no one had advice from him that was not dictated by his judgment, and through all his professional life he never forgot that law and the courts and their machinery are given to the people that right may be done and justice administered, and that the only ground on which the privileges of the legal profession can be justified is, that the profession is indispensable to the accomplishment of this beneficent end. Once engaged in litigation, however, few lawyers were more persistently combative than Mr. Upson, and few were less likely to lose anything by unguarded concessions.

Mr. Upson was married August 3, 1852, to Sophia M. Upham, a lady well fitted by the endowments of nature, and by her acquirements, to be his companion and adviser, and to sustain with him the proper dignity of his several official stations. His married life was therefore eminently a happy one, and fortunately for him, it continued to the very last, his wife surviving him. Three children were also left—two married daughters and a son—all of whom lived in Coldwater, and were much attached to him. He was fond of being with his children, when he could make it convenient, and of engaging in games with them, and his ready and somewhat boisterous mirth and his abundant fund of anecdote always made his society welcome—not to his children merely, but to old and young of all classes. He did his share in the performance of the duties of local office, acting as mayor and member of the board of education, and in both positions doing what he might towards fostering popular education. He assisted also in founding and conducting a national bank, and in his several walks of life he had made himself, long before his death, the most conspicuous citizen, not merely of his county, but of his section of the State.

In no conventional sense, but in heart, in principle and in conduct, Charles Upson was a good lawyer, a useful citizen, a kind husband and father, a man of sterling integrity, and of benevolent disposition. He was therefore a thoroughly good man. What more can be said for anyone? Of his religious feelings or sentiments he made little talk and less display; but the example of a worthy life is never lost, and he had that true charity which led him to respect the opinions and the faith of others, whatever he might think of their soundness. The State, therefore, now that he is gone, has abundant reason to hold him in grateful remembrance as one of her most worthy and most useful sons.

THOMAS L. L. BRENT

BY JUDGE ALBERT MILLER

All the pioneer sketches published in these volumes relate to parties who from small beginnings, by industry, economy, and a perseverance in that course for years, better their own condition, and leave their families all in comfortable, and some in affluent circumstances, with names and positions in life that enable them to maintain the high character of honorable and respected American citizens. But the writer has in view an instance where the whole course of the pioneer, with attendant results, as mentioned above, was completely reversed.

The initials F. F. V., meaning the first families of Virginia, were more frequently seen forty or fifty years ago than at the present day, and among all who claimed that distinction, in the early years of the present century, there were none that held their heads higher than the family of Brent.

Richard Brent served in the United States senate from May, 1809, to December, 1814, when he died at Washington. His nephew, Thomas Ludwell Lee Brent, a citizen of Virginia, was appointed a clerk in the department of State by Secretary Smith, on the 1st of January, 1811. He retired from the department, November 11, 1814, having been commissioned secretary of legation to Spain, October 15, 1814, by President Madison. He arrived in Madrid on May 5, and was recognized in his official capacity by the special government on the 28th of August, 1815. From that time he had charge of the affairs of the legation until August 28, 1816, when Washington Irving presented his credentials as minister plenipotentiary. On April 19, 1817, Mr. Brent was appointed agent for claims and seamen, an office added to that of Secretary of Legation. When Mr. Irving took leave, April 19, 1819, Mr. Brent took charge of the legation as charge d'affairs *ad interim,* and served as such until May 18, 1819, when Mr. Forsyth was presented as minister plenipotentiary. He also acted as charge d'affairs *ad interim* from November 16, 1820, to August 18, 1821. He left Madrid August 19, 1822, having been commissioned secretary of legation to Portugal, May 22, 1822, by President Monroe. Upon the departure of Minister Dearborne he acted as charge d'affairs *ad interim* at Lisbon, from June 30, 1824, until June 24, 1825, when he was received as full charge d'affairs, having been commissioned by President Adams to this latter office in March, 1825.

The diplomatic relations between the United States and Portugal having been ruptured he requested his passports, November 25, 1834.

The career of Mr. Brent as related above must have fitted him admirably for the diplomatic service, but was not a good preparation for the work of a pioneer in the wilds of Michigan. He must have managed his finances judiciously, for on his return to his native country he must have had a fortune of ninety or one hundred thousand dollars. In 1836 he purchased 70,000 acres of land in Genesee and Saginaw counties, which exhausted his money so much that he had but little left to pay taxes and improve his property.

Mr. Brent must have resided abroad, where he married a young Spanish lady of noble birth, previous to the date of his appointment, in 1814, by President Madison, as secretary of legation to Spain, for at that time, he was residing with his young bride, near the President's mansion, at Washington. They seemed greatly attached to each other, she sharing with him the privations of a pioneer life without a murmur, always believing her husband to be one of the wisest and best of men.

While stopping at the American hotel, at Detroit, in the summer of 1837, the writer was introduced to the family of Mr. Brent, who were staying there while preparations were being made for their reception at a home on the banks of the Flint river, four or five miles below Flushing, where a large tract of Mr. Brent's land was located.

Being a pioneer, located in the vicinity of Mr. Brent's land, I formed a pleasant acquaintance with Mrs. Brent, conversing about pioneer life, their prospects in settling in a new country, etc., which acquaintance continued during her lifetime. Their family consisted of Charlotte, aged about 14, and Henry, then 12 years old. Late in the autumn of 1837, while passing from Flint to Saginaw, by way of the river, with the late William F. Mosely and his family, we took dinner with Mr. Brent and his family in their log house, which was in no wise superior to the residences of their pioneer neighbors. Mr. and Mrs. Jarvis Bailey, late of Flint and Bay City, then a young married couple, had charge of Mr. Brent's affairs out of doors and in the house; he had a large number of men employed making preparations for building a large saw mill on Flint river, which he never succeeded in finishing. After spending a large amount of money in the effort it was abandoned, and a small mill built on a stream emptying into the Flint, near the first projected mill. He caused quite a large tract of this land to be cleared for a farm, exhausting all his money in the improvements, so that when the taxes were due on this large amount of land, he had no means of paying them. But something must be done or the whole would be lost, so he made a contract with George M. Dewey, of Flint, to pay the taxes on the whole for a certain number of years for one-third of the land; previously he had been so tenacious of retaining the whole that he would not sell when he had good prices offered.

Mr. Brent built a small frame house, which was a slight improvement on his log tenement, and struggled along under all his difficulties for ten or twelve years, when he was attacked by the billious diseases of the country, his early training not having been such as to prepare his system for such severe attacks, so his spirit passed away and left his body, which had stood erect before kings and princes, in the loft of his little frame house, in the wilds of Michigan, which, in order to get it to its last resting place, had to be taken through a window on to a lean-to, and from there lowered to the ground, for the reason that the stairway was so narrow and crooked it could not find egress in that direction.

The assiduous care bestowed by Mr. Brent's physician, Dr. I. T. Miller, in his last illness, inspired Mrs. Brent's confidence, and she desired him to act with her in administering the estate, but his professional duties would prevent his giving the business the attention it required, and he recommended the Rev. William I. Kent, a local preacher in the Methodist connection, a man of sterling integrity and good business qualifications, who was duly appointed and worked faithfully several years, to bring order out of chaos and save something out of the scattered remnants of the fortune for the family. Mr. Kent had many difficulties to encounter in managing the affairs of the estate, Mrs. Brent having the same dislike to voluntarily part with any of the real estate that her husband had. As an instance—when offered a fair price for a tract of grove pine, she refused to sell, and when told that it was all the land was worth, for the trees were all small: "Oh, well," she said, "we will wait, then, till they grow large before we sell the land." On my occasional visits to the family, while the affairs of the estate were under Mr. Kent's management, I found them greatly improving; a new two story house had been erected, with a music room finished and furnished in a style that gave Mrs. Brent a glimpse of the luxury she so much desired. Charlotte had developed a talent for music and indulged her taste for it by playing on the elegant piano with which the room was furnished. Henry, although old enough to manage all the business of the estate, was usually engaged in some frivolous or feminine employment, such as constructing Æolian harps, making fancy boxes, painting pictures, etc., not seeming to have any idea of business whatever.

The kindness of heart which has been accorded to Mrs. President Madison by all who have had occasion to write or speak of her, is illustrated by the following circumstance which was related by Mrs. Brent on the occasion of a visit of the writer to her house after she became a widow. Mrs. Brent said that when she was a bride of sixteen years of age, having left her home and friends in "beautiful Spain," as she always referred to her native land, she was a stranger in a strange land, living near the President's mansion in Washington. She was very homesick, continually mourning to see her mother. Mrs. Madison became interested in the young bride, and by her kind and motherly ways did what she could to mitigate the sorrows of her lonely condition. One morning, before she was properly dressed to receive company, she saw Mrs. Madison coming across the back yard to her house (having taken a short route from the White House). She called a servant to bring a shawl to wrap around her, so that she might be presentable to the lady of the White House. Mrs. Madison came in and told her she had good news for her, that there was a prospect of her soon seeing her mother, for Mr. Madison would that morning present Mr. Brent's name to the Senate for confirmation as secretary of legation to Spain. Mrs. Brent said she was a giggling young girl, and told Mrs. Madison that perhaps the senate would not confirm him. "Oh yes," said Mrs. Madison, "there is no fear of that result, for Mr. Brent is a very fine young man." When the nomination was voted upon Mr. Brent's uncle took his hat and left the senate chamber, not wishing to act in a public capacity where a near relative was interested. There is no such delicacy manifested nowadays.

Mrs. Brent was not partial to *American sovereigns* generally, but anything that savored of European title or aristocracy was held in great esteem by her. In 1851, in passing from Flint to Saginaw by the way of the river, a new importation from Germany, called Baron Egremont, started with me with a view of going to Saginaw, but when we called to see Mrs. Brent, she being fascinated with the title of Baron, prevailed on him to remain and make her a longer visit. She told me aside that he must be a man of consequence, for she had met his mother's cousins in society in Europe. I passed on and saw nothing more of Baron Egremont.

Mr. Kent, after spending several years' time in the service of the estate, succeeded in clearing it of debt, and had a nice cleared farm which was worked by tenants, when it seemed mutually agreeable to himself and the family that he should sever his connection with it. The property, which was valued at thirty thousand dollars, was put into Henry's charge, but none of the family were shrewd enough to withstand the wiles of designing and wicked men.

A tenant, who was a married man, and occupied a house on the farm near the family residence, exerted great influence over each member of the family. After a time his wife disappeared suddenly under suspicious circumstances, and directly afterwards he married Charlotte under such circumstances as shocked her mother so she was prostrated with illness, and she soon afterwards died under circumstances that excited strong suspicion of foul play on the part of some one or more persons. Arrests were made and trials had, but no convictions; soon after which Charlotte, with her child and Henry, left to follow the fortunes of the man who had caused them so much trouble, who fled to parts unknown upon the first intimation that an investigation was to be had as to the cause of Mrs. Brent's death.

Not a foot of the large domain once owned by Mr. Brent is now possessed by one of his descendants, and the name which was so proudly borne fifty years ago is now tainted with the suspicion that one or more who had possessed it were accessory to the commission of a great crime.

SKETCH OF DR. GEORGE WHITEFIELD FISH

BY G. TOWNSEND

It is befitting to transmit to future generations a permanent record of the life and labors of one, who, as a man has been characterized by gentleness, as a citizen by devotion to his country, and as a Christian by simple, unwavering faith in the religion of our Lord Jesus Christ.

George Whitefield Fish, a pioneer of Michigan, and a member of this

Society, was born in Kortright, Delaware county, New York, July 16, 1816. He was the third of nine children. His parents were from New England, and descendants from the first settlers. His father, Reuben Fish, was of a feeble constitution, which George inherited, but he was possessed of great moral courage and christian fortitude and integrity. His mother's maiden name was Fanny Robinson. She was a descendant of a hardy and long-lived race. George received a common school education, with perhaps some private instruction.

He then attended medical lectures at Fairfield, Herkimer county, N. Y., and at Castleton, Vermont, graduating from the latter place in 1837 in the twenty-first year of his age.

After graduation he commenced the practice of medicine in Dundaff and Honesdale, Penn., and in February, 1838, he married Octavia Aldruda Mowra, daughter of Dr. George P. Mowra, of Oxford, N. Y. In the spring of 1839 he came to Flint, Genesee county, Michigan, then a new and almost unbroken wilderness.

Here he continued the practice of his profession, enduring the hardships incident to a new and heavily timbered country, until 1847 or 1848, when his health failing him, he moved to Jackson, hoping to find an easier practice, but being disappointed in the recovery of his health, he determined to go northward, and accordingly in the year 1849 took a trip up the lakes. While on the north of Lake Superior he met a messenger sent by the agent of the "Hudson Bay Fur Company," to procure a physician, and thereupon engaged with him to serve them in that capacity for a short time. In the spring of 1850 he moved his family from Jackson back to Flint, and then went south, visiting Louisiana, Texas, and the Isthmus of Panama. At the latter place he engaged as medical officer of the Panama Railway Company, and continued in this position till the completion of the road. He was then employed as physician in chief of the Aspinwall hospital, and remained until the institution was discontinued.

In 1859 he embarked from New York on board a sailing vessel, bound for Shanghai, China, which destination he reached after a voyage of 111 days, doubling the Cape of Good Hope, passing through Sundy Strait, touching at Anjar, Java, Hong-Kong, and other places on the route. In 1860, while at Shanghai, he was appointed U. S. Consul at Ningpo, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the resignation of Consul Bradley.

He visited Canton, and Foochow, and went as far north as the Pecho River, where he was stopping when the English fleet, under Admiral Hope, captured the celebrated Taku forts.

He also witnessed the storming and capture of the city of Ningpo, in 1861, by the Ti-ping rebels, under that noted insurgent General Wang, and held official intercourse with that warlike celestial.

The breaking out of the civil war in the United States created great excitement on board foreign ships in the Chinese ports, causing the doctor to discontinue his residence in China much sooner than he intended, arriving in New York in June, 1862, sailing by way of San Francisco and the Isthmus of Panama, thus making the entire circuit of the globe.

Less than a month after his return he was commissioned surgeon of the 4th Michigan Cavalry, by Gov. Blair, and with his regiment joined Gen. Buell's army at the battle of Chapel Hill, Tenn.

He thereafter participated actively in the campaigns of Rosecrans, Thomas, and Sherman, acting most of the time as brigade surgeon of the first brigade, first cavalry division, army of the Cumberland. At the battle of Stone River he was taken prisoner, but was soon released.

For nearly three years he was constantly engaged in the field with his command, which participated in more than fifty battles and skirmishes. He was present with his regiment at the capture of Jefferson Davis, as were also two of his sons, Lieut. George F. Fish, and De Laska W. Fish, and saw that official in the costume in which he attempted to escape.

At the close of the war he returned to Michigan, and was engaged for some time as editor of the *Saginaw Daily Enterprise.* He was also collector of internal revenue for the sixth district, State of Michigan, for two years. In 1874 he was elected State senator for Genesee county, and served his constituency with great credit for two years. He was also for a short time manager and overseer of the Monitor silver mines of California, being called home by sickness in his family. Shortly after his return, his oldest, gifted and accomplished daughter, Julia C., who had been educated at the Elmira Female Seminary, yielded to that fatal and unrelenting disease, consumption. In less than a month thereafter, his oldest son, George F., who had been educated at the university, at Ann Arbor, and served through the war, fell a victim of the same disease, near Sidney, Nebraska, on his way home from California. His beloved companion soon followed, and was laid to rest in Glenwood cemetery, Flint, Michigan, by the side of her children.

In 1878 he was appointed Consul to Tunis, Africa, where he remained four years, or until the consulate was discontinued. Soon after his settlement at Tunis, his daughter Alda joined him, seeking the recovery of her rapidly failing health, and remaining until his return. While at Tunis he visited the tomb of John Howard Payne, and had it repaired, afterward securing several photographs of the same. He also, in company with the British consul and others, went back into the country some forty miles, and saw the spring of clear cold water gushing out of the mountain two thousand feet from the base, falling from beneath a cliff rising a thousand feet above, from which the Carthaginians, more than two thousand five hundred years ago, conveyed the water in an aqueduct, over hills and valleys, to their city. A portion of the same aqueduct is utilized to this day in conveying water to the city of Tunis.

During his leave of absence through the heated term of 1880, accompanied by his daughter, he visited Malta, Sicily and Italy. From Tunis he went to Malta, thence to Syracuse, on the Island of Sicily, thence to Messina, going by rail around the base of Mount Ætna, near the shore of the sea. Thence he passed by steamer to Palermo, thence through the Straits of Messina, between Scylla and Charybdis—enjoying in the passage an excellent night view of Stromboli—to Naples, then visiting the buried cities of Herçulaneum and Pompeii, and the noted volcano, Vesuvius. After a ride of twelve miles in carriages, under the care of guides, and accompanied by his daughter, he ascended the mountain, two and a half miles, on foot, over scoria, ashes and lava, then on chairs a distance of twelve or fifteen hundred feet, reaching at last the crater, wherein they all took lunch, amid the roar and rumble, the sulphurous smoke and showers of ashes, lava and stones.

The rocks over which they clambered were uncomfortably hot, and the great cracks over which they stepped were hissing and spitting out angry jets of steam and sulphurous smoke, and far below they could distinguish the fiery, molten, seething mass in the interior of the earth.

From Naples he went to Rome, thence to Florence, Leghorn, and the leaning tower of Pisa. The next year he visited Paris and London, and while in the metropolis of the world, visited the great Ecumenical Council of the Methodist Episcopal Church, which was then in session in that city. Here he heard the announcement of President Garfield's death to that vast body, by the presiding officer, an Englishman, to an English audience; while many were in deep emotion under the sad intelligence.

On the French taking possession of Tunis, the consulate was discontinued, and he returned to enjoy the quiet of his pleasant home at Flint. But his daughter Alda's health began to fail more rapidly, and he thought it best to send her back to Tunis, whither he accompanied her as far as New York. Returning to his home in Flint, sad and lonely, he soon sought and obtained the hand of that talented and accomplished lady, so well known as the author of the "Missionary Lesson Leaf," Miss S. A. Rulison, with whom he lived in the peaceful enjoyment of home until his death.

Dr. Fish was an extensive reader as well as traveler, a man of large and varied information, averse to display, retiring and unassuming in his habits, but firm and decided in his convictions of right and justice. He was a keen observer of men and things, and a clear and vigorous writer. During a part of the time that William Cullen Bryant conducted the *New York Evening Post,* he was staff correspondent of that journal. He also contributed quite frequently to the columns of *The New York Advocate, The Michigan Advocate,* the *Detroit Free Press,* and *The Wolverine Citizen* of Flint. Dr. Fish was a democrat until the formation of the republican party, since which time he has been an ardent supporter of that party.

In very early life he identified himself with the M. E. Church, of which he was an honored and useful member until his death, having held the offices of trustee, steward, sunday school superintendent, and treasurer, in Court Street M. E. Church, Flint, of which he was one of the original organizers. He was elected by the Detroit conference one of the lay delegates to the general conference held in Baltimore, 1876, and in the same year visited the Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia. He was appointed by Gov. Crapo one of the trustees of the Institution for the deaf and dumb, and the blind, at Flint, and held the office for six years. He was also physician to the institution for some time. He was also alderman in the city of Flint for one term. In his long and varied practice as a physician he came in contact with almost all forms of disease. On the Isthmus of Panama and in China he was called upon to contend with small-pox, yellow fever, and cholera. In the civil war, while acting in the capacity of surgeon, he dressed all manner of wounds, and performed some of the most difficult feats in surgery.

The climate of Tunis did not prove congenial to Alda the second time, and, within a year, she returned in the last stage of consumption.

Her spirit took its flight September 6, and her body was deposited in the receiving vault of Glenwood cemetery. On the following Saturday the doctor visited the cemetery to superintend the preparation of her tomb, and while thus engaged, either by exposure or over exertion, he contracted a severe cold, which baffled the skill of the physician, and within one short week he too had passed to the silent land, in the sixty-ninth year of his age.

A few days before his death he said to his wife—"Now while my mind is clear, I want to say that the plan of salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ is all right. It is all of His abounding grace that He has cared for me, and my hopes are bright for the future," then added—"I do not say this thinking that I shall surely die now, but I may die." On the following Saturday morning, at four o'clock, peacefully and quietly he passed from under the shadow of earthly affliction into the broad sunshine of the other life. As the report of his death hurried through the city a sadness fell upon the hearts of all who knew him, for each one felt that he had lost a friend, "Flint has lost one of her best citizens;" "Dr. Fish was a good man, Flint had no better;" "The church has lost one of her best and wisest counselors;" "I loved Dr. Fish as a brother." These and other expressions of love and admiration were heard everywhere.

The immediate relatives who survive Dr. George W. Fish are his beloved wife, his two sons, De Laska W., of Genoa, Douglass county, Nev., and Frank A., of San Francisco, Cal. One brother, Melancthon W. Fish, M. D., of Oakland, Cal., and two sisters, Mrs. Goodenough Townsend, of Davison, Genesee county, Mich., and Mrs. James F. Johnson, of Brown's Grove, Pawnee county, Kan.

The funeral services were held in the Court Street M. E. Church on Monday afternoon, September 21, 1885. His pastor and presiding elder Rev. I. N. Elwood, and S. Reed, and others pronounced beautiful and appropriate eulogies upon his life. The vestibule of the church was handsomely draped in mourning, and the casket placed there where all could look upon the honored dead. The floral decorations were profuse and exquisite consisting of the emblem of "Gates Ajar," cross and stars, shepherd's sickle, pillows, vases, etc. The Gov. Crapo Post G. A. R. attended in a body bringing a handsomely designed symbol, surmounted with the legend *Mustered out.* The Flint Academy of Medicine was also present in a body.

The remains were followed to the cemetery by a very large concourse of people, and there by the side of his departed wife and children laid to rest until the voice of the Omnipotent One shall call to life the silent dust, and make it the indissoluble habitation of his immortal spirit.

SKETCH OF LINUS CONE

BY O. POPPLETON

Linus Cone, the subject of this sketch, was born in the township of Haddam, Connecticut, October 12, 1802. At an early age his father emigrated to Bloomfield, Ontario county, New York. In 1819 young Cone, at the age of seventeen, with a trusty rifle and pack upon his shoulders, containing a scanty wardrobe and an ax, started alone and on foot for Kettle Creek, Canada West, where he arrived, after a long and weary journey, March, 1819, footsore, and nearly exhausted, but not discouraged.

An incident occurred on his journey in Canada worthy of mention here, as showing the courage, mettle, energy and determined purpose of the boy Cone. Stopping at a tavern, with the intention of remaining there over night, he unlashed his pack, which contained his ax; while placing it upon the floor, it came down with a thud, indicating that it contained something more than wearing apparel. The house had a very questionable reputation; the men were uncouth, and villainous looking enough to excite the distrust of a less sensitive nature than young Cone's. They picked up his pack, plainly exhibiting pleasure at its weighty contents, no doubt supposing it contained coin, which in those days constituted the principal circulating medium of the people. They asked to examine his rifle, reaching for it at the same time, which he purposely firmly held in his grasp. He seized his pack, and hurriedly left the house, followed by two men, who made forcible demonstrations to detain him. Deliberately raising his rifle to his face, and confronting them, he bade them to stand where they were, or he would shoot them down, if they moved, and began walking backward until he was out of gunshot, while they remained as commanded. It was near evening, a dense forest was before him, and the next habitation was about twelve miles distant. He determined to go on, arriving there late in the night. In relating this to the writer, he said he kept a sharp lookout the whole of the way, with his trusty rifle ready for firing should he be ambushed and attacked. In the fall of 1821 he came to Michigan, looking for Judge Sprague, of Avon, and others. In 1824 he bought the east half of the southeast quarter of section 29, in town 2 north, of range 11 east, in the township of Troy, then known as Bloomfield. In September, 1825, he returned to Bloomfield, New York; returned to Michigan in April, 1826, coming from Buffalo on the steamboat Henry Clay. The same year he exchanged his first purchase for the east half of the southwest quarter of section 33, in town 3 north, range 11 east, now the township of Avon—at that time called Oakland. He commenced immediately to erect thereon a log house and frame barn, the latter being among the first in that part of the country. Mr. Cone married Mary, the daughter of David and Eunice Crooks, August 12, 1827. This union was blessed by the birth of three sons—Frederick, Riley and Lorenzo. It would be unjust to the subject of this sketch, and to his worthy partner in life, to whom he was greatly indebted for his success, not to give her ample credit in seconding him in every effort to subdue the heavy forests and lay the foundation for a home, which was the pride of his life, and elicited marked commendations from his brother agriculturists. Mrs. Cone still survives her husband, and resides upon the old homestead, venerable in years, a worthy helpmate to her worthy husband, resting upon her well earned reputation of Well done, good and faithful housewife, and companion of one of Michigan's early pioneers.

Mr. Cone lived upon the farm he settled upon for fifty years, until his death, October 17, 1875, and upon which he commenced, ax in hand, to carve out of the dense forest a home, a name, and reputation; to stamp his indelible impress upon his surroundings, the time and people with whom he lived, the agricultural interests of his county and State, its literature and sciences of his time. He was a vigorous writer, commending such theories and practices as met his approval, and condemning those which by observation and experiment did not meet his views and judgment. His was a vigorous pen, turning neither to the right or left, but going direct to the subject matter in hand, sparing nothing which he deemed contrary to the best teachings of nature, of questionable practices or theories, but commending those that had been tried by practical experience. He took pleasure in communicating his farming experiences to his contemporaries in agricultural pursuits, and contributed liberally to the literature in that interest through the "Country Gentleman," "Rural New Yorker," and "Michigan Farmer." Rarely has a life been so unselfishly devoted to a single purpose with more beneficial results than his. He was a self-made man. In youth he had but slight opportunities for an education, but in after life by his personal effort, study, and reading, he acquired a liberal education unaided, which enabled him to compose and write with facility.

In the transactions of the State Agricultural Society for 1852 will be found an interesting article upon the "Jointer Plow" by him, the invention of Aaron Smith, in which he says, " it is not only a valuable implement but one of the greatest in the plow line since the cast iron plow was first invented. It is an indispensable tool to any farmer," etc. Also an article upon "Thorough Drainage," in which he said, "there is nothing pertaining to good farming that is so seriously neglected by western agriculturists as that of thorough underdraining; it makes wet land dry, and dry land moist, making the soil more open, light, and friable. It is to be hoped that ere long the attention will be given to the subject that its merits demand, and that at least those unproductive wet swales, small basins and marshes that now disfigure our otherwise beautiful farms, will be reclaimed, made productive and valuable." In an article published in the transactions for 1853, describing his farm, he says, "the soil is stiff clay loam with gravel intermixed; the best method of improving this soil I have found to consist in deep plowing, thorough pulverization, care being taken to have the soil thoroughly drained by surface or underdrains," etc.

Mr. Cone was competitor for the first premium for the best cultivated farm in the county. I here transcribe the diploma he received:

"Diploma awarded by the State Agricultural Society of Michigan to Linus Cone of Troy, Michigan, for the best cultivated farm in Oakland county, reported at the Society's second annual meeting, 1850. Signed, J. C. Holmes, secretary; James B. Hunt, president."

He was also awarded first premium for the best cultivated farm by the Oakland County Agricultural society in 1852, also again by the State society in 1853. He was a member of several committees of the State and county societies, so long as his health would permit; was president of the Oakland County society in 1852, Vice-president of the State society in 1854, member of the executive committee in 1856, giving tone and character to these societies in their infancy.

He was captain of an independent military company from Oakland county which participated in the Toledo war in 1835, and while posting sentries at night, Captain Ingram, of the Farmington Greys, attempted to play a joke upon him, which resulted in a severe one upon himself. The captain crept slyly upon him in the dark, through the tall vegetation encumbering the banks of the sluggish Maumee at that time, and caught the captain by the leg. In an instant he drew his sword, striking Ingram on the head, giving him a scalp wound, which I have been informed was the only blood spilled in the service of that uneventful war. Yet it is true that a son of Major Stickney called "Two Stickney," partisans of Ohio, while resisting an officer of Monroe county in the service of a lawful civil process of arrest, did severely wound the officer with a dirk knife, and the blood ran freely.

Mr. Cone took but little interest in politics, was independent and liberal in his views, giving support to those whom he deemed the most worthy and competent. In religion he was also independent, an attentive listener, reader and reasoner; very conscientious, exact, scrupulous, moral and honest, "doing unto others as he would have others do unto him."

SKETCH OF WILLIAM POPPLETON

BY O. POPPLETON

William Poppleton, the subject of this sketch, was born in Poultney, Vermont, June 9, 1795. When seventeen years old he removed with his parents to Richmond, Ontario county, New York, where he was united in marriage to Zada Crooks, October 10, 1814, with whom he lived happily for forty-eight years, until her death at Birmingham, Mich., December 28, 1861, and in whom he found a most faithful helpmate, seconding him in all his efforts to acquire a home, competency, position in society, and enduring the inconveniences, privations and burdens incident to the early settlement of this State. In June, 1823, he came to Michigan, with the purpose of purchasing lands for a homestead, and after viewing lands in Farmington, Avon, about Romeo and Troy, he entered the west half of the southeast quarter, and the east half of the southwest quarter of section 20, town 2 north, range 11, east, in the latter township. Two years subsequent to this purchase he again visited Michigan, not being fully satisfied that the lands he had located, as well as those in the county and Territory, were well adapted to the raising of grain, particularly wheat, saying that he had eaten rye and Indian bread in Vermont until he was seventeen years of age, and he would not settle where wheat could not be raised for bread. During his prospecting and investigations while in Michigan, on this second trip, he became convinced, from actual observation, of the adaptability of the soil and climate for grain raising, and with his unerring forecast, predicted the great possibilities of the Territory, which, during his lifetime, he saw verified. Late in the fall of 1825, he took his departure from Richmond, Ontario county, New York, with his wife and two children, with a horse team and covered wagon, bidding relatives and friends a long farewell, and resolutely pushed westward to the frontier for newer and vaster scenes, for larger and grander prospects. Being late in the season, steamboats on Lake Erie having laid up for the season, he took the road through Canada, which was at that time, for the most of the distance, from the time he left

Western New York, an unbroken wilderness, except here and there a settlement. Early in December, 1825, after a toilsome journey of thirty-two days, in a covered emigrant wagon, struggling along over rough and dangerous roads, much of the way half frozen and covered with snow, he arrived safely at his future homestead, and at once, with ax in hand, began unflinchingly to fell the giant forest trees, and to carve out of it a home, a competence, an honorable position and name among the early pioneers, with an intensity of purpose which never for a moment was shaken or wavered. Little by little he added to his first purchase, buying much of it from homesick settlers, until 1845, just twenty years, he had acquired about twelve hundred acres of land in a body, much of which was in a good tillable condition. Upon these lands, which he had reclaimed from a forest, he made such improvements from time to time, until these farms were as fair to look upon, and were in as high a state of cultivation as any in the famous Genesee valley he had so lately left.

In 1856 he moved upon one of the farms adjoining the pleasant village of Birmingham, almost entirely abandoning any personal supervision of his landed estate. Here, in his pleasant village retreat, with his faithful partner in life, he enjoyed a well earned repose until her death, Dec. 28, 1861. After this bereavement,—the greatest sorrow of his life,—he seemed to lose much of the vigor of his former years and constitution, which he had previously enjoyed, and although the fire in his soul was not one whit abated, the earthly tabernacle was slowly but surely going to decay. He always possessed a large share of the confidence of the people of his township, which was evidenced by his frequent election as commissioner of highways, assessor, and supervisor. In all matters affecting the general interests of the people of his township, county, and State, he was ever first and foremost. To him more than to any one individual, is due to the present day, the excellent and superior condition of the public highways of the township. His early interest and example in turnpiking, draining, and graveling them, certainly merits, as it has, the commendations of the present and future generations. His counsel was regarded as of the highest value, if not in the beginning, at the end it was almost invariably acknowledged to be the soundest and best. Although from circumstances his education was limited, yet, by observation, self culture, indomitable energy, and perseverance, he became well informed, and his ripe judgment frequently brought him to the front, of which attention those of far better advantages might well have been proud. In 1842 he was elected a member of the House of representatives from Oakland county; his compeers in that body were Sanford M. Green, Robert McClelland, John S. Barry, and many others of prominence.* His political views were moulded in the Jeffersonian school, and like his principles and purposes in other fields, he never deviated from them. Being the son of a Revolutionary sire, he placed a just estimate upon the priceless value of his country and its institutions. Gauging every measure with those views, he had the satisfaction to see it stand second to no nation on the globe. Mr. and Mrs. Poppleton had seven children, two of whom died in infancy, two in ripe womanhood. Hannah E., who married R. P. Bateman, died in March, 1854; Carrie J., who married Judge George B. Lake, of Omaha, Nebraska, died in February, 1860. The remaining two sons and daughter are yet living. Orrin, the eldest, resides at Birmingham, Oakland county, who is well and favorably known in prominent business circles in the eastern part of the State, of unblemished business, private, and public character, where he has been engaged in a general mercantile business since 1840. He has met with more than ordinary success, fully illustrating the invariable rule, that success is due to a steady, persistent, and untiring pursuit of any calling. Mrs. D. Hoxsey, the only remaining daughter, now resides in Birmingham, since retiring from their farm.

---

*See appendix

The other surviving son, Andrew J., of Omaha, Nebraska, just past the meridian of life, is a man of unchanging purpose, to contemplate whose life and character would be a just source of pride to the most ambitious parent. Having been liberally educated at an institution that has given such men to our country as Seward, Dix, Silas Wright, Washington Hunt, and others. Having adopted law as his pursuit in life, with Gov. O. D. Richardson, he set out, in 1851, upon a pilgrimage westward to the front. They were the first to plant the standard of civilization upon the west bank of the Missouri River at Omaha, an uninviting place indeed at that time to satisfy the high hopes, ambition, and lively imaginations of youth, but he had an unfaltering trust in the ultimate prosperity of his adopted home. The sons, following closely in the footsteps of their sire, have each held responsible and honorable positions as legislators in their respective States, as well as other public trusts. His family discipline was not tyrannical, but severely just; not unparental, but dutiful; not exacting, but keenly alive to the best interests of his children. He tried to cut his jewels, a parent's great work,—with a master hand, sparing no defect,—wasting no lustre. Far seeing, earnest, cautious, persevering, of uncompromising integrity,—such was this landmark and pioneer in the history of Oakland county. Whatever his faults, he possessed innumerable virtues, of such endearing and sterling quality, that they challenged even the admiration of those who differed with him. In his sphere he had planned well, and successfully executed them. Where countless numbers would have failed, he has triumphed. His indomitable will overturned every obstacle possible in the conflict of life, outriding every storm upon its troubled sea. Having gone to rest forever, and passed from the busy stage of human activity, let his faults, if any, be covered with the mantle of charity, that the history of more than an ordinary active career, may stand as an example for the present and future generations.

"Alas! has stern Death the old house once more invaded,
  Although garner'd are the buds, the bloom, and the vine,
Yet the oak which so many long years has shaded
  The hearthstone,—grim monster, must this also be thine?

O, too true! must the charm of the fireside be broken;
  The dear ones who have met there can linger no more;
For the last loving word of affection is spoken,—
  The greeting, the blessing, the parting is o'er.

But away down the future, when time shall have ended,
  And eternity begins its unending rounds,
Shall the vase sadly shattered be cunningly mended,
  And the harp, all unstrung then, regain its sweet sounds."

"C. G. C."

COL. THORNTON BROADHEAD'S LAST LETTER

FURNISHED BY E. S. WILLIAMS

The following are the remarks of the editor of the paper in which this letter was published (which I think was the *Free Press*), which, it seems, should be published with the letter:—

"Many of the friends and acquaintances of the late Colonel Broadhead have expressed a great desire to see his last letter, the one which, it is generally known, he wrote to his wife from the fatal battlefield. To gratify this desire, we have requested, and have been able to obtain, a copy of the letter, and to publish it, with the restriction, however, that the names referred to in it should not be mentioned.

"We cannot but feel that such a letter belongs rather to the nation at large than to relatives or friends, and should be chronicled in the nation's annals, as showing forth the calm heroic soul of one of her best and most devoted sons.

"In the language of a loving and sorrowing brother: What a noble spirit he had. And in the last supreme moment how it towered above mortality. He entered eternity like a true christian hero, not boastful nor reckless, but without shame and without fear. Death came not to him with gloom and darkness, but like a flaming sun, dissipating the mists of human weakness, and showing, in a glorious light, his unconquerable devotion to his country and his friends. Green be the turf upon his grave, and ever blooming the flowers of love and memory that spring fresh from his honored ashes and cluster around his name."

My dearest Wife,—I write to you, mortally wounded, from the battlefield. We are again defeated, and ere this reaches you your children will be fatherless. Before I die let me implore that in some way it may be stated that Gen. ——— has been outwitted, and that ——— is a traitor. Had they done their duty as I did mine, and had led as I led, the dear old flag had waved in triumph. I wrote you yesterday morning. To-day is Sunday, and to-day I sink to the green couch of our final rest. I have fought well, my darling, and I was shot in the endeavor to rally our broken battalions. I could have escaped, but I would not till all hope was gone and I was shot —about the only one of our forces left on the field. Our cause is just, and our generals, not the enemy's have defeated us. In God's good time He will give us victory.

And now goodbye, wife and children. Bring them up, I know you will, in the fear of God and love for the Savior. But for you and the dear ones dependent I should die happy. I know the blow will fall with crushing weight on you. Trust in Him who gave manna in the wilderness.

Doctor Nash is with me. It is now after midnight, and I have spent most of the night in sending messages to you. Two bullets have gone through my chest and directly through the lungs. I suffer little now, but at first the pain was acute. I have won the soldier's name, and am ready to meet now, as I must, the soldier's fate. I hope that from Heaven I may see the glorious old flag wave again over the undivided union I have loved so well.

Farewell, dear wife and babes, and friends. We shall meet again.

Your loving

THORNTON.

UNCLE TOM'S BOND

PRESENTED BY EPHRAIM S. WILLIAMS

As I was well acquainted with the persons mentioned I send the following to the State Pioneer and Historical Society for safe keeping:

Among the assets of Thomas Emmerson, Banker, etc., in Windsor, Vermont, in 1834, was a bond given by Thomas Palmer, of Detroit, dated away back in the days of the oldest by-gones, on which there were many indorsements of payments, as follows:

Received on this bond, January, 1820, in coon skins,	$100.00
Received on this bond, January, 1821, in shingles,	50.00
Received of Thomas Palmer, May, 1831, in fish,	100.00
Received of Thomas Palmer, May, 1832, in lath and boards,	75.00

and so on; but in the next two years there were no payments.

In July, 1834, there swept over Vermont, Windsor especially, a wave of religion, and Thomas Emmerson was one of the "brands snatched from the burning." Immediately he became one of the most earnest of all in that town, and turning his back on the gold and silver of his bank he prayed most earnestly, most zealously, and most sincerely.

It will be remembered that in that same year the cholera broke out in Detroit with absolute malignity, and cut up our people root and branch, and within thirty days decimated the population. On the 16th August, 1834, thirty-seven persons died from this disease, and nearly everybody was horror-struck. That evening it happened that Harry Cole and another by-gone met in Doctor Rice's office, just in the rear of where the first national bank now stands, to inquire what the news was, when Dr. Rice very empathically responded that everybory was dying, and would die; that in 1832 he bled all his patients, and cured them all, "but this year," said he, "every patient that I have bled has died, and all my patients are dead." Everything was very blue, and silence prevailed until Mr. Cole drew from his pocket the following extraordinary letter addressed to him by the now pious and good Thomas Emmerson:

Windsor, Vermont, August 1, 1834.

Henry S. Cole, Esq., Attorney at Law:

My dear Hal.,—I am rejoiced to say to you that the Lord hath been among us here in Windsor; that a day of Pentecost is here, and that I have been snatched as a brand from the burning. "I am now laying up all my treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through and steal." Oh, Hal! how I wish you and our old friend, Tom Palmer, might see the error of your ways. By the by, Mr. Palmer has not paid his interest on that bond for nearly two years. Now I learn that the "pestilence is stalking at noonday" among you, and we know not how soon you may go. Mr. Palmer ought to settle that bond. You and he too ought to prepare for death, and he ought certainly to settle that bond at once. Oh, Hal, if God would only open your eyes, and Mr. Palmer, surely he will pay the interest on that bond now. I pray nightly and daily for you and Mr. Palmer, and trust he will pay the interest on this bond. That the Lord will guard and keep you, dear Hal, and my friend Palmer, is our constant prayer; but do make him pay the interest on the bond. I will take furs, shingles, lumber, apples, fish, or anything he has. God bless and preserve you both, but please do not let Mr. Palmer forget to pay the interest on that bond.

Your devoted friend,

(*Signed*) Thomas Emmerson

With twenty-five cents postage this unique letter came, after a week's voyage, to Detroit. Harry Cole and Thomas Palmer both survived the cholera, and Emmerson's bond was all paid and cancelled long before Mr. Palmer died.

LETTER FROM COL. S. E. BEACH, ON THE BATTLE OF CHERUBUSCO, AUGUST 20, 1847

(APPENDIX TO "OUTLINE OF MARCH," PAGE 112, VOL. 7.)

Pontiac, July 10, 1887.

My Dear Merrifield, *Lansing, Mich.:*

In the progress of time you and I naturally recall the more prominent events of our youth, you of the assault at Pueblo, Mexico, where you led the Forlorn Hope, I of the terrible fire, and overwhelming odds at Cherubusco, where the Michigan companies, the right Company A, commanded by me, and the centre with the colors "E," commanded by Captain Toll, gloriously sustained the honor of our State. I must state to you, my old comrade, that Captain Toll after he had twice gone back amid the fire, to get permission to charge, which was refused, himself ordered it, and reformed the regiment, which then, at that critical time, charged the masses of the enemy successfully, and none too soon, for the New York and South Carolina volunteers, on our left, had just "gone in," in their part of the field. I hope justice will be done this opportune and gallant act, and the men of the companies "A" and "E," of the 15th regiment of U. S. Infantry from our State, have this justice accorded them, which has been delayed. The battle of Cherubusco was the deciding battle of the war with Mexico, the Infantry did the work there, while all had their share, but on this arm all relied. Of the nearly two hundred men of these companies, which we helped to form, my dear friend and comrade, how many will answer roll call? Perhaps twenty! Eight dollars a month and found, for all this empire of the Pacific, and yet how these twenty survivors are remembered.

Ever sincerely your comrade,

S. E. Beach.

A NEW VERSION OF AN OLD SONG

BY C. CLOSE

Should old acquaintance be forgot,
And never brought to mind?
Should old acquaintance be forgot,
And days of Old Lang Syne?

Chorus:
And days of Old Lang Syne, dear friends,
By time's unceasing flow;
Deep graven on our heart of hearts
Are scenes of long ago.

Should thoughts of scenes in those old days,
  When we were young and gay,
Be blotted out from heart and mind
  And ever pass away?

CHORUS:
    And ever pass away, dear friends, etc.

No; 'tis not best to let them go,
  But better bid them stay;
And help to give these faltering steps
  More firmness on the way.

CHORUS:
  More firmness on the way dear friends, etc.

Yes, to recount those old time scenes,
  Gives pleasure once again;
And gives us life and strength and hope,
  Almost as good as then.

CHORUS:
    Almost as good as then, dear friends, etc.

Time flies so fast we hardly know
  Our work is almost done;
But withered hands and whitened locks
  Tell surely it will come.

CHORUS:
    Aye, surely it will come, dear friends, etc.

And when it comes, as sure it will,
  To each and every one,
Let's hope that we may feel at last
  Our work was all well done.

CHORUS:
    And was it not well done, dear friends? etc.

THE ODREN ANNIVERSARY

MR. AND MRS. ALEXANDER ODREN, OF CALIFORNIA, BRANCH COUNTY, MICH.

NOTE.—The following interesting account has been furnished since the annual meeting for publication in this volume of Pioneer Collections. Mr. Odren is a member of this Society, having united with it in 1877. In volume II. of Pioneer Collections, page 186, we find that he was born in Detroit, Michigan, October 17, 1791, making him, at the time of the anniversary, nearly ninety-five years of age. Mention of him is also made on page 191 of the same volume.

Wednesday, August 11, was one of the many eventful ones in the history of the worthy pioneers, Mr. and Mrs. Alexander Odren of California, Branch County—a double anniversary—Mrs. Odren's ninety-second birthday and the seventy-second of their marriage. Their daughters, Mrs. Harriet Waterhouse, of Kinderhook, and Mrs. Susan Swarthout, of Reading, had long entertained the idea of a family reunion at the old homestead, now in charge of another daughter, Mrs. Libbie Kirkland and her husband, who kindly minister to the wants of the aged pair. As early as 8 o'clock the guests began to arrive, including, besides the family relatives, many of the oldest settlers of this and several surrounding townships, and at noon upwards of two hundred people had met to renew old friendships, and talk over the incidents of olden time, many of which rehearsed to the children of to-day seem stranger than fiction. Mr. and Mrs. Odren are the parents of thirteen children, nine of them still living and seven of whom were present on this occasion. Joseph Odren, wife and son, of Knoxville, Neb., were here in honor of the important event. He related some stirring events in which he was an active participant during the war of the rebellion. He was one of the company who captured Jeff Davis, and one of the guards who kept watch over him on the trip from Macon, Georgia, to Fortress Monroe. David Odren was killed in the battle of the Wilderness; he rests in an unknown grave upon southern soil. One of his (David's) sons had charge of a wagon train, and was with Gen. Custer at the time of the massacre. In the spring of 1836, Mr. Odren sold ten acres of land in Detroit, where the City Hall now stands, for $400, and brought his family to this place, settling upon Section 1. He relates that in the following spring he walked from this place to Lima, Ind., a distance of thirty-two miles, for one bushel of potatoes which he carried on his back in returning. Mr. Odren, when a young man, was employed as a baker at Malden, near Detroit. One evening on returning from a social party he was seized by a British press-gang and taken on board of a British man-of-war. He was kept in the enemy's service fourteen months, and was then captured by Commodore Perry at the battle of Lake Erie. During this engagement he was second in command of a 24-pound gun, managed by nine men when the battle begun, at its close Mr. Odren and one other man were the only survivors. After helping rig the disabled fleet at Put-in-Bay, he was taken to Chillicothe, O., with other prisoners. He was allowed to leave camp for a few hours one day when he sought out Capt. Dryson who knew him when a boy. Together they went to the quarters of Gen. McCarty*—the officer in command of the post. After having made an affidavit as to his nationality he was released. He at once enlisted in the Second Rifle Regiment and, until the close of the war, worked with a right good will to repay the British for forcing him to fight against his own people. When the late war broke out his patriotism was again fully tested. Although seventy years of age he offered his services in defense of his country's flag—saying that he could handle a gun as well as any man.

---

*See appendix

It was a pleasant sight to notice the company that gathered around the tables arranged beneath the widespreading trees surrounding the old home, and they were loaded with every variety and an abundance of good things. While they were discussing the merits of the same your reporter was busy with pencil and paper and noted the following items of interest. A small table had been prepared expressly for the aged parents. Near this all the children and relatives were seated. Upon this small table we noted some very antiquated specimens of table ware. A friend called our attention in particular to a queer little coffee-pot, more than one hundred years old; also a china tea-pot and cream pitcher, and a bread tray which had been in their possession ever since their first house-keeping days. The number of guests, not including relatives, was one hundred and fifty-eight. Their total ages were five thousand five hundred and seven years—average ages thirty-five years. Of this number, twenty-six were past sixty, and two were over eighty—Mrs. Parrish, of Kinderhook, aged eighty-five, and Uncle Major Purdy, of California, aged eighty-nine; the youngest at table, two years. The united ages of Mr. and Mrs. Odren is one hundred and eighty-eight years; combined ages of the children, four hundred and ninety-four years. They have thirty-six grandchildren, and their united ages reach the sum of eight hundred and forty-two years. Of the great grandchildren, thirty-two in number, two hundred and thirty-nine years; one great great grandchild, aged one year. The united ages of the Odren family is one thousand, seven hundred and sixty-four years. Mr. Odren offered for our inspection some Detroit papers bearing dates of August 31, 1809, and July, 1817. They were curiosities. After the dinner came music, recitations and speech-making. Col. F. F. Fowler, of Reading, noted the important changes that had been wrought in the vicinity since he settled in Hillsdale county fifty-two years ago, and, in behalf of the company, presented the old people with several substantial tokens of regard. Each received a very nice easy chair, slippers, and other gifts that should minister to their enjoyment in the future. Mr. Samuel Moffitt responded for the old people, and concluded his remarks with the wish that they might live to celebrate their diamond wedding, three years hence. Short addresses followed by Elias Parker, Lee FitzSimmons, of Reading, and Benjamin Holcomb, of Fremont, Ind. At this point impromptu speeches seemed to be in order. Alexander Purdy mounted a buggy seat and informed the audience that "the first town meeting held in California and Algansee was at his father's house." Aunt Phebe Bickford added, "And I've got the ballot box yet." The recitations by Mrs. Maggie Dufur, Miss Allie Southwick, Myrta Gibson and Flossy Murray were very fine. Did time and space permit, we would gladly give a more extended notice, but, in fancy, we long ago saw the editorial fingers reaching for the scissors, yet beg space for the following song, composed for the occasion by Mrs. E. B. Simpkins, and sung with pleasing effect by Earl and Wesley Dufur, Mrs. Simpkins and Miss Southwick, to the tune, "Gathering up the Shells from the Sea-shore:"

Long ago, when the tints of life's morning
  Had reached their most roseate hue,
And in smiles were their plain paths adorning,
  God united the fates of these two.
Hand in hand they have journeyed together,
  Sometimes where the thorns pierced their feet,
Though their hands may unclasp soon, and sever,
  In God's numberless throng may they meet.

Chorus—Numberless as the sands of the sea-shore,
    Numberless as the sands of the shore.
    Oh, what a sight 'twill be when the ransomed ones they see,
    As numberless as the sands of the sea shore.

There have often been burdens to carry,
  But each stooped to gather a share,
Ease and comfort were oft prone to tarry,
  But joys, sweet, were blended with care.
On their faces old age writes his story,
  And their eyes must here dimmed ever be;
But when they are opened in glory,
  What a wonderful sight they shall see.—*Chorus.*

By long years of toil and privation,
  They won for themselves this neat home.
In response to the kind invitation
  Of children, these friends here have come.
When they dwell in that beautiful mansion
  That God has prepared for his true,
Through Him who has died, us to ransom,
  Dear friends, may we enter there, too.—*Chorus.*

This narrative would be incomplete did we fail to add that Mr. and Mrs. Odren expressed the utmost confidence in Christ as their only refuge and hope. For five years Mrs. Odren has been entirely blind. In faithful trust, they are waiting the summons to the final home. The old pioneers are rapidly passing away. Let us tenderly cherish and perpetuate their memory, and cheer the remaining days of those who, by years of patient toil and sacrifice, have given us homes of comfort, that there may be no regrets for duties unperformed when they have passed beyond the river.

"They taught our youthful feet to climb
  Upward life's rugged steep;
Then let us lead them gently down
  To where the weary sleep."

MICHIGAN SEMI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION AS A STATE

ACTION OF THE MICHIGAN PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Office of the Pioneer Society,
Lansing, May 18, 1886.

Sir,—At a joint session of the Executive Committee and Committee of Historians of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, a resolution was adopted providing for a representation of said society at the Semi-centennial celebration of the admission of the State into the union, to be held at Lansing, June 15, 1886, by a committee, of which the Hon. Henry Fralick, President of the society, is chairman.

You are hereby notified that you were appointed as one of such committee, and it is hoped that you will attend the celebration, and aid in representing the society.

Very respectfully,
Harriet A. Tenney,
Recording secretary.

LIST OF DELEGATES

Hon. Henry Fralick, *President.*
Mrs. Harriet A. Tenney, *Recording secretary.*
George H. Greene, *Corresponding secretary.*
Ephriam Longyear, *Treasurer.*

Executive Committee:
Prof. John C. Holmes.
Judge Albert Miller.
Hon. Francis A. Dewey.

Committee of Historians:

Col. M. Shoemaker, *Chairman.*
Dr. O. C. Comstock.
M. H. Goodrich, Esq.
Hon. Talcott E. Wing.
Hon. Witter J. Baxter.

Delegates:

Hon. John J. Adams, Tecumseh.
Dr. I. P. Alger, Coldwater.
Hon. W. L. Bancroft, Port Huron.
Hon. O. M. Barnes, Lansing.
Hon. S. D. Bingham, Lansing.
Hon. E. Lakin Brown, Schoolcraft.
Rev. R. C. Crawford, Grand Rapids.
Hon. Thomas M. Cooley, Ann Arbor.
Hon. James V. Campbell, Detroit.
Hon. William H. Cross, Centerville.
Hon. John H. Forster, Williamston.
Hon. Alpheus Felch, Ann Arbor.
Hon. Thomas G. Gilbert, Grand Rapids.
Hon. Charles T. Gorham, Marshall.
Hon. E. O. Grosvenor, Jonesville.
Hon. Peter Loomis, Jackson.
Hon. O. Poppleton, Birmingham.
Hon. H. H. Riley, Constantine.
Hon. C. D. Randall, Coldwater.
Hon. S. L. Smith, Lansing.
Hon. C. B. Stebbins, Lansing.
Hon. Francis R. Stebbins, Adrian.
Mrs. E. M. Sheldon Stewart, Michigan Center.
Hon. Smith Tooker, Lansing.
Mr. A. D. P. Van Buren, Galesburg.
Hon. C. I. Walker, Detroit.
Hon. William L. Webber, East Saginaw.
Hon. E. S. Williams, Flint.
Hon. Edwin Willits, Agricultural College, Lansing.
Hon. Peter White, Marquette.

THE SEMI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION

At a joint meeting of the executive committee and the committee of historians of the Michigan State Pioneer and Historical Society, held at Lansing, June 8, 1886, a resolution was adopted providing for a representation of the society at the Semi-Centennial celebration of the admission of Michigan into the union, to be held at Lansing, June 15, 1886, and delegates were named from the membership of the society from all portions of the State. At the same meeting the Hon. Witter J. Baxter, of Jonesville, was requested to speak in behalf of such representation on the Semi-Centennial occasion, if an opportunity was given by the committee of arrangements.

This action was taken by the Pioneer Society at too late a day for any place to be assigned them on the programme for the day, as that had been already prepared and printed, and the entire arrangements for the occasion completed, with a programme so full as to allow the introduction of no new exercise.

The committee of arrangements for the Semi-Centennial, however, on the evening of the 14th, concluded to give the representatives of the State Pioneer and Historical Society from three to five minutes, immediately after the address of welcome by the Governor of the State, at the front of the Capitol. At the close of the Governor's address, Mr. Baxter was introduced by the Governor, as representing the Pioneer and Historical Society of Michigan, who, speaking without notes, made, in substance, the following address:

ADDRESS OF HON. WITTER J. BAXTER

Mr. President and Fellow Citizens of our beloved State of Michigan:

At a gathering like this to celebrate the semi-centennial of our State, it was thought not inappropriate by the Pioneer and Historical Society to appear by representatives selected from their membership from all sections of the commonwealth, and the very pleasant duty has been devolved upon me of saying a few words on their behalf.

Surrounded as I am here by these representatives so chosen, we need no introduction as pioneers. Our whitened heads, our halting steps, our bended forms, all proclaim in language more forcible than words, that if not in

Michigan, at least somewhere on God's green earth, we have already passed nearly the entire period allowed to man's terrestial existence.

Some of us time has touched with gentle hands, leaving us, after our three score years and ten or more of earnest work in our several stations, with much of vigor, strength, and joyousness, glad participants with you in these commemorative exercises.

Nearly if not quite all of our representative members present with you to-day have passed in Michigan more years than have gone by since it became a State. And of the scenes and incidents attending the rise, progress and development, from small beginnings, to present growth and greatness of our Michigan of to-day, have been eye-witnesses, and in securing the grand results, busy workers and participants.

We trust it will not be considered obtrusive, or out of place, to call to your attention some of the valuable work already done by our Pioneer and Historical Society, though but the beginning of work projected, and which we hope to carry forward to full accomplishment.

While at our annual social gatherings we clasp hands with friends and associates in early struggles and successes, and revive recollections of days long past, collect and preserve, for future reference and use, the words and the works of the fathers, into whose rich inheritance their children, and their children's children, have entered—we do much more.

We make careful examination of ancient relics, papers, and records, found among family treasures, carefully stowed away, or among the archives of historical associations, private, State, and national. Many of these we find covered with the dust of many years and undergoing defacement and decay, and which, but for the timely action of our society, would soon have been lost beyond recovery.

In the seven volumes of our collections already published will be found much of great interest and value to students of history, and while there will doubtless be found much of personal narrative, much of merely local interest, and much that might possibly have been omitted without serious loss, still we are fully persuaded that these volumes and others soon to follow will prove to the antiquary and historian a mine of inestimable wealth.

Fifty years constitutes for the individual a large part of his allotted period; not so with states and nations.

For them the hand upon the dial of time moves slowly, and when upon the revolving wheel of years its bell shall have tolled out fifty it is still with the state or nation early morning.

With states or nations, however, no less than with individuals, the early years, the springtime of existence, are of prime importance.

In them are found the germs of which the future is but the development and outgrowth.

It is the province of our society to discover the germs from which our institutions have developed, to lift the veil from the long hidden past, and by the view thus presented to give strength and encouragement for the present and with the blessing of Almighty God on human efforts full assurance for the future of our State.

OTTAWA COUNTY

PAPERS READ AT THE SEMI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION OF ITS SETTLEMENT, HELD AT GRAND HAVEN, DEC. 2, 1884

HISTORICAL DISCOURSE

BY REV. CHRISTIAN VAN DER VEEN, OF GRAND HAVEN

TEXT.—"For who hath despised the day of small things."—Zechariah, iv, 10.

It seems to me I could find no more appropriate text with which to open a historical discourse on the settlement of this county than the passage of Scripture, which may literally be said to have been the starting point of this county's history. It is just fifty years ago that the first permanent settlers of this region landed on the shore of this river, within gunshot from this spot. It was the very same day of the week, the Lord's Day. It occurred to the head of the party, fresh from missionary labors among the Indians, first of all to gather his little band together in a rude log hut which the traders had built to give thanks to God for his safe guidance, and to inspire them all with courage and hope for the future by speaking to them strengthening words. Those words were based on this word of the Lord, which ages ago came to Zerubabel, who also was called to begin again the Lord's work from the foundation, and under discouraging circumstances.

I cannot say with just what words Mr. Ferry on that occasion cheered his companions in their lonely surroundings. No sketch of that address was preserved. But those of us who had the privilege of knowing the man can easily imagine. Like so many of the pioneers of that period he had the prophetic insight which faith in hard work and perseverance gives. And I have no doubt that it was principally an appeal to labor and endure, with the assurance that the object would not fail. Nor lacked they, I think, the assertion of the truth that all work, to be in any sense permanent or valuable, must be consecrated to Jesus Christ; words, without doubt, altogether in the spirit of that great pioneer apostle, who in his day went out to conquer the Gentile wilderness for the truth of Christ, "forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forth unto those things which are before."

I would not have you think when I name Mr. Ferry as the father of this county, the pioneer in the development of this lake shore region, that there was anything phenomenal or exceptional about him. He was but a sample of the men who went forth to conquer the wild parts of this continent for a better manhood than was indigenous here. Such men there still are, going forth into the places from which cowardly, weak men shrink and flee, because there is nothing there; men who have a keener vision, and who are, therefore, able to perceive the things which will be as well as the things which are; men who know the value of the three graces, faith, hope and love, and their applicability to the things of this life as well as to that which is to come. I would not wrong the men of my own generation. We have our heroes, too, in many fields. But the enginery of civilization is now so widespread, its course so undisputed, its touch so immediate and potent; in other words, the aids for the subduing of the world are now so many and so easily applicable that it sometimes seems to me as though there were more of heroism in times when more was required of the simple endeavor of the individual man, and one looks back with admiration upon the men, our fathers, who broke their way on foot and worked out their destiny with their brawny arms.

A look back over fifty years takes us into this period of individual endeavor. In our day the railroad breaks the path for the pioneer settler more often than the pioneer blazes the way for the railroad. The men plodded across these vast stretches of country on foot, considering themselves fortunate if a yoke of patient oxen slowly dragged their few possessions over ungraded hills and through unbridged streams. In most cases they had to begin literally at the beginning. Their wants needed to be few and their hopes large. Their labors were hard and never-ending, and their reward was principally in promises. You see they needed courage and faith.

I would first of all, therefore in this discourse, pay the tribute of our respect to the generation of men who have left us the legacy of our present enjoyments. They obtained it for us by no fictitious means, but by their honest toil, their faithfulness to the demands of their day, their patience, bravery, diligence, and self-denial. Their's was indeed a day of small actualities, but of large possibilities, which they made into large actualities by their genuine lives. The remembrance of it should be an inspiration to us.

It is principally this view of the meaning of this semi-centennial celebration, which gave me courage to accept the invitation to be your speaker on this occasion. A county is not often of sufficient importance in this great land, to have a history of its own. Few of them have what can properly be called a history. Towns and cities can have a distinct life and character, and so can states, in which a certain type of ideas, represented by a distinct class of persons, has obtained predominate influence. But it is difficult to predicate this of a geographical division like a county, set apart chiefly for the purpose of more conveniently applying the powers of government. I look upon it in this case, simply as a section of country, in which the history of settlement and development furnishes us certain lessons, which this and subsequent generations may profitably consider and hold in remembrance.

Aside from this there is little in the history of this county worth recounting in a place and on a day like this. Few eventful things have taken place. There was no room for them. Compared with some parts of our country and even of our State, our progress has been slow. Necessarily so. The natural resources here were confined to those of the soil the standing forest and a few fish in the adjacent waters. Every foot of arable ground had to be won from its deep-rooted occupants. Much of its soil is but moderately productive. Surrounding rivals, both in commence and manufactures, have diverted a large part of the produced wealth from our smaller towns. And it may as well be confessed also that our local jealousies have in a measure rather retarded than advanced the common prosperity. Into all these things I have no desire to enter, nor does it seem necessary, for others will have an opportunity to take up all these details of our common experience, and I think the field which I have laid out for myself is sufficiently large to occupy our attention upon this occasion.

In the history of the settlement of that section, which is now included within the bounds of Ottawa county, it is necessary to mention three different movements, and three different times. To take them in their order of occurrence, the words, Grand Haven, Port Sheldon, and Holland, will recall them to those who are already familiar with the history in the main. The dates are 1834, 1836, 1847.

Grand Haven stands properly for the development of the country along the Grand River, and will stand in this discourse for the northern half of the county. It was the gateway by which the early pioneers, who located along the banks of this river, entered the country. Most of them served some kind of an apprenticeship at the mouth of the river, and carried the spirit of enterprise which ruled these inland.

To enter a little into details by townships. Spring Lake was the enterprise of the Whites, brothers-in-law of Mr. Ferry. Crockery had as its founders, the Hathaways, who were employed by the Grand Haven Lumber Company, in 1835. Dr. Eastman, one of the pioneers of Polkton, and the father of Eastmanville, was one of the early companions of Mr. Ferry at Grand Haven, and his lifelong friend. So on the other side of the river, Robinson was first entered by the members of the Robinson family, who were in close connection from the beginning, with the parties at the mouth. The remainder of the up-country was only afterward settled, and independently of the first movement. The rich lands in Talmadge, Chester, and Wright, attracted immigrants of various nationalities, who sought land for purely agricultural purposes. The towns of the south, Allendale, Blendon, Georgetown, and the larger part of Robinson, were worked for many years only for their valuable product of timber, and drew settlers but slowly.

It is not at all necessary to give a rose-colored view of the undertaking at this place, or to make the men who were engaged in it pose in a constantly heroic attitude. No doubt their main motive was earthly, even as their occupations were intensely secular. I need not hesitate to speak freely about this. Mr. Ferry, coming from Mackinac, where for twelve years he had labored to introduce Christianity and civilization among the Indians, and had exhausted his temporal resources, came to Grand Haven to better his worldly interests. He virtually exchanged his sphere of life as a minister of the gospel for that of a dealer in lands and lumber and merchandise, with a view of materially profiting thereby. The same motive brought his associates from the eastern States. The same motive led the devout Robert Stuart to furnish a large amount of the capital which was the basis of this enterprise. This is an ordinary motive, and by no means distinctively lofty, but it is entirely legitimate. The methods employed were the ordinary methods by which men seek, first, the supply of daily natural wants; secondly, wealth. The history of its success was the ordinary one of small compensation at first, for great outlay of thought and muscle. Only slowly did any of them gain a competency. The coöperation was also subject to the ordinary dangers and evils which befall associated enterprises. Differences, jealousies, complaints, partings—the grievances and trials of ordinary mortals befell them. Many of these men have passed away. Some still remain among us. They all averaged about as the rest of us. Some died rich and some died poor. Some live in affluence and some in care. One came to honor, and another to neglect. And, looking at it from this standpoint, one is tempted to say no more than this: Pass on, and leave this past buried; for wherever you see mortals struggling, whether on a large scale or a small, whether handicapped by what their predecessors bequeathed, or starting out anew, you will find them the same, and "what hath a man of all the labor which he performeth under the sun."

But they were not entirely secular. The spirit of God was with these men. With some, more, with some, less; but with all to so great a degree that His unmistakable stamp has been upon the growth of enterprise all along this river. And especially here, where the tone was given to the communal life of the region, too great value can hardly be placed on the presence of the spirit of God in secular life, by which it is redeemed from "the world." The object of these men was lawful, such as God could approve, who ordained men to earn their bread by the sweat of their brow, to subdue the earth, and lay it under tribute for man's comfort. Their methods were honest. What they got they obtained by hard and persistent work, by diligence and frugality. Their reverses and losses, so far as I can learn, they shared with one another honorably. Their social intercourse was sincere and true and elevating. We know this from personal experience, coming here nearly a quarter of a century ago, when the original tone still prevailed. Strong and lasting friendships were made and cherished among them. Sobriety and chastity and public morality from the beginning gave character to our population and a good name to this community. The education of the children was carefully attended to from the earliest start, and in the wilderness, away from books and institutions of learning, means were found to train a growing generation, which, in after times, needed not to fear to have its attainments in knowledge compared with a generation growing up under vastly larger advantages, or even with the men of their own generation, who came here trained under the influences of the old settled communities of the eastern States.

The highest claims of men never lacked for attention. From that first Sabbath when Mr. Ferry preached to the congregation, which might almost be said to have consisted of his household, there have been few Sabbaths in this place when the truth of God was not publicly spoken to those who would hear. Although for twenty years there was no regular pastor here, Mr. Ferry always found time to be a preacher of the gospel as well as a man of business. The influence of the Word and of true religion never ceased to exert itself through this section, and to give tone to its public life. These things have always been so. No one of us, whether he came here early or late, can remember when these things began to be; we found them so. Without unlawful glorying we claim for our people, throughout these parts, as high an appreciation for those things which are of good report, as high a standard of public morality in things secular, and as intelligent an interest in things spiritual, as for the people of any part of the State, and I take great pleasure in saying that those dwelling among us, who still serve as the surviving links to bind us to the pioneers of fifty years ago, are still among our leaders in all things honest and true and right.

I think we may say that as a consequence of this spirit, in which the work here was in the main begun and prosecuted, the results of that work along Grand River have also been in the main prosperous and permanent. You will not require me to go into an invoice of this prosperity. Upon the whole, a kind Providence has abundantly rewarded honest endeavor, and nowhere, I dare say, is business safer than right here, commercial integrity more general, business failures fewer, debts more honestly paid. As in the life of a man, so in the life of communities, it is in these things that the original character and the early training come into view. Now it is the inwardness of every life which contains its true history. Not in statistics, but in characteristics does an historian find material for a lifelike sketch.

Port Sheldon comes next, in 1836. It was a fiasco. Why then waste time upon it? It serves as a contrast to the real work of this section, it is part of the history, and failures are quite as instructive as successes. The men who were engaged in that enterprise had, apparently, much in their favor, and if secular elements were supreme in this development of the county it should have been the one of the three enterprises which must have succeeded. Those men were young, ardent, full of the faith of youth. They were above want. To no one of them was a living an object. They came to do great things, to make a reputation for commercial enterprise, to wrest wealth rapidly from nature's grasp. They controlled abundant means and could order all the appliances, which the science and the skill of the day furnished, to aid them. So to a large extent they could relieve themselves from the drudgery which is the common lot of pioneers, and they could import the comforts and enjoyments of civilized life to what extent they pleased. They did so. When on the Grand River men lived in log cabins, they erected comfortable houses made ready to order in Philadelphia. When those thanked God for a steady supply of salt-pork and flour, these entertained their visitors with game suppers. When here men were glad, at the end of busy days, to stretch their tired limbs on anything that resembled a couch, there they were fresh enough at the close of their day to spend the night in dance and revelry, and in the company of imported beauties. Down to our day came the faded garlands, and the empty champagne bottles of their departed glory. While here men spent the day in prosaic hard work, there the main occupation was plotting more ground into imaginary city lots, drawing the courses of newly projected lines of communication with the great world which was just looming into view at such points as Detroit and Chicago.

Yet they were not altogether idle. They built the best mill in the West at that time. They made a harbor, and furnished their own lighthouse to guide navigators. They made roads at large cost, the only roads of the time in all this region. They pushed a railroad bed into the forest for some distance, after they had erected a railroad and telegraph office in their city. At one time they outstripped Grand Haven in population and number of buildings. Suddenly the whole thing came to an end and left behind it only the monuments of folly which many of us have seen. Why so complete a failure? A usual and convenient answer has been that at Pigeon Creek it was impracticable to have a harbor, an essential in an enterprise of that kind. The inadequacy of the location is indeed patent. But there was money enough wasted there in pleasure to have built an artificial way for commerce. That is a shallow reason. The real reasons are much more significant. The very fact that those men could stumble into so unlikely a site as they selected proves a lack of the necessary qualifications for the work which they undertook, and of whose character they had no conception. The real reason for their failure in this: There was no moral element in this undertaking. And that is the very first requisite in the development of the world and the founding of communities.

Brute force can strip the earth of its wealth, but cannot develop it. What is it then but robbery? The development of the world is not a question merely of money and muscle, of steam and push, but of intelligence and conscience, of moral aims and the blessing of God. Too little do our capitalists generally make of this. Having no higher aim than to use the power, which they happen to have, for the enriching of themselves in the quickest way, they leave behind them a waste which must be recovered by the suffering and self-denial of their poorer brethren who come after them. They call themselves benefactors, because incidentally and necessarily, they must share a part of their gains with others; but when they are dead, and men, who have little forethought, discover what the real and net result was of enterprise carried on in the spirit of mammon and not in the spirit of the gospel, the same judgment will be passed on them which we pass to-day on the men of Port Sheldon. Nay, a heavier. For those men had the benefit of finally bearing the loss which was the reward of their folly, while these have the danger of gain, for which they must sometime answer before the august judgment seat of Him who loves righteousness and who avenges the poor. So in the founding of communities, money is the element of least importance. You can press no life-blood from it for a people. You can easily introduce it as a poisoning element. It will sooner kill than make alive. I suppose to some of you this sounds quite ridiculous, but it is nevertheless true. On the corner stone of all communal life, whether on larger or smaller scale, there is engraved by the Divine finger that first and most pregnant warning: "The nation and kingdom that shall not serve Thee shall perish." I should fail to do justice to the small history which I am recounting if I did not call your attention to the fulfilment of that word of God in the very midst of this region. The epitaph to be inscribed on Port Sheldon is: Died through lack of the Divine element.

Holland comes last, in 1847. It stands for the development of the southern part of the county, then an unbroken wilderness. With the exception of a family or two in the township of Jamestown and the families in charge at the Indian settlements, the nearest white men were on the banks of the Grand and Kalamazoo rivers when Dr. Van Raalte first forced his way along Indian trails to Black Lake. The history of this enterprise again stands by itself. Its agents came from across the ocean, a people of a strange tongue, with their own ideas, customs, methods. They brought with them little ready material wealth; little that could add to the intellectual character of the region; little that could help in improving the methods of pioneering as they found them here. In outward things they found that there was much more to adopt than to change, to receive than to give. The previous knowledge of this fact had indeed brought them here, for they too came, like the native pioneers from the Eastern States, attracted by the possibilities of which they had received word. They wished to exchange the disadvantages of the crowded old world for the promises of this young empire. But it would be seriously wronging the men of that time and movement if I should represent them as controlled in their ideas and desires and plans by such merely worldly considerations. It is simple justice to say, both of the leaders and people as a whole, that the moral element was strong in them; and if it did not absolutely control it largely predominated in their communal life. I am always sorry to admit that after nearly forty years the moral life of the whole region has not been more powerfully affected by the undoubted good which was in that movement. We may be able to see some reasons for that and draw therefrom a needed lesson. But let no one conclude thence that this moral element was really weak through insincerity. It had its weaknesses, but it was in the main genuine. We can, therefore, truly say that in a general way it has also exerted its powers and has given character to that part of our county. I feel that I am not presumptuous when I speak with some assurance on this matter. My personal recollections go back to the earliest period of this movement. The impressions of my childhood are vivid, and, as you know, I have been during my whole active life in a position to have these impressions refreshed. My life business has been to study this people, their capabilities, their calling, their weaknesses, their dangers, their prospects, their aims, their duty. It is known that in many of my conclusions I have arrived at different ideas than the majority of my companions. I do not for that reason distrust my convictions. In these later years I have often wondered that their history should not have been better, and again I have often been surprised that it was so good. Like other peoples they have their peculiarities. Some of these are of great value. The genuine Dutchman loves truth, liberty, independence. He is honest, and expects to give, is willing to give, a just equivalent for what he gets. Over against this, you understand, he is not obtrusively generous. He expects to get an equivalent for what he gives. Of course this has its shady side and its dangers, but the main result after all is justice. He comes of a race which was the shuttlecock of tyrants, a nationalty handed about among the empires like a crown jewel. They were often owned, but never wore a collar and chain, neither of Roman nor French nor German nor Spanish make. They either served freely or broke the attempted bond to pieces. God had cast their lot in apparently the worst portion of His wide earth. They had to fight for a living with the mighty sea, where no human power could help them. So they became self-reliant and learned to trust in God. The weak side of all this is stubbornness, a disagreeable self-sufficiency, a practical dogmatism which prevents them from working with other people, contracted views of the world and of life, predisposing them to do things on a small scale and in a slow way, clannishness and jealousy.

As a nation they have often suffered severely through these worse traits, and large parts of their history are sad reading. All these things have in a measure affected the history of that part of our country. But when this has been said, it still remains to be noted that the progress there has from the beginning been an evidence of the sterling qualities which this people contributed to our common history. The material wealth might doubtless have been greater, if advantage had been taken of all opportunities, but what there is was honestly gotten, and represents real and not fictitious value. Their moral influence might have been stronger if they had been more united, less exclusive; if they had had a clearer idea of the opportunities which God gave them to leaven their surroundings; if they had more generally valued their singular educational privileges for their children and used them; if they had more earnestly studied the obstacles to a wider influence, and set to work to remove them, especially the barrier of a foreign tongue, still too largely used in the higher relations of life, where men are able to influence one another more powerfully. With all this, however, their power to give to our communal life a moral and spiritual tone is to be gratefully acknowledged. As a whole, they do not in any respect compare unfavorably with any other part of the population of this county, and in some respects they are so thoroughly the superior of their neighbors, that they inevitably and profitably overcome them. They stand that highest test to be applied to such cases, which I have already indicated. They develop and do not strip; they enrich and do not impoverish. They have the faculty of making two blades of grass grow where one grew before. That is a moral quality. The Lord spake a word which has its pertinency on this field also, as it had its supreme meaning in His mission: "The thief cometh not but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I am come that they might have life and have it more abundantly." They are to-day turning our poorest sections into fruitful fields, and converting the continued swamp lands of this shore into permanent, prosperous homes. They do it by the qualities by which God endowed man to be the lord of the earth and to subdue it,—by diligence, and carefulness, and long suffering and hope, and trust, and contentment. It is the work of peace, which is itself the work of righteousness, and that has been the history of that section from its beginning. Those men in the woods began in the day of small things, but they had a sense of God, of a mission, of an object, for which they could pray as well as labor, and so they did. There as here, the foundations of the associated life were laid in the fear of God. Prayer sanctified their undertakings. The word of God directed their aims and shed light upon their plans and methods. The institutions of God's service, His day, and house, and word refreshed them in their toils, and kept them from becoming mere drudges, slaves to the unceasing demands which the hardships of pioneer life in the woods constantly enforced.

Into their detailed history I cannot now go. It is of no account. There was nothing grand or especially striking about it. It was chiefly a matter of hard work and patient waiting. Foot by foot, rod by rod the forest had to be taken, little by little the improvements had to be made. The discouragements, especially during the first years, were many and hard. Greatly were the original numbers diminished by disease and desertion, while hard times and failure of crops drove many to the neighboring cities to earn the bread which they despaired of getting in the woods. But perseverance conquered all obstacles, and that part of our county is as prosperous as any part of the State. Besides the northern tier of townships in Allegan county, this element holds almost exclusively the towns of Holland, Zeeland, Olive, and large parts of Blendon, Allendale, and Jamestown. After a little it will have these also in entire occupancy.

The peculiarity of the history of this county is in the presence and activity of these two elements, the native and the foreign. I judge that as to numbers they are pretty evenly balanced, counting those born of foreign parents as belonging with them. The tendency is to the numerical increase of the Dutch element. Once rooted they are harder to move than the American, in whom, for several generations, has been developed the spirit of restlessness. But being further removed from the national life they are not in a condition to influence the communal life so strongly. What will be the final character of the communal life is, under the circumstances, rather an interesting problem. In former times Grand river had evidently two outlets, one near here, the other at Black Lake. The tendency to unity fixed its permanent course where it now runs, its more natural bed. Quietly and gradually God raised up a barrier to cut off one channel, and the stream obeyed His injunction. So in this complex communal life of our country, the need of simplicity is to be acknowledged, the indications of Providence are to be observed, the barriers which God is erecting and has erected are to be respected, and we must all do what we can to make it one. I think it is matter of regret that this blending process goes on so slowly. The differences between two nationalities cannot indeed be abolished by a resolution to do so, or by the attempt to ignore them; and the prejudices arising from these differences can not perhaps at once be overcome. But each one of us should do what we can to diminish them. I know there is a tendency among men to disintegrate, to break up into parties and coteries, but it is not a good tendency. We should desire larger relations rather than smaller, and be more ready to combine than to divide. In the solving of the questions, which proceed from the large variety of races, creeds, tendencies, traditions in our national life, it seems to me of the first importance that we all as Americans should take special effort to cultivate largeness of spirit, that we may subdue all these things and make them subservient to the one national destiny, of which we as a people need a clear conception, and not merely a blind instinct. I do not fear that this destiny will be endangered, for Divine ideas, wherever embodied, are strong and stand a good deal of fretting; but it may be hampered, delayed, perhaps even modified; and I, for one, do not think that that would be desirable. I have at times heard a good deal as to the duty of retaining what desirable gifts the nationalities bring with them to these shores. My observation has taught me that, as a general thing, people who emigrate can profitably leave behind them their peculiarities, if they know enough to take up those which they find in a new country. The less baggage a traveler carries the better he is off. The sooner an emigrant can learn to make himself at home in his adopted fatherland the better it is for him in his new relations. I do not know what specially valuable idea Europe has sent here during the century. It has modified life here in various respects, but I do not think for the better. I for one wish that we could restore the America of half a century ago, excepting only the anomalous bondage which then oppressed the African race. I confess I like the America, as I learned about it in my youth, with its predominant political ideas, with its social views and customs, with its simplicity and reverence for sacred things. and its equality as faithfully applied in the town and country, better than the America of to-day. I hope we shall have it back some day, the true American spirit, in which lived the genius of the Revolution, which was the same in the East and in the West, in the middle States and in the South.

So also the more heartily the community to which the stranger comes can adopt him the easier and better it is. I detest with all my heart the clannishness which makes the word "countryman" a rallying cry in politics or in religion, or an advertisement in business, or an exclusive bond in social life. But equally do I despise the spirit which would divide our citizenship into classes, and would apply other tests to social life than those which common consent has established in free nations, the test of intelligence and virtue rather than the test of money and vulgar display.

It seems to me that if a retrospect over the last half century, during so large a part of which these two nationalities have here worked side by side, in the same spirit, with the same aims and with, in the main, the same results, has any lesson for us it is this: we should bring them constantly nearer together, so that our history as a country may be in fact as it is in theory the history of one people. Certainly these peoples can do each other good, but only as brethren, not as strangers.

At a celebration like this, thanks are due to Almighty God for all the special and general blessings, which, as a portion of the people, we have enjoyed with all the people. We are part of a great and greatly favored State, of a greater and greatly distinguished nation. During this period Michigan has grown from a population of eighty-seven thousand to nearly two millions, and the material blessings of Providence have more than kept pace with this increase. Social, educational, and religious privileges have been assured to us in the greatest abundance. Peace and quiet have been constant, and great calamities have been few. During that time the nation has been greatly enlarged and strengthened, its liberties have been confirmed, and its unity rendered secure, I trust, for all time. Let us have grace to use our increased and growing opportunities for the glory of God and the good of the people.

A word for the departed. Many of the founders have gone—Ferry, White, Eastman, Hathaway, Albee, and others of this valley; Van Raalte, Van Der Meulen, and others in the southern part. Their graves are with us to this day. On the field of their struggles they fell, faithful to their trust. Let their memories be green among us and their virtues be cherished.

Finally, what shall the future be? Under God, what, encouraged and instructed by our past history, we shall make of it. The opportunities may not seem large, but our history teaches us, that they who despise not the day of small things may accomplish valuable and lasting work. We have reached a period when men must calculate more closely, and study more assiduously, the field which God assigns them. Let us be earnest in that, and the plan of God will always reveal itself to us. Let us learn from the fathers to be diligent, and believing, and hopeful, and to work under God, and we too will attain a worthy end—even the everlasting service, with the result of our lives, through Christ Jesus, of God, even the Father, of whom, and through whom, and to whom are all things; to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

EARLY SETTLEMENT OF OTTAWA COUNTY

BY Z. G. WINSOR

On the twentieth day of April, 1833, a party of sixty-three men, women and children (the writer of this, then eighteen years old, being one of the number), left the State of New York for the Grand River Valley, in the then Territory of Michigan, reaching what is now the village of Ionia on the 23d day of May, 1833. They were surrounded by Indians, friendly though they were, separated from all intercourse with white settlers by a distance from thirty to forty miles on the south, forty to sixty miles on the east and west, and an indefinite distance on the north. Notwithstanding all the discomforts which the party necessarily endured, not one of them, to the knowledge of the writer, desired to return to their former homes. Of this party, only four are now living. They believed in the possibilities of the country, and were reasonably happy and contented in the hope that prosperity and comfort awaited them in the near future.

This was the nucleus and starting point of the settlement of the Grand River Valley, from the mouth of the river up to within a few miles of Jackson. The Grand River country, represented by the counties of Ionia, Kent and Ottawa, at the time of which I write, was a wilderness, without white inhabitants, save only an Indian mission at Grand Rapids, with Mr. Slater, wife, and one female teacher; an Indian trading post, controlled by Mr. Louis Campau, at Grand Rapids, and Rix Robinson's trading posts at the mouth of the Thornapple river and Grand Haven, which were peopled only by Robinson and Campau, with the help of Canadian voyageurs and half-breed Indians. Such were the conditions and surroundings of that first settlement. Were they not pioneers, and deserving of the thanks of those that followed them? They prepared the way for the present population of not less than two hundred thousand in the three counties, and a cultivated acreage of not less than a million. There were no railroads, no telegraphs, no gas, few roads, and postal service hardly thought of. What changes since the first dawn of that 23d day of May, 1833. Do we appreciate the changes? To the full extent, only the first settlers can. Of the county of Ottawa, the semi-centennial of the first settlement of which we meet this day to celebrate, I may be permitted to say a few words, by right of priority, doubtless being the only person living who lived at Grand Haven as early as the year 1833.

Fifty-one years ago, about the first of September, the writer, a boy of eighteen years, came to Grand Haven, to take charge of Mr. Robinson's trading post, as his clerk, without any knowledge of the French or Indian language. I had as helpers, or aids, four voyageurs and one half-breed girl, as my interpreter and housekeeper, who had been educated at a mission school at Mackinaw.

Grand Haven was then the headquarters of the twenty trading posts established by the American Fur Company in 1827, with Mr. Robinson as their agent and sole manager. These trading posts, commencing at Kalamazoo on the south, extended to Little Traverse on the north. And this being the headquarters had been made quite respectable in buildings. We had a store, warehouse with pole dock, and a dwelling house with four rooms, occupied by Mr. Robinson and his wife (a half-breed woman) and the clerk; and in Mr. R.'s absence, which was the larger portion of the time, by the clerk and housekeeper, whoever she might be. It happened in this case to be a very pretty girl, whom Mrs. Robinson was extremely anxious to marry to the writer, either to live together while agreeable, according to Indian fashion, or permanently, as did Mr. R. and herself, who had lived in the Indian style of wedlock for more than ten years before they were married by a Catholic priest. Great advantages accrued to the traders who had Indian wives, the Indians then regarding them as friends and relatives. The Indians, as a rule, were honorable and honest, illustrative of which I will instance one scene I witnessed here in the winter of 1833-4. The Indians had been consulted as to their willingness to cede the lands north of Grand river. The chiefs and head men of the different bands assembled at Grand Haven in our store for discussion, the main point of which was as to how much of their money was to be set apart to pay their debts to the traders (I think they had previously decided to sell). In this discussion it was claimed that one of these traders was not honest. While claiming $20,000 they did not believe his just claim would exceed half that sum; but that the claim of Mr. Robinson, of $48,000, was right and just, and they would consent to include it in their estimate. To this one of their number demurred, saying that Mr. Robinson had cheated him in his account. Mr. R. produced his books and explained his account to this man without effect; on his reiterating the charge Mr. R. closed his book, and with it knocked the Indian down and threshed him severely. Then appealing to the assembled Indians for their approval or condemnation, they with one accord said *quiuck, quiuck,* "right, right," our *nichkeway,* "brother-in-law," is not a cheat, and has served him right. I introduce this to show the respect and faith the Indians had in Mr. Robinson, who was truly and in every respect one of Nature's noblemen. The great influence he had with the Indians, exerted always in the interests of peace between the Indians and the whites, went far to establish good feeling and fair dealing between them at that early day.

One peculiarity of the Indians was their manner of giving names to persons, places and objects. To illustrate this I will give the Indian names of some of their friends, which names are given from some condition, circumstances or surroundings. To Mr. Robinson they gave the name of *Wa-va-chase,* or martin, a fine-furred, valuable animal; to Uncle Louis Campau, *Wagu-she,* or fox, because, as the Indians say, he was foxy in his dealings with them in the early days. They called the late Col. Amos Roberts, of Grand Rapids, *Paga-nug-a-zische,* or "big belly," being fat and fleshy. To the writer, at his first appearance among them as trader, after furnishing them with a gallon of *was-ka-boga-mic,* a sort of shrub with possibly a little whisky (we had to pay for our names in those days), they gave the name of *Che-mo-ke-maness,* or "young Englishman," because, doubtless, of my young and green appearance.* Within a year from that time they changed my name to *No-ba-quon,* a "vessel" or "ship," because of a transaction they supposed me connected with in a cabin of a small vessel then lying at our pole dock. This change of name cost me two gallons of the fluid above alluded to.

---

*See appendix

The French voyageurs, or Derwin men, as they were called, were a necessity to the times and business of that early period. Their employment was to carry packs of goods and traps, and occasionally a ten gallon keg of whisky, for purposes of trade among the Indians. The weight of their packs would frequently exceed one hundred and fifty pounds, and they carried them within a circuit of thirty to forty miles. They were a hardy and indomitable class, capable of more endurance than a horse. Rough and uncouth though they were the early trainings of their mothers and the Catholic church had left an impress that neither time, place nor circumstance could efface.

In the summer of 1834 immigration to Grand Rapids commenced, and Mr. Robinson, thinking the circumstances were favorable for the establishment of a general store at that place, persuaded me to erect a building, then gave me a letter of introduction to John Jacob Astor, in New York, with an order for goods, and I went to that city. The project was not successful, and on my return Mr. Robinson raised my salary and I continued in his service during 1834-35. Up to the fall of 1834 Grand Haven contained only Indians and traders. From twenty rods back of our store there was continuous forests south to the St. Joseph River and east to Grandville, without a white inhabitant.

In November, 1834, the Rev. William M. Ferry and his family came from Mackinaw, accompanied by Pierre C. Duverney and his family, to settle in Grand Haven. This opened a new era for the place, and of the subsequent settlement of the city and county you will hear from others better than from me.

Fifty years is an era and space of time from youth to old age. Have the few of us who are left from that early period in this county much to show in property, in experience, in influence that is or has been of real benefit to those who followed us here? I fear not, and as one of that very few I must acknowledge my shortcomings in much that might have been to myself, to the county, and my fellows, had I appreciated as now, my duties, privileges, and opportunities to myself as well as others, and now on the verge of seventy years can I reasonably hope to retrieve the mistakes of the past? I fear not, and must be judged of by my past acts.

REV. W. M. FERRY, RIX ROBINSON, AND OTHER EARLY SETTLERS

BY REV. H. JOHNSON

Standing in the presence of the fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of Grand Haven, it is fitting that we pay tribute to its founders and early pioneers. Their story is worth the telling. They felled our forests; they gave birth to our commerce; and they sowed the seeds of religion and learning. Hence it is well that we meet to-day to pay tribute to the living and the dead. But the story of Grand Haven and its surroundings cannot be told without the names of Robinson and Winsor, Ferry and White, Duverney and Hathaway, Eastman and Pennoyer, Albee and Griffiin, Gilbert and Hopkins, and others. But let us begin our tribute with the name of Rev. William Montague Ferry. Not because he was the first who stood upon the banks of our river, or walked through this then unbroken forest, for upon his arrival he found Messrs. Robinson and Winsor, but because he was the first who planted here his family. Mr. Ferry was born at Granby, Mass., Sept. 8, 1796. Nothing in particular can be said of Granby except that it was a New England town. But that meant something in those days, for the reason that New England was more highly favored in the matter of schools and churches than any other section of our country. The pilgrims had planted in its soil the civilization that they had brought from over the sea, and so New England was the garden of the new continent in the refinements of cultivated life.

But while Mr. Ferry was thus highly favored in the matter of his birth place, he was poor in the wealth of this world. His father was an industrious and worthy farmer, but limited in his means. And so the subject of our sketch was early taught the lesson of self reliance. He did his share of the work upon the farm while at home. But being frail in body, it was evident that he was not equal to the occupation of a farmer. He had received good training in the home, and at the age of fifteen he became an earnest Christian. He now looks a new destiny in the face; he stands in the light of a new morning. But what path in life shall he travel. It was his ambition to enter the christian ministry. But whence the funds to carry him through his preparatory studies? That was a serious question in those days. His father could not furnish them out of his limited means. So it was evident that to secure an education he must depend upon the resources of his own hand and brain.

Thence with a father's blessings and a mother's prayers, he goes out into the great world to fight life's battles. But he carried with him industry, and an earnest purpose to do something, and to be something, and with such a purpose one must go, sooner or later, from the bottom to the top.

Nine times in ten poverty is a blessing to a young man. Throw him overboard, and if there is anything in him he will reach the shore. Our American history is rich in examples. From Franklin to Greeley, from Greeley to Webster, from Webster to Lincoln, from Lincoln to Garfield, no young man of merit has gone to the bottom. Success is sure where there is a will to do and to be. This was certainly true in the case of Mr. Ferry. He goes from his New England home to central New York to realize by hard work the hope of entering college. He becomes a clerk in his brother's store, and remains at his post for three years, but during those three years his mind was not idle, for he studied diligently and well. He was then competent to teach, and becomes a tutor in a female seminary. He saves his earnings, and at the expiration of a year he goes to Plainfield, Mass., to prepare for college. But finally the preparatory work is done, and at the age of twenty-one he enters the sophomore class of Union College, Schenectady, New York.

The dream of his youth is now partly realized. He is a college student, and begins to climb the heights of learning. But while in college he must do double work; for upon his entrance he has in ready cash but a few cents. He finds work during the spare hours, and thus meets the necessary expense. At the age of twenty-four he graduates and goes at once to the study of theology in the Seminary at New Brunswick, N. J. There he remains two years, and after an additional course of study with the Rev. Dr. Gardiner Spring, he is licensed and ordained by the Presbytery of New York. He is now ready for work in his chosen calling, and he offers his services to the United Foreign Missionary Society. He is accepted; but while things are being arranged, he is sent to explore among the Indian tribes of the North. This exploration results in the establishment of the Mackinaw mission. Thus a new gate of missionary work was opened, and everything seemed to indicate that this was to be his field of labor. He spends one year at Mackinaw, and then returns to Ashfield, Mass., where he was married to Miss Amanda White. With Mrs. Ferry he returns to Mackinaw, and again takes up his work, and there for twelve years he faithfully labored, Mrs. Ferry sharing his toils and burdens, his joys and sorrows. She was a woman worthy of the toiling missionary, and much of his success at Mackinaw was attributed to her consecrated life. Theirs was a christian home in the wilderness, a city upon a hill, a fountain in the desert. But it is not for human pen to write out upon paper the fruits of those twelve years of hard work. They educated hundreds of Indian children in their schools and were a blessing to all who came within the circle of their influence. In a word, they built a house of gold and precious stones, which will stand the test of the great day. But after twelve years of hard work, Mr. Ferry's health was broken, and the fact stares him in the face that he must surrender his work. However, the purpose for which he had gone to Mackinaw had largely been realized. But while recruiting his health, he must at the same time provide for his family. He would have been received with open arms by his family in New England; but that, to him, would have seemed a surrender of his spirit of self-reliance. But a door is opened. Through a business arrangement with the late Robert Stuart, of Detroit, he came to Grand Haven with family and friends. He sails into Grand river, November 2, 1834. His arrival was upon Sunday morning, and, remembering whose servant he was, he leads the pilgrim band in divine worship. The text from which he preached was appropriate and suggestive: "For who hath despised the days of small things?" This was a revelation of the man, as well as indicative of the humble beginning of Grand Haven. He began wisely. He planned and built in the name of God, and thus gave our city a religious character. That surely was his noblest work. Cities and states assume largely the character of their founders, be it what it may. Yes, he was a man of faith. He had faith in God and faith in the future. And so, when he preached his first sermon, he saw, by faith, the city that was to be. He seemed to realize that in the near future the ships of commerce would crowd our harbor, and that the forest would give place to beautiful homes; so he planted, and so he built. But what his imagination pictured he largely saw realized. Where once was an unbroken forest, he saw rise a beautiful city. But his business life also begins upon his arrival in Grand Haven.

The energy that he displayed in receiving an education was manifested in the new path that he was to travel. But while he made tents he still preached the gospel. He was a missionary upon new ground. While he gave his thoughts largely to business he at the same time sowed the seed of the kingdom. Thence he established the First Presbyterian Church of this city, and was its pastor for nearly twenty years, freely contributing his services, and from the time of his resignation till his death he commanded the love and respect of its pastors. Their success called forth his congratulations, and he gave them his hand and his heart. And some of those early pastors indicate that he was a man of large independence in the interpretation of the Scriptures. It was his delight to read the Bible in its original tongues, and thus extract the living truth. Thus drinking at the original fountains he became mighty in the Scriptures.

But in his business life, too, he was diligent, and was rewarded with large success. He became wealthy and one of the leading business men of a great and growing State. But it was not by accident—he put intelligence and industry into his work, and large wealth was the result. But his munificent gifts reveal the fact that he did not value money for its own sake, he planted some of it where it would do good when he was dead and gone, he did liberally for the school and the church, so through the instrumentality of money he is still encouraging education, and is preaching the gospel not only in Michigan but also in distant parts of the globe, hence he made permanent contributions to the world. To build thus is to build wisely and well. But finally life's work was done; the battle is fought; the course is finished, and the last hour finds him ready. To die meant with him to go home, and so at last he was like the caged eagle that struggled for the freedom of the air and the skies. But the city that he founded was his home from November 2, 1834, till his death December 30, 1867; here he settled; here he lived; here he died; and to-day we pay this humble tribute to his memory.

But we pass to the man Rix Robinson, whose name is identified with the settlement of Ottawa county. In fact, he was its first pioneer. And whoever in the future shall tell the story of Ottawa county, or write its history in detail, will give a large chapter to Mr. Robinson. He was born in the State of New York, and during his early years he enjoyed the very best educational advantages. From the public schools he entered an academy, where he graduated after having completed the full course. While in school he was diligent and gave large promise for the future. Upon completing his course in the academy he began the study of law and continued the study until he was nearly ready to enter upon the practice. But some incident of a personal nature caused him to abandon the study of law. But they who know tell us that had he entered upon the practice of the law he would have secured a brilliant success at the bar of his native State. Besides having exceptional intellectual gifts he had industry, without which the most gifted genius will fail of success. Hence who knows that his name would not have been associated with the great men of the Empire State had he continued in his chosen profession? But if the bar of the State of New

York lost an able and brilliant advocate the State of Michigan gained a useful and progressive pioneer.

In 1814 he left his home near Auburn, N. Y., to work out his career in the great west. The very fact that he came to the Territory of Michigan when it was a forest unbroken reveals to us that he was a man of daring, energy and hope. Upon leaving home his father gave him $1,000 with which to begin his business life. With that as his capital he begins his journey for Detroit. But the distance from Buffalo to Detroit, which can now be traveled in a few hours, took him twenty-six days. Having reached Detroit he becomes a sutler to the United States troops encamped there. But in following the soldiers from post to post he sees a great deal of frontier life. Having followed the business of a sutler for two years with little profit to himself he sells his interest and goes to St. Louis. There he invests his small capital in tobacco. The trip and the purchase resulted in his establishing several trading posts. Then began his successful trade with the Indians. He established two trading posts in the State of Illinois, one at the Calumet near the head of Lake Michigan, in 1817, and one on the Illinois River, twenty-five miles from its mouth, in 1819; one in Milwaukee, Wis., in 1820; one at the mouth of Grand River, Ottawa county, Michigan, in 1821, and one during the same year at the mouth of the Thornapple, in Kent county.

Thus when our city was a forest Mr. Robinson's trading vessels made their way into our river. Their arrival and departure was the only thing to break the monotony of frontier life along the valley from 1821 to 1834. He may have realized when sailing up and down our river that in the near future his trading post would give way to a city, and that the solitary forests along the valley would be converted into rich and valuable farms. But be this as it may he was a conspicuous figure in that early day. By his fair dealing he commanded the respect and confidence of the Indians, and it is attributable largely to his influence over them that they retired so gracefully upon the coming of the white man. He spoke their language fluently and so was of great service when the treaties were made with the Indians of the Northwest. And so while he carried on the legitimate business of a trader he was preparing the way for the permanent settlements of the white man. The service that he rendered was important, and those who have since built their homes along our valley owe him a large debt. By his fair dealing he made possible their peaceful residence. Thus he was an important factor in preparing the way for civilization. Could we have had such men on our frontier we should have reached long ago the solution of the Indian problem. Hence from his entrance into our State in 1814 till his death he was closely identified with its growth and development. He was a gentleman in the truest sense, upright in his life and known as a man of integrity and honor. As evidence of his character and standing it should also be recorded that he was elected a representative in congress, and served his State with fidelity and honor. He died at Ada, Kent county, in the year 1875, respected and honored by a great and growing State.

But in going over the catalogue of pioneers we must not pass by the name of Mr. Z. G. Winsor. His name naturally comes after that of Mr. Robinson, whom he served so faithfully and well. Mr. Winsor was born in Skaneateles, N. Y., in 1814, the very year that Mr. Robinson came to Michigan. In 1833 he came west with his father, Darius Winsor, and family, and was one of the first settlers in Ionia and Grand Rapids. In the same year he came to Grand Haven, entering into the service of Mr. Robinson, so he was on the ground to welcome Mr. Ferry and his family, in the following year, to their new home upon the banks of Grand River. With the exception of an absence of three years in California, he has resided in western Michigan, hence he is the oldest pioneer in our midst, and has seen the forest along our valley give place to the refinements of cultivated life. He has not been a silent observer, but during all these years has contributed to the growth and improvement of the Grand River valley. For years he has been one of our leading business men, and has commanded the respect and confidence of a large and growing community. The energy of his early manhood he largely retains, and his hands are still busy. He has been the builder of his own fortune, and his industry has been rewarded. Mr. Winsor is a gentleman of whom we all think well, and may he long remain among us.

But we must also mention briefly the names of the others. Pierre C. Duvernay was an old pioneer. He came to Grand Haven in 1834 with Mr. Ferry. To know him was to respect him. He was identified with the early history of the Presbyterian Church of this city, and was its first ruling elder. He was a native of Canada and died in this city in 1862.

Another name that was associated with Mr. Ferry was Mr. Nathan H. White. He was born in Ashfield, Mass., in 1811. He came to Grand Haven, in company with Mr. Ferry, in September, 1834. He was one of the early business men of this section, and his name was more or less associated with that of Mr. Ferry.

But another name worthy of honorable mention is that of Clark B. Albee. He was an enterprising citizen, and contributed largely to the growth of our city. He was born in Vermont, July 10, 1811, settled in Grand Haven in 1836, and died here January 30, 1874.

We also mention among our early pioneers the name of our respected citizen, ex-Sheriff Henry Griffin. He came to this country in 1837, and has filled responsible places of trust. He is widely and favorably known, and may he stay long among us.

Neither must we overlook the name of Dr. Timothy Eastman, who came to Grand Haven in 1835. He was a man of ability, and was prominently identified with the growth of our country. His memory is cherished by a large circle of friends.

Mr. Henry Pennoyer will also be remembered by our early settlers. He is still a resident of our county, and commands the respect of all who know him.

William Hathaway, too, deserves mention. He came in 1836, and was highly respected while among us. He filled the office of judge twelve years, honorably and well.

But our early settlers will also remember with pleasure the name of Captain Henry Miller. He was a useful and industrious citizen. When sailing upon our lake he was always at the service of those in distress. He was brave and true, and could be relied upon in hours of peril upon the sea. And his sons, in this regard, have been true to his reputation. He died at Spring Lake, May 11, 1876.

But in reciting the names of our pioneers, we must give room in our paper for the names of Messrs. John W. Hopkins and George Parks. They naturally come together, because of their friendship and long association. They were widely known in western Michigan, and contributed energy and industry to our growing State. Mr. Hopkins was born near Providence, Rhode Island, in 1814. He spent his early years in New England, where he enjoyed good educational advantages. In 1836 he caught the western spirit and came to Grand Haven. When he reached our State, he found it a wilderness; but the frontier life had for him great attractions. He entered heartily into the work of converting the forest into homes for the coming civilization. He endured without a murmur the trials and hardships of pioneer life, and always was inclined to look upon the bright rather than upon the dark side of things. For many years he was a leading business man of this section, and his industry was rewarded. He was a man of strong individuality, and original in his thought. He had a large mind and big heart. He was warm in his impulses, and to see him was to know him. The needy never went from his presence hungry, and we remember him as a man who wished all well.

Mr. George Parks, a warm friend of Mr. Hopkins, was born in Cayuga county, New York, October 17, 1817. In 1823 he came with his parents to Michigan, so that nearly his entire life was identified with this State. He was a man of large intelligence, and industrious and enterprising. He came to Grand Haven in 1844 when it was but a village. From the time of his arrival till the day of his death he was a large factor in the growth of Grand Haven. He contributed much toward making it what it is. He was honored by his fellow citizens, and filled faithfully places of trust. He was county treasurer for several terms in succession, and was the first mayor of our city. He died in this city, December, 1880.

But our early settlers who are present will remember with pleasure Hon. Thomas D. Gilbert. He was prominently identified with the early history of our city. Mr. Gilbert was born at Greenfield, Mass., December 13, 1815. He made good use of the schools of his native town, and so was well prepared to begin business life. In early manhood he caught the western spirit and so left the refinements of New England to work out his career amid the trials and excitements of frontier life. He came to Grand Haven in June, 1835. Upon his arrival he entered into the service of Robinson and White. Thus beginning as a clerk he pushed his way to a proud place among the business men of Michigan. After serving Robinson and White for some time he became interested in lumber. Into the new line of business he put intelligence and hard work, and he was rewarded with large success. He contributed to the growth and prosperity of our city and county, and for years was a leading citizen. Mr. Gilbert is a good representative of the early pioneers of western Michigan. They were men of character, and they represented the best elements of Eastern life. In 1856 he removed to Grand Rapids. He then went to Europe and remained two years. Thus by travel in the Old World he not only enlarged his knowledge but enjoyed a well earned rest. Since his return from Europe Grand Rapids has been his place of residence, and he owns one of the most beautiful homes of that growing city. Mr. Gilbert is a man of integrity and worth, and has an honorable reputation throughout the State. Long may he enjoy the fruits of his well-earned means.

Messrs. Thomas W. White and Luke A. White also deserve honorable mention. Along with others that have been noticed they contributed their share in building of Grand Haven and in the development of Ottawa county. They were born in Ashfield, Mass., and came to our city in 1835. There they endured the privations of pioneer life without a murmur. They are remembered with pleasure by our old settlers. To Mr. Thomas W. White we owe much for the taste that he displayed in planting of shade trees on the streets of our city. Many of the noble maples that adorn our city were planted by his hand.

But last, though not least, is the honored name of Miss Mary A. White. The moral and intellectual history of our city could not be written without giving a large chapter to her name. Her light has never been under a bushel, but she has been a city upon a hill, a brilliant star in our mental and religious sky. For years she has been identified with all that is good and true and pure in the progress of this community. We owe her a large debt, and our tribute does not equal her deserts. She laid the first stone in our educational temple, and so her name will go down as the founder of our public schools. She is also the founder of our Sunday schools, and was for years a Sunday school superintendent, so she has the honor of starting these two streams of influence upon their flow. Miss White was born at Ashfield, Mass., Sept. 18, 1813. She enjoyed the best advantages of the schools of New England, and, for a time, was a pupil of the celebrated Mary Lyon. She taught with great acceptance in leading seminaries of learning in Ohio and Illinois. For years she has been the head of the home of her nephew, Ex-Senator T. W. Ferry. May she long be spared as a blessing to the community.

SEMI-CENTENNIAL POEM

BY REV. L. M. SMITH

In ancient times, when the world was young
Ere the press was born or books had a tongue,
A mural tablet registered deeds
Of daring and valor; and history's meeds
Were recorded on bricks in Nineveh's walls,
Or Babylon's tower, or Pharaoh's halls,
That in ages to come the unwritten mystery
Champollion and Layard might turn into history.
But in later days these exploits were sung
By the world's great poets, who the changes rung
On the glorious battles of gods and men
On the mountain top or in hidden glen.
So Homer sung of the Trojan field,
And Hesiod wrote of Hercules' shield,
So Virgil's harp was attuned to sing
The voyage of Æneas, the Latium king.
But Homer's a myth, so the critics say,
And the ten years' siege is a poet's play;
So Æneas' voyage is a fiction branded,
And no one knows when the Trojan landed,
If he landed at all on Italy's coast,
For no record was kept, and the record is lost!

But now we are not circumscribed at all
By the songs of the poets either great or small;
The world is wiser, we are pleased to say—
Wiser than in that earlier day.
We need not the pyramid's hieroglyphs now,
To the cuniform Persian we need not to bow,
We fancy we know almost all that is needful,
And record it all right if posterity's heedful;
Plain prose all our history now will unfold
And show all its dross as well as its gold.
Now if this we admit then surely to-day
Poetasters or poets have little to say,
For we've listened on this anniversary time
To a record not easily traversed by rhyme.
Figures tally as little with measure poetic
As rhetorical flowers with signs geometric;
The muses with fancy's poetical chimes
Are cramped if in strict mathematical lines.
Then a truce to the facts, to statistics and figures—
Our course is at large, with none of their rigors;
We roam on the wings of a fanciful flight,
We go back to the time of our primeval night,
When the dark forest mantled the land in its gloom,
Nor dreamed of the ax that was coming so soon,
When the red man alone roamed the temple of nature
Half clad and hungry and swarthy in feature.

A wild deer one morning came down to the shore
And saw what he never had seen there before.
He had come to the water his thirst to assuage,
As his herd and himself had done for an age;
But a glance o'er the lake showed a monster in sight,
It skimmed o'er the waters—it's wings were of white.
Not a bird! Not a beast! What is it? he thought,
It moves—it approaches—what has it brought?
His timid heart fluttered with fear as he stood,
And he cocked his white tail as he fled to the wood,
For a beautiful Sabbath had dawned on the lake
And a white-winged vessel the harbor would make.
Nor light-house nor pier could the mariner see,
Nor buoy to show where the channel should be;
So he slackened his sail and cautiously sped,
While a man at the fore feels the way with his lead,
And the watchful old captain in pea-jacket clad
Orders "Starboard!" or "Port!" as occasion is had;
But the bar overpast they enter the river,
Safe from the chill winds that caused them to shiver.
Slowly the breeze drives the vessel up stream,
While all eyes are strained to behold the wild scene.
No wharf has been built whereon they can land,
So they tie to a post driven deep in the sand.

But who are these pilgrims who venture their lives
On the storm-beaten lake under November skies?
Whence come they? Why seek they a wilderness home?
What fallacy urges them hither to roam?
As their ancestors landed on Plymouth's wild shore,
To found there a home two centuries before,
So these in the strength of their Father and God
Come to hew down the forest and turn up the sod;
Come to open the land that the beautiful light
May stream down from heaven and scatter the night;
Come to bring in the Bible, the church and the school,
And lay a foundation where freedom shall rule.
Who are these pilgrims? First, a man in his prime,

Who has battled with hardships in Mackinaw's clime,
With a will strong for toil, unflinching and bold—
God's preacher of truth, like Noah of old.
Next, a woman, his counterpart, helper and wife,
Whose gentleness helped to round out his life,
Who shared all his plans and his labors begun—
A Mary and Martha commingled in one.
Four children the haps of their voyaging share,
And here for a dark forest home must prepare,
While a fifth, far away in a New England home,
Is content with her studies and needs not to roam.
These sail not alone, but, true to the end,
Comes "faithful Achates," Duvernay, their friend;
A most humble Christian he, and his wife,
Meek-eyed and lowly, the joy of his life.
Their household—five children—have with them come
To share in the fate of their newly found home.
But now 'tis the Sabbath, the day God had blessed,
When he ceased from creating and ordained a rest;
Education and Scripture had firmly instilled
In the minds of these pilgrims the day to be filled
With rest for the body and rest for the soul,
With worship and penitent prayer, and control
Of our wandering hearts; with religious emotion,
And the mind fixed on Heaven in earnest devotion;
With merciful deeds for the welfare of others
Who, because they're God's creatures, are sisters and brothers.
Untouched are their goods and continue on board—
'Tis the day of all days, the day of the Lord.

Calm, and assured of His presence who fills
Eternity's scenes, and controls all our ills
They land, and with reverent step they now trace
The footpath that leads to an unwonted place,
A log cabin rude, a fur trader's station,
Where the peltry is stored from the Indian nation,
Where the wild red man comes from roaming the woods
His furs to exchange for *Che-mo-ko-mon's* goods.
Here Robinson reigns and the savage controls
By his purity, firmness and greatness of soul,
With Winsor, then young, his friend and his clerk,
Hale and vigorous he, a man of all work.
Royally now he his guests entertains
With the best that the wilderness yields to his pains.

Then, warmed and refreshed, by instinct they turn
To the God on whose altar their heart-fires burn.
Before Him they bow with reverent love,
And unite in their songs to the Savior above.
Their leader* discourses with eloquent words
Of the high hopes and joys which religion affords
To the rich and the great in the carpeted hall,
And the poor and the emigrant when the leaves fall,
In the trials and struggles of pioneer life,
Or on luxury's couch with enjoyments rife.
A "day of small things,"† but who shall despise
A day from which great things shall surely arise?
Not we who look back from our favored position
And rejoice in the fruit of our forefather's mission,
For He, the great Giver who ever restrains
All the powers of the world, their losses and gains,
Hold this in reserve—what he blesses shall grow,

---

*Rev. Wm. M. Ferry.

†"Who shall despise the day of small things?"—Zech. iv, 10. Mr. Ferry's text on this occasion.

Though the world in its wisdom or wrath shall say "No."
The small seed they planted shall downward take root,
And upward shall flourish, a vigorous shoot,
That shall cover the land with its excellent fruit.
On the basis of truth and the Bible they build,
And churches and schools shall arise and be filled.

But who shall describe the first winter they passed
In the new forest home they had come to at last;
What pen shall depict the discomforts that grew
In the track of their lives the long summer through?
Those who've toiled and suffered in similar measure
May attempt the sad task at their own gracious pleasure.
Nor song of the poet nor artist's bright dyes
Can picture these scenes, as they came to the eyes
And the hearts of the heroes who suffered the strife
Of the toils and the moils of this pioneer life.
Social comforts were few, social pleasures were fewer,
And the hardships seemed harder because they were newer.
In that single log hut, twenty-two by sixteen,
One and twenty were fed, and when nights intervene
Some lodge in the attic, while other resort
To a vessel the winter winds drove into port:
No houses for rental the city possessed—
'Twas a city *in posse, in esse, non est.*

But the hardships and trials by first settlers known,
Though real and endured with many a moan,
Have often a ludicrous side, as appears
When rehearsed to their children in long after years.
The world brighter seems when prosperity comes
And diffuses its light over emigrant homes.
We love the improvements our own hands have made,
We love the green lawn and the cool, verdant shade.
When the farms are cleared up and the field yields its fruit
'Tis a curmudgeon's soul that is sullen and mute.
When, in bright winter evenings, the cheerful grate glows,
And the lamp o'er the room its ruddy light throws,
How often drops in a neighbor's kind face,
And the scenes of their earlier struggles they trace;
They laugh o'er the perils they once felt so keen
They passed safely through—and no perils they seem.
Their hearts with the joys of the present are filled—
The sores of the past are all of them healed.

What now we call comforts then luxuries seemed;
Of luxuries real they only then dreamed.
It happened one day that some Indians came
With a birchen-bark vessel, a "mocock" by name.
With cranberries filled, a delicious wild fruit,
Appetizing and tart, just their palates to suit.
"Now for a feast—a luxurious feast—
Such as our friends would not scorn at the East!"
At once an extemporized fire was made
Just at the back door, and a kettle arrayed,
Perched high upon stones, to receive the glad boon,
Till 'twas done to a turn—it could not be too soon.
Alas, for their hopes! for the vigilant cook
Had need for a moment just indoors to look,
When an unruly pig spied the morsel delicious,
And thinking the chances were now most propitious,
Put his nose to the kettle—the fruit was in ashes!
So fortune, most fickle, our fondest hope dashes.

Once their commons were short and famine impended
But that food might abound and the scarcity ended,
A man was dispatched in haste to ride through
The wilderness dense to Kalamazoo,
To purchase live pork for the settlement's need.
To all this necessity giving good heed
He hastened, through wintry tempest and storms,
And with care and success his errand performs.
With drove well in hand, approaching his goal,
And thoughtful of home, the generous soul
Sent a messenger forward with haste, to declare
The success of his mission, that they might prepare
For the feast of fat things he homeward was bringing,
And set all their hearts and their voices singing.
Paul Revere-like he rode thro' the dense leafless wood,
And brought the glad news of the incoming good.
At once rose a shout, with no delicate humming,
"The hogs! O, the hogs! They're coming! They're coming!"
Joy fills the hearts that before were oppressed—
The crisis is past, their fears are at rest.
(If a critic shall say this is not quite poetic
He will not deny 'tis at least dietetic.)
But we turn from the hardships, the toils and the fun
Of the pioneer life in the place now their home.

By God's favor planted, the settlement grew
And a village became, and though very new
A paper was needed—and then, lo! it came.
A Crucible, truly, in more than the name.
But no types were here, and no printer had come;
Not even type-writers—and press there was none—
So a manuscript deft sufficed in its place,
And a mimic of news was on its fair face.
One writer discussed the fair fame of the nation,
And showed what it needs for its earthly salvation,
While another, impressed with his home duties, shows
How needful that gentlemen wear their best clothes
When they visit the ladies, for Cupid's bright banner
Is not bought and sold with an auctioneer's hammer.
Still another would puzzle the men and the maids
With rebuses, riddles, perplexing charades,
Conundrums and puns, or to trip up the heels
Of the youngster too big for his clothes as he feels.
And thus were the long winter evenings beguiled,
And furnished amusement for parent and child.
Recitations and speeches by children and youth
Came on in their turn, inculcating truth.
The Lyceum came, with forensic debates
On questions and topics on which all the fates
Of the world and society hung in suspense,
And marshalled their forces on each side the fence.
These sports, intellectual, moral and free,
Helped to soften life's cares with innocent glee.
Very little they knew of the world they had seen,
For their mails were quite few and quite far between.
The church once established the Sabbath school came—
A school of the Bible in more than in name—
And the children were taught 'tis the Savior's command,
Go, disciple the nations in every broad land.
Their needles they ply, they contribute their dimes
To publish the gospel in heathendom climes;
The blessed results will eternity show—
They can never be known to the dwellers below.

Time would fail me to name all the brave souls that stand
Side by side with each other in clearing their land,
In building their houses, their stores and their mills—
A brotherly band with hearty good wills.
The Whites and the Gilberts, Pennoyer and Newcomb,
Who witnessed the settlement morn's early dew come;
With Albee, and Hopkins, and Miller, and Throop,
And a host of others who follow their suit,
And Eastman, and Griffin, and Roberts, and Norton,
Who all had their trials and their joys and their part on
The map and the history of city and county,
And who leave their successors to share in their bounty
With Lovell, and Angel, and Maxfield and Parks,
All of them men who could leave us their marks,
Hathaway, Davison, Patchin, and more
Of the early ones here—I could name you a score.
And Mason, and others whose names do not fade,
And Barber, whose grave in the ocean was made.
How many, alas! who enjoyed with a zest
These pioneer labors have gone to their rest!
We drop them a tear, but the march of the years
Bears us onward, too, spite our hopes or our fears
May I speak, in a whisper, of one who is left,
By her presence to bless us—of others bereft?
One who toiled to train up the boys and the girls
In wisdom's bright ways, who in modesty furls
Her own sails, contented to shine
Reflecting the light of her Savior divine.
Bright be her life with religion's sweet zest,
And late her return to her haven of rest.
    While we, with reverend head,
    Bow down before the dead,
  And emulate their manly strength and spirit;
    We worship Him who gave
    To them the will to brave
  These hardships for the country we inherit.
    To Him we raise our songs,
    Because to Him belongs
  Our praises for His goodness, grace and glory.
    We'll serve Him in our youth,
    In age we'll love His truth,
  And then in heaven we'll tell the blessed story.

ORGANIZATION OF OTTAWA COUNTY AND ITS TOWNS

BY S. L. LOWING

Fellow Citizens of Ottawa County:

In compliance with the request of your committee to write up that portion of the history of the early settlement of Ottawa county, that came under my knowledge and experience, allow me to say, that my earliest acquaintance with Ottawa County was in the fall of 1836, and the winter and spring following. I was then about eighteen years old, and had left the place of my birth and boyhood in Genesee county, New York, for the purpose of seeking my fortune; and like many others of that day supposed it was to be found in the far west, and with that purpose in view I found my way to Grand River, by the way of what was then known as the Shiawassee trail. I arrived at Grandville, Kent county, about the 1st of October of that year, where I engaged as a laborer, in a saw mill, then owned by Brown & Britten, but operated by Hiram Jenison as their foreman. At this time the title of the Indians to the land on the south side of the river had been extinguished, and the lands surveyed and put in market at the Ionia land office.

On December 31, 1837, Ottawa county was organized, and five towns, to wit, Grand Haven, Muskegon, Talmadge, Norton and Georgetown. In the meantime the lands on the north side of the river had been surveyed and brought into the market. And owing to the fact that the lands on the south side of the river had been purchased and were held by speculators, the immigration was largely turned to the north side of the river, and settlements were formed rapidly along the river.

In those days local politics ran very high. The highways having a controling influence, each man being anxious to secure a well worked and traveled highway to his own door, even to the exclusion of his neighbor, and the office of highway commissioner was as eagerly sought after then as the presidency is at this day, and many roads were partially constructed, large sums expended on them, and afterwards abandoned as useless and uncalled for.

The boundaries of townships were also a bone of contention along the river, as the river cut in two every surveyed town along its banks, leaving parts of the surveyed town on each side of the river. This interfered with the construction of highways and school districts to such an extent that the legislature was very often called upon to fix the boundaries of the townships, sometimes making the river the boundaries of townships, and sometimes repealing those acts and restoring the township to its surveyed limits. These frequent changes of the boundaries of townships frequently led to contention among the settlers, and sometimes to bad blood and trickery, and sometimes took a ludicrous turn. I will mention an instance: Georgetown, being mostly taken up by speculators, had large sums of money raised for highway purposes, while Talmadge was mostly Government lands, or what was then known as internal improvement lands, upon which no taxes could be levied. The settlers were very anxious to handle the highway and school money raised on the non-resident lands of Georgetown, and construct highways on the north side of the river. This could only be done by annexing the two towns and extending the highway district across the river. In 1841 and 1842, petitions and remonstrances were sent to the Legislature to have the river made the dividing line. Talmadge remonstrated, because that would give them three more inhabitants; while they had more than there were offices for, and each man must have an office, and it would cut off all the non-resident lands upon which they could raise money to build roads on the north side of the river.

The legislature granted the prayer of the petitioner, and made the river the dividing line between the townships, but, by a mistake in the newspaper report of the act, Talmadge was alleged to be attached to Georgetown, the town below (now Polkton) retaining the name of Talmadge; the town meeting to be held at Eastmanville. Talmadge outnumbered Georgetown in voters four to one, and they rejoiced in the prospect of handling the money of Georgetown for one year at least. Georgetown voters made efforts to induce Talmadge to remain on their own side, elect their officers, and apply to the legislature the next winter to legalize their acts, promising not to assess them or exercise any jurisdiction on that side of the river. This offer was refused by Talmadge, and a week before the township meeting Talmadge held a caucus, nominated a full set of officers on their side of the river, and rejoiced in the prospect of having everything lovely. In the meantime Georgetown sent to the Secretary of State for a copy of the act, when lo, it appeared that the river was made the dividing line. The next question up was how to retaliate on Talmadge; we were not long in drawing a plan; it was to let Talmadge remain in ignorance of the real facts and let them come up to the east part of Georgetown, the place of holding our election, and detain them there so long as to render it impossible for them to return to Eastmanville in time for them to vote there. In the meantime George M. Barker, who had been set off from Georgetown to Talmadge by the act, to go down to Eastmanville and inform them there and hurry up their township meeting and close the polls before Talmadge voters could arrive. This was successfully accomplished. Talmadge appeared in full force at the place now called Jenisonville and offered their votes; they were challenged of course; this led to long and laborious arguments, which continued until about one o'clock P. M., at which time it was believed that there was sufficient time before the close of the polls at Eastmanville to induce Talmadge to attempt to get there, but not time enough to reach it in fact; they were then shown the certified copy of the secretary, and they at once saw the plot laid for them, and with one accord left for Eastmanville, some in canoes with the wind strong against them, two men on one horse in some instances, the greater portions on foot with hats and coats off, determined to make the distance of fifteen miles before the polls should close at Eastmanville. This was the most exciting campaign and the closest run for office that Ottawa county ever witnessed. Some few arrived at Eastmanville in time to vote, while others failed to reach there in time; those voting did so without organization, and the campaign was lost to Talmadge. Eastmanville folks took good care to get set off from Talmadge before the next town meeting.

The judiciary branch of the settlement of Ottawa county was not neglected. Four justices of the peace were elected in each township, who each, for himself felt that the entire responsibility rested upon him to see to it that the path of each citizen was made straight, and that he walked therein, and there was more litigation per capita then than there ever has been since, each justice and constable feeling that he was not elected for ornamental purposes only. Many ludicrous scenes in court might be mentioned, but time and space will not permit. Conspicuous among the elements of litigation was the so-called Church & Dalton mill, at Sand Creek. This proved to be a source of revenue to two old attorneys at Grand Rapids, Moore and Abel, and a vexation to the settlers around; they being few in number, were quite too frequently called from home, as jurors, to decide upon the contentions of the two owners of the mill. This mill was built at Sand Creek about the year 1838 or 1839, by B. Church, a Seventh Day Baptist, who resolved that his property should not labor on Saturday, and James Dalton, a Catholic, who resolved that his property should labor on Saturday, but not on Sunday. This was the first bone of contention between them, but led to many others. The difficulty was partially compromised after awhile, by an arbitration, in which Amos Robinson was the principal arbitrator. He determined that each man should use the mill the alternate week; but that did not stop the litigation, which continued without abatement until both parties were very much impoverished, and was only terminated by a separation of the parties. Mr. Dalton abandoned his property and went to Chicago, where he has since remained. Both parties having cut their pine, the mill went into disuse, and was swept away a few years ago by the flood. Abel and Moore each lost the pearl of great price, and both abandoned the practice of the law soon after.

At the time that Georgetown was organized, in 1840, it embraced four townships, those that are now known as Jamestown, Zeeland, and Blendon. Jamestown was organized about 1849. Jamestown took its name from three James's—James Skeels, the second supervisor, James Brown, and James M. Conkwright. The land, although mostly located by speculators, in 1835 was mostly put on the market, and was rapidly settled by emigrants largely from Ohio. The first settler in Blendon was Booth Kinney, who settled on Dec. 12, about the year 1845, now dead. Afterwards a family by the name of Woodruff,—Milton, and Henry,—who settled on the same section. This town settled very slow. Stoors & Wyman built a mill in southeast part of the town somewhere about 1850. The town was organized in 1856. First town meeting held at the house of Booth Kinney. Albert Vredenburg was the first supervisor. Zeeland was set off from Georgetown and attached to Holland, and was after organized, and one D. Young was the first supervisor; this was about 1850. The heads of families of the settlers as early as 1840 are now nearly all dead. Henry Griffin, J. V. Harris, Samuel Hart, Thomas Woodbury, Daniel Rieley, and Mrs. H. Steel are the only survivors who first settled Talmadge.

Hiram Jenison, Luman and Lucius Jenison, S. Yeomans, L. Burdsly, Edward F. Bosworth, and Freeman Burton are the only survivors of the residents of Georgetown, in 1840, at the time of its organization. The settlers of that day endured many trials and privations, such as are incidental to a new country. The western portion of the county, and particularly on the south side of the river, was regarded valueless for agricultural purposes, and had been a great drawback to the settlers in the eastern part of the county, owing to the malaria rising from low lands, causing much sickness, from which very few, if any, of the older settlers were able to escape. It was not unfrequently the case that whole families were found sick with the ague and burning fever at the same time, and no one able to offer a draught of cold water,—and frequently these families resided many miles from other settlers. The mosquitoes and fleas were intolerable.

The contrast in the appearance and comforts of this county in 1840 and the present day is very great.

EARLY ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE IN OTTAWA COUNTY

BY T. B. CHURCH

To speak of the courts and the early administration of justice in the county, is to me, at this time a difficult task. My first attendance, professionally, was, if I recollect aright, in the fall of 1842, called to Grand Haven in some matter of litigation between William M. Ferry and Clark B. Albee. From that time until the year 1875, I transacted much legal business at Grand Haven, and incidentally and occasionally, some political matters were discussed. In 1850 Dr. Eastman, Rix Robinson and myself, as delegates, represented, in the State constitutional convention, the district composed of Ottawa and Kent counties, and in 1851 Thomas W. Ferry and myself represented the same district in the State legislature, as Representatives.

Again, if I recollect aright, Judge Charles W. Whipple held the first court in which I acted, as before stated, in 1842. Subsequently, Judges Ransom, Murdy, Martin, Littlejohn and Giddings held the courts, at which I was present. Judge M. Hopkins was for awhile on the bench, and before him I tried, for the defendant, I. Doesburg, (and re-tried it), the exciting cause of "The People, on the relation of N. H. White, Jr., vs. Doesburg," in holding the tenure of the offices of county clerk and register. Employed by the county, I prosecuted the case of the People vs. Turpin, for murder, and in 1852 the case of the People vs. Gardner, for rape, both celebrated cases in their time.

The fire of 1869 (in January), such an important event in the history of Grand Rapids that our courts take "judicial notice" of it, destroyed my register, all the files of numerous other civil and criminal cases, in which I took a part, and my being now, by a lameness which temporarily suspends locomotion, so that I cannot draw on Brother Holmes for his recollections. These circumstances make my speaking on the topic submitted to me, as I said in the beginning, a difficult task. I recall the attorneys, J. C. Abel and Lucius Patterson, men of remarkable ability, with whom I contended, whose acuteness and persistency (aided, in the person of Abel, by his stentorian voice), put their antagonists to their utmost mettle, and many other lawyers of an early date, who figured on that arena of legal contest.

Soon after the trial of Gardner had begun, a snow storm, with a high wind, filled up the school-house so that the session of the court was held, for the balance of it, in the Masonic hall—the upper story of the Washington House; and under the supervision of our genial host, H. Pennoyer, we slept, ate, worried the judge and confounded the jury for a week under one roof.

If I was standing before you, talking "free and easy" on this topic, I could narrate many amusing incidents, not, perhaps, worthy of formal record. You had a justice of the peace once who ordered a recess of his court that he might throw a noisy and disorderly litigant out of his office; and, having done so, calmly resumed his seat and business.

From the commencement of the courts the cases brought into them were often of much importance and legal interest, even when the amounts involved were small, as navigation, lumber contracts, and manufacturing operations always originate more such cases than merely agricultural pursuits. The most learned and experienced member of the Chicago bar was frequently brought into the humble court room of Grand Haven to expound on the navigator's liability for collisions, or to determine the rights of the riparian proprietors on Muskegon Lake. Up to 1858 judge and lawyer from this city embarking, generally at the foot of Monroe street, sometimes below that point (we had then a wider and deeper river), used up most of a day on the steamboat to get to the court house, and a whole day and sometimes a good part of the night in returning. The tedium of the voyage was relieved in different ways by different passengers; some read, some talked and smoked, and some diligently studied the "History of the Four Kings," but the good dinner always served on board rendered that mode of travel quite endurable. Yet in later days, when time grew more valuable, we were glad to avail ourselves of the swifter transportation of the D. & M. cars. But the fun, the real enjoyment, the queer adventures that enlivened the days and nights on the steamboats in summer, and the road by Welch Robert's tavern in winter, all evaporated on the rails.

Not apparently at first connected with the topic submitted to me, but yet recurring to my recollection by an association with legal matters, will be my mention of a meeting of those pioneers and founders of your city—William M. Ferry, Robert Stuart, and Rix Robinson. These three men (with Messrs. Ferry and Robinson I had become well acquainted, but then I first saw Mr. Stuart) were sitting in the "upper chamber," the front room, second story of the Ottawa House (on the site of which I believe the Kirby House now stands) arranging and settling some details of the winding-up of their joint enterprises in Ottawa county, and called me in as a scribe to draft a few papers which they dictated. I knew their history, their long companionship in frontier life, their then high position in the State (as then, both Mr. Robinson and Mr. Stuart, the one in Michigan and the other in Illinois, were holding most important public trusts), and as they talked business a little and then talked over old times more, I sat near them interested in their narrations, and whilst admiring the elements of their characters, the ability, the enterprise, the courage and wisdom they manifested, yet was I more moved and affected by their evidence of qualities of heart, more attractive and delightful than the stronger and sterner traits which they ever manifested to the outer world. Towards each other, that long evening, they seemed like brothers who had been boys together. It was disclosed by their talk that several years before Mr. Stuart had been commissioned to buy three good gold watches, one for each, and those watches by him procured, with like chains, etc., of equal value, were on their persons at this time. They sat together, looked them over, praised them, each claiming his own as somewhat a better timepiece than the others. All the grander features of their nature softened into an amiability so complete and charming that I could hardly recall to my consciousness that those men were really the same dignified, reserved, even stern of aspect men they appeared to be when moving in the outside business world. I need not say that I looked upon them with admiration, respect, yea, reverence, and never wondered afterwards that in their families and domestic circles they were loved.

Of such are the founders of States, and benefactors of their fellow men.

SOIL AND CLIMATE OF OTTAWA COUNTY

BY H. PENNOYER

A correct topographical map of Ottawa county would show a nearly uniform western slope from the east line of the county, which is from two to three hundred feet higher than the surface of Lake Michigan. The only exception to that height is found in the valleys of streams, and where the streams have changed their course. The soil of the county is and ever has been receiving deposits, but never paying out, except on short time and in small drafts, conditioned to be paid back by the waves of the lake. Through the past centuries accretion has been piled upon accretion by the action of the waters, until it has given us a soil of great depth and of good quality, equal to that of Long Island, the Garden of America, where the ocean is constantly adding to its plant wealth. On a smaller scale the western half of Ottawa county may be likened to the delta of the Mississippi, that receives the deposits of alluvial soils floated to it for more than ten thousand miles of swift running streams. I believe the alluvial soil here at Grand Haven to be over sixty feet in depth, for the reason that boulders have been found at that depth. Any person traveling by the common roads through the county, from west to east, will look in vain for a stone on the surface of the soil until he has traveled more than halfway through the county. Within the valley, and near the river, we find boulders that have been laid bare by the action of the waters. A direct north and south line, running through Eastmanville, would show but few stones on the west side of it, while there are many on the surface in different localities. East of that line, Nathan Throop, in boring for an artesian well, at Grand Haven, in 1848, struck a boulder at the depth of sixty feet, or thereabouts, which cost two journeys to Milwaukee for tools to drill through it. The boulder was imbedded in clay. On my own farm, east side of the town of Crockery, in digging wells, we struck and have taken out boulders at the depth of twenty feet, that would weigh twenty pounds or more. Four miles east of my farm the same kind of stone appears on the surface. The composition of these boulders is unlike that of the soil in which they are imbedded, or upon which they lie; hence I believe in the geological theory that this part of the country was once submerged to a great depth, so deep that the icebergs floated over it, bringing their freight of earth and stone from the frozen regions of the north, and depositing them in places all over the country. One geologist says that those large boulders we find on the high conical hills near Ada, on the line of the D., G. H. and M. R. W., were deposited there by icebergs. Some of them would weigh tons, and all of them are unlike the soil upon which they lie.

Now, since the glacier period, and on the subsidence of the waters, the soil of Ottawa has been receiving additions and accretions and will continue to do so as long as water runs down hill. The western part of the county is receiving contributions to its soil from the eastern portion, and as time rolls on more stone will be laid bare by the floods and freshets. If anyone doubts the depth of the soil let him go into the fields where they are now raising those large pine stumps; notice the roots, ten feet long, that grew straight down into the ground; and then settle the question in his own mind whether it is poor or rich soil that attracted those roots down to such a depth.

It was my privilege, forty-eight years ago, to see this county in nearly all of its pristine beauty, freighted with a more valuable crop than will ever be found upon its surface again, as long as men live to despoil the works of nature. Although the soil has been stripped of its first crop, if a syndicate of wealthy gentlemen (like Gould and Vanderbilt) was formed, with a view to buying the county and planting it to timber, it would, in my opinion, pay to their posterity more money than any railway that would cost double the amount. The growth of timber is greater than many imagine. In fifty years, more money would be realized from an investment of that kind, if the work was well handled, than by any other investment. Nature and man, working together in this direction, could do wonders. It is well known that the timber business has been, the past fifty years, the leading business of the county to the detriment of agricultural work, so that much of this good soil is at present uncultivated. Many a good farm, owned by lumbermen, in the near vicinity of Grand Haven and Holland, is given the go by, because there are pine stumps upon them. But a more hardy race of men is to take them in hand, to convert the stumps into fences, which, well made, are not so unsightly as a common rail fence. After the stumps have been removed and the surface well plowed, they will find all of the requisites for raising good cereals incorporated in the soil. The Hollanders settled on the Hudson river in the 17th century. They and their posterity say, if you want good land for wheat, take it where the sassafras and wortleberries grow, and you will have it a success. The trial has been made on that class of lands, in one instance that I know of, and a crop of twenty bushels to the acre, in a dry season, was the result; while upon our clay soils the average crop was about twelve bushels to the acre.

Ottawa county lies in a latitude where westerly and southwesterly winds predominate. Our coldest and hardest wind storms, taking their rise in the mountain regions of New Mexico, Colorado, and Montana, blow a thousand miles over land with no decrease in the cold of the snow-capped mountains until they reach Lake Michigan. There, in the coldest winters, it stirs up the waters that have retained the heat garnered in from the long summer's sun shining upon the surface of the lake. And as the storms beat upon the east shore they bring with them a warmer and more genial atmosphere than existed on the west shore. As early as 1836 I began to notice the difference between the climate of the west and east shores of Lake Michigan, and to note the difference in favor of Ottawa county and the east shore. The thermometer in this county often stood at zero, at Chicago 18° below the same day and hour, the wind blowing from the southwest. At the same time it would be from 4° to 10° colder at Grand Rapids, and farther east the cold would be still more intense.

Since the fruit business started in this county every one engaged in it has been interested in thermometical observations. When it is known that 12° below zero will kill the peach bud, and that 24° kills the tree, close watch will be kept of every passing storm whatever direction it comes from. The highest range of the thermometer in my observation is 98° above zero, and the lowest, but once, at 30° below, which was in a blizzard from the northwest. In the same storm it was reported at 44° below by the spirit thermometer at Lansing. For forty-eight years that I have resided in the county I cannot recall more than three storms that have been severe enough to kill the bud of the peach in all parts of the county. One of these storms was from the east in the month of March, the other two from the northwest. I have also observed that Ottawa county is more highly favored than the south tier of counties of the State. I attribute this to the beneficent effects of the breeze from over the lake. If the storm came from the west or northwest Berrien county would reap the same benefits that Ottawa would from the lake breeze, but from the southwest every peach-bud would be killed in Berrien, while Ottawa and Grand Haven would escape.

AGRICULTURE OF OTTAWA COUNTY

BY EDWIN THAYER

It is to me a matter of regret that the committee did not select some one better qualified than I am to write on the agricultural progress of Ottawa county. I think it would be exceedingly desirable that one should undertake this task who is familiar with the beginning of agriculture here, and who could picture to you, from actual experience, the trials and difficulties incident to these beginnings. It needs one who was here when the country was a wilderness, unbroken by the ax or plow, from the Kalamazoo River to the farthest north; one who could relate because he had known and felt them, the hardships and toil encountered by the early settlers on their preemptions (for it should be remembered that no land north of Grand River had yet been offered for sale by the government, and that settlers could only secure it by pre-emption).

To properly present this subject it needs one who knew from experience how to fell the forest trees, to build the log houses and cover them with shakes and floor them with planks split from the basswood trees, and planed with a broad ax; one who could build a stick chimney and make it fire-proof by plastering it with mud; one who, with his family, has gathered round the open fire made of logs in the one room, which at the same time was kitchen, parlor, bed room, and dining room; and who has sat down with that family at the table loaded with the luxuries of the time—corn bread and venison, or occasionally wheat bread and pork for Sunday; sitting in chairs upholstered with a deer skin, and sleeping upon bedsteads made of poles, with elm bark for springs, and hemlock boughs and marsh hay for feathers.

The primitive style of agriculture, a style which necessarily prevails in commencing a settlement in a timbered country, is to cut down the trees, trim them up, cut and pile the brush in heaps, leaving it all to dry somewhat preparatory to burning. The soil is too full of roots to be ploughed. The farmer then takes an old ax, and passing over the charred spots, strikes it into the ground at suitable intervals, drops a few grains of corn, or a few potato eyes, in the gash thus made, and steps upon it with his foot to press the earth together, while he strikes with his ax again for another hill. In this way he raises a small crop for his immediate necessities. Meanwhile the fallen timber is drying and getting ready for the fire, and the roots in the soil began to decay, so that the next season a yoke of oxen and the plow will do something towards breaking up the soil for a better crop. If he can afford it he sometimes seeds the land to grass for a year or two, or more, giving more time for the roots to decay, while he clears and fences an additional field or two. When he harvested a crop of wheat he improvised a threshing floor, threshed it with a flail, and winnowed the grain by tossing it in the air with a shovel. It must then be taken to a mill, a trip of from eight to thirty miles, in a canoe, or with a hand sleigh in winter, on the ice. His hogs were fattened upon mash, and a yoke of oxen or a cow or two grazed in the woods in summer, and lived upon marsh hay through the winter; or, that failing, browsed upon the fallen tree tops.

But it was next to impossible for the first settlers to support their families by agriculture for the first few years, and in this emergency the forests furnished means of support. Pine saw logs, shingle bolts, or shingles, cord wood, staves, and hemlock bark, assisted in eking out a scanty living. At Grand Haven the logs were worth $1.50 to $3.00 per thousand feet; shingles, $1.00 to $1.25 per thousand; good maple and hickory wood, 75 cents to $1.00 per cord; white oak staves, $4.00 to $5.00 per thousand; and hemlock bark, $1.50 to $1.75 per cord. These seem small prices at this day, but labor and timber were cheap and the market small. And when the hardy settler had, in the spring, marketed the products of his winter's work, he frequently found himself still in debt for advances made to enable him to accomplish it. But, undismayed by partial failure, heroically he struggled on, with the result of wresting real victory from apparent defeat.

In 1840 the United States census shows that the county had a population of only 208. How many of these were farmers we have not been able to learn, but judging from its products, we infer that the county was not then noted for its agriculture. There were only four horses, twelve head of cattle, and thirteen hogs. The products of the year 1839 were one hundred bushels of potatoes, one hundred and ninety-three tons of marsh hay. No wheat, corn, oats, or other grains were reported; no wool or dairy products.

The first lands opened for farming purposes were along Grand River; necessarily so, for the river was then the only highway. Among the first farmers were Allan Stoddart, David and E. Angell, Ira Maxfield, Dewey Hedges and Harry Steel, at and near Steel's landing, now Lamont; Daniel Realey, in the farm that is now known as the county poor farm; Benjamin Hopkins, Dr. Timothy Eastman and Paschal Maxfield at and near Eastmanville.

David Realey is one of the first, and perhaps the first man in the county who sowed and harvested a crop of wheat. In 1838 he sowed about three acres, and James Dalton, now known as Captain Dalton, of Chicago, helped him harvest it. He threshed it with a flail, and took it in a canoe, at different times, to Grandville, to mill, a distance, by the river, of about twenty-two miles—a trip that required about two days' time. Mr. Realey reports that the farm was preëmpted by him from government in 1837, and purchased and owned jointly by Captain Henry Miller and himself. They only raised one crop of wheat, besides the one referred to, until about 1852, for the reason that there were no threshing machines in the county, and the expense of putting in and working among the roots and stumps, harvesting and threshing, was more than the grain could be sold for, and they could make more in raising hay, riving and shaving shingles, making staves, peeling hemlock bark, getting out cordwood, or a raft of logs. As wheat was only about fifty or sixty cents per bushel, pork from $2.50 to $3.00 per cwt., flour from $2.50 to $3.00 per barrel, it was easier to go out on Uncle Sam's land, of which there was at that time a large quantity, cut a pine tree or two, get out a few cords of bolts, and in a week's time, if one worked hard, he would have from six to eight thousand shingles ready for market. These they could market at Grand Haven at such prices as I have already described, and thus procure their supplies.

Up to 1850 there had been but a small portion of the county opened for farming purposes, except along the river. Benjamin and Timothy Lillie were the first ones that located land for farming in the town of Wright. They settled there in 1844, and in 1845 Benjamin raised three-quarters of an acre of spring wheat, and Timothy put in a small piece of winter wheat. Mr. Lillie reports that they dragged in the first crop of wheat among the stumps and roots, seeded the land to grass, and waited four or five years for the roots and stumps to rot, so that the land might be plowed.

In 1846 the township of Polkton embraced also the territory now included in Allendale, Blendon, and Zeeland, and its assessment roll for that year shows but thirteen occupied farms, only seven of them showing any improvements. The whole number of acres improved on the thirteen farms was only 105. Dr. Timothy Eastman, Benjamin Hopkins, Daniel Realey, and Paschal Maxfield were the only ones that had erected barns. There were only seven horses in town, valued at $30 each; twelve cows at $8, and sixteen yoke of oxen at $30. The improved land was valued at $4 per acre, in addition to the government price of $1.25.

The total assessed value of the real and personal estate in the four townships was $19,081, and the board of supervisors, of whom Dr. T. Eastman was chairman, equalized the value by reducing this amount to $17,364.75. The same territory is now assessed at nearly three million dollars.

It is worthy of notice that the first person named in that roll, 1846, was Mrs. Agnes B. Allen, widow of Captain Hannibal Allen, who was a son of Ethan Allen, of Revolutionary fame. She owned 100 acres above the poor farm.

Jamestown and the Holland colony, as it was then called, had but just commenced settlement in 1847. The whole southern part of the county was then called the South woods, and to one who lived near the river it was considered too far back to be worth emigrating to.

To hear some of the early settlers of these towns relate their experience in those first years of privations and hardships, and to pass through these towns now and see their well filled barns, their fine and comfortable houses, and all their surroundings denoting a plenty of this world's goods, one can hardly imagine that thirty-five years ago this same territory was an unbroken wilderness, that where we see the fine roads of to-day were then only trails through the woods marked by blazing the trees; that in some instances they had to carry what few boards they used in the construction of their first houses from one to two miles across swamps or ravines on their back, and to carry their first bushel of grain on their backs a much longer distance to mill. In many instances the early settlers had no team for several years.

Their first teams were usually oxen, and their first vehicles a rude long sled, made narrow the better to get around between the trees and the stumps. Their first market and mill was at Grand Rapids, and they would go from the "colony" usually in companies of from 20 to 30 ox teams, and it required two days to go and return.

Up to 1850, sixteen years after the first settlement of the county, we find by statistics, that the population had increased to 4,835, yet including Muskegon county. The value of the real estate had increased to $580,890; the number of occupied farms, only 204; the number of acres improved land, 4,914, showing an average of about twenty-four acres improved land to each farm. The number of horses in the county was 90, and the number of oxen, 837, showing the latter to be the teams principally used. The number of cows in the county was 538, or an average of about two to each farm; 1,349 hogs and 192 sheep, an average of less than one sheep and of about 6½ hogs to each farm. The produce for the preceding year, 3,814 bushels of wheat; 24,264 of corn, 3,549 of oats; 262 of rye; 553 of buckwheat; 9,308 of potatoes; 30,000 lbs. butter, and 42,000 lbs. maple sugar, and 1,500 tons of hay.

The census of 1864 shows a population of 15,156; number of acres of improved land, 46,101. Produce raised preceding year: Wheat, 87,885 bushels; corn, 103,774 bushels; other grains, 56,207 bushels; potatoes, 69,814 bushels; hay, 15,923 tons; wool, 25,726 lbs.; pork, 243,640 lbs.; butter, 269,000 lbs.; cheese, 23,000 lbs.; maple sugar, 211,000 lbs. Of live stock we find 4,552 cows; 1,778 oxen; 2,058 horses; 10,557 sheep; 4,698 hogs; other cattle, 4,767.

The census of 1880 gives 31,054 acres of wheat, producing 657,750 bushels, or an average of over twenty bushels to the acre; oats, 10,030 acres, producing 317,935 bushels, or an average of a little over 31 bushels per acre; corn, 18,830 acres, producing 610,442 bushels, or an average of 34 bushels per acre, showing that the average on wheat and oats was greater than the average of the whole State. The average on wheat in the State was 18 4-10 bushels, and oats 29 85-100 bushels per acre.

The following table of statistics shows the population and progress of the county for the years 1850, 1864, 1874 and 1880:

	1840.	1850.	1864.	1874.	1880.
Population	208	5,587	15,156	26,650	32,340
Bushels wheat		3,814	87,885	217,594	657,750
Corn		24,264	103,000	347,692	610,442
Oats and other grains		3,549	56,000	336,638	317,935
Horses	4	90	2,058	4,691	5,530
Cows		538	4,552	7,878	8,070
Sheep		192	10,557	16,456	13,899
Tons of hay	193	1,507	15,923	26,000	22,000
Oxen		287	1,778		
Acres improved		4,914	46,101	87,033	103,041

Improved farms, 1840, 204; 1884, 2,596. Assessed valuation of land, 1850, $580,000; 1884, $13,000,000.

If now we take into consideration the fact that two-thirds of the county, an aggregate of 200,000 acres, is still unimproved land, it is safe to conclude that the agricultural capabilities of the county have not yet reached their maximum. When that point shall be reached, with the improved systems of farming which will then prevail, we may without doubt estimate the wheat product at three times that of 1880, or 1,900,000 bushels, with a proportionate amount of other grains, vegetables, etc. If it be said that a large portion of these uncultivated lands are marsh or swamp, and too wet for cultivation, I have only to reply that these marshy lands are all susceptible of drainage, and when drained are the most productive lands in the county. The last statement is abundantly proved by several instances in Allendale and Zeeland; some of these lands, when thoroughly cultivated, producing forty bushels of wheat to the acre, and large crops of other grains, hay, etc.

It is objected, also, that the soil of the towns bordering on Lake Michigan is light and sandy, and unfit for raising wheat, corn, etc. But it must be remembered that this is the fruit belt, and experience shows that these lands yield quite as good a profit as the heavier soils. It is also true that green manuring, with a liberal use of plaster and other fertilizers, will bring these soils up to a productiveness not excelled for any crop by any other.

FRUIT CULTURE IN OTTAWA COUNTY

BY WALTER PHILLIPS,

[President of the West Michigan Fruit Growers' Society.]

Fruit has ever had a place on the earth since God created man. But according to our early records it was not cultivated to any large extent till about the time of the Christian era. The first reliable records of fruit culture date about the year 300 in the present era. At that time there were twenty-two varieties of apples; of pears, thirty-six; peaches, four; quinces, three; apricots and almonds, four each; plums, four; cherries, eight; and of the olive, four sorts are noted. Strawberries were so abundant in the fields they were not cultivated. The number of varieties of grapes at that time is not known. The grape and the olive were the only fruit crops grown for profit. In Italy two hundred years after the above record was made, the peach and cherry had reached twenty varieties each, and the grape was cultivated largely in the north of Italy. The pear and quince were grown to weigh two to three pounds each. Virginia and California may to-day equal the product of 1,200 years ago, but they do not surpass it. The Romans were the first to introduce and disseminate fruit. To them France and England are indebted. France has grown and distributed more fruit trees than any other nation. Her nurseries at the present time amount to 16,000 acres, and her orchard gardens to 200,000 acres. England had no fruit of value till the close of the tenth century, and then little beside the grape. In 1629 was the first record of varieties in cultivation given. At that time she had fifty-eight varieties of apples, sixty-four of pears, sixty-one of plums, twenty-one of peaches, five nectarines, six apricots, thirty-six cherries, twenty-three grapes, three figs, besides quinces and walnuts. At the present time the orchards, nurseries, and commercial gardens of the British Islands nearly equal those of France. North America, including Canada and the United States, and even Mexico had most of its fruits introduced by the French and Romish missionaries.

The French may be said to have been strictly the pioneers in apple and pear culture. Most of the grapes now grown in California were introduced by the Jesuit Fathers, and it may be said wherever the Romish missionaries settled the grape was a specialty with them. The basis of fruit culture in this country may be said to date from about the year 1650. At the present time, from the best records obtainable, we give the area of 900,000 acres as being devoted to fruit culture in the United States. The varieties at the present time are as follows: Apples, 2,360 varieties, pears 1,270, peaches 300, nectarines 30, apricots 50, cherries 230, strawberries 300, hardy native grapes about 300, and currants 30. As early as the seventeenth century fruit trees were planted by the French along the eastern borders of our State, some of which yet remain to demonstrate the adaptability of Michigan to the culture of fruit. From a small beginning fruit culture in this State has grown to large results. We now claim the money value of our fruit products to amount to a yearly average of $3,537,278. The total values of the fruits grown yearly in the United States foot up $46,724,293. The distinguished honor of planting the first fruit trees in Ottawa county belongs to our venerable citizen, Henry Griffin, Esq. Forty-eight years ago, or in the year 1836, on the three lots on Franklin street where Mr. Griffin now resides, he planted fruit trees of various kinds, which still live and gladden the heart of the planter by their magnificent growth and abundant bearing qualities. Mr. Griffin and Mr. Benjamin Hopkins about the same time planted orchards at Eastmanville. Shortly after Mr. Burch and Mr. Stoddard planted orchards in Talmadge township. In the year 1839 Ira Maxfield, also Esic and Daniel Angell, planted orchards near where Lamont is now situated. In the year 1841 Henry Steele and Mr. Woodbury planted orchards also near Lamont. About this time Mr. Newcomb and Mr. Lovell planted orchards in Spring Lake township. In the year 1844 Col. Norton planted an orchard on the site where Nortonville now stands. William Thompson and William Hathaway planted orchards in Crockery township in the year 1849. In 1852 Rev. L. M. S. Smith planted a small orchard of apple and peach trees in Spring Lake. In the year 1854 Rev. William M. Ferry planted what is now known as the Mansfield orchard, situated on Pennoyer avenue. About the same time Col. Ferry planted an orchard at Ferrysburg. About the same date John T. Davis planted an orchard on what is now known as the Hancock place on Washington street. In the year 1859 Mr. Pennoyer set an orchard in Crockery township.

The same year Mr. Bolt planted an orchard on Washington avenue where he now resides. In the year 1864 Mr. Spoon set an orchard at Spoonville. In the year 1868 Hon. T. E. Gidley set peach orchards, with other varieties of fruit, extensively on Peach plain. Two years later A. O. Ewing set a peach orchard and also a vineyard on the place now owned by the writer of this paper. We will now go back a little in dates and take up the fruit history of another part of the county. In the year 1854 the first orchards were planted at or near Holland City by the following persons, A. C. Van Raalte, D. D., Bernadus Grostanhim, J. Visscher, A. D. Weerd, George Harrington. The same year orchards were planted at Zeeland by C. De Putter, C. D. Pree, and J. G. Van Mees. In the years 1869 and 1870 peach orchards were planted at Holland by the following persons, Delos Dutton, John Visscher, Mrs. J. Heckhins. In 1875 peach orchards were planted largely near Holland by C. H. Dutton, N. Diekema, Arrand Visscher, George Harrington. From the year 1864 to 1870 orchards of the various kinds of native fruits were planted quite extensively throughout the county, and fruit growing took a sharp impetus forward, and has gradually assumed larger proportions until, at the present time, Ottawa county may be regarded as one of the leading counties in western Michigan as regards the amount of fruit exported. About the years 1871 and 1872 fruit began to be shipped out of the county to considerable extent. In the year 1872 fruit was shipped as follows: barrels of apples, 2,250; baskets of peaches, 8,432; baskets of grapes, 6,443; berries of all kinds, 6,820 cases, or 3,410 bushels. From 1872 until the present time there has been a marked increase in the quantity shipped. This present year, according to the most reliable information, the quantity of fruit exported from Ottawa county is as follows: apples, 9,000 barrels, cash value, $13,500; peaches, 14,300 baskets, cash value, $9,295; grapes, 20,140 baskets, or 201,400 lbs., cash value, $8,056; berries, including all kinds, 27,282 cases, or 13,641 bushels, cash value $38,194.80. I would also notice the fact that this present year peaches, as a crop, were almost a failure, last year being a much better crop year. Holland City alone shipped 25,000 baskets, or 5,000 bushels of peaches. The total cash value of the fruit shipped this year from Ottawa county amounts to $69,045.80. These figures being an estimate of exported fruit only, it is but reasonable to assume one-third as much for home consumption, which would give as the cash value of the fruit raised in Ottawa county this present year the sum total of $92,061.07, truly quite an important factor in the producing element of this county. And when we take into consideration the large amount of lands that are waiting to be made available in fruit raising, and notice also the many tracts of land that are being bought up for the purpose of raising fruit, we may have some definite idea of what Ottawa county will do in this line in the near future. We claim in favorable locations in this county grapes, in the hands of the skillful horticulturist, will give an annual net income of $250 per acre; raspberries, $150; strawberries $100 per acre. Peaches, when we obtain a crop, will give higher figures. The above results are obtained from the fact, first, we have a soil well adapted for raising fruit; second, our climate, by reason of the modifying influence of Lake Michigan, is very favorable for growing fruit; third, we have a shipping point at Grand Haven which is second to none in the State. Those fruit growers within reasonable distance from this port, can pick fruit till 7 P. M., and then ship to Detroit, Milwaukee, or Chicago, without transfer of packages, and have their fruit on sale the next day at 7 A. M. If there is any other point in the State of which this can be said in the way of shipping I am not aware of the fact. In view of these advantages we look forward to a splendid future as regards the fruit interests of Ottawa county. We hail with delight the improved methods of fruit culture that are now being brought forward by practical fruit men.

We believe that the day is not far distant when the teeming millions of consumers in Chicago, Milwaukee and the great Northwest will create such a demand for fruit that orchards and vineyards will spring up, as by magic, all along this lake shore, and the many hills that now look so barren will, in the springtime of the year, blossom with the flowers of fruit culture, and in the fall will yield that golden fruit that is beautiful to the eye and is pleasant to the taste of man. Let me say, then, in conclusion, all honor to the noble pioneers who first planted fruit in Ottawa county. We rejoice that some of them are still living, and, under the blessing of God, are with us on this occasion. May they long live to enjoy the fruits of their labors, and when they fall by the way, may the work which they have begun, in the hands of their successors, go nobly forward, until Ottawa county shall not only become an honor to this great fruit producing State, but also rank second to none among the great fruit producing districts of the world.

RAILROADS IN OTTAWA COUNTY

BY JOHN T. PERCIVAL

There is a period at which man arrives when he becomes impressed with the thought that he is growing old; his vision becomes dim, gray hairs make their appearance, the firm, elastic step of youth has disappeared, the trials and cares of life have left their impress upon his face, the deep furrowed lines upon his brow, and wrinkles on his cheeks, too plainly remind him that, so far as he is concerned, the battles of life are nearly over, and, as he approaches the end of his earthly pilgrimage, he lives more on the memories of the past than on the hopes of the future, and takes much pleasure in telling over and over again the incidents of his early life. He delights to compare the past with the present, and is generally satisfied with the age in which he has lived.

The brave soldier who left his home and friends and all the comforts of civilized life, in exchange for the privations of the camp and the dangers of the battlefield, in after years delights to relate his experiences. In imagination he often fights his battles over again, and the greater the hardships he may have endured, the more wonderful his escapes from death on the battlefield, even the horrid privations and terrible sufferings of a prison life, seem to furnish him with the best material for reflection. With mixed feelings of pleasure and pain he recalls to memory all the scenes he was compelled to witness, and all the trials incident to a soldier's life, which he had been called upon to endure. His thoughts revert back to the time when he heard the stern voice of duty demanding him to make a sacrifice greater than the inexperienced can ever fully appreciate, and which is seldom, if ever, rewarded. We owe an everlasting debt of gratitude to those noble heroes, the defenders of our homes, our country, our rights and our liberties, who, when the life of this nation was imperiled, with wonderful alacrity, responded to the call of duty, and by their loyalty to their country and their valor in the field, forever, we trust, decided that the union of the United States is as indissoluble as the rocks of Gibraltar. But are we not also under great obligations to the early pioneer, who gave up the comforts of home, with all its hallowed associations, civilization, with all its privileges, he voluntarily left behind him, and after weeks, yea, often months, of tedious travel through the forests, over the mountains, or across the bleak and desolate prairies, and far from home and friends, but with a spirit of determination and indomitable perseverance worthy of emulation, he makes a little clearance in the woods, builds his rude log cabin, and makes a home for himself and family amidst the howling of the wild beasts and the whoop and yell of the Indian savage; with no means of communication with the outside world, except at rare intervals, no morning paper to read, as he sipped his coffee at the rough breakfast table, no daily mail to bring him words of cheer and encouragement from those who were dear to him, no telegraph wire to convey to him messages of joy or tidings of sorrow, with no means of travel, except by the rude bark canoe, or by the zig-zag Indian trail? He hears no church bells announcing the return of the sacred Sabbath morning; he sees no school-house for the education of his children. With nothing but faith in God, a noble purpose, and all the privations of a frontier life, he begins to clear the forest, subdue the Indian, and gradually the wild beasts disappear from his presence. He thus opens up a pathway for civilization, and future generations reap the benefit of the struggles and the sacrifices made by the heroic pioneer, whose valuable services, in the development of this great country, are seldom fully recognized.

It was under similar circumstances as I have described that the first settlers of what is now called Ottawa county began their pioneer life fifty years ago. We have assembled on the present occasion to celebrate that important event, and thus do honor to the band of brave men and women, who, on the 2d day of November, 1834, planted civilization in what is now called the county of Ottawa, which resulted in the building of school-houses, and the erection of churches, the construction of highways, and the clearing of the forests, in transforming the wilderness into fruitful fields, rich orchards, and valuable vineyards, to which railroads long ago have stretched out to receive their products.

At the time this county was first settled there were only 633 miles of railroad in the United States, and not a single rail had been laid in what was then the Territory of Michigan. It was not until the year 1831 that the locomotive engine took the place of horses on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad; this road was then opened as far as Harper's Ferry, a distance of eighty-one miles from Baltimore.

The perfect railroad of the present day is the result of gradual development of what were called tramways in the seventeenth century. At that period we find that at the coal pits in England, railroads, or tramways made of wood, were used to carry the coal from the pit mouth to the place of shipment. In the year 1831 the Liverpool and Manchester railroad was opened for traffic, and just before the completion of this road the company offered a prize of £500 for a locomotive engine which should run at least ten miles an hour and pull three times its own weight. On October 6, 1829, three engines competed for the prize, which was awarded to the "Rocket." This engine was constructed by that celebrated engineer, George Stephenson, and with twelve and three-quarter tons attached made thirty miles an hour, which was a remarkable rate of speed for those days. The success which attended the construction of railroads in England attracted much attention in this country, and led to the construction of the Granite Railroad, which run between the quarries in Quincy, Massachusetts, to the tide water on the Neponset river, a distance of three miles.

This road was finished in the year 1827. Then followed the construction of short gravity roads in Pennsylvania. It was on the fourth day of July, 1828, that the work of construction was commenced on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, and three years later only 14 miles were completed and opened for the public use. The next year 46 miles were completed, and trains were running between Baltimore and Frederick. The whole line from Baltimore to Wheeling, West Virginia, a distance of 380 miles, was not completed until the year 1853, or twenty-five years after work was first commenced upon it. By that time 16,720 miles of railroad were in operation in the United States. The vigor and energy displayed in the construction of railroads was something hitherto unknown. The building of railroads was undertaken in every direction, and the work was pushed forward with the most astonishing rapidity. The State of Michigan, which had never been behind in the paths of progress, also caught the spirit of the age, and at the present time over 5,000 miles of railroad are in operation in this State.

On the seventh day of March, 1834, the legislative council of the Territory of Michigan granted a charter to the Detroit and Pontiac Railroad Company "to transport property and persons by the power and force of steam, of animals, or of any mechanical or other power, or of any combination of them." In the autumn of 1838 this road was opened from Detroit to Royal Oak, a distance of 13 miles; in the spring of 1841 it was opened to Birmingham, 19½ miles from Detroit, and in the month of September, 1844, it was opened to Pontiac, a distance of 26 miles from Detroit.

The first terminus and depot of the road was where the present Detroit Opera House now stands in the Campus Martius. The road was constructed in a very cheap manner, with flat iron rails and trestle work instead of earth embankments, and for some years it was operated by horse power. In the year 1852 the heavy T rail took the place of the old flat iron rail, and the trestle works were filled with earth.

On the 3d of April, 1848, the legislature of the State of Michigan incorporated the Oakland and Ottawa Railroad Company to construct a railroad from the village of Pontiac, in the county of Oakland, to Lake Michigan, in the county of Ottawa, and the entire line was located by the first of January, 1855.

On the 13th February, 1855, the legislature passed an act authorizing the consolidation of the Detroit and Pontiac and the Oakland and Ottawa railroads, the two companies to form a continuous line from Detroit to Lake Michigan, under the name of the Detroit and Milwaukee Railway Company, and on the 2nd October, 1855, the road was opened to Fentonville, a distance of fifty miles from Detroit. On July 1st, 1856, it was opened to Owosso, a distance of seventy-eight miles from Detroit, and on the 1st September, 1856, the road was opened to Millpoint (now Spring Lake). At first steamers connected with the railroad at Millpoint until the track bridges and docks were completed at Grand Haven. On the 22nd day of November, 1858, just twenty-six years ago, the road was opened from Detroit to Grand Haven, a distance of one hundred and eighty-six miles. The first terminus of the road at Grand Haven was on the west side of the river; the passenger depot, a massive frame structure, stood across the river from the foot of Washington street. The building was two stories in height, and a portion of it was used for hotel purposes. The freight sheds stood a little south of the passenger depot. A ferry boat transported the passengers, baggage, and freight, across the river to and from Grand Haven. The city on one side of the Grand River and the railroad on the other was found to be very inconvenient, besides, the railroad company were subjected to much annoyance by the sand continually drifting upon the track. The company finally decided that the terminus at Grand Haven should have been located in a more suitable place. The city of Grand Haven was very anxious to have the railroad and terminus on the east side of the river, and, in 1868, very generously voted to give the railroad company $52,000, on condition that they would build a track from Ferrysburg, on the east side of the river, the terminus of the road to be at the foot of Washington street, and there construct a good substantial passenger depot and good warehouse for freight purposes. The company took advantage of this liberal offer, built a track from Ferrysburg to Grand Haven on the east side of the river, making the terminus and depot at foot of Washington street, where a handsome and commodious passenger depot of brick and stone was erected, and an extensive freight warehouse of iron constructed. The docks which were built were not surpassed by any in the State of Michigan, and on the 1st of January, 1870, passenger trains commenced to run to and from the new depot. The freight trains continued to run to the depot on the west side until July the same year, when they also commenced running to and from the new terminus. The track on the west side was entirely abandoned and the rails were taken up. The old passenger depot and freight sheds soon began to decay, and now nothing, except an old rotten dock, remains to mark the spot where at one time stood the first passenger depot on the Detroit and Milwaukee Railway, and the first railroad depot in this city.

When this road was constructed as far as Owosso, the company found themselves out of funds. The Great Western Railway of Canada was induced to complete the road to Grand Haven, and provide the rolling stock. That company advanced $1,250,000, besides placing the first mortgage bonds of the company in London, England. At that time it was not so easy to obtain money for railroad construction as it became at a later period; therefore, to the Great Western Railroad of Canada the State of Michigan is indebted for the earlier construction of this road to Lake Michigan, and the earlier opening up and settlement of the county of Ottawa, through which it passes. This road enters Ottawa county from the east at the southeast corner of the town of Wright, and runs in a westerly direction through the townships of Wright, Polkton, Crockery, Spring Lake and Grand Haven. At the latter place the trains connect with steamers for Chicago and Milwaukee. The boats on the Chicago line are owned by the Goodrich Transportation Company, and run only during the summer season. The steamers on the Milwaukee route are owned and managed by the Grand Haven & Milwaukee Railway Company, and consist of the magnificent side wheeled steamer, the City of Milwaukee, which, during the summer season, makes the round trip daily (Sundays excepted) between Milwaukee and Grand Haven, and the propellers, Michigan and Wisconsin, both fine sea-going steamers, which have a carrying capacity of one thousand tons each. These steamers run the year round. Of course they are frequently delayed by ice during the winter months. In the year 1882 no less than 196,259 tons of freight was transferred between the steamboats and cars at Grand Haven, giving employment to an average of seventy-five men the year round, at $1.50 per day each. The greater portion of this freight was carried across the lake during the winter months. In the month of January, that year, no less than 25,000 tons of flour, grain, lard, pork and general merchandise were carried by those boats between Milwaukee and Grand Haven.

In the year 1871 the Milwaukee & St. Paul Railroad Company, the Engleman Transportation Company and several Detroit parties built an elevator at Grand Haven, at a cost of about $35,000, for the purpose of transferring grain from the boats to the cars. The storage capacity of the elevator was 35,000 bushels, and was capable of unloading grain from the boats at the rate of 3,000 bushels an hour. In July, 1875, this elevator was entirely destroyed by fire. The same year another elevator, with double the storage capacity, was built on the site of the old one. The railroad company has a very extensive river front, and of late years they have extended their docks and largely increased the facilities for handling freight at Grand Haven. The Detroit & Milwaukee Railway Company failed to earn enough money to pay the interest upon its bonds, consequently a foreclosure and sale took place, and on the 24th of October, 1860, the company was reörganized as the Detroit & Milwaukee Railroad Company. In November, 1873, the earnings of the road again proved to be insufficient to pay the interest upon its bond-ed debt, and in 1875, its president, the Honorable C. C. Trowbridge, was, by the court, appointed receiver of the road, and remained in possession of it until November, 1878. The road was again sold, and the present company organized under the name of the Detroit, Grand Haven & Milwaukee Railway Company. The road now came under the immediate management of the Great Western Railway of Canada, and remained so until February, 1883, when the Great Western and Grand Trunk Railway of Canada amalgamated, and since then the road has been operated by the Grand Trunk Railway Company. In locating stations on the line of this railway the county of Ottawa was very liberally supplied, no fewer than seven stations being furnished Ottawa county, and all located within a distance of twenty-two miles. One and a half miles east of Grand Haven is Ferrysburg, where connection is made with the Chicago and West Michigan railroad for Muskegon, Pentwater, and the north, Holland, Allegan, New Buffalo, Chicago, and all points south and west, and here are located the extensive foundry and machine shops known as the Ottawa iron works. Three-quarters of a mile further east is the Spring Lake station; the principal shipments from here are lumber and fruit. The Cutler and Savage Lumber Company ship very extensively from this station. As far back as 1873 this company made application at one time for three hundred cars, to load with lumber, agreeing to load them as fast as furnished. Six and a half miles east of Spring Lake, in the town of Crockery, is the village of Nunica; the shipments from here are chiefly farm produce. Four and a half miles further east is Dennison's station, in the township of Polkton, and next comes Coopersville station. Three miles from Dennison's, also in the town of Polkton, is Coopersville, the principal station between Grand Haven and Grand Rapids, and being surrounded by a fine agricultural country, it has developed into a thriving village of nearly 1,000 inhabitants. A large amount of farm produce is shipped from this station. Six miles southeast of Coopersville is the Berlin station, in the town of Wright; a large amount of grain, apples, and other farm products are shipped from here. Shortly after leaving Berlin the railroad enters Kent county, about seven miles from Grand Rapids.

At this distance of time we can scarcely realize the wonderful improvements which have been made in the mode of travel since the Rev. W. M. Ferry and Mr. Pierre Duvernay, with their families, arrived at the mouth of the Grand River. Then no superb coaches, luxuriant dining cars, palatial parlor and magnificent sleeping cars were running all over the country in every direction; the luxuries of modern travel were then unknown. First-class hotels and post-offices had not commenced to run on wheels at the rate of forty or fifty miles an hour, as they do upon the railroads of the present day. The most common mode of travel then was behind a slow ox team in a rough wagon, and jolted over roads which made no pretensions at being graded. To-day it takes less time to make a trip from Grand Haven to Europe and return than it took fifty years ago to go to Detroit and back. Now we can eat an early breakfast with our family and be in Detroit in time for an early dinner, have four hours in which to transact business, and reach Grand Haven the same evening. To be in Grand Haven to-day and New York city to-morrow is nothing wonderful nowadays, and it is possible for the farmer in Ottawa county to have his wheat in the English market two weeks after being cut down by the reaper.

Railroads, telegraph and telephone wires have so annihilated distance that the citizens of Ottawa county have long ago ceased to think that they are isolated from the rest of the world. The superior railroad and steamboat advantages which the people in Ottawa county enjoy place them within easy reach of any part of the United States.

Besides the Detroit, Grand Haven and Milwaukee Railway, which passes through the county from east to west, the Chicago and West Michigan Railway and branches traverses the county from north to south and east to west. The history of this railway only dates back to 1867. In that year a company was formed in Muskegon to construct a railroad between Ferrysburg, in Ottawa county, and Muskegon, in Muskegon county, a distance of about 15 miles. This road was opened for traffic in December, 1869, and was the first railroad to enter Muskegon, and was known as the Muskegon and Ferrysburg Railroad. February 3, 1869, a company was formed, called the Grand Rapids and Lake Shore Railroad Company, to build a railroad from Grand Rapids to Pentwater, by the way of Muskegon, and during 1870 the road was constructed from Nunica to Muskegon. On the 23d of April, 1867, a company was organized to construct a railroad from New Buffalo to St. Joseph, Michigan. This company was known as the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad Company. On the 25th of June, the same year, another company was organized to build a road from St. Joseph to Muskegon. This was known as the Lake Shore Railroad of West Michigan.

July 29, the same year, these two corporations consolidated, and the road from New Buffalo to Nunica took the name of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad. August 17, 1870, the Grand Rapids and Lake Shore railroad became the property of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad Company. In the same year the road from New Buffalo was opened for traffic to Muskegon. This road entered Ottawa county a few miles south of Holland, and ran north through the towns of Holland, Olive, Robinson and Crockery, and had stations at Holland, Ottawa, Spoonville and Nunica. In 1869 a company was organized to construct a railroad from Allegan to Grand Haven. This organization took the name of the Michigan Lake Shore Railroad Company. The same year the Muskegon and Ferrysburg Railroad consolidated with this road, and the consolidated roads took the name of the Michigan Lake Shore Railroad. This road was opened for traffic between Allegan and Muskegon in 1870. The Michigan Lake Shore Railroad failed to earn money enough to pay the interest on its bonds, and in 1874 Mr. D. P. Clay, of Grand Rapids, was appointed receiver by the court, and he continued in charge of the road until October 15, 1878, when the road was sold under foreclosure of mortgage. It was bid in by the bondholders, the original stockholders getting nothing. The company was reörganized as the Grand Haven Railroad Company in 1881. The control of the stock passed into the hands of those interested in the Chicago and West Michigan Railway, and became a portion of the main road of the Chicago and West Michigan system. This road has six stations located in Ottawa county within a distance of 20 miles.

The road enters the county about the middle of the north boundary line of the town of Spring Lake, and runs south through the towns of Spring Lake, Grand Haven, Olive and Holland. The first station from the north is Ferrysburg, in the town of Spring Lake. At this station is the junction of the Detroit, Grand Haven & Milwaukee Railroad, and close connection is made with all passenger trains on that road. From Ferrysburg to Grand Haven, a distance of one mile, trains of the Chicago & West Michigan Railway Company run over the track of the Detroit, Grand Haven & Milwaukee Railway Company. All trains stop at Grand Haven station. About six miles south of Grand Haven is Jonesville station. The principal shipments from here are bark, logs, lumber and ties. Next station reached is West Olive, then North Holland, and about six miles further south is Holland Station, which is one of the most important stations on the Chicago & West Michigan Railway. By honest toil and steady perseverance, the industrious Hollanders have effected wonderful changes in the town of Holland since the year 1846. They have turned the wilderness into fruitful fields, and beautiful homes adorn the township. Large shipments of grain, hay, flour, butter, eggs and other farm products are made from this station. The city of Holland enjoys rare advantages, being surrounded by a rich agricultural country, and has railroad and lake facilities very rarely surpassed. It has Lake Michigan on the west, and direct railroad communication with the north, south, east and west. In 1870 a company was organized to build a railroad from Grand Rapids, in Kent county, to Holland, in Ottawa county.

This company was known as the Grand Rapids and Holland Railroad Company. October 1, 1871, this road was consolidated with the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad.

This road enters Ottawa county about the middle of the east boundary line of the town of Georgetown, and traverses the county in a southwesterly direction through the towns of Georgetown, Jamestown, Zeeland, and Holland. The principal shipments from these stations are hay, grain, flour, butter, eggs, and other farm produce.

For the construction of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad and its branches mortgages had been given, and, in November, 1876, a bill was filed in the United States court to foreclose the mortgages, the company having failed to pay the interest on its bonds. Mr. George C. Kimball, who was general manager of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, was by the court appointed receiver for the entire property. At the sale of those roads, Charles Francis Adams, jr., of Boston, bid them in for the bondholders, and on the 1st day of October, 1881, the company was reörganized and took the name of the Chicago and West Michigan Railway Company. The new organization abandoned the road from Holland to Fruitport, and took up the track, much to the injury of the settlers along the line of that portion of the railroad. In 1873 the Michigan and Ohio Railroad Company surveyed and graded the track, from the city of Grand Haven for some distance through Ottawa county, but failing to place the bonds of the company in London, the further construction of the road was abandoned, leaving many of the citizens of Grand Haven poorer if not wiser. No doubt but this road will be finished some day, just when I do not know. According to the official railroad guide, dated July, this year, no fewer than twenty-two passenger trains are run daily (Sundays excepted) through the county of Ottawa, eight are run over the Detroit, Grand Haven and Milwaukee Railway, and fourteen over the Chicago and West Michigan Railway and branches. Fourteen of these trains stop at Holland and sixteen at Grand Haven, and the Grand Haven postoffice sends out eight mails daily (except Sundays) and receives the same number. No invention of the last hundred years has done so much for the improvement of the human race as railroads. They are generally well managed, and comparatively few accidents occur on them; especially is this true of the Michigan railroads.

COMMERCE AND SHIP BUILDING OF OTTAWA COUNTY

BY HENRY GRIFFIN

The commerce of Grand Haven and Ottawa county dates its commencement from the year 1825. In that year Rix Robinson, the agent of the American Fur Company, came to the mouth of Grand River and established a trading post. He brought with him supplies of such merchandise as was suited to the wants of the Indians, and commenced a traffic with them, exchanging his goods for their furs and skins.

The first general storehouse and dock was erected at the foot of Franklin street by the commercial house, composed of Rix Robinson, Nathan H. White, Luke A. White, and Dr. Williams, in the year 1835, and in 1837 the writer examined the establishment. The building was about 30x100 feet, and the dock in front perhaps twenty feet in the river. The basement was filled with several hundred barrels of Ohio flour, worth $10 per barrel, and a poor quality at that, and pork and beef $20 to $30. The first floor, with front on Water street, was well stored with dry goods, groceries, and Indian goods, such as blankets, blue calico, cheap blue broadcloth, etc., purchased in New York. The second story had a great variety of supplies to furnish new settlers, composed of hardware, feathers, house and shanty furniture, etc., etc.

The lands on the north side of the Grand River were not yet in market, and the new settlers were all on preëmption or squatter's rights. In 1837 every pine bluff on the river was occupied by a shingle shanty for making shingles with froe and draw knife. These shingles were practically a legal tender for payment of debts or for any kind of traffic.

Louis Campau erected the first forwarding warehouse below Franklin street in the bend of the river, and Tom Louis kept it a few years and run a line of pole boats between that port and Grand Rapids; these boats were used as barges after a steamboat was built.

In 1836 the Gilberts built a large scow to supply the Buffalo steamers calling occasionally at this port with cord wood. The wood was cut where Spring Lake is situated, and at other places on the river. Gilbert & Co.

were also forwarding and commission merchants before 1840. David Carver came here in 1835, with C. B. Albee as clerk, and built a warehouse and dock, on Water street, and the dwelling on Franklin street, owned and occupied for years by William Wallace.

A Mr. Stearns built a warehouse in 1836, purchased afterwards by C. B. Albee, who was for many years in the forwarding business with Mr. Ebenezer Barnes as clerk, and kept a store in the same large warehouse, on the lots where now stands the Detroit, Grand Haven and Milwaukee R. R. depots.

From 1839 to 1849 we had only three general stores in Grand Haven, all situated on Water street, in the warehouses, viz., first, Rev. W. M. Ferry, who had a general store in 1840 foot of Franklin street, C. B. Albee, Frank B. and Tom D. Gilbert. All carried on about the same kind of general trade in merchandise, lumber, and shingles.

More than forty years ago Mr. Dwight Cutler emigrated from Massachusetts to Grand Haven. He soon after entered the store of F. B. Gilbert & Co. as boy of all work. In March, 1850, in connection with B. F. Haxton and H. L. Waits, the firm of Haxton, Cutler & Waits was organized and bought out the Gilberts, who then removed to Grand Rapids. Haxton afterwards withdrew from the firm and Albert Stegeman entered it, and the firm became Cutler, Waits & Stegeman. Stegeman left the firm and commenced business for himself in the building owned by C. B. Albee. Waits afterwards sold his interest to Cutler, who then removed the store to corner of Washington and First streets. About 1863 Mr. Cutler sold out to Sheldon & Slayton. The last named firm dissolved in 1870.

The first general store on Washington street was built by Henry Griffin in 1849.

The first regular hardware store was established by George E. Hubbard, corner of Washington and First streets, about thirty years ago, and soon after our city organization Mr. Hubbard built the brick block now occupied by Rosebom & Paff Bros. One of the early Indian traders who came here from Mackinac with Rev. W. M. Ferry in 1834 was Mr. Pierre C. Duvernay, and in 1837 he had a snug little store at the foot of Franklin street, well filled with Indian blankets, blue broadcloth and calicos; also barrels of salt whitefish and siskowit, mococks of maple sugar and cranberries.

In 1871 A. M. Dickee and N. B. White had a hardware store corner Washington and Second streets. Howlet's block, since built on that corner, is now occupied by Hully & Dickinson as a drug and book store, and by Roswell H. Lee, jewelry, etc. More than twenty years ago J. C. Avery kept a jewelry store on Washington street, near Oddfellow's Hall, and now engaged in the wholesale and retail tobacco trade and manufacture of cigars, in company with Mr. George E. Hubbard.

Jacob Van Der Veen, druggist, and Willian Meras, a grocer and baker, occupy the Oddfellows' Block.

The first vessel employed regularly in the lumber and passenger business between Grand Haven and Chicago was the good schooner "St. Joseph," which arrived here in 1836 from Buffalo with several families, and among them five brothers of the Hon. Rix Robinson, with their families, numbering forty-two persons.

Capt. Harry Miller commanded the "St. Joseph" several years; also the "Caroline," built in 1811 and used as a supply vessel to Commodore Perry's fleet on Lake Erie, and was rebuilt for the lumber trade by the owner after purchasing her from the United States Government.

Capt. Miller also sailed the propeller "Ottawa," the first lake steamer built by Major Ferry & Son for the lumber and passenger trade with Chicago.

Capt. Miller commanded the splendid brig "Enterprise," built at Spring Lake in 1844 by the Messers. Barber & Mason. It was estimated that at least a thousand persons were present on the day she was launched. In December of that year the "Enterprise" loaded with lumber at Barber & Mason's mill and left port for Chicago. Mr. Barber, Silas Hopkins and Mr. Hams were among the passengers. The vessel was overtaken with a violent snow storm which lasted nearly a week. They were driven to the head of Lake Michigan. The deck load was deeply covered with ice and the sails frozen stiff. Here they found anchorage. Capt. Harry ("Bluff" as he was called) exclaimed, "She rides! she rides!" Seeing a movement toward letting down the ship's boat and Hopkins tying his pants to his boots, the captain says, "Sile, what are you going to do?" The reply was, "I am going ashore." Mr. Barber says, "Let the vessel go ashore." Raising a handspike above his head the captain said, "The first one that puts his hand on that boat will be a dead man," exclaiming to the owner, "I command this vessel while on the lake, when we arrive in Chicago you may do what you please with her." The wind and weather changed soon after, and sure enought he safely brought the brig and cargo in the harbor of Chicago, and said, "Now, Mr. Parbor, your brig is safe; do what you like mit her." About half the people of the city were on hand to see the vessel. Later the Captain owned and sailed the schooner "Ocean."

The schooner "Victory," a small vessel of perhaps 60 tons burden, owned and commanded by Capt. William McIntosh, arrived here from Toronto through the Welland Canal, bringing the material for building the Nortonville saw mill, and subsequently she was employed in carrying lumber from the Butts & Hathaway mill, the first saw-mill built in Grand Haven, on the lots where the D., G. H. & M. R. R. depot is now situated. Col. Amos Norton went as passenger on the "Victory" to Waukegan. Now the Colonel was rather famous for telling long stories. He happened on one of them in a barber shop, which was so lengthy that the vessel sailed without him. On that trip she was overtaken with a sudden and terrific storm. The vessel capsized and the captain and all on board were lost.

The schooner New Hampshire, capacity one hundred thousand feet of lumber, owned by Captain John Warren and Ebenezer Burns, was a regular trader forty years ago. The scow vessel "Crook," was owned by C. B. Albee in 1850; her flat bottom was built of solid timber and planked over. Your writer once went passenger on the "Crook," bound for Chicago. Coming near the land in a gale of wind from the north, the captain (Noyes) hove to under jib and foresail, a dense fog prevailing. We rode the tremendous waves for hours; taking a berth, I was quickly rolled out. After the sea went down we made for Chicago without losing a board or a shingle. Subsequently, Mr. Albee and Captain Noyes built the good schooner "Vermont," about one hundred tons, and a regular trader at this point for many years. Finally, returning from Chicago, late in the fall, with a cargo of grain and provisions, she ran ashore at Little Pigeon and was wrecked. The owner, crew and passengers were saved with a basket swinging on a cable. The schooner "Illinois," owned by the Gilberts, ran several years from the saw-mill owned by Nathan Throop, and sold to the Gilberts, and by them sold to Ferry & Son, and by them sold to Wyman & Buswell, and destroyed by fire just in time to furnish the ground required by the Detroit, Grand Haven & Milwaukee Railroad Company for their depot, foot of Washington street. In 1849 the steamer "Champion," Captain McBride, ran from this port to Milwaukee, and the "Detroit," ran to Chicago. Doth these boats were built in Detroit by the senior Ward.

In 1850 the commerce of the country required a larger class of vessels. Messrs. Ferry & Son built the "Telegraph," the "Amanda," the "Magic," the "Emeline," the "Noah Ferry" and the steam propeller "Ottawa." The "New Era," a steam propeller, was built at Eastmanville, by Galen Eastman, and is used for towing of barges to Chicago. Of late, the fine large vessel called the "Wyman," owned by Charles Wyman, and the three-masted schooners called the "Macy" and "Hunter Savage," owned by the Cutler & Savage Lumber Company, are among our first-class lumber vessels.

In 1852 the schooner "Pioneer" was built at Spring Lake by H. Griffin, and Captain Chaloner placed in command. She was a very strong vessel, about 100 tons burthen. Bought by Ferry & Son in 1850, and by them sold to

Holland parties, and carried lumber for eighteen years with few repairs. The "Michigan Belle" was built about the same time at Spring Lake, by Mr. N. H. White and Mr. George Parks. Messrs. A. & G. L. Norton built a 250 ton brig in 1854, for their mill business at Nortonville.

The "Olive Richmond," Captain Munroe, was a large brig owned by Hopkins Brothers of Spring Lake, carrying lumber from three mills at Spring Lake several years. The brig. "Sebastopol" was owned by Charles Pagleson and Captain Harry Smith, and did a good business before the day of steam tugs and barges. If the wind was not fair, the jolly boat of the vessels, with a hawser and all hands, with the captain to steer, pulled the vessel in or out of the harbor. The brig "E. B. Morgan," built at Grand Rapids by Amos Rathbun and finished here, was a large vessel for the lower lake trade and several others built at Chicago for the Grand River lumber trade. The class of tugs, ships and steamers, built during the past ten years at our two ship yards in the first ward, by Captain Kirby, and by Duncan Robinson, are widely and well known for the beauty of their models. The largest, the "H. C. Akely," made many trips to Escanaba with over a thousand tons of iron ore for the blast furnace on Spring Lake. This vessel left Chicago with a load of grain in 1883, was unfortunately injured in her machinery during one of the most violent storms on Lake Michigan and foundered; the crew of twelve men were saved by the gallant Miller boys of the schooner "Drover," risking their own lives, thus exhibiting the greatest pluck and daring. Worthy sons of a noble sire.

The Litchfield Lumber Company built three fine vessels on the river, one of them, the "Major Anderson," loaded here with a cargo of walnut lumber, which was sent to Boston through the Welland canal and the St. Lawrence; both cargo and vessel sold to good profit. The propellers "Pocahontas" and "Troy," from Buffalo, brought out New York goods here several years, and loaded with Kent and Ionia county wheat before the day of railroads. The propeller "Troy" was, subsequently, purchased by Messrs. Cutler and Waits, and ran in the Buffalo trade. The magnificent steamers "Detroit" and "Milwaukee" ran in connection with the Detroit and Michigan Railroad Company, on the opposite side of the river. They were not as well adapted for the winter trade as the iron propellers "Michigan" and "Wisconsin." The change to the city side of the river, with the splendid iron bridges of Spring Lake and Ferrysburg, the elevator, the large brick passenger depot, with immense warehouses and docks, all add largely to our facilities of commerce. Eleven years ago the propeller "Ironsides" foundered near our harbor, with a loss of nineteen persons. Since then the sad fate of the "Alpena" is too well known to be detailed here. These awful disasters fully justify the great expense of the railroad company in putting on the route such splendid propellors as are now running, and also the magnificent side-wheel steamer "City of Milwaukee," Captain Smallman.

The first towing tug was the "Mary Bell," bought at Buffalo by Robert Howlet. The second was the "Elisha Bliss," brought to this port by Grosvenor Reed. We now have the "Duncan Robinson," owned by G. W. Miller & Stark, several others owned by Captain Kirby, and half a dozen more employed in the lake fishing business. The first river steamboat was the "Owastanonk" built here by the firm of Robinson, White, Williams & Co., Captain Thomas W. White in command. The "Governor Mason" was built by the Godfreys at Grand Rapids, your writer being one of her passengers on the first trip from Grand Rapids to this port in August, 1837. The "Meshawaukee," "Paragon," "Gazelle," "Humming Bird," "Daniel Ball," the "Olive Branch," a large stern-wheel steamer and others, ran on Grand River, as many as three or four of them at one time carrying freight and passengers from this port to Grand Rapids, and subsequently the steamer "Barrett," built by Mr. Gano, the only one left since the railroad era.

The steam tug "Tempest" did noble work in past years aiding vessels in distress, saving life and property at this port. The tug "Tempest" is now enlarged to a lumber propeller, running from White & Fryant's mill at Nortonville.

In the first ward we have a box, tub, and pail factory, a match factory, and in the fourth ward a large corn planter factory and planing mills. In the second ward Mr. George Parks & Sons built the first steam shingle and planing mill. John W. Hopkins and George Fryant were extensive dealers in lumber and shingles more than thirty years ago. J. A. Leggatt ran a grist mill in the first ward about twenty years ago. The Storrs' mill in the second ward, now owned by Forrest Brothers, does a large trade in flour and feed.

The first banking and exchange office was established on Water street by Ferry & Son, more than thirty years ago, and also by E. L. Fuller. The First National Bank of Grand Haven was organized in Ferry & Son's banking office, August 1, 1874, and was opened in the Cutler house block April 1, 1872. The first president, E. P. Ferry; first and present cashier, Mr. George Stickney; directors, E. P. Ferry, Hunter Savage, Stephen Munroe, Sherman H. Boyce, Robert Howlet, H. C. Akeley, Charles E. Wyman, and T. Stuart White. Five of the orignal names are still members of the board. At the end of the first year the capital was increased from one to two hundred thousand dollars. It now has a surplus fund of ninety-six thousand dollars, paying its stockholders two hundred and forty-five thousand dollars in dividends. It has paid over twenty-five thousand dollars to the United States treasury for taxes, and thirty-four thousand dollars to the city treasury for the same purpose.

MANUFACTURES, ACTUAL AND POSSIBLE

BY GEORGE STICKNEY

Put a man in the middle of a pine forest to chop his way out or starve, and he will most likely become a manufacturer of lumber. Give him in addition, a good harbor on a sea, offering him the whole northwest for a market, at the mouth of a river where he had but to whistle and the logs came down to him—of late the process has not been quite so simple as that—and how can he help but be a successful one? Residents near the mouth of Grand River have been lumber manufacturers willing or unwilling. As they became wealthy and were able to command greater facilities, the slaughter of the innocent pine has been most extensive and magnificent. Grand River and its tributaries for a hundred and fifty miles up have borne us a solid armor of logs in the spring, and the pine boards have gone across Lake Michigan, not simply in vessels, but in long trains of them. I do not know where or when the first saw mill in Ottawa county was built or who built it. Forgive me if my little essay is not one of retrospection, but rather one of introspection and speculation as to the future. I have not yet reached that age when one is said to think backwards only, or even with ease. Am still looking forward and wondering what we shall achieve, and doing so with much hope and enthusiasm, based on our superb advantages and capacity. Let the older people write the history of our county; I prefer to assist in the making of history a while longer. Goethe wrote: "Festivities are fit for what is happily concluded. At the commencement they but waste the force and zeal which should inspire us in the struggle, and support us through a long continued labor." Let this occasion be to the older ones who have accomplished a half century of work in Ottawa county, in clearing the ground and making so grand a beginning for us, a celebration. Let it be something else to us who have work left in us.

We have been very busy harvesting this wonderful crop of pine, the result of a growth the necessary time for which no man knoweth. We are almost at the end of our harvest, and I cannot see how our harvest-home can be celebrated with much jollity. The peripatetic laborer who on such an occasion knows that when the feast and the dance are ended he must go forth from the farmer's comfortable roof and wander until God turns the dial from the autumn fruits to the winter frosts, and the budding spring, and the growing summer, and the harvest again, must find some alloy in his employment though he knows the harvest and its reward will come again. What must be the feeling of one who goes forth knowing that for him there will be no more harvest? Not many years more, and our prestige as a shipping point for pine will have gone, and the fifteen or twenty saw mills within a radius of a few miles of Grand Haven will have become useless. The capital that runs them, and the men that work them will find other homes, or else other avenues of employment. We must answer the question as to which of these expedients shall result, and upon its being answered correctly depends to some extent our future. It is but natural that those who have spent their lives in mastering the intricacies of lumber manufacture, shall many, perhaps most of them, seek other fields in which to use their already acquired experience, and with them will go more or less of the capital acquired here. Then will come the time which must decide of what we are made; whether we have the natural advantages, the grit, and the enterprise that shall attract new interests which shall insure our future prosperity. Even from now hence we cannot retain our present wealth depending wholly on the lumber traffic. So absorbed have we been with the lumber harvest, that we have had but little time for agriculture, and really know but little of the possibilities of Ottawa county in this respect. Those who have posed as farmers have very many of them spent a good portion of their time in the lumber woods, and made the occupation of farming a secondary one. Once rid of saw logs, and the temporarily increased remuneration their marketing affords, and our labor will be directed to many things which will secure a more permanent prosperity, and among these, I reckon a more intelligent and industrious cultivation of the soil. And what, do you ask, has this to do with our manufactures? It is a common and truthful remark that with the exception of the one item of rent it costs more to live in Grand Haven than in a large city. This will be true until our farmers are more prosperous, and our business streets are lined daily with their wagons, bringing in their products and spending the proceeds with our merchants, and so increasing their ability to supply their wares in a variety and at a price to meet our needs. Until this is the case, mechanics cannot afford to work at a price paid by our neighbors. We can do something in this direction by removing the unnatural obstruction of a toll bridge. Then our being so absorbed in lumber production has been a hindrance, almost a positive bar to the encouragement of other branches of manufacture. It has offered such a superior profit to the proprietor, and wages to the laborer—I say laborer instead of mechanic or artisan because comparatively little skilled labor is required in the manufacture of lumber—as to prevent much success in other branches of production by its side. One of the most experienced and successful lumbermen in Grand Haven said recently in my hearing that he doubted the success of any other branch of manufacture in the place until we had done with the lumber. And we are getting done with the lumber. What then? The indications are that three of our leading mills will not be stocked this winter. What will take their place? One trouble in employing the men released from the saw mills will be that it is not skilled or intelligent labor yet it has come to command a price higher than what we used to call common labor. It is one of the phases of the newer mechanical labor, that fewer persons are masters of their trade, and those who profess its mastery are workers in a more limited department than of old. Coöperation is so applied as to almost make a machine of the mechanic. So great an elaboration of the principle of coöperation, is a misfortune to a community of limited means both in money and ability, in that to successfully compete with older and richer localities, it must organize an establishment on an extensive scale. Once a town of this size would have required fifty shoemakers to meet the home demand. Now a piece of leather is put in a machine in some monster factory, quite often located within the walls of a State prison, and comes out a boot or shoe; or something they call one, for often it does not deserve the name. Once the blacksmith not only fitted the horse shoe, but made it with his hammer. He seldom does this now. Was a bolt or a nut wanted? He made them in the same manner. Now he who needs them buys at the hardware store, of the size and construction he wants, turned out by complicated machinery, at the lowest cost. Once the wagon maker was an important factor in the community. Now he and the shoemaker and the blacksmith are simply cobblers. The only way to get our share in the world's work is to do as the rest are doing—unite our money and our skill in some great work. Such experiments—and an attempt of this kind under the best of circumstances is always more or less of an experiment—cost money; lots of it. They cost a life time of wear and exertion on the part of those who undertake them, and it would astonish those of us who only see the surface facts to know how many such enterprises fail, and blast the prospects of many lives. We would be surprised to know how many manufacturing establishments in sister towns which are acquiring the titles of manufacturing towns, never paid a dividend, and are dragging out a precarious existence. To the uninitiated they seem all prosperity, but a settling time must come with them sooner or later. Their only good accomplished—and it is a good—is the employment of labor; but people cannot build factories for such philanthropic reasons, and ought not if they could. And with this condition of things, the laborer, more likely than not, regards his employer as his enemy, and pits himself against him on every possible occasion, when he is the best, and perhaps the only real friend he has in the world. However inappropriate it may be to this time and place, I cannot lose it to denounce the unprincipled demagogues who for purely selfish ends are doing what they can to estrange labor and capital. The uncertainty of the labor factor is one of the great hindrances to the investment of money in manufactures to-day. I do not say its cost, but its fickleness. Free speech and labor are two of the fundamentals of our government. It is an outrage that one should be so much used as of late for the destruction of the other. No other essential to industrial prosperity is so timid as capital, and rightly so, for it is the first and surest sufferer from disaster. The worker always has his hands and his legs and his brains left whatever happens. The wealth that furnishes him employment may be here to-day blessing him with its kindly assistance, and to-morrow it may be gone. The great risks incident to a manufacturing enterprise, will of course not be undertaken for the sake of philanthropy, or the general prosperity. The inducement to do so must be a selfish one, and yet it is no more selfishness than if you or I work with our hands for the future of ourselves and our families. Offer our men of means a project that seems, to those able to judge of such matters, a prospect of returns and back it by the skill and business ability, and honesty necessary to success, and their part of the capital will come readily. Our people have had experience enough with a class of peripatetic incompetent beggars with pail factories, basket factories, iron works, patent milking stools, etc., who are ready to undertake almost any wild experiment, if somebody else will but furnish all the money and take all the risk. I could not count on my fingers the number of adventurers who have been anxious to build gas works for us if the people would furnish the money, and the city give them a fat contract. Finally I believe we are to have gas furnished us on business principles. A man has come among us who simply says, "I have gas to sell. Will you buy it at a fair rate?" It also looks as though we may get water without having quite to mortgage our future existence. Still the burden that is to come on us in the shape of increased taxation is more worth considering than some people suspect. Two years ago the writer had occasion to advertise an investment in several newspapers devoted to milling purposes. In almost every one of the numerous letters of inquiry in answer to the advertisement a leading question was, "What are your taxes in Grand Haven?" I was able to answer "They have ranged from one to one and one-half per cent; never more than one and one-half." This was a rate lower than the average of towns of our size, and had a tendency to influence investors in our favor. I doubt not that with our water and our gas, our street improvement bonds, and the dozen and one similar necessities for which we must pay in the future, such a representation can never be made again. For the last two years our tax has been at nearly twice the former rate. Still it is much lower than some of our neighboring, and in some respects, rival places. If we consult our interests as a community wishing an accretion of wealth from elsewhere, we will oppose with all our powers any attempt to increase the recent rates. Listen to the moans of some of our tax ridden neighbors who are paying double Grand Haven rates, and congratulate yourselves that it is no worse. It makes a very great difference whether the infant manufactories we have shall pay two or five per cent of their investment to the tax gatherer. Whether their experiment succeed or not may depend on this. And it will make a greater difference in our ability to attract new capital.

And it is upon the prosperity of these little enterprises now struggling for an existence that our future as a manufacturing community mostly depends. Their failure will discourage the coming of others. Their prosperity will advertise our advantages, and will necessitate an increase of their capacity, and their consequent usefulness. Of modest manufactories we have many. We have a flour mill whose sales average nearly five hundred dollars a day. We have iron works employing many skilled mechanics, and whose business is only limited by its means. We have two ship yards which have built many vessels comparing favorably with the production of older and richer builders all around the lakes. The cheapness and ease of procuring material here makes me confident of an immense increase of this industry. We have two cigar manufactories constantly extending their business. A tub and fish pail factory has struggled through many trials and is building up an extensive and profitable trade. A manufactory of stretcher stock and other artists' material, and of many other wooden utensils is retaining most of their patronage laid down by the loss of the Stearns factory by fire a year ago. Something more than a year ago a man came here and started a match factory in rented quarters. It has been advertised that that monster monopoly, the Diamond Match Company, would crush out every concern not working in its interest. Croakers, and I was one of them, said he could not succeed. He has succeeded. A partial loss of his rented quarters by fire, has emboldened him to build larger, and safer, on his own ground. I look for match making to become one of the staple industries of Grand Haven. A few years ago a company was formed here for the manufacture of a corn planter. It spent its capital in perfecting its patents, and in advertising and introducing its machine, and so built up a profitable business, in the meantime buying much dear experience. A year ago the company was reorganized, and fresh capital used to put its matters on a sound basis. It is about commencing the manufacture of some other agricultural implements in addition to its planter, and looks forward to almost certain prosperity, and a large increase to its labor employing power. At the head of Spring Lake, and just across the line, in Muskegon county, but tributary to us, and not Muskegon county, has been established a large iron ore smelting furnace. Our superior shipping facilities have enabled it to succeed, notwithstanding the depression in the iron trade, while many others, and notably one located inland in an adjoining county, has been compelled to suspend work and liquidate. It disburses about ten thousand dollars a month in this vicinity for freight, labor and fuel.

The town of Holland with about half our population has about as much invested in manufactures outside of lumber as Grand Haven. The more prominent of its investments are two large flour mills, two tanneries, a tub factory, and a stave factory.

I have enumerated some of the leading enterprises to which Ottawa county owes its prosperity other than that of the lumber manufacture. A word about our facilities for future and increased prosperity and I am done. We have without exception, unless it be Traverse Bay, away down north, and which God built and man has not improved, the best harbor on Lake Michigan, at the mouth of the grandest river in the west. We have the best of railroad advantages north, east and south. Our forests are full of woods suitable for almost every commodity to be made from them. We are midway between the iron fields of the Upper Peninsula, and the coal fields of Ohio and Pennsylvania, on what may be made a great thoroughfare between them. Lake Michigan may bring us one, and the new direct road to Toledo the other, to be manufactured here and distributed to the markets of the West with an ease exceeded by no other point. No other commodity is now so sick as iron. In addition to the general depression that is being felt so severely in all departments, iron is the pampered, coddled, over-fed and dyspeptic baby of our would-be maternal government. It may be many years before any intelligent business man or set of men will dare to make further investment in iron manufacture. When its over indulgent parent shall realize that iron is of age and ought to be stripped of its swaddling clothes and made to take care of itself, and it shall thereby become the healthy adult it ought long ago to have been the American market for it will have become almost doubled thereby, and I look to see rolling mills and their adjuncts in Grand Haven, and see them prosperous.

One of our citizens has invented and patented some valuable improvements of the ordinary brass clock, and is already in receipt of considerable offers for them. There is not a clock factory in the west. There are several prosperous watch factories. Why may not Grand Haven be a pioneer in the manufacture of clocks? I am assured by one in a position to know, the business is not overdone, but in a healthy condition.

If iron is king, wood is queen, and we may revel in her smiles if we will. We must not wait for her to call us. She is too much courted, and too coy withal for that. We must woo her with all our might; do it intelligently and manfully, and she will come. There is almost no end to the good things in the way of wood working that may be had if we strive for them.

Let us bear in mind that capital will not be at our service unless we have something plainly to its advantage to offer, and then it may be had for the asking; that a three month's experience in a commercial college, so called, does not make a business man—I wish boys understood better that it does not even make an accountant; that labor, even skilled labor, may not dictate to capital, that it must always be its servant—not slave—or starve. These three conditions better understood and acted upon, and I believe we may come through the certain trial in store for us, during the transition from being slaughterers of pine trees to a community of mechanics and artisans, victorious.

BUILDINGS OF OTTAWA COUNTY; PAST, PRESENT AND FUTURE

BY B. F. CURTIS

When Ottawa county was organized in 1838, it included in its boundaries not only what is now Ottawa but also Muskegon county. It was then comparatively one dense wilderness, with a few families settled in Grand Haven, and a very sparse white population scattered throughout its territory.

Grand Haven was then a small hamlet consisting of but a few families, and there were no public buildings, except a school-house of about twenty-four by thirty feet, which still stands on Second street.

Modern civilization teaches that among the first wants of every new community are the church, to reclaim the sinful; the school-house, to educate the children; the court-house, to try the violators of the law and settle the disputed rights between man and man; and the jail to confine and punish the criminal violators of the law.

The country being new and the county poor, it was not able to provide for all these wants at once. But experience early taught them that a jail was absolutely necessary. So the first public building erected in the county was a small block jail on First street, somewhere in the vicinity of the present residence of F. Bechtel. This was used until about the year 1847, when the growth of population and the increase of crime rendered it necessary to have a larger and safer place to confine criminals. In that year a jail was built, under the supervision of Mr. John W. Barnes, I believe, on the public square a little northwest of where the present jail now stands. This is known as the old jail.

It was a modest one and a half story building, sufficiently large for the residence of the sheriff or jailer, with a small family. The portion of the building allotted to the confinement of prisoners was built of hewn white oak timber, matched at the ends, and bolted together with iron bolts. This was a convenient and safe place of confinement, and sufficiently large for the wants of the county, which then contained a population of 8,000 or 10,000.

But as time went on and the population increased, criminals increased with it, and it was found too small, as well as unsafe and unhealthy. The question of erecting a new jail was agitated a number of years, when finally, in 1870, it was determined to build one, and the present jail is the result. The residence portion of it is a very handsome two story building, and very conveniently arranged for the residence of the sheriff or jailer. The prison proper is in the rear, or south, of the dwelling, and is twenty-four by twenty-seven feet. Adjoining the dwelling in the second story is a room for the confinement of the less dangerous characters and for female prisoners, when there are any; but, to the credit of the sex, very few have found a lodgment there. Connected with the jail is the city lock-up, and the jail proper has a floor of three-inch plank, and the whole, bottom, top and sides, is lined with boiler iron, spiked on. It has also six iron cells, in which prisoners are confined for the night. The arrangement for heating and ventilation are good, and it was intended to make it a perfectly safe prison. It has proved not to be so; for prisoners, by one device or another, have from time to time escaped. Various repairs have been made for safety, and in the fall of 1844 the space beneath the floor was filled with cemented gravel, so that tunneling is now well nigh impossible.

But the jail is not large enough. There should be but one prisoner in a cell; and the six cells are not sufficient, when, as is sometimes the case, there have been from twelve to sixteen prisoners in jail at once. Additional room and cells, as the years advance, will be indispensable.

The old school-house on Second street was for many years not only a school-house, but a town house, a church and a court-house, for which last purpose it continued to be used until 1857. But its capacity was entirely inadequate. The county officers were compelled to occupy such rooms as could be procured about town, and records and papers were unsafe. Unavailing efforts were made from time to time to induce the Board of Supervisors to provide for building a new court-house. But there were interests rival to Grand Haven in different parts of the county which hoped to secure the removal of the county seat. These rival interests, while they could not agree upon any single point to which the county seat should be removed, were sufficiently strong to prevent any county appropriation of money tending to make the present location permanent.

To remedy this difficulty, and provide suitable accommodations for the courts and county officers, the citizens of Grand Haven, prominently the Rev. William M. Ferry and Clark B. Albee, raised by subscription the needful funds and built the present court-house, which was completed and occupied in 1857, and is now the property of the county. This building, though a great advance, was never sufficient for the wants of the county. The plan is faulty, and the court-room and county offices all too small to accommodate the business to be done in them.

But the most serious objection to the structure is the want of large fire proof vaults for the preservation of the records and archives of the county. The records of the title deeds in the register's office, the records of the wills and of the settlement of estates in the probate office, the court records and files in the clerk's office, and the records and books of the treasurer's office are of inestimable value to the people of the county, and their loss could not be supplied, and the title to property, in many instances, would be jeopardized, if not destroyed by their loss.

It is true a small vault was built, which has since been enlarged, but it is entirely inadequate to the wants of the county, and is now absolutely full and crowded. The increase of business and population, and the transfer of property, increase the accumulation of record books with great rapidity and require a very large commodious room.

Besides, it is very doubtful whether the present vault is sufficient to protect and preserve the records from fire, situated, as it is on the easterly side of this large wooden and tinder-box structure; while our prevailing lake winds are from the westward. Should a fire occur and the court-house burn during the westerly wind, the vault would be heated with a seven fold heat, and the consequences would undoubtedly be the fatal mutilation, if not entire destruction, of all this accumulation of invaluable matter.

All these considerations have great force, and should secure, at an early day, the erection of a new court-house, with all the conveniences and office necessary, and a suitable fire proof vault. That the county owes it to itself and is abundantly able to make these improvements, is shown by a glance at its statistics. In 1857, when the present court-house was erected, the county contained less than ten thousand inhabitants. Now, at the end of 1884, that population has nearly quadrupled, and the business to be done in the courts and county offices has increased in like proportion, imperatively calling for additional room. At that time the total valuation of the real and personal property of the county was less than three million dollars ($2,869,170). In 1884 that valuation was nearly thirteen and a half millions (13,466,400), an increase of nearly five hundred per cent. To claim, then, that the county is too poor to provide for itself, and take care of its own property, is almost equal to a subterfuge. It certainly demonstrates an old proverb which fitly characterizes it as "Penny wise and pound foolish."

NEWSPAPERS IN OTTAWA COUNTY

BY A. S. KEDZIE

The newspaper is a result of an agency of modern civilization. So is soap; so are a thousand other things. But the newspaper in a very marked degree is a product and instrument of the world's richest and ripest civilization. Without the newspaper modern civilization could come to no full development, nor have the means of wielding its normal forces.

The ancient civilization, helped by orator, academician, and pedagogue; and mediæval civilization, helped by troubadour, balladist, and story-teller; were such civilizations as they could be without the newspaper. But ancient and mediæval civilizations had no such imperious forces at work, nor any such imperative work to do, as mark these later ages.

As might therefore be expected, when the homes of civilized men in the settlement of Ottawa county supplanted the huts of savages, the newspaper was sure to follow.

And yet not immediately. It was not till September, 1850, sixteen years after the settlement of the county, that the first newspaper was published in this county. There were houses to be built, farms to be cleared, towns to be founded, and all the material agencies of business set at work, as the first condition of all better things. Then, in the fulness of time, came the newspaper.

1. The credit of establishing the first belongs to our enterprising sister city, Holland. In September, 1850, *De Hollander* was published by Hawks and Bassett. In 1852 Doesburg & Sons became its publishers. They in 1863 sold to M. Binnehant, with H. Van Eyck editor. He sold to Harm Slag with the same editor. In 1868 M. D. Howard, G. Van Schelven, D. Lideboer and others formed a stock company and bought *De Hollander*. Its files were lost in the great fire of October, 1871. In December of that year William Benjamin became, and yet remains, its publisher, and has carried it into the thirty-fourth volume. Through all its changes it has been Democratic in politics.

2. In July, 1851, ten months after the issue of *De Hollander*, the *Grand River Times* was published in Grand Haven by Barns & Angel, with H. Pennoyer as editor. Like *De Hollander* it was democratic. After a few changes in ownership it was sold to James and John W. Barns, and published by them till December, 1856, when it was sold to Galen Eastman and removed to Eastmanville, then struggling to become the county seat. After a few years it was absorbed by *De Grondwet* at Holland.

3. Five years after the first issue of the *Grand River Times* Henry S. Clubb began the *Ottawa Clarion*, the first Republican paper in the county. It was first published in 1857, three years after the organization of that party. It met with some changes in ownership, and was published till the fall of 1862, when the original publisher and some of his printers went into the army, carrying a more forceful sort of "shooting sticks."*

---

*See Records of Old Settlers, p. 81.

4. In 1857, and for two years longer, *DePaarl,* a religious newspaper, was published at Holland by Meyer & Vorst.

5. *De Wekker* was a small monthly paper published in Holland for two years, beginning in 1857, conducted by the Holland Colony Teachers' Association, in the interest of religious, educational, and missionary work.

6. The next paper in historic order was the *Grand Haven News,* Democratic, founded by J. W. Barns and Mr. Tosha in February, 1858. Twice, in 1859 and 1866, its office was entirely destroyed by fire, yet it survived both conflagrations. Its files being lost, its history is only a matter of recollection. It was leased one year to De Long and Mills, after which, in 1867, it was sold to J. H. Mitchell, and was soon after consolidated with the *News Journal* of Grand Haven.

7. Next in order came the *Ottawa County Register,* in 1859, published at Holland, by Doesburg & Sons, with Henry D. Post as editor. Democratic. After a brief life of two years, it was discontinued.

8. *De Grondwet,* at Holland, in June, 1860, was issued by John Roost, M. Hoogesteger, editor. In February, 1869, Mr. Roost sold to L. Mulder. He and Hoogesteger became publishers. The latter died in 1879, and till March, 1880, P. Shravensande was acting editor. In 1880 L. Mulder bought the right of the Hoogesteger estate in the paper, and has since published it, with Isaac Verney as editor. *De Grondwet* has been Republican from first to last. It was the first paper in the county printed by a steam press, and housed in its own brick building, remodeled for its use. It claims to have a larger circulation than any other two papers in the United States printed in the Dutch language. By the great fire in October, 1871, its files, type, presses and entire property were destroyed; yet it made its regular appearance, though reduced in size.

9. *De Verzamelaar,* a religious paper, was published in Holland, by J. Binnekant, from 1862 to 1865, when it was merged into *De Hope.*

10. In 1863 the *Grand Haven Union* was edited and published by Rev. L. M. S. Smith, with H. C. Akely as a silent partner. Mr. Smith subsequently became sole owner. It was Republican till sold in June, 1872, to Nathan Church, who ran it as a Democratic paper in the Greeley campaign of 1872, after which the *Union* was discontinued, and the material of its office taken to Grand Rapids.

11. The *Searcher* was a religious monthly, published only during 1864, at Holland, by Rev. P. Phelps, President of Hope College.

12. *De Hope,* in Holland, was founded in 1866, by the Council of Hope College, in the interest of liberal education and of the Reformed Churches. It had editorial service at first from Prof. P. J. Oggel; in 1869, from Rev.

E. C. Oggel; in 1871 from Rev. C. Van Der Veen; and after 1872, from a committee of the council of Hope College. Prof. C. Doesburg has been connected with the paper for nearly a score of years. Since July, 1884, Rev. J. H. Karsters has been editor and manager. *De Hope* circulates in nearly all the western States and among Hollanders at the east. Its surplus funds are for Hope College.

13. *De Wachter* began publication at Holland in 1867, under the conduct of C. Vorst. About 1871 he transferred it to the Holland Christian Reformed Church. It now remains in the management of that church as its organ, Revs. G. E. Boer, G. Heniker, and L. G. Hulst, conducting it.

14. The *Grand Haven Herald,* the oldest American newspaper in the county, began publication in August, 1869, by Henry S. Clubb. Through all its history it has advocated republican politics, fruit culture, agricultural and manufacturing interests, and the observance of law and order. From June 7 to December 7, 1872, it was issued as a daily, the only one ever published in the county during the first half century of its history. In December, 1872, it met with a reverse, and passed into the control of C. M. Dickinson, who sold it to S. L. Morris, in March, 1863. In August, 1874, he sold a half interest to C. H. Du Bois, now of the *Minneapolis Spectator,* who, in 1875, had full ownership. He sold to W. S. Benham, June 30, 1877, who continued its publication until he was lost on the ill fated "Alpena," October, 1880. The *Herald* was then published by M. H. Creazer, representing the Benham estate, till March, 1881, when it was sold to Kedzie & Kedzie, its present owners. In May, 1881, they purchased the *Spring Lake Republican* and consolidated it with the *Herald.*

15. The *Spring Lake Independent* was established in 1869 by Lee & Donald. The latter sold his interest to the former in December, 1869. In 1875, H. H. Gibson purchased a half interest, but sold out again in December, 1875, to Lee, who removed the paper to Grand Haven and changed its name.

16. The *Gazetteer,* An American newspaper, was, in the spring of 1871, published at Holland by Dunlap & Hadsell. It was independent in politics and came to an untimely end in the fire of October, 1871.

17. The *Holland City News* was established February 4, 1872, by S. L. Morris, Republican. In January, 1874, G. S. Doesburg assumed control, with G. Van Schelven as editor. It then became and has since remained independent in politics. In July, 1875, G. Van Schelven became proprietor as well as editor. From May, 1876, O. J. Doesburg was in management till February, 1872, when W. H. Rogers became and still remains editor and proprietor.

18. The *Courier Journal* was first published at Nunica in August, 1875.

At the end of two months it was removed to Coopersville. In the spring of 1876 it was removed to Spring Lake, and in July, 1880, to Grand Haven. From its beginning H. Potts has been its editor and proprietor. Independent Democratic till 1884, and since Republican.

19. In July, 1876, the *News Journal* was started at Grand Haven by a union of the *Grand Haven News,* under the control of Mr. Hitchcock, and the *Spring Lake Independent,* under the control of J. G. Lee. By both it was published till January, 1877, when Mr. Hitchcock retired.

20. The *Spring Lake Republican* was published in that village from May, 1879, to May, 1881, by Aloys Bilz, Republican. In May, 1881, it was purchased by Kedzie & Kedzie, and merged into the *Grand Haven Herald.*

21. The *Times* was started at Coopersville in the spring of 1880, by Ed. Smith. For some reason it hardly survived a month.

22. The *Observer* began publication at Coopersville in November, 1880, by M. G. Barns, and still continues under the same management. Independent in politics.

The *Spring Lake Message* was published by C. E. Wasson, from September, 1881, to September, 1883, those dates marking the beginning and end of its life.

This is not a very healthy county for newspapers. According to the record, twenty-three have been published in this county during the last fifty years. Of these, fourteen have died, and only nine survive. The average age of the dead, omitting fractions, is four years, and of the living, sixteen years, just the age of the *Grand Haven Herald.* Counting fractions as full years, the ages of the surviving papers stand in this order:

De Hollander	34	years.
De Grondwet	24	“
De Hope	19	“
De Wachter	18	“
Grand Haven Herald	16	“
Holland City News	13	“
Courier Journal	10	“
News Journal	9	“
Observer	5	“

The aggregate age of newspaper life in this county has been, in round numbers, two hundred years.

In her utterances, attempted and accomplished, Ottawa county has not been backward in giving the world to understand what she thinks. The 10,400 editions of newspapers which she has sent forth, which are mostly taken within her borders, have also, in part, been sent to every State in the union, and to many foreign countries, proclaiming the advantages of this county for settlement, and announcing its enterprises.

This is no time or place to make a plea for giving newspapers a liberal support; yet their feeble life, as seen in the record, shows that they have a very inadequate support. There is not, however, a family in the county whose condition is not bettered by the atmosphere of intelligence and thrift created by the newspapers of the county. Still, here are families in the county whose dull and dreary life is not stirred by the weekly visits of such a paper. And business men there are whose business success, without the newspapers, would be shortened in, yet they do nothing more for their home newspaper than to pay its subscription price.

Of our six Dutch papers, three have died and three lived; while of the seventeen American papers, eleven have died and six survive. The lives of the living Dutch papers average twenty-three years; while the living American papers average only ten years.

The Dutch papers seem to have a more vigorous vitality. The Dutch are marked for their intelligence, as well as for their probity and industry; yet they are not a more reading people than the Americans, though having of reading matter fewer sources of supply.

Many of them are content with the Bible, Psalm-book and one newspaper, the latter thus becoming quite an essential in the family. But few papers, however, are published in that language—only eleven in the United States. Of these, six are published in Michigan, and half of them in Ottawa county. This accounts for the sturdy life of our Hollandish newspapers.

On the other hand, the papers published in the American language in our county, furnish only a small part of the literary food of their readers, and are published in competition with the larger papers of surrounding cities, coming in daily supply. These county papers, therefore, have to struggle for existence. Yet in this, as in other growing counties of this State, the newspaper will struggle for life, if need be, and will work according to its strength, guiding and stimulating the industries of the county, toning its social life, elevating its morals and shaping its political destiny. And by such a course it keeps open the question, as to which is the greatest force, the pulpit or the press.

THE HOLLAND AND GERMAN CHURCHES OF OTTAWA COUNTY

BY REV. HENRY E. DOSKER

"The Holland and German Churches of Ottawa County." Such was the topic assigned to me by the committee of arrangements for this semi-centennial jubilee. Allow me to invert the order, and to briefly treat of the German churches before I sketch in outlines the Dutch ecclesiastical life within our borders. In so doing I come from the smaller to the greater.

Ottawa county numbers comparatively but few Germans. They did not colonize in these parts. They did not immigrate to this State *en masse* as they did to others. The story of their church life is therefore a brief one. Grand Haven is the Teutonic stronghold of this county. This is preëminently a city of churches. It has two German ecclesiastical organizations. The older of the two, the St. John's Church, belongs to the German Evangelical Lutheran denomination.

Early in 1863 Rev. W. Achenbach of Grand Rapids commenced to preach to the Germans of this place, and his successor, Rev. J. L. Dail, organized a church among them on the 8th day of April, 1866, himself becoming the first pastor. In 1871 a number of the members joined themselves into a separate organization, adopting the title, "Reformed Evangelical Lutheran Immanuel's Church of Grand Haven township." In 1883 this church turned into a "Union Church," joining itself to its younger but stronger sister. The successors, in the old church, of Rev. Dail were: Rev. A. M. W. Kachler, who was soon compelled to resign through ill-health; Rev. F. W. Spendler, 1871-1880, who was compelled to resign; and the present pastor, Rev. W. Bürmeister, who has officiated there since September, 1880.

Their day-school affords no mean advantages for the education of their children, and serves to retain them within the church, undoubtedly, however, tending to the detriment of a true American spirit, and a thorough sympathy with American institutions. Their culture and organization is of the true and loyal Lutheran type.

In 1882 a rupture occurred among the members of that church, attributable to many causes and circumstances, which considerably weakened the old church and resulted in the organization of the "Evangelical St. Paul's Church," with its attractive house of worship and considerable numerical strength. It was organized on the 10th of April, 1882. Its pastor, Rev. Christoph Zimmerman, was installed on the 22d of October following, and serves there yet. It severed its connection with the old Missouri Synod, representing a more liberal tendency of life and doctrine.

Both the above named pastors perform outside labor, the one having charge of a small church at Blendon, the other preaching every alternate Sunday afternoon at the above named Immanuel's Church and keeping school there twice weekly, and also at Crockery, where meetings are held in a schoolhouse and monthly preaching services are conducted. Besides these there is a German Lutheran Church in the township of Chester, whose pastor, Rev. O. H. Smith, keeps a day school, besides attending to his other ministerial duties. The aggregate value of their church property is about $10,000, more or less. The life of these German pastors is a laborious one, their salaries being apparently inadequate to the amount of labor performed. The German love of the *heimath* is very pronounced, and their conservatism is even more intense than that of their cousins, the Dutchmen.

To them I come in the second place to tell a longer story, for in them the Church of Christ, in the county of Ottawa, finds its greatest embodiment. The field before me is a wide one and my task congenial. When I come to the Dutch ecclesiastical life in our midst I find a path beaten and well known. The Dutch threads in our social fabric are many, so many indeed as to impart a perceptible line to the whole. And so strong the Dutch hold on our surroundings appears to be, that it will, undoubtedly, give cast to the future of the county, indelibly stamping itself upon the life of the community, and giving it a character equally ineffaceable as that of the early Dutch pilgrims, which stares one in the face almost everywhere in the great metropolis of the country. New York has well preserved the footprints of its early settlers. Ottawa county will never lose, nor lose by the pilgrims of '46 and subsequent years.

Who are these plodders, lying close as an advancing army, on the two lower tiers of townships in Ottawa, and the two upper tiers of townships in Allegan county, and in many other localities besides? They well bear scrutiny. There are many questions to be answered with regard to them. They are but little known yet; slowly, as is their historic habit, asserting themselves, but then steadily growing. Wherever Hollanders come they come to stay. Their political and ecclesiastical histories are so intricately entangled, that they are almost inseparable. You may follow, if you list, the frivolous example of Washington Irving, who made them his "butt" in one of his raciest sketches, but then you will never know them. Or you may sink down, with John L. Motley, beneath the placid waters, and study their deep secrets, and then, I am sure, you will rise even as he did, with profoundest esteem, and find them a race strong and true, meeting pride with pride, and affection with love; loving their God and their liberty above all things; never on the tyrant's side, nor long under his yoke; a nation small and weak, yet invincible in its weakness, having at its back a history grander than which no country can boast, full of thrilling episodes, which reads rather like fanciful romance than stern reality.

Motley's pen has glorified the Netherlands, and its true and loyal sons may proudly lift their heads among the nations of the world.

There are in this county no less than twenty-four Holland churches, equally divided between rival denominations. You desire to know the why and how of this split between people of one language and common habits of life and thought. No more than the briefest possible historical sketch of their numerous churches can be given. For the information of such as desire it, a statistical table will be appended to the printed paper.

You may be curious to know the underlying principles of the history of our colonization in America and in this county. In endeavoring to gratify this desire, meeting at the same time the demands of my topic, I will briefly discuss:

I. The causes of the movement.

II. The ecclesiastical development of the Hollanders in Ottawa county.

III. The causes of disruption.

I. *Causes of Emigration.*—The Hollanders are peculiar. For long centuries they have been soaked in theology. Since the days of the Reformation, nay, even for long periods before, they displayed a peculiar zest for dogmatic disputes. The cloisters and convents of the Netherlands yielded some of the deep foundation rocks of the Reformation. "The brethren of the common life" there cradled into being their tenets, which were even as the shuddering dawn of the reform, looming up in the distance. Thomas à Kempis and scores of others labored and wrote in the low countries. The sunrise of the Reformation found them prepared. What they suffered in the cause of Christ you know. My fatherland is one great cemetery and charnel-house of martyrs for Christ's sake. We have bought our liberty, political and religious, with our choicest blood. The struggle left the Netherlanders free, but full of self-assertion. And this hereditary trait—the desire not only for common, but also for individual independence—became the great source of our numerous sharp religious contests. The Synod of

Dordt decided but little. Whole provinces rejected its authority. If the State's overwhelming favor was on the side of the followers of Gomarus, it did not entirely wipe out the doctrines of Armenius. How could it in a country of free thought? Almost immediately after that period, Maresius and Alting, professors at the University of Groningen, waged a bitter war about the true province of exegetical theology. Each had his determined partisans.

Later on, Aysbertus Voetius, professor at Utrecht, dogmatic, strict, almost an ascetic; and Joh. Coccejus, professor at Leiden, genial, more liberal, but equally faithful, with his antagonist divided the entire church into parties, bitterly opposed to each other. Then came the wave of infidelty. English deistic and French revolutionary principles flooded the low countries. Their dykes could not restrain that kind of a flood. The masses were permeated. Irreligiousness prevailed. Religion became an empty form. The house of Orange was overthrown. Napoleon ruled, and for a time stamped out the spirit of liberty. He fell. William of Orange returned; and, as William I., was crowned king of the Netherlands—a title which the Great William had steadfastly declined—on the 1st day of December, 1813. The church had suffered terribly meanwhile. It was one with the State. The States-General, and Napoleon and Louis alike had tyrannized over it. And William followed in the old rut. By the law of the 17th of June, 1815, the Presbyterian government of the State church of the Netherlands was virtually abolished; the Synodical and lower bodies had become creatures of the throne. And so the wheel kept moving, whilst the spirit of revolution was yet in the air.

Meanwhile a tidal-wave of revival had swept the greater part of Europe. It reached the Netherlands. People desired the plain gospel. They rejected songs for the sanctuary which were thrust upon the congregations and their pastors by an act of the crown. Even there they desired liberty, to sing or not to sing, as they listed. Fierce and fiercer the agitation grew. It culminated in the secession of hundreds of members of the State church. Henry the Cock of Ulrum, in the province of Groningen, was its father. Its semi-centennial and that of this county coincide. What of it? Were they not free in a free country? Oh, no! In this enlightened nineteenth century, in a christian country, Christians were mobbed, and persecuted and imprisoned; their meetings disturbed and scattered with armed violence, their property confiscated, themselves hounded and buffeted with cruelty untold. And why? Because they differed in religious convictions from the rest of the nation. All the ancient religious intolerance was revived, only vitiated through its present dangerous surroundings. From 1836 to 1852 this condition continued, till the eyes of Europe were directed to it, and mighty kings began to shift uneasily on their thrones. Then it ceased, but not till 1870 were these seceders formally recognized by the State. That is the foul blot on the fair name of Holland—its stigma among the nations. So liberty, bought at a price, was always wont to degenerate into fierce tyranny.

To that despised sect mostly belonged the early Dutch settlers of Ottawa county. Remember it well; it will throw light on many things under your own eyes. True, they were poor. True, the potato-rot had darkened the horizon of their prospects. But I tell you the mainspring of this immigration was religious intolerance and love of liberty. These Dutchmen loved exile, with liberty, rather than the fatherland, without it. They sought here in the forests what they loved, but had lost there. They are our pilgrim fathers. The "Southerner," which arrived at New York on the 4th of November, 1846, is our "May Flower." The old camp at Holland is our Plymouth Rock. Look at this movement my way and tell me, does it not magnify these quaint, plain people, who have lived among you these last thirty-seven years? Does it not redeem much of what you judged heretofore objectionable in them?

II. *The story of the Holland Churches of Ottawa County.*—It is not necessary here to enter into details. A few touches will suffice. The Holland pioneer, the man who stamped himself more than anyone else on the history of the Holland townships, is Rev. Dr. A. C. Van Raalte. Born on the 11th day of August, 1811, at Wanneperveen, in the province of Overisel, in the Netherlands, of parents in easy circumstances in life—his father being a minister in the State church of no mean reputation—a man of liberal education; driven almost against his will into the camp of the seceders; but a formidable champion, aye, a hero, for the cause, when led into it by Divine Providence, bearing the marks of persecution on his own body. He is, "par excellence," a man worthy of close and deep study. The picture reveals the man. Short of stature, with a forehead indicating unusual brain power, deep lines of thought furrowing it; bright eagle eyes, glowing with enthusiasm or sparkling with ominous fire when he was deeply agitated; his smile a revelation, benign at times, and again full of satire, his firm lips indicative of decision and tenacity of purpose. He was a man, always demanding respect, not rarely deeply impressive—a power everywhere. He was an orator of the first rank, when warmed to his task; a man of strong convictions. Some of his discourses are stamped indelibly on the memory of his hearers. His sermon, in memory of our boys lost in the late war, will never be forgotten. He had his faults, was not generally understood by his own people, was unreasonably sanguine at times, made grievous mistakes; yet in spite of all, he was the leading spirit, the very soul of the colony. His loss in its early days would have involved the entire collapse of the enterprise. With a handful of pilgrims, following an old Indian trail, he arrived in the forests, near Black Lake, for the first time, in the latter days of December, 1846.

The next spring Van Raalte brought his family and remaining followers from Allegan, where they had been most hospitably entertained, to their new home. He preached his first regular sermon in an old Indian log church, two and a half miles south of camp, on the 30th March, 1847. All that summer they worshiped under the shady trees, west of his log cabin. In the ensuing fall the pioneers had built and partly finished a log church, 35 by 60 feet; the west end of which was used as a school-house. So early the education of their children was considered to be of prime importance by these Hollanders. Around that church, in regular old Dutch style, were the graves of those who fell asleep in Christ. The anguish of those early years, the dreadful disappointments they met with, the devouring homesickness, the care and comfort and support and consolation of the lonely pioneers; melting away like snow before the spring sun, under the fever heat of malarious diseases and the grating of unwonted labor, and the consequences of unwholesome food,—all these things were laid as a load of terrors on that one man. And a true father he was to his people. His pastoral work, his school, his college, form the grand mausoleum over his grave, where he, too early for the good of the colony, sleeps in Christ, since the 7th day of November, 1876. His grave is among us until this day.

The First Church of Holland, Van Raalte's church, has, until late years, kept a leading position. The greatest number of communicants was 486. The total of its contributions since 1858, when first a special column was given in our statistics, to the amounts contributed by the various churches, is $87,358.78. Its pastors, after Dr. Van Raalte, were Rev. R. Pieters, 1868-79, a man demanding universal respect; and the Rev. N. M. Steffens since the 7th January, 1883, who is about to leave it for a chair of Didactic and Polemic Theology, in a seminary in connection with Hope College. Ever since February 27, 1882, it is split in two parties, a small minority clinging to the old name and keeping up the historic thread, whilst the great majority has seceded from the Reformed Church of America, and is now merging, by an act of November 6, last, into the rival denomination, the Holland Christian Reformed Church. The Rev. E. Bos ministers to them, and, not having forgotten their first teacher of Christian beneficence, they raised $8,357 since their exodus. One year before the resignation of Rev. Dr. Van Raalte the church had become unwieldy. Some of his people clamored for, and the Doctor favored, the organization of a new church, which took place on the 9th day of September, 1867.

The third church of Holland numbered then ninety-seven communicants. A house of worship was built and solemnly dedicated February 14, 1868. A brick parsonage was erected. All appeared smiling. Suddenly a "change came o'er the vision of their dreams." The great fire of October 9, 1871, by which seventy-six places of business and 243 homes were destroyed, wiped it all away. The third church was the first building to catch fire; from it the bellowing flames sped headlong and laid low, in a few hours, the labor of many years. Yet they were not disheartened. A new building, just up in the frame, was leveled by the strong gale of January 2, 1873. Again they started, and this time their new church was dedicated November 25, 1874. That congregation has been baptised in trouble. Its successive pastors were Rev. J. Van der Meulen, now of Muskegon, from 1868 to 1871; Rev. H. Uiternyk, from 1872 to 1880; Rev. D. Broek since November, 1880. Their property is valued at $15,000. The number of communicants is 197. They have a chapel and occasional services at Ventura, on the lake shore.

Some years before, in 1865, some thirteen discontented members left the first church and organized in Holland a Free Dutch Reformed Church. They have prospered. To-day they number 227 members in full communion. Their property is valued at $5,000. They have been served by five pastors until now—Rev. D. de Beer, 1867 to 1868; Rev. T. Hulst, 1868 to 1871; Rev. J. Noordewier, 1873 to 1788; Rev. G. Hochsema, 1880 to 1881, and Rev. J. A. de Bruyn since 1883. About a year ago the latter renounced his ecclesiastical connection, but almost immediately afterwards recanted and returned to his old allegiance.

North of Holland there are two more churches. The one belonging to our denomination, that of North Holland, is in a thriving condition. Hardly as much can be said of that of Noordeloos, belonging to the Holland Christian Reformed Church. Originally they were one, but petty jealousies and fierce antagonisms tore them asunder.

Of that of Noordeloos, I have been unable to obtain any reliable statistics. It has a church property of attractive appearance. It numbers some one hundred and fifty communicants, but appears to be devoured by internal wrangles. That of North Holland was organized in 1853, by Dr. A. C. Van Raalte. The people in that region were in a dreadful condition at the time. They needed religion preëminently. Dr. Van Raalte forced them almost to organize. Slowly ingredients of inferior type had become mixed with the current of immigration. Later comers often lacked entirely the high motives of the pioneers. The original settlers of North Holland appear to have been in part of that class. The church numbered originally but thirteen members. Everything was in a chaotic condition in its early years. Only in 1863 did things take permanent shape.

Noordeloos had, meanwhile, separated itself from North Holland. From 1865 dates its steady growth. Rev. Christian Oggel preached there from 1866 to 1870, to be succeeded by Rev. B. Van Erf, who only recently departed thence, after a very successful pastorate of fourteen years. To-day the church numbers one hundred and eighty-nine communicants. It has raised an aggregate of $28,301.65. Its present church property is valued at $5,000.

And another of the pioneer churches is that of Zeeland, always a leading church of the Reformed denomination in this county, and to-day the largest. Its old archives are unfortunately lost. Under the lead of Rev. C. Van der Meulen, it fell almost immediately into line. Its tabular records show great punctuality almost from the beginning. Five years after their arrival in the wilderness these pioneers raised hundreds of dollars per annum for the church and its needs. The aggregate of their contributions since 1858, amount to $66,131.44—no mean sum, indeed, if one takes into consideration that in 1847 they lacked, almost to a man, the scant necessities of life. Its first pastor, the Rev. Cornelius Van der Meulen, was born at Middleharnis, in the province of Zeeland, in the Netherlands, in the year 1800. In early life he had no thought of the ministry, but followed business pursuits. The wave of revival struck him and carried him along. He became a changed man. He now experienced a devouring desire to preach the gospel, and prepared himself for it, as the necessities of the time appeared to demand. Joining the seceders, he shared their toils and woes and persecutions, and catching the American fever, he migrated hither with four hundred souls, and settled, in July, 1847, on the spot where now the attractive village of Zeeland is situated. He came a year after Van Raalte, and, with him, became a leader of the colonist. He was preëminently a man of men, reading a man's mind with unwonted keenness, jovial and sincere in his associations with men, a man of decision and power, of strong principles and healthy views. He rests in the Lord, in the midst of those who shared with him the heat and burden of the day. His pastorate over the Zeeland church extended from 1847 to 1859. His successor, Rev. J. Stobbelaar, from 1860 to 1865, whose ministry there was a stormy one, was followed by Rev. S. Bolks, 1865 to 1872. Rev. W. Moerdyk, from 1873 to 1877, under whom the church was flourishing, was succeeded by Rev. N. M. Steffens, 1878 to 1882, whose ability and power steered the vessel through the dreadful storm of the anti-masonic agitation, not, however, without serious injury to the church. It lost heavily in those days. The present pastor, Rev. J. Kremer, officiates there since April 26, 1883.

The church of Zeeland maintains a station at New Groningen, and its property is valued at $10,000. Under the ministry of Rev. J. Stobbelaar secession first lifted up its head there in 1862. Fifteen members severed their connection and formed a "True church." In 1868 they were considerably strengthened by an accession of Holland Presbyterians. In 1878 they erected their present attractive house of worship. They number to-day 230 communicants. Their pastors were Rev. J. Hoez, 1870-72; Rev. C. Crelingh, 1874-77; Rev. G. Hochsema, 1877-79; and Rev. L. Rietdyk, one of the ablest pastors of that denomination, since December 10, 1882. They value their church property at $5,000. From the agitation, above referred to, another church resulted.

It was wrenched from the mother church, in those days when the reformed church in these parts appeared to be rocking to its very foundations; when things were in a continuous state of eruption; when all was unsettled, and the very existence of our reformed ecclesiastical life appeared a complicated question by no means easily settled. On the 17th March, 1882, forty-four members of the Zeeland church organized themselves into an independent church. Later on they joined the old seceders. They now number 100 communicants, and have property valued at $3,200. They are ministered unto since May, 1883, by Rev. J. J. Isles, formerly of the Presbyterian Church.

Again, there is a pioneer church at Vriesland, a little hamlet in the township of Zeeland. On the 19th November, 1846, a meeting was held at Leenwarden, in the province of Vriesland, Netherlands, by several men who belonged to that race of people in the lowlands who trace their descent, in lines almost unbroken, to the original masters of the country. They belonged mostly to those who had separated from the state church. They resolved to emigrate to America, and the Rev. Martin A. Ypma was called to be their leader and pastor. You recognize the peculiar bent of all the original settlers, to move under the leadership of some pastor. On the 7th April, 1847, they sailed from Rotterdam and arrived in Michigan, after an eventful passage, in the month of June following. Settling on a very rich tract of land they soon began to prosper. The old church has, of late years, given place to a new one which, together with the parsonage, is valued at $10,000. Its pastors were Rev. M. A. Ypma 1847-52; A. Zwemer, 1858-68; Henry Uiternyk, 69-72; Peter de Pree, 1872-82. After an extended vacancy they obtained, in June last, the services of the Rev. George Niemyer. That church, even as the others, saw its dark days. Since 1857 a True church had emanated from it, which kept on a continuous warfare. It has now a membership of over 150 members. I was, however, unable to obtain any particulars in regard to it. Its attractive church property, of average value, is situated about a mile south of the mother church.

Two miles south of that church another arises, one of the neatest in the settlements. It belonged to the Reformed denomination until it was deviated from its original purpose in the late masonic agitation in 1882. Its pastor, Rev. Hodwerp, succeeds some very able Reformed ministers, among whom were Rev. R. Pieters, Rev. William Moerdyk and Rev. Ch. Van der Veen. Its property is valued at $2,000. Within a stone's throw of it is an old Holland Presbyterian Church, whether living or dead at this day I know not. In its palmier days it was an affair of some dimensions; but the majority of its members united years ago with the Holland Christian Reformed Church at Zeeland.

In the opposite corner of the township of Zeeland there is still another trio of Holland churches. The Reformed Church of Beaver Dam was organized on the 14th day of March, 1870, with thirty-one communicants. Rev. John Broek ministered unto it with great faithfulness from February 15, 1872, till November 2, 1884. In 1875 they built an imposing house of worship. The masonic agitation broke over that church with dreadful violence. Twenty-four families left it on that account in 1881 and 1882. These, joining with others settling in the vicinity, were organized soon after as the Holland Christian Reformed Church of Zutphen. To-day they have enrolled sixty-eight members and have considerable property. That of Beaver Dam is valued at $3,000.

Just across the line north there is a Reformed Church, a child of the above. It was organized as the Reformed Church of South Blendon on the 17th of April, 1883, with thirty-five members. It is a station of some vigor, and promises well for the future.

Looking north you will find another cluster of churches in Jamestown. The Reformed Church of that name was organized in 1869 with eighteen communicants. It has grown till its record shows 101 members. Its first and hitherto its only pastor, Rev. John Van der Meulen, a son of the pioneer of Zeeland, was installed there May 30, 1875, and has served that church with singular devotion and great acceptability ever since. Its property is estimated at $4,000. They raised about $10,214.

Not for removed from it is the Holland Christian Reformed Church, of Jamestown, organized during the masonic agitation on the 26th day of May, 1880, with forty-eight members. Rev. G. Broene is its devoted pastor since October last. They are a growing church, fully alive to the situation, and number to-day 162 communicants. They value their property at $5,500. Their share of the financial burdens they have nobly borne.

Northeast of these there is another seceder church, that of Jenisonville in Georgetown, organized in July, 1875, with only eight members. To-day it has forty-seven. Its property has an estimated value of $1,000. Being without a pastor its growth is necessarily slower than that of other churches.

Coming nearer home, you find in this county still a few more Holland churches. I am almost afraid to mention them, because I know this recital cannot be but a severe tax on your patience and forbearance.

Yet you must hear the list to the end in order that you may have an adequate idea of the magnitude of the Holland movements in this country. In Grand Haven proper you have no fewer than four Holland churches. The mother of them all is the First Reformed Church—the old Dutch Church, as it is sometimes called. It has seen dark days and deep waters; yet it outlived all its troubles. As early as 1847, whilst Van Raalte and his companions were struggling in the southern townships, Hollanders began to settle in Grand Haven. Not a few of them were disappointed colonists, who saw a better opening there than yonder in the forests.

In 1851 Rev. K. Van den Schmer organized some fifteen members into a Reformed Church. It grew apace. The old church gave place in 1869 to its present house of worship. Its property is valued at $15,000. For various purposes it raised since 1858 $70,329.41. The successive pastors were: Rev. S. Bolks, the pioneer of Overisel, from 1852-1855; Rev. P. J. Oggel, called from Utrecht in the Netherlands, later a professor at the college in Holland from 1856-1859; Rev. Chr. Van der Veen from 1861-1868; Rev. H. C. Kleyn, as stated, supply from 1868-1869; Rev. J. de Beer, from 1869 to 1872, whose pastorate was productive of great trouble to the church; Rev. E. C. Oggel, from 1872 to 1878, who now preaches the gospel in the great ocean, at Honolulu; Rev. R. Drukker, from 1878 to 1881, and finally the present pastor since January, 1882. During the pastorate of Rev. Ch. Van der Veen the hive sent out its first swarm on the 25th of October, 1865.

Sixteen members organized a True Reformed Church. It has grown till it numbers, to-day, one hundred and twelve communicants. Its property has an estimated value of $4,500. Its successive pastors were Rev. K. Van der Bosch, from 1869 to 1873; Rev. E. Van der Vries, 1879 to 1883. They have built their second church, and although a protracted vacancy of their pulpit seriously harms them, they are, as a body, in a flourishing condition. Through that church, the First, of Grand Haven, has become a stately grandmother.

The Christian Reformed Church, of Spring Lake, emanated from it in May, 1882, with fifty-five members. To-day they number eighty-two communicants. They have a property of equal value with the mother church, and are acceptably served since September, 1883, by Rev. P. Ebster.

The First Church sent out a second swarm five years after the organization of a True Church, of this place. At Mill Point, south of Spring Lake, a Reform Church was organized on the 3d of March, 1876, with seventeen members. The roll now numbers one hundred and twenty-one. Its cosy church, but lately enlarged and beautified, and its pleasant parsonage, are valued at $4,000. Its pastors were: Rev. J. De Pree, 1870 to 1880; Rev. J. T. Zwemer, 1880 to 1883, and Rev. R. T. Holdeisma, since July, 1884. Its contributions foot up to $16,147.05.

The third swarm followed soon after. Its egress, to my mind, was a deplorable thing. It was entirely premature. Grand Haven should long since have had an American worshiping Reformed Church. The second Church should have filled that exigency. Its organization was the fruit of bitter contention and misunderstandings, and a dreadful lack of leadership.

The Second Reformed Church of Grand Haven was organized on the 22d day of November, 1871, with twenty-seven members. It has passed, with the mother church, through deep shades. Its property is valued at $6,000. The aggregate of contributions is $19,564.54. Its pastors were: Rev. E. Van der Hart, with a short intermission, from 1872 to 1879; and Rev. Christian Van der Veen, since April, 1880. He is to-day the oldest residing pastor of Grand Haven.

The great trial of the First Church came over it in the aforesaid anti-Masonic agitation, when it was brought to the very verge of destruction. In the fall of 1881, almost the entire Consistory, under the leadership of the pastor, Rev. R. Drukker, with the greater part of its members, left the church. It was the last swarm, and it almost emptied the hive.

They organized an independent church, but soon after joined the earlier seceders. To-day they number 150 members, and have a property valued at $5,500. The first church has so far outgrown its trouble as to number to-day again 176 communicants.

Finally, there are two more Holland churches in Polkton township. The Reformed Church of Polkton was organized in 1855. It was successively ministered unto by Revs. J. Van der Meulen, 1863-65; A. Huissaar, 65-69; A. Bruersma, 1869-73; H. Kickintveld, 1873-76; D. Broek, 1877-80; and H. Borgers, 1881-83, since when its pulpit was vacant. They are now expecting a pastor from New York State, Rev. D. de Bey, of Clymer. They have lately shown great activity, having built a most attractive house of worship in the village of Coopersville, valued at $5,000, the nave of which, during its erection, was entirely destroyed by fire, as is supposed through incendiarism.

At Lamont there is a Christian Reformed Church, organized in 1879, with 9 members. They number now 50 communicants. Since August, 1883, they are served in the ministry, to great mutual satisfaction, by Rev. R. Drukker. Their property is valued at $3,000.

What a change since 1847. Thousands of Hollanders crowded into many townships of this county, some living in all. Their church life decidely the most active of any in the county. Their rolls of membership numbering hundreds upon hundreds. The Reformed Church, through its regular statistics, gives easy access to aggregate figures. Its congregations number twelve. Their total of communicants, in this county, is 1,446; of Sunday School scholars, 1,841. The aggregate of their contributions, since 1858, is $425,146.34. The aggregate value of their church property is $91,500.

The Christian Reformed Church gives only partial statistics. Its number of congregations, in this county, is 12, possibly 13. The total of their communicants is 1,438; of Sunday School scholars, 1,075. The aggregate of their contributions cannot be given, as but few of their churches appear to have kept accounts. Their collective property is valued at $41,700. The aggregate of all church property, described in this paper, is $143,700.

III. *Causes of rupture.*—You see these denominations are quite equally divided. They are both governed according to the pure Presbyterian system. They have the very same symbols: the canons of the Synod of Dordt, the Heidelberg Catechism, and the five articles against the Remonstrants. The orthodoxy of doctrine of both is equally above suspicion. Whence then this separation? It is a remarkable fact that the older leaders, to a man, stood by the Reformed Church of America. The seceders originally adopted the title of "True Reformed Church of America," thereby stigmatizing the other churches as disloyal to the standards.

In 1881, by a rare stroke of policy, they changed that title into "Holland Christian Reformed Church of America." This move had a twofold effect:—

1. It affiliated these churches, in a conspicuous manner, with the church of the seceders in the fatherland, which, by this time, has assumed magnificent dimensions.

2. It marked out, for the future of the church, a conservative policy, assuaging the fears of those who dreaded early Americanizing movements.

That change has assured the growth of the rival church, catering, as it does, to the strong prejudices of the masses of the immigrants.

To find the deeper ground of this schism between the two parties you must go away beyond the sea, to the early days of the Holland ecclesiastical struggle in the early part of this century. There were various tendencies in that separation. Van Raalte was one of the chief exponents of one of these; but among the early settlers, among his own followers, were his antagonists. As long as suffering and toil abounded the old roots appeared lifeless, but no sooner began the sun of prosperity to shine but these dry roots sprouted and grew into twigs and strong trees, and the break of 1852 resulted. Van Raalte came with an aim to this country. To forget what was behind and to grow up into the closest sympathy with the land of his adoption was his ideal. He ceased to be a Netherlander as soon as he became an American. America was to him more than a place of exile, a country of refuge. It was the land of his adoption. He desired to cut off old traditions as fast as Providence opened the way. They wanted to retain the past and gloat over it with childish affection. They felt themselves exiled; always looking back at Palestine, yet ever ready to acknowledge the undesirableness and unfeasibility of ever returning thither. Their favorite aim—to reconstruct a little Holland in the forests of Michigan, a colony after the model of that at the Cape of Good Hope. Religiously they clashed. His a system of free grace, but of infinite mercy and abounding love; their's one too often of cast-iron justice and loveless decrees. His a gospel of pardon; their's one of judgment. And so they parted, and it was well they did. Not in the present but in the far future lie the possibilities of a reunion; when with common pride the thoroughly Americanized Hollanders shall look into the records of the past and shall have outgrown all clannishness, and, clinging to the true faith, shall have obtained a clearer vision of a larger horizon. The anti-masonic plea, so largely entering into the former as well as into the latter secession, is easily explained.

The Christian Netherlander appears, by nature, to be anti-masonic. It is a tradition among them. Its reason: 'In the days when the flood-gates of infidelity and revolution were opened upon the lowlands, Freemasonry, hitherto but little known in the Netherlands, grew with astonishing rapidity. Its supporters were bold and defiant in its defense, and belonged not always to the choicest elements of society. And so, to the Holland religious mind, through many believing generations, Freemasonry became identified with infidelity and revolution. It stands so branded to-day across the sea. The vast majority of Hollanders are its avowed enemies, or at least look upon it with keen suspicion. Their character is an open one, and so they dislike, as by nature, what is dark and hidden.

"When, therefore, the claim was made that numerous church members and even pastors in the Reformed Church of America were at the same time members of secret, oath-bound societies, they began to agitate the matter. The fanatics on the subject placed before the General Synod the ultimatum to expel all Masons from the community of the church or at least to declare membership in oath-bound secret societies a punishable sin—which is virtually the same—or to see them rupture their connection.

You see how such an agitation in the hands of uncompetent leaders led into wrong channels appealing to a strong national prejudice, could rock the western part of the Reformed Church in America, consisting mostly of Hollanders, to its very foundations. And the wonder is only that it worked so little harm as it did. It has passed by, but yet the fire is smoldering, and may burst out anew at some future period.

Once and again grand revivals have swept over these churches, spurring them on to greater activity and better work.

You will do well to study this Holland question of development. Do these Hollanders, living among you, Americanize too slowly to suit many? Are they too backward in adopting the language of this country in their devotions? Do not judge them hastily. Give them time. Remember: (1) The flow of immigration has not yet stopped. (2) The present older generation could not use the English in their worship to edification. (3) It is the hardest thing conceivable to jerk a man's tongue out by the roots. One does not easily discard his mother-tongue, or even cease to love it. It was therein that his mother first taught him to lisp his evening prayer, and to sing the sweet songs of childhood. Again I say, give them time. For the change *is* coming, and when the metamorphosis is complete I am sure you will recognize, in these Hollanders, some of the very best elements of the growth and pride of Ottawa county.

CHURCHES WORSHIPING IN THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE

BY REV. E. P. GIBBS

In tracing the history of the religious movement of the English speaking people of Ottawa county, during the fifty years now past, the commencement will be found in the settlement of Rev. William M. Ferry with his family and friends on the Grand River where the city of Grand Haven now stands.

In November 1834, these few people landed here and established their home where before them had been only the trader, the Indian, and a wilderness. Their welcome was the ripple of the river, as it moved slowly to the lake, the sigh of the magnificent forests, the glitter of the sunlight through the pines, the chill of an autumn morning, and the greeting of the post trader—this and probably no more.

This family, who thus took their fortunes with them to a wilderness home were English speaking, thinking and acting people. As this was to be their home, and they were a religious people, the husband, father, and protector, a missionary of the Presbyterian Church, the first act, after landing, seems in harmony with their ancestry and their faith. They held a religious service, erected their altar, offered their sacrifice, made their vow, and reconsecrated themselves to the service of God under new and strange conditions.

In this first settlement within the confines of Ottawa county, it is easy to trace the spirit of 1620, and note the bond of sympathy between the Plymouth settlers of that period, and those guided by Mr. Ferry in 1834.

Each settlement was founded upon a basis of profound religious belief. In both, the home, the church and the school were prime factors in the inception of their movement, and failure rarely follows such a beginning; success is usually its gratifying reward.

It is probable that after that first Sunday service held in the trader's log house—for it was on Sunday morning this party sailed into Grand River—no Sunday was allowed to pass without a public service.

During the ensuing two years, quite a number joined the little colony, and in October, 1836, a Presbyterian Church was organized with twelve members.

The first frame building erected in the settlement was used for a meeting house, school-house, court-house, and other general public purposes. It is still standing, on Second street, between Washington and Franklin streets, and should be carefully guarded as a relic of former days.

From this simple beginning, this germ of religious thought and deed, have gradually evolved the English speaking churches of this part of Ottawa county.

Into these new homes, the habits fostered in older states were, with slight modifications, introduced. Each new settler came in obedience to the aggressive spirit of the age, to the new field, ready to work out the problem of life by the light best known. Many brought with them fixed religious convictions and habits. Others left behind them the traditions and faith of former homes, and went into the wilderness relying upon individual strength of will and hand, as a guarantee of desired success.

All this variety of thought and purpose entered into the formative period of the religious atmosphere of Ottawa county, and is easily traced in the history of its English speaking religious organizations.

But for this marked diversity of motive, we should look for and expect to find a large and controlling Presbyterian influence throughout the churches composed of English speaking people in this county. For that was the earliest influence in matters of religion. It has to-day but three churches in the county; one in Grand Haven, one in Spring Lake, organized in 1853, another in Ferrysburg, organized in 1882.

But it will be well to remember that Ottawa county is now very much smaller than when first settled, and that many of the Presbyterian churches in the counties of Muskegon and Oceana may be justly said to be traceable to the seed planting of 1836—children of the parent church. The surprise consists in not finding any organizations of this body elsewhere in the county.

We should also remember that many changes, often abrupt but forceful, that have influenced the religious world in the last fifty years—an influence finding congenial ground in the vigorous life of the United States, and most marked results in the organized worship of the English speaking people of the west. Without further philosophizing upon the matter, the fact is plain that the English speaking people of Ottawa county have planted and fostered a wide diversity of faith and practice since that little band held its first service on the banks of Grand River. But each separate church is but the reproduction of a similar church in the older states. Not many new names are found, not many new or strange ideas surprise us, as we trace the formative period in its effect upon religious societies in this county.

The people here are of the same nerve and brain as those of older climes. The growth of the soul here is conditioned upon similar laws controlling elsewhere. Here were the likes and dislikes—memories dear and powerful—preventing the exclusive establishment of any single church, rather assuring the crystalization in much weakness of those who thought, believed or worshiped in sympathy with established methods, or who would carve for themselves a new name in the wilderness.

Most marked the influence of man or woman who came from a distant home, and finding not the church of childhood, have thought and prayed until the hope of their life culminates in a church where two or three were gathered in the Master's name.

It is probable the larger number of the thirty-eight English speaking churches in this county could trace their birth to some earnest one alone in the wilderness or not at home in some organized worship, who went in search of a promised land, and found it in the formation of a new society and the erection of a church.

The following table exhibits the statistics of the English speaking churches of the county as complete as we have been able to secure them:

Denominations.	Present Number of Churches.	First Organization.		Churches Reporting.		Value of Church Property.	Remarks.
		Date.	No. of Members.	Number.	Pres. No. of Members.		
Adventist	4	....	....	....	....	....	No Report.
Baptist	3	1866	14	2	170	$3,200 00	
Catholic	4	1858	....	4	900	14,000 00	
Congregational	8	1849	....	5	243	19,910 00	
Free Methodist	1	....	....	....	....	....	No Report.
Methodist Episcopal	7	1840	9	4	295	14,850 00	
Protestant Episcopal	3	1866	5	3	111	10,650 00	
Presbyterian	3	1836	12	2	204	27,100 00	
Reformed	1	1862	12	1	92	15,000 00	
Wesleyan Methodist	3	....	....	1	16	....	
Unitarian	1	1875	....	1	75	12,000 00	
Totals	38	....	....	23	2,106	$116,710 00	

It is to be regretted that so many of the churches, whose record is essential to the completeness of this history have failed to respond with the facts of their organization and growth. It will be seen that there are 15 of the churches thus delinquent, viz., 4 Adventist, 1 Baptist, 3 Congregational, 1 Free Methodist, 3 Methodist Episcopal, 1 Presbyterian and 2 Wesleyan Methodist; in all 15.

The 38 churches holding services in the English language are distributed as follows, viz:

Allendale 3—Wesleyan Methodist, Congregational, Adventist.

Blendon, 1—Adventist.

Chester, with a population of 1,703, has no English speaking church.

Crockery, 1—Congregational.

Georgetown, 2—Congregational, Baptist.

Grand Haven, 6—Catholic, Congregational, Episcopal, Methodist Episcopal, Presbyterian, Unitarian.

Holland, 4—Methodist Episcopal, two Reformed, Wesleyan Methodist.

Jamestown, none. Population 2,066.

Olive, 1—Congregational.

Polkton, 7—Catholic, Congregational, Protestant Episcopal, two Methodist Episcopal, Wesleyan Methodist, Adventist.

Robinson, 1—Congregational.

Spring Lake, 5—Baptist, Catholic, Methodist Episcopal, two Presbyterian.

Talmadge, 3—Congregational, Methodist Episcopal, Baptist.

Wright, 4—Baptist, Catholic, Methodist Episcopal, Adventist.

Zeeland, none. Population 2,715.

It should not be forgotten that this paper is restricted to a consideration of the churches holding their services in the English language, and that the towns in which there are no such churches, are very largely populated by persons of foreign birth and the children of such. The population of the county was, in 1840, 208; in 1845, 1,200; in 1850, 5,587; in 1860, 13,215; in 1870, 26,651; in 1880, 32,340; in 1884, 36,308.

The first church organizations were of course composed of small numbers, and the majority of these were women. It is probable the latter is true of these churches to-day. It is significant hint, also, of the small number living in a town, when only five are found to organize a church; not less significent when three of the five are women. As the county has steadily increased in population and wealth, the English speaking churches have maintained a sure and healthy growth. Twenty-three churches have reported a membership of 2,106, an average of over ninety-one members each. If the fifteen churches who have not reported have an equal average, the number of members of the English speaking churches in the county in 1884 will be 3,471. The actual average of the non-reporting churches is probably less than this estimate.

In a historical sketch of this character, our work would be incomplete without some plain reference to the different men who have served as missionaries, preachers, or priests, in the gathering and establishment of these churches. Could we know these men, and come into the privacy of their lives, we should obtain a clearer view of the cost, in nerve, and even life, incidental to religious enterprise in Ottawa county. But we have only the cold fact that such work has been done; the least tribute we can render to undoubted worth is to leave, upon the record of this half century memorial, a testimonial of our appreciation of the service of these pioneers of the moral welfare of Ottawa county:

How much or how little they received for their services, we do not know. How many toiled in tears, through years of unappreciated, often thankless labor, and, like Paul, earning their bread, that they might be under obligations to none, who can say? That there must have been noble, conscientious work done by both ministers and laity is proven by the fact that the humble frame house on Third street, Grand Haven, where the Presbyterian Church worshiped so long, represents one factor, and the church property of the county, now valued at $116,710, the other factor. All this has been erected and dedicated to the service of God and humanity by a people who were busy clearing forests, grubbing the soil, wearily toiling for the necessities of life—at times suffering for want of them—and rarely having any luxuries, for long years a steady, hard tug for existence. Yet these gave land, lumber, money, when they had it, all for an opinion, a belief, a deep, all-controlling conviction that a home in the new land would not be home-like without the church of their choice, where they, with their children, could worship God according to the dictates of their consciences. Thus standing upon the middle ground of a passing century, we may, from this fiftieth anniversary, look backward for a moment and trace what has been accomplished, read its story, feel its pain, taste its sorrows—not its joys—and gladly award full measure of praise for so much done under the stern pressure of most adverse circumstances. Here is a grouping of religious influence, so wide in its scope, all who seek an English speaking, religious home can enter such and labor, or rest in peace.

The Catholic can enjoy his venerable faith and worship in the atmosphere of sainted forms near his home in a recently settled land. The Evangelical Protestant can surely find the path to a desired church and feel that, though separated by many leagues from early home and kindred, that in hymn and prayer, in the labor and love of the Master's service, one spirit unites them forever.

Still another part of the toiling life of Ottawa county, can find in this backward look the promise of an ever widening movement, based upon the Bible, upon rational thought and the increasing demands of growing humanity, that tends toward a tenderer love, firmer sympathy and more earnest helpfulness, and fruit of clearer convictions of life and more active obedience to the Spirit that guides the race upward and onward.

As we look forward from this fiftieth anniversary, it will be well to remember the established services and erected altars, maintaining them while there is need of their influence—for none shall crumble in ruins, but out of its dust must arise a new and holier service for the race. Is it not true the ferment of difference that made it possible for these eleven different organizations to be, shall continue its work until, in the "survival of the fittest," we find all coming, toward the close of another half century, into the coöperative labors in philanthropy—in the higher morals of social life, and deeper amenities of common daily being—where all shall see eye to eye and walk hand in hand; to advance this would seem to be our duty—to retard it our shame.

As this first half century is the formative period, the test period, and in it so much has been accomplished in establishing churches, what shall be the outcome of another half century? There is still unoccupied ground and a number of prosperous villages and towns where are no services held in English.

In solving our future much will depend upon the purpose that inspires those now active in these churches, and somewhat upon the position taken by their children when the burdens fall from the shoulders of parents and are taken up by youthful hands. And not a little depends upon the business future of Ottawa county—while that infringes upon the prosperity of its chief centres—and most of all upon the city of Grand Haven. Let us hope the student of church history may find far nobler results than those recorded in this sketch, as in 1934 Ottawa county shall celebrate its one hundredth anniversary. One practical suggestion, if followed, will give a marked value to the work to be done and assist all future students of these church movements, viz.: to keep a carefully written history of each society, and to do this as a sacred duty to humanity, gathering the fragments of isolated bodies that nothing be lost.

THE SCHOOLS OF OTTAWA COUNTY

BY E. B. FAIRFIELD, JR.

Having no personal acquaintance with the growth and development of this county, and no reminiscences connected with its educational progress, no experience with its difficulties, and being unable to find any official records in the county archives, I must be content to leave its early experiences to be recorded by the early settlers in their personal sketches, and confine myself to a summary of the statistics published in the volumes of reports sent out from year to year by the State superintendent of public instruction.

Previous to 1852 the entire history of the educational system of Michigan, the suggestions contained in each annual report of the State superintendent of public instruction* "were contained in disjointed documents which were partially scattered about by members of the legislature during sessions, and then lost or destroyed as an accumulation of mere pamphlets, not necessary for information or future reference." Consequently I am unable to secure access to records previous to 1852. I am also unable to secure reports for the school years 1853 and 1854.

A few statistics for 1852 and for every second year from 1855 to 1883, inclusive, are to be found in the accompanying table, and will prove an interesting study to those who are apt at reading between the lines, and can fill up the record, through their own conceptions, with those disappointments, surmounting of difficulties, replacing forests with beautiful homes and well-tilled farms, reclaiming swamps, and converting quagmires into fertile meadows and green pasture lands; with those advancements of civilization which gradually transform the rough log schoolhouses, with their floors of split logs, their seats of rough split planks without back or desk, to the modern neat frame or brick buildings with their handsome furniture, maps, charts, books, and other conveniences which our present civilization regards as necessaries.

The thirty-two school districts reporting in 1852 returned $1,194.13 as the amount raised for the support of schools, including the pay of teachers, and $1,089.53 expended on school buildings and repairs.

The system of taxation at that time for the support of the common schools consisted (1) of a tax of two mills on each dollar of valuation of the taxable property: (2) an annual district tax, voted at the school meeting, not to exceed one dollar for every scholar in the district between the ages of four and eighteen years; (3) and a rate bill against the person or persons sending children to school, for the amount of tuition and fuel for which he was liable. This rate bill could be collected, if necessary, by distress and sale of goods and chattels.

The primary school interest fund apportioned to Ottawa county in 1855, upon a school census of 2,502, was $1,395.75, and in 1880, upon a school census of 11,440, $5,140.76. The fund did not keep pace with the increase of children, the falling off being nearly one-fifth.

A decision of the State supreme court, in 1880, that the State debt had, in the intent of the law, been extinguished, since that portion of the specific taxes pledged to this purpose had outgrown the State indebtedness, added to the primary school fund the specific taxes received by the State from the mining companies of the Upper Peninsula, amounting for 1881 to $305,395.27. This increased the apportionment to Ottawa county more than $6,000, or to a total in 1881 of $11,714.17, being more than double the amount of 1880, though the school census had increased only about one-twentieth. In 1883 the county received from this source nearly $17,000 ($16,851.31), upon a school census of nearly 13,000 (12,923).

---

*Report Superintendent Public Instruction, 1853.

The thirty-two districts of 1852 enrolled as pupils 1,056; the one hundred and twenty districts of 1883, 9,354 pupils.

The valuation of school property in 1859 at $9,143, had increased in 1883 to $183,030.

In 1869 fourteen of the ninety-one school-houses were built of logs, while in 1883 all but one of the log buildings had disappeared, though the whole number had increased to one hundred and twenty-two, fifteen of them being of brick. Teachers' wages in 1852 amounted to $1,717.25. The increase in number of teachers employed, the large increase in number of pupils attending school, the longer terms, with some increase in the rate of wages, increased the total paid teachers in 1883 to nearly fifty thousand ($49,242.38) dollars.

The total cost of schools in 1852 was a little more than three thousand dollars ($3,240.41), while in 1883 it was $84,598.62.

That the material development of the county has more than kept pace with the school expenditures is shown by the fact, that the two-mill tax of 1852, was only $644.77, while the one-mill tax of 1883 was $11,468.68. In other words, while the schools cost twenty-six times as much as they did thirty-two years ago, the valuation of the taxable property is thirty-five times as great.

The number of children attending school forms about the same portion of the whole number in the county as it did thirty-two years ago, but the average length of time that the children are in school has about doubled.

Disregarding the primary interest fund, as that comes from outside the county entirely, the people of this county still pay at about the same rate for their children's education as in those early days, viz., about one dollar per month for each pupil while he is in school, the State at large practically paying for the improved educational facilities which we enjoy.

In the early reports the school sittings are not given, but at present the school buildings have a seating capacity of 10,689 pupils.

The rate bill figured quite prominently in school matters until 1869. In 1852, the assessment in this way was $520.67; 1867, $2,510.87; in 1869, the last that appears, $1,886.85.

State Superintendent Oramel Hosford, in his report for 1868, refers to its pernicious influence, stating that "the general practice is to send children to school until the public money is expended, and then keep them at home. So long as the schools are free they are well filled and prosperous. But as soon as the tax begins to bear upon it, the school wanes and dies."

The number of teachers actually employed in the county, in 1855, was seventy-eight; in 1883, two hundred and sixty-two. That is, while the school attendance is five times as great, and the average length of school one and one half times as great as in 1852, the number of teachers employed is only three and one half times as great, showing a much greater permanency in teachers' position. In those early days it was a common custom to change teachers every term, while now the tendency is, even in the smaller schools, to engage the teacher by the year, thus greatly increasing the efficiency of his work.

Graded schools appear only with considerable growth in population and financial resources. At the present time Grand Haven has twenty-four teachers; Holland twelve; Spring Lake, nine; Coopersville and Zeeland, four each; Ferrysburg, three. The last report of the secretary of the county board of examiners states the following named eight places have two teachers each, viz., Berlin, Drenthe, Groningen, Lamont, Lisbon, North Holland, Nunica, and Vriesland.

In this connection it would give me great pleasure, had I the necessary data, to present the history of the early educational movements as seen by the pioneer teachers of the county, as participated in by them, and trace the development and growth of the germ planted in many a fertile spot, to its full fruitage in the strong and noble individual character.

Undoubtedly many such will appear in the biographical sketches and personal reminiscences.

In the earlier days,* "each township had three school inspectors, whose duty it was to organize districts, apportion the school moneys to the districts, examine teachers and grant certificates and visit schools." In the main, these provisions remained unchanged till 1867, when the county superintendency was established. The first county superintendent for Ottawa, elected under the new law, was Rev. Christian Van der Veen. Mr. Van der Veen, however, soon resigned the office, and A. W. Taylor served the remainder of the term, being, at its close, elected for a full term. Mr. Taylor served as county superintendent nearly four years, Charles S. Fassett being elected to succeed him in the spring of 1871. Mr. Fassett was elected his own successor in 1873, and held the office until the repeal of the county superintendency in 1875. The township system of school supervision and examination of teachers followed the county plan, but proved so unsatisfactory in its

---

*For a full history, see "Historical Sketches," by W. L. Smith, in Report of Public Instruction for 1880.

OTTAWA COUNTY SCHOOL STATISTICS.

Year.	Primary Interest Fund.	School Census.	School Districts.	Children Attending School.	Av. No. Months School.	No. of School Houses.	School Sittings.	Value of School Property.	No. of Teachers Employed.	Total Teachers' Wages.	No. Qualified Teachers.	No. Graded Schools.	Total Expended on Schools.	Two Mill Tax.	Expended on School.	Rated Bill.
1852..........	....	1,426	*48	....	......	....	....	....	......	$1,717 25	......	......	$3,240 41	$644 77	$1,089 53	$520 67
1855..........	$1,395 75	2,502	52	1,846	5.3	....	....	....	78	4,477 83	......	......	....	869 09	3,172 32	1,335 52
1857..........	1,649 89	3,113	66	2,488	5.6	....	....	....	95	6,324 06	......	......	....	1,435 30	2,427 55	2,302 84
1859..........	1,127 80	3,666	67	2,471	6.4	....	....	$9,143 00	112	6,995 82	......	......	....	2,117 36	1,055 87	....
1861..........	1,625 40	4,165	79	3,186	6.3	....	....	19,316 00	122	8,514 29	......	......	....	3,785 89	....	....
1863..........	2,281 50	4,812	87	3,949	6.7	....	....	23,227 00	148	9,665 35	......	3	11,892 67	3,594 69	1,356 85	945 63
1865..........	2,540 98	5,835	93	4,664	6.3	....	....	26,000 00	168	14,698 12	......	......	19,379 05	3,357 74	2,214 79	2,238 16
1867..........	2,799 92	7,638	95	5,595	6.7	{ 14 log. 91 }	....	50,212 00	......	20,224 95	183	5	33,766 05	3,311 90	{ Includ'g debts. 9,509 75 }	2,510 87
1869..........	3,708 36	8,763	103	6,555	7.1	{ 14 log. 106 }	....	71,419 00	......	26,832 28	213	7	43,161 81	3,903 94	{ Includ'g debts. 12,954 11 }	1,886 85
1871..........	4,284 47	9,464	111	7,147	7.7	....	9,173	146,327 00	......	36,701 58	234	10	84,210 83	3,489 35	33,170 45	....
1873..........	4,691 47	10,230	......	7,680	7.6	{ 9 log. 115 }	9,396	149,765 00	......	45,313 81	......	9	69,927 07	8,228 72	7,058 21	....
1875..........	4,951 89	10,934	114	8,610	8.1	{ 5 log. 118 }	9,923	157,776 00	......	48,304 60	248	10	81,775 25	9,073 60	8,210 80	....
1877..........	5,127 45	11,164	115	9,335	8.3	{ 3 log. 120 }	10,101	158,965 00	......	42,737 91	251	12	69,688 62	8,160 83	6,312 43	....
1879..........	5,323 03	11,385	117	7,897	8.1	{ 2 log. 119 }	9,724	116,185 00	243	38,458 66	......	13	65,223 51	8,768 69	7,645 37	....
1881..........	11,714 17	11,977	117	8,746	8	{ 1 log. 121 }	10,132	161,376 00	251	41,399 59	......	14	70,028 36	{ (1 Mill.) 5,834 73 }	8,550 66	....
1883..........	16,851 31	12,923	120	9,354	7.9	{ 1 log. 122 }	10,689	183,030 00	262	49,242 38	......	15	84,598 62	11,468 06	8,997 91	....

* 32 Reporting.

results that in 1881 a compromise measure, combining township supervision with county examinations, was adopted, and went into effect in August of the same year. It is too early yet to say that the present system is productive of better results than were secured under the county superintendency.

The reports relating to the public libraries are so indefinite that I have been unable to formulate many valuable statements regarding this important feature of our educational system. Mr. A. W. Taylor, in his report as county superintendent, for 1870, uses the following language: "In Ottawa county we have scarcely a district library worthy the name. The division of the township library among the several school districts, generally adopted by the townships of our county, was a sad mistake, and has resulted, in most instances, in the total obliteration of all traces of a public library of any kind."

The report for 1883 shows that three townships used the library money for general purposes; that three townships forfeited their library money; that nine townships maintain township libraries, having an aggregate of 2,102 volumes; that thirty districts support district libraries, having an aggregate of 3,376 volumes; that the township paid for books and care of libraries, $573.67, raising by direct tax for this purpose, $80.30, and receiving $271.13 in fines, from the county treasurer; that the districts paid for books and care of libraries, $795.56, of which sum $523.45 was received from county fines.

THE FIRST SCHOOLS IN HOLLAND, OTTAWA COUNTY

BY REV. CHRISTIAN VAN DER VEEN

The settlement of the Holland colony really dates from the summer of 1847, though a few families reached the ground in the spring of that year. Among the very first objects to be provided for was the education of the children. Totally unacquainted with the educational provisions of the State, and in no position to take advantage of them if they had been known, they devised means to secure a teacher. The first funds were raised by monthly voluntary contributions on a subscription list. Mr. Jacob Van der Veen, my father, had this matter in charge. By October the plan was carried out, and the services of the first teacher secured. He was an American, Ira Hoyt, and taught, as nearly as I can recollect, during the whole of the following year. First in a part of a private house in the village, still standing, now Mr. Watkins,' next to Hampton's store; then during the winter in the front part of a house, also still standing, on the northwest corner of section 34. In the spring we moved to the old log church then half finished. In June of 1848 the school district was organized. Mr. Hoyt was succeeded in the spring of 1849 by the first female teacher, Miss E. H. Langdon; as I remember her, a quite superior woman, and under whose instruction we children made great progress. At her leaving the public school was vacant for quite a while. The interests of such children as would pay tuition were, however, attended to by Mr. H. Doesburg, who kept a peripatetic private school, sometimes attended pretty well and sometimes but poorly. I can remember going to no less than seven places for instruction under his wandering guidance. During the vacancy the old school building was put up on the lot which still serves for public school purposes.

In the fall of 1851 Mr. Walter T. Taylor, the teacher of a classical school in Geneva, N. Y., came out under an arrangement with some influential christian gentlemen in the Dutch Reformed Church of America, in the eastern States, to start a preparatory school to fit young men for college. This was four years after the first settlement of the place. The school, out of which Hope College has grown, was opened in October, 1851, in the new building built for district school purposes, and was at first carried on in conjunction with the district school, in which two daughters and one son of Mr. Taylor were employed as teachers. This double arrangement came to an end in 1853, when the preparatory school was removed to the so-called orphan house, while the district school was continued by itself under the teaching of Mr. E. P. Pitcher. The school became a graded school in 1860.

The preparatory school continued under the direction of Mr. Taylor until the close of the school year in 1854. He was succeeded by Rev. F. P. Beidler, who taught one year. Rev. John Van Vleck assumed charge in 1855. Under him the school became known as Holland Academy. Rev. P. Phelps succeeded him in 1855, and under his administration the institution was chartered as Hope College in 1866.

In other parts of the colony the schools retained a semi-parochial character for some time, but all, as soon as the circumstances allowed, were placed under the provisions of the general school law. It is at present impossible to give dates. In Zeeland the first teacher employed was Elias G. Young, afterwards clerk of the county, who taught in 1849, and was succeeded by Mr. R. M. De Bruyn.

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF HOPE COLLEGE

For many years a desire had existed, to have a school of the Reformed Church established in the valley of the Mississippi. The way, however, did not seem to be open, until, in 1847 and 1848, a Holland Colony was planted in Ottawa and the adjoining counties of Michigan, mainly through the agency of Rev. A. C. Van Raalte, D. D., who devoted himself assiduously to the moral and material interests of the enterprise. This was an event which God used as the origin of what is now Hope College.

Rev. Philip Phelps, Jr., of Hastings, N. Y., was appointed by the Board of Education to succeed Mr. Van Vleck, and entered on his work in the fall of 1859. He found thirty-three pupils in attendance. The regular organization of the school into classes and some more formal and efficient plan of superintendency by the church, became his first care. Success crowned his efforts, in both respects, and the progress of the Academy became more marked. In 1862, the number of students was forty-five, divided into "Classical and Primary," and in the following year the General Synod approved of and appointed the "Board of Superintendents."

In the fall of 1862 another decided step was taken. By the approval of the Western Classes and the Synod of Chicago, a collegiate department was introduced, and a freshman class of ten members was formed. From this time date the efforts to have a regular college incorporated, under the laws of Michigan, and these efforts culminated in the institution as we have it to-day. The Board of Superintendents continued; the four academic classes entered in order upon their course; the General Synod recommended the college in 1864, and its endowment in the sum of $100,000; the collection of the funds was prosecuted with success east and west; needed steps were taken, and just before the graduation of the first class, in 1866, were organized the "council," presidency, faculty, and departments of Hope College. In the seven years, since 1859, the number of students had increased from thirty-three to fifty, viz.: in the academic classes, 23; and in those of the grammar school, 27. The graduating senior class contained eight members.

In 1869 the "Theological Department" was formally constituted and recognized as the General Synod's "Theological Seminary in the West." The superintendence of the same committed to the council. A gift of $10,000 by Elder James Suydam; one-half in payment of debts, and one-half for completing the purchase of Point Superior. For this reason, the tract, for some time was called "Suydam Park." Prof. P. J. Oggel died December 13. Another structure was erected, which afterwards, having added to it a second story and a wing, became known as the "Grammar School Building."

In 1878 the General Synod determined to re-organize Hope College, and, sent a committee for that purpose, to meet with the council. The debt of the institution was found to be over $27,000, besides $4,100, due from the General Synod to the theological teachers. Dr. Phelps resigned the presidency, and Dr. Crispell his college professorship, to take effect July 1. A new constitution of the college was drafted. Rev. Giles H. Mandeville, D. D., of New York city, was elected provisional president, and Prof. Charles Scott, D. D. vice-president, to administer the college, while Dr. Mandeville collected funds in the east. Women were admitted to all the departments. Henry Boers, A. B., and John H. Kleinheksel, A. B., were appointed tutors in the grammar school. The number of students had gradually increased; the fifty of 1865 became sixty-four in 1872, (not including the theological,) and ninety-eight in 1878.

In 1884, Rev. John A. DeBaun, D. D., of Fonda, N. Y., was elected permanent president in May, and confirmed by the General Synod. He declined the appointment. Prof. Scott continued as provisional president. General Synod met in Grand Rapids and made a visit to Hope College and the city of Holland, June 7; $3,100 donated by members of Synod for a president's house. A successful effort to increase the "professorship of didactic and polemic theology," to the full amount of $30,000 in cash, whereupon the Synod elected Rev. N. M. Steffens, D. D., to the chair. He was duly inaugurated Dec. 4, and on the next day the theological department was formally re-opened with five students.

During the last four years all the streets around the college campus have been graded and graveled, the expenses thereof falling upon the college, without any aid from the city; and for seven years the expenses have regularly been met without deficit or debt. The number of students from April, 1884, to April, 1885, are, in the academic department, thirty-three; and in the preparatory, one hundred and thirty-six, a total of one hundred and sixty-nine; and nearly all pursue the full classical course.

It will be seen that this school, in almost all respects, has been steadily progressing. Before her is a fair prospect, if her alumni stand by her good name, if her friends are attached to and not alienated from her interests, and if the council do their duty as christian men and faithful guardians of the Lord. She needs and prays for more ample endowments. May the future show more and more clearly that this is indeed a "college of hope."

EARLY RECOLLECTIONS OF GRAND HAVEN

BY MISS MARY A. WHITE

To the Committee for the Semi-Centennial of Ottawa County:

I thank you for your invitation to contribute to the entertainment of the day. There is little left for me to add; but it is fitting that I, too, pay my tribute of respect to those who have toiled and are now entered into their rest.

The history of Ottawa county and Grand Haven has been given, as far as dates and facts can give it, but the history that is in my own mind, the story of the pleasures and the privations, the joys and sorrows, the sacrifices and the successes of pioneer life, cannot well be written or spoken.

There is an enthusiasm in looking forward with eager expectation to watching and aiding the growth and progress of a new country, a mingling of scenes both amusing and tragic, that cannot be represented without surroundings and circumstances to give vividness to the picture.

It is fifty years, next June, since I reached Grand Haven, in response to an appeal from my sister, who found herself in this wilderness, with four children to be educated—one I left safely sheltered in my father's house, to grow up to fill my place—and from that time my home has been here; my life and work must speak for itself.

A peculiar interest always clusters about the beginnings of life, anywhere.

Coming into the first, unfinished frame house, I was here to welcome to our home the first white children born in Ottawa county—a boy and a girl; was present at the first baptism and funeral service, and followed, through the forest, to that spot now in the heart of the city, where we laid our first dead. It was my privilege to lay the rough stone in the foundation of the polished, educational structure that is now the pride of our town. It has been my privilege, from being for many years the only teacher in Ottawa county, to see hundreds rise to take my place, and from the little group that gathered in my room, to see over a thousand children flocking at the sound of the school bell. Any who chose to come were, from the first, admitted to share my instruction, sharing, too, in the love and interest which, from first to last, has gone out to and still clings around all those whom I have called my scholars, often receiving from them welcome tokens of gratitude and appreciation.

Among the number were sometimes to be found those older than myself; it was a motley group—delicate children and rough men—and when, in conformity to the State law, my school came under the supervision of the town, one who had been from boyhood my pupil was on the examining committee—to test my qualification for future service.

I count it, too, an honor that I organized and for sixteen years had charge of the first Sunday school in the place, and when circumstances called me away, for a time, two who had been my pupils became, in succession, superintendents.

Of the little band who formed the first church of Christ in this town, I am the only one now connected with it; of the family circle of which I then became a member I am the only one with you to-day. Whatever our work has done for this town it is done—"others have labored and ye have entered into their labors."

When the faces of those I have known and loved rise before me—two generations of brave, strong men, who have given the vigor of their manhood to the building up of this town and the interests of this people, felling the trees, fording the rivers, battling with every obstacle by sea and by land, to open up a path in this wilderness—two generations, too, of faithful, loving wives and mothers, who have patiently kept alive the altar fire, and helped by bright looks, words, and arts, to cheer on the sometimes discouraged workers; all giving liberally, from the first, of their time, energies and substance, to the support of religious, educational, and social interests—as all this labor of years passes in review before me I can only say—our reward and our inheritance are not here.

EARLY MEDICAL HISTORY OF OTTAWA COUNTY

BY DR. J. B. MC NETT

In the fall of 1857 I came to Nortonville on the steamer "Pontiac," where I met Dr. Monroe in consultation. At this time Dr. Monroe was the only physician in this part of the country. In December following I was requested by Dr. Monroe to come to Grand Haven and take his patients while he went east with his invalid wife. My first patient was Mrs. C. B. Albee, deceased. I soon began to have a practice that extended to Mill Point, where I came in contact with Dr. Van Duzen, who was surgeon-in-chief of that post. By degrees I gained a practice reaching to the remote parts of Ottawa county, as far south as Port Sheldon, West Olive, around to the mouth of Bass river and all points of settlement, north to Muskegon *via* Black Lake, east to Fruitport, Nunica, and Spoonville, where I always found my friend John Spoon, who has converted the howling wilderness into smiling fields. I also had patients at Ottawa Center and all important points along the shore. As Dr. Monroe was anxious to retire and was always willing to give me his patients, especially those that could not pay, I soon gained a large practice.

A person living here now can form but a faint idea of the difficulties in travelling about the country at that time. There were no railroads, no bridges, very poor roads and in many places no roads at all. At that time I was ambitious for office, as many are at present. I wanted to be pathmaster, but was defeated. My friend John Bolt was elected, who always filled the bill.

On my first visit to Robinson *via* Rosamound, I had occasion to inquire the way to the residence of Mr. Hiram Robinson; so I called at the house of Chris. Phlegel and asked if he could tell me where Mr. Hiram Robinson lived. He said he didn't know anybody by that name. As I started away, his wife called out "yes, you do know *Hi* Robinson." He ran after me saying "Oh, *Hi*," and very politely showed me the way.

In 1858, Dr. North located in Grand Haven. He did not remain very long, as the climate did not agree with his health. Dr. Barnes, who resided with his nephew, Mr. James Barnes, was a man of medical ability, who gave me much good advice.

Shortly after this an epidemic of spinal-meningitis broke out. It originated at Rosamound; the second case was at Capt. Miller's at the light-house. There were seven cases; all terminated fatally except the first.

At the close of the war Dr. Van der Veen came to Grand Haven and still remains. He has always been a competent and faithful servant of the people. About this time a malignant type of confluent small-pox appeared in our midst, which occasioned so much sickness and so many deaths, as to close all the churches, and put the town into quarantine. This is the most serious epidemic that has ever visited the city.

Dr. Reynolds, the pioneer of Homeopathy in Grand Haven, has won himself many friends. Dr. Marston settled in the city for a short time and is still pleasantly remembered. Dr. Styles remained but a short time. Dr. Biggs has also practiced medicine for several years. As the village grew into a city and the surrounding country became more densely populated, other physicians came. Mill Point became Spring Lake and Dr. Van Duzen was succeeded by Drs. Comfort and Baldwin, followed by Drs. Bates and Brown, who are still there. Dr. Walkley shared the honor and profits for a time. In December 1879, Dr. Smart came to make Grand Haven his home and still finds it to his interest to remain. Dr. Palmer came about the same time, and continues to heal the afflicted in this city and surrounding country.

The Mineral Springs at Spring Lake and Grand Haven have attracted people from all over the country. At the former place Drs. Hunter and Brown have had charge. Dr. Leeland presided at the Springs in Grand Haven, succeeded by Dr. Payne, who came with a great flourish of trumpets, but failed to relieve pain so signally, that he left the sanitarium in better hands after his second season.

Dr. Monroe was the pioneer in the practice of medicine in Ottawa county. He traveled up and down the lake shore on foot, on horseback or in a canoe, suffering hunger and fatigue in his long, tedious trips. A shrewd, energetic man. He has been successful, such as he will be. He was always able to paddle his own canoe. Then Dr. Monroe was the old doctor and I was the new. You all know that the new doctor is a great fellow, and performs many wonderful cures, so did I; and even raised the dead, which I can prove by Joe Lemon. One rainy afternoon I was called to see a sick man living in a lumber shanty, on one of the bayous. The man was very sick, and I went again the next morning. I was met at the door by Joe who said, "Doctor, you are too late, the man is dying." I called for a mustard plaster and a jug of hot water. When the plaster was ready, Joe said the man was dead, his eyes were set and his jaw had fallen. I put on the plaster and told Joe to rub him. The patient rallied and made a good recovery. Joe would always swear the man was dead. Joe was a good nurse and had great confidence in me, until I threatened to spoil a mud hole in front of his gate, for his pigs to bathe in. He then lost it.

Looking back to the early days of my practice in Grand Haven, I cannot forget what passed through my mind, at a meeting of the citizens at the old school-house, now the residence of the late John Furlong. Looking over the people I thought of the future and wondered how many of those before me I would have to see die. Alas! too many. Mr. Duvernay, Rev. W. M. Ferry, C. B. Albee, N. H. White, Timothy Fletcher, George Parks, John W. Hopkins and many others. There has been many changes, the railroad has been removed, and the village where little Johnny Kilean was born has been transferred to this side. Happy Hollow is nearly desolate.

No one can know the trials of the early physicians. We are often told how to treat scarlet fever. That the patient should be isolated from the family and put in a large room having plenty of sun and air. Everything to be removed save a few pictures to amuse the patient, etc. I have had on the sawdust, in a room just large enough to contain a cook stove and two beds, five patients sick with scarlet fever of a malignant type. Surrounded by filth and bad water, they made a good recovery, in spite of all drawbacks.

It is impossible in the limits of an article like this to mention all of the prominent practitioners of the county who have been an honor to their profession. The labors and anxieties of the true physician are many and the consciousness of well doing is often his sole reward.

THE BURNING OF HOLLAND, OCTOBER 9, 1871

BY G. VAN SCHELVEN

The southern tier of townships in Ottawa county, constituting, with a part of Allegan county, the Holland County, with the city of Holland as its commercial, social and educational center, were on the eve of celebrating the first quarter-centennial of their settlement.

During a period of nearly twenty-five years they had enjoyed comparatively, a continuous prosperity, marked not so much by the accumulation of capital or wealth, as by a steady and healthy growth of both the agricultural districts and Holland city as its natural market. A variety of resources, a diversity of soil, a growing manufacturing interest, with shipping facilities by both water and rail, had combined in making Holland a prosperous and flourishing little city of about 2,400 inhabitants.

The purport of this paper is to make brief historical mention of the fire of October 9, 1871, whereby in a short space of two hours the labors of a generation were destroyed, hundreds of families rendered houseless and homeless, and many a worthy old settler, upon the evening of a well-spent life, left in straitened circumstances, from which he has never been able to recover.

For weeks preceding this eventful October night we had experienced an uninterrupted drought. In most every direction from the city the woods were on fire and had been for several days. By hard labor the southeastern part of the city was saved from these forest fires during the week preceding the conflagration, the locality immediately south of Hope College and the old Orphan House being at that time particularly exposed.

During the afternoon of Sunday, October 8, the atmosphere was unusually warm for that season of the year. At intervals fine ashes were showered over and into the city. The very skies seemed to betoken the advent of the impending calamity. These proved afterwards to be the first messengers of the burning of Chicago on that same Sunday, as was subsequently explained.

The effect of this long drought and of the atmosphere at this time, seemed as it were, to prepare all the combustible material in and around the city for that awful fate which was awaiting it.

The greater part of the southwest addition, but recently platted and sparsely settled, was nothing less than a wooded wilderness, and the ravine along Thirteenth street was filled with logs and timber.

At 2 o'clock in the afternoon the wind turned southwesterly and began gradually to increase. The fire alarm was rung, and from this time on the fighting of the fire all along the timbered tracts south and southwest of the city, was kept up uninterruptedly. As night advanced the wind increased in force, until at midnight it blew a hurricane, spreading the fire and the flames with an alarming velocity toward the doomed city. The huge bark piles at the Cappen & Bertch tannery in the western and the Third Reformed Church in the southern part of the city, were among the first points attacked; from thence on, the devastating fire fiend had a full and unmolested sway.

The burning shingles and siding of this new and large church edifice and the flaming fragments of bark were blown towards the center of the town, sweeping everything in their northward course. At this fatal moment the wind turned more westerly and thus forced the fire toward the center and more eastern parts of the city—this sealed the fate of Holland.

Within the short space of two hours, between one and three o'clock, of Monday morning, October 9, 1871, this entire devastation was accomplished. No one unless he has been an eye-witness of such a scene, can conceive its terror or its awfulness. We shall not attempt to describe it. The entire territory covered by the fire was mowed as clean as with a reaper; there was not a fencepost or a sidewalk plank and hardly the stump of a shade tree left to designate the old lines.

The grounds at Hope College, somewhat isolated as they were, seemed to be the only spot where one could escape with his life. Many took to the waters of Black Lake, escaping in small boats.

The fierceness of the wind and the rapidity with which the fire spread, may be inferred from the fact that over two hundred and fifty dead horses, cattle and swine were found in the burned district, and that a canceled bank check, partly burned, drawn by the firm of De Jong, Van Schelven and Oggel, upon Nathan Kenyon, banker, was picked up on one of the farms in section four of the township of Tallmadge in this county, a distance of twenty-five miles.

The break of day on that Monday morning presented a scene, the memory of which will outlive all other recollections in the minds of its victims, and a faint idea can only be given in this sketch by furnishing a few statistical incidents.

The loss of human life was limited to one aged widow woman, Mrs. J. Tolk.

Over three hundred families were left without shelter.

The number of buildings destroyed are about as follows: dwellings, 210; stores, shops and offices, 75; manufactories, 15; churches, 5; hotels, 3; miscellaneous buildings, 45; docks and warehouses, 5; one tug and several other boats.

Amount of property destroyed, $900,000. Amount of insurance, $35,000. Of this insurance only a small part was recovered, inasmuch as many companies had been rendered insolvent by the Chicago fire.

Neither was the calamity limited to the city. The damage and devastation in the surrounding township of Holland, as well as in the townships of Fillmore and Laketown, in Allegan county, were great. The recollection of the writer is that in these localities seventy families were burned out, and the relief work performed during the winter that followed, includes also the care of that number of families, besides feed and shelter for their stock. No mention is made of the thousands of rods of fencing destroyed all through this locality, or the damage done to standing timber.

A minute description of the fire district is not expected in this sketch. Suffice it to say that the heart of the city, including the entire business portion thereof was destroyed. A better idea of the general ruin might perhaps be obtained by stating what remained of the once thriving and prosperous city. A strip of houses along the extreme western and southern parts of the city, all south of Tenth and east of Market and nearly the entire first ward. In addition to this and in the order of their relative importance, we might also make particular mention of Hope College, Plugger Mills, Heald's Planing Mill, Union School, First Reformed and True Reformed churches, both our railroad depots and the town-house. Insignificant as this array may appear now, it created at the time a sort of nucleus around which clustered the faint hopes for the future of Holland. And especially was this so in the case of Hope College, not so much for the money value of the buildings but for what these buildings represented historically, and for the connecting link it had left between the Holland colonists and their true and most faithful friend who had stood by them from the very hour of their arrival upon American soil, under whose fostering care they had gradually developed from the emigrant into the American, and to whom this calamity was to furnish a new field, for them to again demonstrate that same generosity and attachment—I refer to the Reformed Church of America.

Hunger and the want of shelter, drove most of the people into the country, to the extent that the flames and smoke from the surrounding fires permitted them to do so. In their flight they were not handicapped with many cares, for whatever had not been buried in the ground had been consumed by the fire. All day long the roads leading east out of the city were lined with refugees.

But we must hurry on. We feel a longing to quit these scenes of destruction. There is something in store, in connection with this calamity, which to a certain extent alleviates much that is painful in contemplating so much misery.

The general conflagrations of the 8th and 9th of October embraced not only Holland and Chicago, but also Peshtigo, Manistee, the Port Huron district and several other localities, and that it is a matter of history that coextensive with this widespread ruin, were also the sympathies and charities of our fellow-men.

It will undoubtedly be remembered, when the news of the burning of Chicago had reached New York, how James Fisk in his novel but effective way at once gathered in a trainload of provisions and supplies, and how with lightning speed he sent them on to relieve the thousands of Chicago's refugees, scattered over the open prairies. So it was here.

Hardly had the people of Holland, on the following Tuesday morning, awakened from their first slumbers after so much anxiety and despair, and while they were yet casting around for a relic or a landmark to designate the spot where once had been their home, and with no indication of what the succeeding morrow was to bring—but that the generosity of their neighbors was already seen and felt in their desolate home.

The surrounding fires had cut off all railroad communications. The bridge on the line of the M. L. S. R. R. had been destroyed so that no trains could enter the city. Penetrating as far as they could toward the northern banks of Black River the friends from the neighboring city of Grand Haven had unloaded a timely supply of provisions and other stores, the variety of which was not the least striking feature. These stores consisted, not only in what the grocery and the bakery could supply, but the kitchen and the pantry had also been emptied—a loaf of bread partly cut, a solitary biscuit, doughnuts; a remnant of a roast, a part of a ham, etc., etc.,—creating in the minds of the hungry recipients the indelible impression that this contribution—so timely forwarded—was the spontaneous act of sympathising friends and generous hearted neighbors.

These supplies as they were spread out before that hungry population, spoke more eloquent than words, and proved more forcible than any oral message which accompanied them, that our neighbors felt for us and appreciated our condition, and so feeling and appreciating did not hesitate or delay to act.

At the same time it should be stated here that few of the many incidents, following in the trail of this catastrophe, affected the burned out people of Holland more deeply than the receipt of these first supplies. It was relief mingled with so much that was painful; and in order to understand this we should imagine these people, regardless of their prior condition or home comforts, and clad in the garments of destitution and misery, standing in line each awaiting his or her turn to receive supplies according to the number in his or her family. It was this which brought home to them a realizing sense of their true condition, and how, for the present, they were thrown upon the charities of their fellow men.

On the afternoon of the next day, a meeting of the citizens was called to discuss the general situation. Among those present was Dr. Van Raalte. Those of you who were acquainted with this great leader of the Holland emigration, may form an idea of what was said by him on that occasion, and of the inspiring effect it had upon the people. One of his closing sentiments was expressed in the following language: "With our Dutch tenacity and our American experience, Holland will be rebuilt." And mark the coincident, how a similar sentiment was expressed on that same day, by Joseph Medill of the Chicago *Tribune,* in the first issue after the fire, when he wrote: "With christian faith and western grit, Chicago shall be rebuilt."

As the news of our destruction became generally known among our immediate neighbors and surrounding places, aid and relief was liberally forwarded. The Board of Supervisors of Ottawa County, just then in session, visited us, and made ample provisions for a destitution which was to be feared during the approaching winter, but which aid, thanks to a generous public, was never needed. A new assessment roll of Holland City was ordered by the board, to make the valuations correspond with the new order of things.

A local relief committee was appointed by the citizens, consisting of the following persons as near as we can recollect them: Dr. B. Ledeboer, Chairman, H. D. Post, Secretary, K. Schaddelee, Treasurer, Rev. Drs. A. C. Van Raalte, Philip Phelps, C. Scott and A. T. Steward, R. K. Heald, Dr. S. L. Morris, H. Meengs, J. O. Doesburg, G. Wakker, E. Herald and G. Van Schelven.

The township of Holland appointed as their relief committee Messrs. W. Diekema, J. H. Boone and D. Miedema, and a similar committee was also appointed for the burned district in Allegan county.

At Grand Rapids a general relief committee was appointed by Gov. Baldwin to distribute aid through the western part of the State. This committee consisted of Messrs. T. D. Gilbert, William A. Howard, N. L. Avery, H. Fralick and R. M. Collins.

An address was published by Dr. Van Raalte and others to the people of this State, setting forth the extent of their calamity. Also another address was issued by the secretary of the Holland Relief Committee refuting the slanderous reports that "the Hollanders refused to aid in extinguishing the fire for the reason that it was Sunday, and that the churches would not permit their bells to be rung, fearing that it woud disturb the congregation."

Gov. Baldwin made a tour of inspection of the several burned districts in this State, including Holland, to satisfy himself as to the necessity of furnishing State aid. The abundance of voluntary relief, however, rendered this unnecessary. In his message to the legislature, at the extra session in March, 1872, he made mention of the aid distributed through the Grand

Rapids relief committee, and a similar committee appointed by him for the eastern part of the State in the Port Huron district.

The labors connected with the receiving and distributing of supplies were kept up during the greater part of the winter. Lumber and building material, hardware, provisions, clothing, household goods and furniture, were shipped in large quantities. The liberality of the railroad companies in furnishing free transportation was an important item. It is a source of regret to the writer of this sketch that the short notice given to prepare the same did not allow him to furnish an approximate statement of the amount and kind of aid received. It would have been so appropriate to do so at this time. Through the instrumentality of Rev. John L. See, of New York, treasurer of the board of education and the Reformed Church, a cash fund of about $40,000 was collected, mainly from among the friends of the Holland Colony in the east. The sister colony in Pella, Iowa, was not among the last to contribute. Our kin across the sea also responded. But it is impossible and it would be manifestly unjust to the others, to further single out individuals or localities in this general outburst of good will and charity.

The distribution of all this bounty, devolved upon the local committee at Holland. To do this in the spirit of its donors and with fairness and equity was a task requiring all the ability and discrimination they could muster, and more too. It was a noble, though thankless labor.

The work of re-building Holland once begun, was kept up uninterruptedly. The rebuilding Chicago, however, created a large demand for all kinds of building material and a corresponding increase of prices. The effect of this upon Holland proved very disastrous. It added materially to the cost of every new building and enterprise, thereby creating, in nearly every instance, an indebtedness beyond the extent of the first estimate. Close upon this period came the general shrinkage in values, caused by the panic of 1873, reducing the assets and valuation of the rebuilt city fully fifty per cent., without lessening in the least the liabilities and incumbrances.

The result of this was—and it is among the most painful reminiscences in the history of the "Burning of Holland"—that the men of push and of enterprise, who had been instrumental in making Holland City what it was, up to October 9, 1871, and who had again placed their shoulders to the wheel, and who, in doing so, had assumed large financial responsibilities, were unable to face the distressing period that followed the panic of 1873. The tide of events crippled them seriously, and caused a general depression to the newly rebuilt but poverty stricken place, which depression lasted for years. It was a cruel but unavoidable fate that awaited these men, and it seemed as though the new growth and prosperity of the town were made to hinge upon the completion of their downfall. It has since been accomplished; and Holland City of to-day has fairly begun to assume her old-time position; but many of the men who in the past had contributed to her fair name and prestige, have not been permitted to share in the new work.

As we commemorate this evening the semi-centennial settlement of Ottawa county, we delight in paying tribute to the memory of the men who sowed that others might reap. So in contributing this sketch of the "Burning of Holland," we bespeak a kind word for these resolute men, who at an advanced age were made to suffer that others might profit. Brave as they were they could not outweather the storm, but ultimately were wrecked upon the shores of an honest and honorable ambition.

THE SONG OF TIME

BY MRS. R. C. BARNS

There is ever a song in the march of time;
  The echoes come up from the long ago—
A musical sound-wave—and the rhythm and rhyme
  Go on through the ages with ceaseless flow.

It chanted aloft in the grand old pine,
  Like a muffled drum so mournful and low;
It swept through their ranks, along the line,
  But the woodman's ax has laid them low.
Their wind-harps are broken, and sad and slow
  Their music died out in the long ago.

Now we hear it again in a livelier strain,
  In the sharp, shrill whistle that breaks our sleep;
In the rush and whirr of the railway train;
  In the many steamers that ply the deep;
In the mowing machines that gather our grain;
  In the flouring mills that grind our wheat;
In "the still, small voice" of the falling rain;
  In the howling winds and the driving sleet.
It growls in the cyclone across the plain,
  And rumbles in the earthquake beneath our feet;
It pipes a death-knell on the trackless main,
  And sings a dirge where sailors sleep.

The loud-swelling chorus will ever remain
  Where surges roll and cataracts leap
  And the deep maketh answer unto the deep.

It sometimes sinks to a low refrain
  Where grief holds sway and mourners weep;
It moans and sobs in a cry of pain
  Where sorrow and anguish the heart-strings sweep.
It laughs and shouts in joy again
  Where childhood and youth in pleasure meet,
  And manhood comes old age to greet
  At the festive board or in crowded street.

Time plays on a harp of endless strings
And his step keeps the measure wherever he sings.
Be the movement quick or be it slow,
It is perfect still in its ceaseless flow
On through the ages that are numbered by years,
With never a discord to pain our ears.
Could we listen aright to the song sublime
We would find it perfect in rhythm and rhyme.

THE HALDIMAND PAPERS

COPIES OF PAPERS ON FILE IN THE DOMINION ARCHIVES AT OTTAWA, CANADA

NOTE.—Care has been taken, in publishing the following papers, to follow the original copies as closely as possible, including orthography, punctuation, capitalization, etc. The references in brackets, at the close of each paper, are to the filings in the Dominion Archives at Ottawa.

LETTERS OF GEN. GUY CARLETON AND LIEUT. GOV. HENRY HAMILTON

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM GENERAL CARLETON

CHAMBLY 9th September 1776.

Lt. Gov. Hamilton:

SIR—Mr. Hay came here too late for any of the officers about the army, but as it might probably be more agreeable to him to be employed in the country near his Family. I should have no objection to his being appointed Assistant in the Indian Department, provided you find the Service require it. (Signed) GUY CARLETON.*

[B 121, p. 2.]

ORDERS: CIRCULAR

CHAMBLY 14th September 1776.

To Lt. Gov. Hamilton:

The Commander in Chief orders that a return of the Military Stores and quantity of Provisions in all the Posts to be made him; like wise that a

---

***See appendix**

state be sent him of the Fortifications &c. with what Lodging or Barrack Room for Troops there is in each place. A particular account is also required of all the Vessels upon the Lakes, their names, and those of their Masters or Commanders, the number of Guns & men they carry distinguishing those in the Kings Service from the others, and specifying how the former are commissioned paid and victualled. These returns to be made twice a year viz. by the first opportunity which may offer in the Spring, and the last in the Autumn. (Signed) E. Foy,

[B 121, p. 2.] *Dep. Adjt. Gen.*

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM ON BOARD THE MARIA

off Point au Fer. Octr. 6th 1776.

To Lt Gov Hamilton,

What I mentioned to you on the subject of Expenses, was in consequence of Instructions from the Treasury, but it was not intended to limit you with regard to such as are absolutely necessary for putting your Post in a proper state of defence, and for keeping the Indians in readiness for, and a disposition to act as circumstances shall require.

I beg you will send me any intelligence of importance which you may procure from time to time. I am, &c.,

(Signed) G. C.

P. S. You must keep the Savages in readiness to joyn me in the Spring, or march elsewhere as they may be most wanted.

[B 121, p. 3.] G. C.

EXTRACT OF A LETTER

Crown Point, [without date, supposed in October.]

Lt Govr Hamilton,[*]

Sir—I have received your letter of the 8th instant, and approve the steps which you inform me you have taken relative to the intelligence you received from Mr. Rochblave, means should undoubtedly be used for intercepting and preventing a correspondence which may prove so detrimental to His Majesty's Affairs as that which you inform me is carrying on between the Colonists and the Spanish Governor, but care should be taken that nothing be pursued which may have a tendency to create a breach between the two Nations. The Spanish side of the Mississippi must be respected upon all occasions.

---

[*] See appendix

Another vessel is ordered to be built in lieu of that which was wrecked and Colonel Caldwell, or you, will appoint a person to command it in case I should not send other directions in that particular.

P.S. Since writing the above I have nominated Mr. David Beaton to command the new vessell which is to be called the Ottawa.

[B 121, p. 4.] (Signed) G. C.

ORDERS: CIRCULAR

To Lt Govr. Hamilton or Officer Commanding at Detroit.

Sir—It being necessary for His Majesty's service during the present rebellion that all possible attention be paid to the navigation of the lakes, I am commanded to acquaint you on no account suffer boats, those of Indians excepted, or vessels to pass upon the lakes without proper passports under the hand of the commanding officer of some one of His Majesty's posts thereupon, or the Governor and Commander-in-chief of the Province; nor shall you permit an vessel of greater dimensions than a common boat to be built except such as may be thought requisite for the King's service; and His Excellency further commands that you do your utmost to seize all suspected persons passing upon or near the lakes, and all persons attempting to sow sedition or to stir up insurrections among the people of that Part of the Country, and that you send the same with proper proofs by the first safe opportunity to the person in Montreal, making at the same time a report thereof. (Signed)

[B 121, p. 5.] E. Foy.

EXTRACT FROM A LETTER

Quebec, 2d February, 1777.

Lt Gov Hamilton.

I am persuaded you will exert your best endeavors for the King's service, to your own prudence and judgment, at this distance much must be left.

The Legislative Council is met, but the times will not at present admit of any regulations being made for distant or remote situations while the commotions continue, the power of the sword is chiefly and indeed only to be trusted to. The keeping the Indians firm to the King's interest ought to be your first and great object when the troubles are composed, tho' not till then your presence here may be necessary towards putting your settlement into some sort of order, and I shall be glad to see you; in the meantime I hope you will think of, and prepare materials for that purpose. One or two points that I wished to mention had very near escaped me. Whenever you hold a council with the savages upon any matter of importance, a copy of the minutes, or at least the substance, ought to be transmitted here, at the same time it is very proper you communicate to the King's servants co-operating with you, whether in the military or Indian departments at the neighboring posts, everything that may affect their particular or the general interests of the State; it is of consequence to the King's Service, that one general and uniform Plan of Policy be adopted for the numerous Tribes inhabiting the present extensive Limits of this Province.

As nothing better could be done at the time, you was included in a Commission of the Peace for the Province at large and in that capacity you have a right to issue your Warrants for apprehending and sending down any Persons guilty of Criminal offences in the District, at least such as are of consequence enough to deserve, taking that journey, but these must be signed by you, and not by Mr. Dejean, whose authority is unknown here, and at the same time that you acquaint the officer commanding at Montreal, with your Reasons for so doing, you will likewise report the same to me, or whoever presides for the time being. (Signed)

[B 121, p 6.] Guy Carleton.

LETTER ACCOMPANYING COPY OF ONE FROM LORD GERMAIN

Quebec 21st May 1777.

Lt. Gov. Hamilton:

Sir—You have herewith inclosed the Copy of a Letter from Lord George Germain, which is sent you at full Length, for your Instruction and guidance; I have only to add that Lt Colonel St Leger has similar orders for the savages of the five nations &c.

You will therefore be careful not to attempt to draw off any destined for his command.

Let me know what Provisions you may want, in the mean time some shall be sent you at a venture. I am &c.

[B 121, p. 8.] (Signed) Guy Carleton.

Letter from Lord George Germain

Whitehall 26th March 1777.

Sir—In the consideration of the measures proper to be pursued in the next campaign, the making a Diversion on the Frontiers of Virginia and

Pennsylvania, by parties of Indians conducted by proper Leaders as proposed by Lt. Gov. Hamilton has been maturely weighed.

That officer in his Letter to the Earl of Dartmouth dated at Detroit the 2nd of September last, that he had then with him Deputies from the Ottawas, Chippewas, Wyandotts, Shawnese, Senecas, Delawares, Cherokees and Pouattouattamies. That their inclination was for War and that it was with much difficulty he had restrained them from Hostilities, which he thought it his duty to do, finding by a letter from you dated the 19th of July, that you had sent back some Ottawas, who had offered their Services desiring them to hold themselves in readiness next Spring.

There can be little doubt that the Indians are still in the same disposition and that they will readily and eagerly engage in any Enterprize in which it may be thought fit to employ them under the direction of the King's officers, and as it is His Majesty's resolution that the most vigorous Efforts should be made, and every means employed that Providence has put into His Majesty's Hands, for crushing the Rebellion & restoring the Constitution it is the King's Command that you should direct Lieut. Governor Hamilton to assemble as many of the Indians of his District as he conveniently can, and placing proper persons at their Head, to whom he is to make suitable allowances, to conduct their Parties, and restrain them from committing violence on the well affected and inoffensive Inhabitants, employ them in making a Diversion and exciting an alarm upon the frontiers of Virginia and Pennsylvania. And as there is good ground to believe there are considerable numbers of loyal subjects in those Parts who would gladly embrace an opportunity of delivering themselves from the Tyranny and oppression of the Rebel Committees; it is His Majesty's pleasure that you do authorize and direct Lieut Govr Hamilton to invite all such loyal subjects to join him & to assure them of the same pay and allowances as are given to His Majesty's Corps raised in America and that such of them as shall continue to serve His Majesty until the Rebellion is suppressed and peace restored shall each receive His Majesty's Bounty of 200 Acres of Land.

These offers it is to be hoped will induce many Persons to engage in the Kings Service; which may enable Lt. Gov. Hamilton to extend his operations, so as to divide the attention of the Rebels, and oblige them to collect a considerable Force to oppose him, which cannot fail of weakening their main army & facilitating the operations directed to be carried on against them in other Quarters, and thus bring the War to a more Speedy Issue and restore those deluded People to their former State of Happiness and prosperity, which are the favorite wishes of the Royal Breast and the great object of all His Majesty's measures.

A supply of presents for the Indians & other necessaries will be wanted for this Service, and you will of course send Lieut. Gov. Hamilton what is proper and sufficient.

Inclosed is a List of the Names of several Persons, residing on the Frontiers of Virginia, recommended by Lord Dunmore for their Loyalty and attachment to Government, and who His Lordship thinks will be able to give great assistance to Lieut. Gov. Hamilton through their extensive Influence among the Inhabitants.

(B 121, p. 8.) (Signed) G. C.

QUEBEC 22nd May 1777.

SIR—You will please to inform the Commanders of the Kings Vessels upon the Upper Lakes, that from the 10th of August last, to which time the contractors have been paid, upon whose certificates I know not, the Pay of the officers and men, as well as every other Expense attending those Vessels, are to be borne by the Crown, in consequence the oaths of allegiance will be administered to them by you, and you will transmit me their names, ages, and the country they belong to. No Vessels are to navigate those Lakes except such as are armed and manned by the Crown, the Arms and Ammunitions of the Trade to be put on board these armed Vessels, and no Military Stores whether public or private property, to be suffered to go in open Batteaux. With regard to their other effects, the Traders may be accomodated with a passage on Board of these Vessels, provided the same can be done without the least inconvenience to the King's Service, this indulgence is only for the prest. and in case they cannot provide for the conveyance of them otherwise.—Let me have your opinion with regard to the Traders at your settlement by a safe hand, distinguishing such as you consider to be firmly attached to Government from those well affected to the American cause, the Colonies they came from, and whence before these troubles broke out, they were furnished with Goods. I am &c.

[B 121, p. 14.] (Signed) GUY CARLETON.

CIRCULAR

QUEBEC 2nd July 1777.

SIR—It has already been signified to you, that the exigencies of the times required, that all the Vessels navigating the Lakes, should be reserved for the King's Service, but to remedy as much as possible, all inconvenience to the Merchants from this measure, whenever it shall happen that there is not full employment for them in, and that any of them can be spared from His Majesty's immediate business, you are hereby empowered, to direct from time to time, as you shall see occasion, that such Vessel or Vessels, at your Posts, so unemployed, shall assist in transporting the trade of the Merchants across the Lakes, observing however that no payment be made for goods so transported: but the officers commanding such Vessels may take Receipts for the quantities ship'd on board them, to be settled hereafter according to a regulation, which, upon due consideration, may be made general and fixed, and you are to make this order known to all the Parties concerned. I am &c.

[B 121, p. 16.] (Signed) Guy Carleton.

Quebec 15th September 1777.

Sir—Mr. Gray not thinking himself sufficiently authorized, to confine Mr. James Sterling, permitted him to come down here, and the Papers you had transmitted respecting his Detention, as soon as received, were put into the hands of the Chief Justice and Attorney General, to be by them examined and proceeded upon, as the Law directed, the Result I shall not trouble you with, as Mr. Livins has promised to write to you fully upon the subject, and to furnish you with some advice for your conduct in future exigencies of the like nature.

After Mr. Sterling had given security for his good behaviour, in such a sum as the crown lawyers thought proper to take, he applied for my leave to return to Detroit, which I declined till I should hear further from you, but making a fresh application to go up to bring down his Family, and settle his affairs, I could not think of withholding such an Indulgence and a Permission has been granted him accordingly, expressly stipulating those conditions.

Notwithstanding as you are on the spot, and are responsible for the safety of the district, over which you preside, this Pass is not intended to preclude you from extending or contracting the Permission thereby granted, as you may find it necessary for the King's Interests, and the safety of the settlement, which are to be the first objects of your attention.—You will send me down by a safe hand, as soon as you conveniently can, the papers and Commissions belonging to Mr. Sterling, that have been delivered to Mr. Dejean.

As neither the Civil or Militia officers of your settlement, can be properly authorized to act in their several capacities, without Commissions from the Governor or Commander in Chief of the Province, you will take the first opportunity of transmitting here their Names, that they may be furnished with the same as soon as possible, and hereafter when vacancies happen, which the King's Service may require not to remain open, you will report the same and the Persons you have granted temporary appointments to, that no time may be lost in duly authorizing such, as it may be deemed right to confirm; this is to be understood of the Militia, which is immediately under your command and I hope you will endeavor to keep in good order; I am not authorized to delegate the power of appointing Civil officers to any persons whatever—His Majesty having been pleased to allow upon the Establishment of the Province, Salaries of one hundred, fifty and twenty Pounds Sterling per Annum, for a Judge, Assessor and Sheriff for your District, you will please to recommend such persons as you think most fit to fill those offices, that Commissions may be made out for them accordingly. It is hoped that in the next Session of the Legislative Council something may be done towards regulating the course of Civil proceedings in these remote Parts.

Mr. Rochblave has advised Mr. Dunn of his Drafts for £156 15s. 10d. and £34 4s. 2d. Sterling, his appointments for a year, of which one has already been discharged, and the other, will when presented; The Troops were withdrawn from the Illinois, to avoid unnecessary expence, and this salary granted this gentleman, to have an eye to King's Interests in these Parts, and to advise Government of whatever might be carrying on there against them, this is all the service required of him; as you are nearer and may be sooner informed whether he continues to deserve encouragement, you will give him notice hereafter to draw upon you for the appointment only, which for his and your better information is deemed to have commenced the 1st May 1776; you will likewise pay any expresses he has occasion to send you and recommend his avoiding to dispatch any without essential reasons for so doing.

Besides that Reports from distant Parts, and through the Channels, they must of course proceed, are ever to be attended to, with great caution and circumspection, it would be highly improper in me or any of the King's Servants upon this side of the Water, whether the designs of the Spaniards are or may be, at any, and much more, in such critical Times as these, to act offensively against them, or any other Foreign Power, should these be daring enough to entertain hostile intentions, and carry them into execution, upon any part of His Majesty's Territories, every one of his officers, will in such case be justifiable in opposing them by all the means in their power.

I have daily expectations of the arrival of a successor, or of leave to go home. (Signed)

[B 121, p. 17.] GUY CARLETON.

ST. JOHN'S 26th September, 1777.

SIR—The conduct of the War has been taken entirely out of my hands, and the management of it, upon your Frontier has been assigned to you, as you have seen by a Letter from Lord George, a copy of which I sent you; I can therefore only refer you to that.

As to the Naval Department, it was never my intention to supercede Mr. Grant, and I design to make his allowance and Mr. Andrew's, of both of whom I have a very high opinion, such as shall satisfy them: and I shall have the same consideration towards the other officers. I have sent Captain Thompson to examine into the state and condition of the Vessels on that service, and I wait his report to enable me to settle the regulation of them.

I have given Lieut Colonel Bolton orders respecting the disposition of the Vessels and to allow nothing to navigate the Lakes, that is not manned and armed completely, and in the King's Service, and I should be glad you would confer with him, at your return upon these subjects.

In respect to freight, I directed that, when the King's Service would admit, the Vessels might assist the Trade as much as possible and that proper receipts or certificates for such goods as might be transported should be taken by the officers, in order that it might be paid hereafter, according to such regulation as His Majesty's Ministers should think proper to make for the purpose. The unfortunate turn with which we are threatened upon the Frontier of this Province has obliged me to hasten your return to your Post and which I have thought the more necessary, as the direction of the War on that side has been put into your hands by the Minister.

I should be glad you conferred with the Commissary General on the Subject of the Supply of Provisions for the upper Posts before your departure from Montreal. Wishing you a good journey, &c.

[B 121, p. 21.] (Signed) GUY CARLETON.

MONTREAL March 14 1778.

Lt. Gov. Hamilton:

SIR—Your letter giving me information of the State of Fort Pitt, and desiring my concurrence in an expedition against it, I received the 4th Instant, the Instructions sent out last summer by Lord George Germain were so pointed, taking the management of the War on all sides out of my hands, that I cannot give you any directions, relative to the offensive measures you agitate.

The orders from the Minister were sent up to you last year, as they were received. I did not deviate one tittle from them, on General Haldimand's arrival, I shall lay your plan before him and likewise the differences about the Commonage of Hog Island. You may however in the mean time collect what materials you can concerning this contest, and transmit them down, that the Crown Lawyers may be able to examine into the nature of the pretentions. I do not think it would be prudent to give grants of land to Prisoners or Refugees from the Colonies whose characters cannot possibly be known. If portions of Land were to be given, the families of old settlers, whose good conduct might entitle them to this attention, would most certainly claim a preference. But this the Governor & Council of the Province can alone determine.

No Return of the Artillery or Engineer's Stores you want, having been sent, I am at a loss to guess the quantity and quality you require.

[B. 121, p. 22.] I am &c.

(Signed) GUY CARLETON

LETTERS FROM GENERAL HALDIMAND* TO MAJOR DE PEYSTER, COMMANDANT AT MICHILIMACKINAC.

MONTREAL, the 10th August, 1778.

SIR—Your last letters to Sir Guy Carleton to which no answer had been returned have been laid before me, and I have Just now received your letter of the 20th July last giving me advice of Bills which you have drawn for different expences incurred at your Post, the amount of which being considerable I cannot omit recommending to you the greatest attention to avoid all expences, the necessity thereof is not very clear and manifest, at the same time I would have you understand, that I have no intention to limit you in anything which the good and advantage of His Majesty's Service shall render necessary for you to provide for, of which at that distance you must be alone the judges.

---

*See appendix

I have wrote to Col. Bolton to transmit one copies of all standing orders, which have been given by former Commanders in Chief, and the Governors General of this province for the management and Government of this Post you will accordingly furnish Colonel Bolton, with such as are preserved at the Post of Michilimackinac, in order to enable him to comply with my directions and in order that I may consider of such rules and regulations as may be still wanting to establish at the Posts for making them of the greatest advantage possible to his Majesty's service, and as little burthensome as possible.

In the mean time I have thought fit to establish for the present the following rule to be observed by all the officers commanding at the Posts where they shall have occasion to draw money for discharging the accounts of the different Expences incurred under their direction or by their orders vizt. that the Bills to be drawn by the printed copies herewith enclosed filled up (more of which shall be furnished from hence from time to time upon the Officers giving notice of their being wanted) observing at the time at which they draw must be at sixty days, that the money be in New York Currency that at the end of the words His Majesty's Service, and in the space where in the Copy herewith inclosed filled up for the officers more particular directions. The words in the Indian Department are written, it be always expressed what particular service the money drawn be for, and that as it is expressed in the Bills, a letter of advice always accompany them together with an account of the expences or Disbursements which the sum of money then drawn is intended to satisfy or discharge. Sending copies of all Vouchers to Mr. Dunn the paymaster of this Department to be filed in his office the several officers keeping the originals of such said vouchers in their own possession to serve them when they shall be called upon to settle their Accounts at the Treasury or as it shall hereafter be directed. (Signed) F. H.

[B 96 1, p. 78.]

MONTREAL 30th August, 1778.

SIR—This dispatch was intended to have been sent you by a Mr. St. Hubert a Missionary going to the Illinois, but the unfortunate change which has taken place in the affairs of that country for the present puts a stop to his Journey, the gentleman Mr. J. B. de Grosselier with whom Mr. St. Hubert was to have gone up, proceeding nevertheless, and being a man who is well acquainted with that country and very well spoken of, I entrust my letters to his care and recommend him to you, both as a man who deserves to have favour shewn him in his private concerns, and as one that is capable of furnishing you with advice that may be usefull to follow in those of the Publick, upon the present situation of the Illinois.

I enclose you a copy of a letter which I have wrote to Lieut. Governor Hamilton as necessary for your information, and desiring that you will correspond with him upon the occasion, and assist him as far as you may have opportunities in whatever he shall undertake in this emergency.

In the mean time I must desire you will communicate to me as expeditiously as possible, and by the safest conveyance your sentiments, whether from the confidence to be placed in the Indians the inhabitants and the resources and difficulties of the country, you think there are any means to be employed with a probability of success to recover that country and what those means are if your opinion on this subject be in the affirmative.

In the Copy of Mr. Hamilton's letter, transmitted to you you will take notice of directions which I have given concerning the Powder Ball and Fusils of the Merchants, which directions are meant to be general at the Posts and therefore I must request that you will accordingly observe them at that you command in. Louison the son of Chevalier of St. Joseph has been down here and behaved very well. I have sent a letter by him to his father who I understand has great influence among the nations of that place. I have marked to him my surprise that none of them had been down here this spring, and the son has promised to come down here the next in order to acquaint me with the reason of their absence. I recommended to you to write to Mr. Chevalier also upon the same subject and in the most earnest terms to endeavour to engage him heartily in the King's Service.

[B 96 1, p. 82.] (Signed) F. H.

MONTREAL the 2nd of September 1778

SIR—Since writing my letter of the 30th August I have had some conversation with Mr. Grosellier who thinks it will be practicable to send some Trusty Indians into the Illinois with letters or Messages to the Missionary, and by that means to learn the true state of the country, which Mr. de Grosellier tells me might be conveyed to me during the winter, I have therefore thought it necessary to recommend this matter to your Attention.

[Signed] F. H.

[B 96 1, p. 84.]

QUEBEC, 25th December, 1878.

SIR—Having occasion to send an express to Niagara, I take the opportunity to acknowledge your Letters of the 15th & 31st August the 16th & the 21st September 7th 14th and 27th of October.

Your letter of the 16th of September informs me of orders you had rec'd to furnish an officer & party to the grand portage and of the manner in which you had executed the order, with the expense attending it, and you desire to be instructed whether the Crown or Trader is to defray it in future. In answer to which I must observe that as circumstances are at present it might most probably be highly improper to send parties of Troops to such distances when they might possibly be cut off, and it is very bad policy at all times to allow the merchants to establish places of trade all over, and wherever they please in such an extensive country where proper rules to observe and the Authority of Government to enforce cannot keep pace with their projects. However this may be. The party at the grand portage was ordered at the instruction of the Merchants for their benefit, and it is unreasonable in them to expect Goverment to bear any part of the Expense attending it. I therefore must desire if to satisfy the Traders you still think it would be proper, to continue sending an officer and a party, that still it be granted on condition of its being without bringing any expense whatever upon Government except in the single article of Gun Powder if you should judge it requisite to allow any as you did before for salutes. This instance of expence as well as the astonishing expences on all heads incurred at the Posts lays me indispensably under the necessity of suggesting to you how much it is expected of every officer entrusted with a command to pay the strictest attention that no disbursements be undertaken by him or under his Authority lightly and upon all occasions, or on any occasion without sufficiently considering how it will be justified to and approved of by His Majesty's Ministers, to whom particular accounts of all Transactions must be given. The mention you make of provisions which you furnished the party with, to receive the visits of the Indians, makes it necessary for me also to observe that nothing less than the greatest possible Occonomy of this difficult to be transported and so expensive an article is excusable, but on the contrary every expedient that can be found out is expected to be tried to save it, and to make it if possible unnecessary to be sent up from Canada to the Posts at all. And if any means can be fallen upon by the use of the Deer-flesh dried by the Indians and the great quantity of fish the Lakes supply, and in general all such means as the Indians use the soldiers at the Posts could be brought to subsist wholly or in part they should receive for every days provisions so saved the price of the

Rations they are entitled to, to be paid to them monthly, or as would be most for their benefit to receive it, & I beg you will communicate to me your idea upon the possibility of reducing such plan or any part of it, or other for that purpose into actual practice.

I have already desired Colonel Bolton to signify to you my approbation of the expedient which you mention in your letter of the 21st September. You have have tried to keep the savages from forming connections with the Rebels, and I shall certainly be mindful of it, in all pass-ports I may grant for the ensuing year.

As you urge the necessity of having an armed Vessel at your Post for carrying dispatches, and other purposes I shall approve of your fitting out such an one as you think requisite, subject however to the command of the superior officer of the Naval Department, and to such regulations as shall be established for the Governance of the whole, by Mr. Schanks the commissioner whom I shall send up as early as possible in the Spring to see put in execution.

The representations you make of the state of your health and private affairs you may be assured makes a proper impression on me, and disposes me to take the earliest opportunity of relieving you from a situation which I consider your having supported so long with patience as very meritorious in you and as entitling you to all the marks of favor which can possibly be shewn you in return, and if I am longer in complying with your requests for being removed and for leave of absence than you could wish, be assured that I shall be very sorry and that it must be occasioned only by such circumstances of the Service as I shall not have in my power to control.

[B 96 1, p. 84.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC, 8th April 1779.

You have herewith enclosed the Petition of the Merchants and Traders to the North West Parts of the upper Country, to which my answer has been that you had already mentioned the subject thereof to me when you was of opinion it would be out of your power to comply with their request this year, and that it was not in mine to determine, whether such a measure, in the present state of things, would be proper or practicable that if you could possibly spare Mr. Benet, any other officer, or person in whose prudence or discretion you might safely rely. I would have no objection on their furnishing him with an Indemnification, to your impowering such person to go there for the time required and to settle the little differences, that might arise among them, as well as to confine and send down any ill effected or suspected persons resorting there, all this however to be done without any additional expence to the Crown.

The difficulties attending the sending up so large a quantity of Provisions to the Upper Posts, the Demand for which daily increases from the number of Indians Loyalists &c collected there, and the immense expence attended thereupon, engage me to press your serious attention to this object, the saving upon that article as much as possibly you can, and the thinking of every practicable method for providing or substituting all such supplies, as can be procured upon the spot.

I have sent Capt. Brehm my Aid de Camp to visit the Posts of Niagara and Detroit, and upon a view of things in those parts, and such information as he will be able to procure upon the spot, to correspond with and advise you of what he thinks most eligible to be done by you at Michilimackinac for the Kings Service to which I am to desire, you will pay due attention.

I have wrote to England for a large quantity of Indian goods to be sent here early in the spring, but as they generally arrive too late for your Posts I have ordered Lt Col Campbell to send you a supply well assorted and a sufficient quantity of Rum as soon as the Navigation opens.

[B 96 1, p. 88.] (Signed) F. H.

Quebec 18th April 1779

Sir—I have received your letter of the 20th January by which I observe the steps you have taken to favor and assist Lieut Govr Hamilton's Expedition which I wish he was in the way of receiving, but the ill fortune he has met with, by being taken prisoner at Post Vinçennes with his small garrison, deprives him of the use of the succour you intended him.*

The uncertain situation of affairs in the upper Country obliges me to defer granting passports for those posts untill I am better informed of the position and intentions of the Rebels, Provisions and goods will nevertheless be sent up to you as soon as possible.

Capn Brehm my aid de camp having received my directions to correspond with you in Detroit, I must refer you to him for some particulars he has ordered to communicate to you. (Signed) F. H.

[B 96 1, p. 90.]

Quebec 6th May 1779

Sir—Having judged it necessary to delay the departure of the Batteaux and Canoes to the Upper Country for a few days Mr. Joseph Howard has been pleased to set off without any license it is supposed to Michilimackinac and the great Portage and I must desire that you will as authorised by my ordnance of the Provence for that purpose passed in March 1777. Seize all such goods and canoes of his or of any other Trader taking the same liberty and do in regard to them all that is directed by said ordinance.

---

*See appendix

The shortest way will be if Detroit is in a state of security to send his goods and Cannoes there where there will be I hope very soon a sufficient number of Commissioners of the peace, to proceed agreeable to said Ordinance, be pleased carefully to peruse it, and to be as exact as possible in observing all that is required in such cases that Infringers of public regulations may not pass unnoticed or escape the punishment they deserve.

[B 961, p. 90.] (Signed) F. H.

Quebec 20th May 1779

Sir—In my letter of this morning I informed you of the principal object I had in view in regulating the Merchandize for the Upper posts notwithstanding this be delivered to you by Mr C. Paterson whom I have permitted to go Express to your Post or neighbourhood would assist Government, in securing the Indians and at the same time run no risk of falling into the hands of the enemy you will immediately write me the particulars by Express. I wish just to mention to you, that Governor Hamilton a few days before he was taken sent about 300 Corveé men, for some provisions and presents, which he had left at Miamis and which consequently fell into the hands of the Rebels, and would be very usefull to them in any expedition they may form by the river Chickagou against your Posts.

In one of your former letters you reported some merchants having past Michilimackinac contrary to your orders, with goods, which they probably arrived to the Rebels I beg you will inform me of their names, by whom employed, or with whom connected, also the time this happened, that I may use my endeavours, to furnish [punish] all who are concerned in such villainous practices and should anything of the sort happen in future, I beg to have the earliest and the most minute information concerning it.

As it is possible my letter of the 6th Inst may not yet have reached you I repeat here, that if any merchant whatever arrives at or near your post with any kind of goods without my particular passport, that you immediately seize all such goods, and either detain them at Michilimackinac or send them to Detroit, as you may judge best for His Majesty's Service.

I have had repeated application from Lt Col Campbell Superintendant of

Indian Affairs, to grant a Passport for the Sieur Calvert to carry Merchandize into your Neighborhood, which I could not comply with consistantly with the Impartiallity I am determined always to observe respecting Traders nevertheless if you find the Sieur Calvert, to be the steady friend to government with the influence Lt Col Campbell reports Him to have amongst the savages, I should be glad, you found out some line to employ him in, that might reward his Fidelity.

Notwithstanding I have granted no pass for Michilimackinac, I have enclosed for your information, Copy of my answer to the merchants trading to the North West of the upper Country.

(Signed) F. H.

[B 96 1, p. 92.]

QUEBEC, 20th May 1779.

SIR—Having no occasion to doubt but my several letters of April 8th and 18th also of May 6th will be with you before you receive this. I have only now to inform you, that no ships are yet arrived from England and that the various accounts, I have received from different parts respecting the Magazines of Provisions which the rebels are forming in the Upper Country, together with the many artfull and designing letters, which they have found means to distribute in several of the Indian Villages, calls upon you to use every Exertion, to preserve the Savages in our Interest, and effectually secure the post of Michilimackinac, from any insult, which the Rebels may meditate against it. In this situation of affairs I have thought proper to prohibit Merchants from carrying their goods, to your parts allowing them only, to take such Provisions, and Cloathes as may be sufficient to support their Servants during the year, and to prevent the Trade from being lost to the Province. I shall continue to pay every attention in my power to the support of the Upper Posts, and whenever Indian presents arrive, they shall be forwarded without delay, an assortment of which is now on their way to Michilimackinac and I hope will arrive within a few days of this letter. In the meantime I am pushing forward provisions and Rum, with all possible dispatch by the way of Lake Ontario, and when I inform you that I would reinforce most of the upper Posts. If I imagined I could send provisions for their support I am sure you will conceive the anxiety I must feel to have that article distributed with Justice and Economy and how much pleasure it would afford me, to hear that the industry of the Troops made the natural produce and resources of the place and situation where they are help to maintain them, and to reserve the other provisions for cases of emergency.

[B 96 1, p. 94.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC 12th June 1779.

SIR—I take the opportunity of an express going to Niagara to answer a paragraph of your letter of the 2d May expressing an inclination to be removed from present command, to that of Detroit. Nothing affords me greater pleasure than to have it in my power to oblige officers under my command, when I can do it consistently with the good of the service.

But in the present critical situation of affairs particularly at the Upper posts where our existence almost entirely depends upon the dispositions of the Indians.

I cannot view such a removal without anexing to it a brobability of every bad consequences considering you from every report that has been made to me, to have acquired the affections of the different nations around you, to have a perfect knowledge of the Management of these people, and of the Characters of the Traders and Motley crew who have it in their power to tamper with and debauch the minds. Governor Sinclair accompanied Major Holland from Halifax but I mean to detain him here until the ships arrive from England after which should circumstances alter and that we have a prospect of tranquility I shall readily fulfil my former promise to you in the meantime I must depend upon you for the exertion of your utmost abilities in preserving the friendship of the Indians.

I have given Capn. Shank orders to have the vessel you have pitched upon properly fitted up and named for the purpose of your communicating frequently with Detroit. I have likewise expressed my desire to Colonel Bolton that other small vessels belonging to Detroit may, as occasion requires, be employed in the same manner. (Signed)

[B 96 1, p. 96.] F. H.

QUEBEC 14th June 1779.

SIR—I had His Excellency the Commander in chief's Commands to add a P. S. to his letter of the 12th inst to you which from my hurry in making up dispatches for the Express to Niagara, escaped my enemy [memory?]. I now beg leave to communicate it to you.

Notwithstanding His Excellency's determination to prevent Traders in general from sending Cargoes up to the Posts, for the present he has thought fit to grant passes to some individuals to convey their goods up the grand river.

He desires that notwithstanding they are provided with passes from him you will, should the good of his Majesty's service require it, stop their further progress or lay them under such restrictions as you may find necessary.

[B 96 1, p. 97.] (Signed) R. M.

QUEBEC 3rd July, 1779.

In answer to your letter of the 14th inst expressing your wish to be removed from Michilimackinac, it is with pleasure I acquaint you that I have now a prospect of having it in my power I hope without prejudice to His Majesty's Service to comply with your request by the arrival of Lt. Govr. Hamilton whose abilities as an officer, and knowledge of the Indian nations and affairs of that Communication, I am informed, qualify him for that Command, I cannot herewith help regretting the loss of an officer, at so important a Post, whose conduct during a long command, has given general satisfaction, and has justly merited, and obtained my approbation.

I wait for the arrival of the Fleet to give my orders to Capn. Sinclair but I cannot possibly determine whether it will be in my power to permit you to go to York this season the Upper Posts appearing in so critical a situation.

[B. 96 1, p. 98.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC July 3rd 1779

SIR—I have rec'd both your letters of the 14th past the necessity which you represent, that goods should be sent to your Post, and to Lake Superiour, and the safety with which you say, it may be done to His Majesty's Service, has induced me to grant passes for the number of Canoes you have specified in your letter. I shall depend upon your judgment and experience in the distribution of them, laying the Traders under such restrictions as will most conduce to the Interest of the Public Service.

You judged right in not employing the Indians against the Illinois, since it is your opinion that Cruelties alone would be the result, I would not however absolutely discourage their Incursions into that settlement, as their appearing firm in our interest may have a good effect, not only in the eyes of the Rebels, but of the inhabitants who are so disaffected to us, besides it may be the means of procuring useful intelligence, which you will strongly recommend to, and endeavour to effect by means of these parties—Every caution necessary against cruelty, I am persuaded you will observe.

Walashas proposal is a very uncommon one from an Indian and tho' it would, as you justly observe, be very imprudent to adopt it Yet the zeal he has manifested merits our attention.

You will naturally prevent as much as in your power, the breach expected between the Chippewas and Sioux which might deprive us of the Service of many warriors, should we have occasion for them, but perhaps be turned to some account against us, by the Rebels.

Agreeable to your recommendation of the Sieur Caheé, I have ordered that he may have a dollar and a Ration pr day & to be employed as you have proposed.

Messrs Langlade and Gautier have high pay. I must think of raising it, but you may as you judge necessary reimburse them in any little matter of Provision, they may occasionally find indispensibly necessary to furnish to Indians.

I am sorry your provision has turned out so bad, for the present, the evil must be made the best of, and for the future I have taken such means as, I trust will secure a better supply. As the Flour already sent up for the use of your Post was owing to the failure of supplies from England procured, and patched up in a hurry, it is possible it may receive some injury on the passage.

It should be inspected into and made use of the first if not likely to keep.

I am informed that Considerable quantities of Indian Corn may be purchased at your post from Indians, I must request that you will do all in your power to collect a large stock of it in order to assist Detroit or even Niagara, should circumstances make such a recourse necessary, the armed vessels which I have ordered for you will make the transport of it commodious. You will communicate with Capn Lernoult upon this subject.

(Signed) F. H.

P. S.—In order to convince some Reynards and others of your Indians, who wintered at Montreal, of the falsity of a report propagated by the disaffected Canadians that a French fleet would certainly arrive this Spring to retake the Country, I ordered them down here to be present at the arrival of our Fleet. They are come, and I enclose to you my speech to them which you will deliver to their Nations, making such Additions as you may from local circumstances judge necessary. I shall keep them untill the Fleet arrives and on their return they will I hope, have it in their power amply to confirm what is set forth therein.

In consequence of your recommendation of Mr. Aird, I have permitted him to send up a Canoe exclusive of the Forty for Michilimackinac and Lake Superior but Messrs Todd and McGill have not thought proper to include the five Canoes, said by them to be for the use of the Officers of the Garrison in the above number and as you in your letter proposed, but after the distribution has been finally settled, they bring me in upon the above pretext, an account of Loading for four Canoes the articles amounting to £1000 value requesting that they may be added, which requests I have declined complying with. If you or the officers of your Garrison want any stores etc., for your particular use I make no doubt they will be carefully sent, as I have told Mr. Lister to acquaint Messrs Todd and McGill that if they neglect commissions of that nature, they are but little entitled to the Indulgences shewn them, the same Rapacity has actuated them to prevent including Mr. Campinis Batteau in the number stipulated I am sorry for it but being determined not to break the regulations I have made, I cannot at present permit another Canoe to be sent up.

[B 96 1, p. 99.]

QUEBEC 8th July 1779.

SIR—I have at present no more than time to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 27th past with the several Bills enclosed which shall be accepted, and likewise to signify to you my approbation of your having adhered to the ordinances of the Province for the year 1771 respecting the affairs of Mr. Howard, I have wrote to Mr. Grey at Montreal to procure the necessary security, and I send him this letter open desiring that he may certify to you at the foot of it his having obtained the Security required on receipt of which you will have Mr. Howards Effects delivered to him.

[B 96 1, p. 102.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC 13th July 1779.

SIR—By the bearer Mr. Calvé I have an opportunity of more answering your letter of the 27th of June, the receipt of which, I acknowledged by yesterday's Post.

I am obliged to you for Intelligence from the Illinois. I am pleased to find it so favorable, and that your Post is in such security, you will no doubt continue whatever work you may think necessary to preserve it in that state.

I much approve of your destroying Fort Poy [Pey] and I hope Mr. Gautier will be able to effect all the purposes of his charge From the poverty of the Rebels in that Quarter I think there is little to apprehend. Intercepting their supplies should be the chief object of our attention, it is a service which the Indians, I should think, would cheerfully undertake in their hopes of plunder.

Mr. Calvé has presented to me a claim on Government amounting to 3,699 Livers, besides a Sallary from the year 1776 inclusive, I have never heard that the former was due or the latter promised to him, but I find from Colonel Campbell and Mr. Gautier that the man has been usefull and that it is still in his power to be very serviceable to Government in either or both cases, I should be sorry not to reward his merit, I therefore must desire you will give me every information in your power relative to him—and in the mean-time as it is represented that you sent them and that his interest suffered much by his coming down, I have paid him a dollar per day as Interpreter for one year only, and have given him a Licence for one Canoe, exclusive of his share of the Trade. He declined my offer, recommended by you of a dollar per day, as Interpreter, saying that it would interfere with his Commerical Views.

I have forwarded Rum for the General Consumption of the Upper Posts, and am under the necessity of repeating my requests to the officers Commanding to observe the greatest œconomy in the distribution of it, seeing the amazing price charged by the traders for that article.

I likewise wish to refer you to a letter upon the subject of flour which I find from all quarters, there is the greatest necessity to attend to this year, it having been put up warm and is consequently subject to damage. Some large room should be found to spread and air it on, in two or three days, and then to be repacked. As soon as the Fleet arrives I shall despatch Lt. Gov'r Sinclair to relieve you.

[B 96 1, p. 103.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC August 17th 1779.

SIR—I enclose to you a copy of instructions I have given to Capn. Sinclair as Lieut. Governor and Superintendant of the Posts of Michilimackinac which you will peruse, and afterwards deliver to the officer who will succeed you in the Military Commands. (Signed)

[B 96 1, p. 105.] F. H.

QUEBEC August 28th 1779.

SIR—This letter will be delivered to you by Capn. Sinclair to whom you will give up the command of Michilimackinac as Lt Govr. and Superintendant of the Post. From a letter of Lord George Germain to Capn. Sinclair, wherein he stiles him, Commandant of the Posts, he conceives he is entitled to the Military Command, which is not expressed in his commission it being exactly similar to that of Lt. Govr. Hamilton's he therefore goes to his Government, vested with the same powers, and which are specified in my instructions to him, of which you have a copy. I shall write upon this subject to Lord George Germain, and hope soon to have the line of those commands finally determined. In the meantime the utmost Harmony and mutual Acquiescence is necessary to carry on His Majesty's Service with that spirit which I am convinced Capn. Sinclair's zeal for it and that of the officer you will leave with him will dictate for nothing can more conduce to the Reputation of Officers than to relinquish little personal considerations when necessary to promote the public service.

[B 69 1, p 105.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC 29th August 1779

SIR—After having given Lt Govr Sinclair every information your power relative to the Post of Michilimackinac agreeable to my letter of the 28th Inst you will repair to Detroit without loss of time, and take upon you the command of that Post Captain Lernoult having my orders to give it up to you and to give every necessary information relative to it.

[B 96 1, p. 106.] (Signed) F. H.

LETTERS FROM MAJOR DE PEYSTER, COMMANDING AT MICHILIMACKINAC

TO GENERAL CARLETON

MICHALIMACKINAC 30th May 1778.

SIR—I have just received a letter from Mr. Langlade acquainting that his affairs goes on very slow at La Kaye. The Menomenies having lost two chiefs & the Chippawas of the plains have made war upon that nation I have therefore come to the resolution of sending down such of the Indians as are ready (one hundred and ten forms this first Division) & I shall make the Outawas follow in a day or two right glad to get rid of them It can scarce be credited to what inconveniency I am put to carry on this service, No vessels being yet arrived from Detroit or Canoe from Montreal to give me the least assistance.

The Traders inform me that Lieut Govr. Hamilton will not allow their Rum to come to this Post except a small quantity for the North trade. On this report the little here raised to Twelve pounds ten shillings Halifax per keg.

As nothing has arrived here for the King except about half canoe load of dry goods by Gautier last fall I have made a merchant purchase me all the Rum in this place which has gone but a little way towards contenting, I have endeavored to sweeten their tempers with sugar and water & have complimented the chiefs with the remains of my private stock of Liquors. If no vessells arrive with Rum soon I cannot answer for the bad effects it will produce.

I have dispatched the Sloop Welcome to Detroit, and I have found it absolutely necessary to employ her in the Kings Service. I have wrote to Acquaint Lt. Col Boltons therewith.

It is dangerous to leave this post any longer without a vessel to winter at it & there is constant employment for one all the summer besides that the appearance of an armed vessel awes the Savages who are encamped where they can annoy the Fort without our being able to bring a gun to bear upon them unless it be from the water. I hope therefore my having armed and put soldiers on board this Sloop will meet with your approbation.

I am &c AT. S. DE PEYSTER.

[B 96 1, p. 1.]

TO GENERAL CARLETON

MICHILIMAKINAC 29 June 1778

SIR—I have the honor to acquaint you that on the 24th Instant I sent off the last of the Indians destined for Montreal this Season amounting to 550 warriors Messrs Calveé & Roque are going as Interpreters to the Lachis Schiong &c Calveé has been of Service in the Mississipy for several years past and particularly this last winter.

I lately wrote to Lt Col Bolton begging of him to apply to your Excellency for leave of absence for me my health being so much impaired by the constant attendance I am obliged to give to Indians that at times I suffer the greatest torture Since my application I have got accounts that the Labay [Green Bay] Indians and the Chippawas are at war and otherwise very restless which if not settled may be of great detriment to the Service & disadvantage to trade. This is a point I shall endeavor to settle before I avail myself of my leave you may please to grant me & I shall settle every other matter in the best order for whoever I may leave to command. The matter of pleasing the Indians without any very extraordinary expence to Government may be easily acquired by a person possessed of any degree of patience and activity Hitherto I have entrusted no one thing to others which the abscence of the Superintendent and his train have facilitated. I should therefore be sorry that for want of my usual activity I should leave the Indians any room for complaining which will be the case if the Commanding officer does not see things with his own eyes I mean at this post where I have always been sure to see every individual satisfied I have not received a line from your Excellency nor from any one in office this year no vessels as yet being arrived from Niagara, every other year they had made their second trip before now.

No canoe has yet arrived for the King, not even the one which Mr Langlade left at the Lake of the Two Mountains last fall.

The weakness of this Garrison (as the men from Niagara were not arrived) prevented my sending more than five men with Lieutenant Bennet to which I added seven Canadians. I hear that they were cast on the rocks on Lake Superior but lost nothing but ammunition and provisions. I have sent off a fresh supply,

I have the honor &c

[B 96 1, p. 3.] (Signed) At. S. De Peyster

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 24th July 1778.

Sir—Upon the request of the Inhabitants & Traders to second their Application to Your Excellency that you will be pleased to allow them a Priest resident at this Post.

I promised them that I would write to you upon the subject.

For my part I see no Inconveniency that can attend their having a Priest unless in case of a French War It should be thought dangerous to allow so many Ignorant Canoe men and Savages to have free access to the Church as it at present stands within the Fort. Were it removed into the Village, which is now become a Considerable place, it would obviate all objections I can possibly have. I should however be sorry for political reasons that the Indians & Traders knew that the above objection was started by the Commanding Officer here.

I have the honor to be with the greatest respect, Your Excellency's most humble obed't Servant,

A. S. De Peyster.

His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief &c., &c.

[B 97 1, p. 33.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

MICHILIMACKINAC 15 August 1778.

SIR—The endorsed letter from Mr. Macarty a Trader from this Post to the Illinois, and one from St. Josephs, will give your Excellency some insight into what is doing or likely to be done in that Quarter. Mr. Macarty's account is confirmed by several People just arrived from the Illinois. I am also informed that reports are spread in all the Illinois Vilages that the french are soon to take possession of that country as there are no troops to prevent the Virginians from going there, they have it in their power to spread reports and poison the minds of the Indians so as at least to make it very dangerous to Traders. Mr. Louis Chevalier at St. Josephs holds the pass to Detroit and can also give the first intelligence to the enemy's motion on the Wabash. This gentleman is so connected with the Potawatamies that he can now do anything with them having lived upwards of thirty years at that Place.

A young Indian named Aimable at present at Montreal is his son. Some Mark of distinction given to this young man and he with a few of his comrade Potawatamies persuaded to remain another year at Montreal would be of great service as those at St. Joseph would never Misbehave whilst any of their friends are down the Country.

In the year 63 when St Josephs was cut off Mr. Chevalier two days before it happened informed M. Schlosser of the Indians having bad Intentions which he did not believe to his cost.

Chevalier happening to be present it gave some designing people a handle against him as his innocence was not generally known. I have since my arrival here inquired particularly into all those matters, and finding that affair no ways to his disadvantage and seeing the great attention paid to him by the Indians I thought it necessary to render him useful by giving him some authority at St. Joseph's which he has hitherto exerted with the greatest discretion. I have the honor &c.

(Signed) A. S. DE PEYSTER.

A letter prior to this: Concerning an application made by the merchants Trader and Inhabitants of Michilimackinac to His Excellency the Commr in chief for a Missionary at that post:

[B 96 1, p. 6.]

Copy of a Letter from Richard McCarty to John Askin

At ST. URSEULS at the Illinois the 7th June 1778.

To Mr. John Askin at Michilimackinac:

I beg you will be so good as inform Major de Peyster that Mackinac the man, I delivered him a speech from last year, died before my arrival here, but that Pondiac Son to the great Pondiac is gone to Detroit with some other Indians that came here this spring, they seem well pleased with his Invitation and would have gone to Michilimackinac, had the others been living, they seem well inclined to the English on all accounts, Young Pondiac hopes for a medal, they are so much my protection as an English man, that Indians daily steal Horses, from the Village, and none from me, tho' mine are loose in the open field. the Convoy is arrived, that in two Boats, one with a Governor, for the Spanish side, the other under his cover for the American with Liquor & 150 Bails of Broad Cloth, blue, white, and red, they are to be lodged at St. Louis, opposite my place untill they come for it.

Was there a few troops here to encourage the good, put heart in the weak & intimidate the bad this Country might be preserved & the communication cut off, but as it has been, they have with about forty men going down the Ohio to Manchac last Fall taken about 500 Packs from English Subjects, 680 negroes, much dollars from the Lower Inhabitants, and a Brig of 14 Guns at Manitack with 40 men on board, and that taken by 14 men belonging to Willing the American Commander, he intimidated the People going before Spanish Boats and making the Inhabitants believe the Boats coming after were all armed & of his party, it is said that Moyan was to be here with 600 men last winter, but very likely he has something else to do.

There is no news of an disturbance in Europe this way, God send us soon the much to be wished for news of an union with England and her colonies, pray send us what news you can your way, the Spaniards it seems are in a bad condition for having seized the English Vessels at Orleans last year, & do encourage the English to come all in their power, having no Indian Goods at all. I am dear Sir

Your most obedt very humble Servt

[B 97 1, p. 6.] (Signed) Richard McCarty.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 31st August 1778

Sir—I have this moment received a Letter from Monsr. Chevalier of St. Josephs informing that the rebels are in possession of all the Illinois, that the party at the Kaskaskias consisting of two hundred and fifty commanded by one Willing is a part of 700 on their way for that country. Willing has put Mr. De Rochelave* the Commandant and one Mr. Crie in Irons for having refused the oaths of Allegiance to the King of Spain, the French King and the Congress. The Traders in that Country and many from this Post are plundered and the whole country in the greatest confusion being at a loss to know which route the rebels will take next.

---

*See appendix

I am &c (Signed)

[B 96 1, p 8.] A. S. De Peyster.

TO GENERAL HALDIMAND

Michilimakinac 16th Sept. 1778.

Sir—Since my last Letter to your Excellency by the hands of Mr. Orillat acquainting you with the Rebels being in possession of the Illinois I have heard nothing from that country. I have sent off a person who is well acquainted there with a Speech and a large belt which is to grasp [pass?] through the different Illinois vilages insisting that they shall not suffer His Majesty's enemies to keep possession of their Country. This I hope will have better effect than if I had an Expedition ready to send against the rebels as the Illinois Indians are in constant dread of the Ottawas and other nations dependent on this Post as they sometime ago earnestly entreated I would make a peace for them which I effected to their great satisfaction.

I sometime in July last received a Letter from D A General dated the 9th April inclosing a memorandum respecting the trade of the grand Portage at the West end of Lake Superior which by Sir Guy Carleton's orders was submitted to my consideration ordering me to transmit to your Excellency such observation as should occur to me together with any the officer might make on the spot.

No observations have occured to me nor the the officers worth mentioning more than what is fully contained in the memorandum presented to Sir Guy Carleton by the Traders. I gave the officer Similar Instruction before he set out for the Portage in June by which he conducted himself to the general satisfaction of all present. If they differed in anything it was obliging the Traders to enter into a *Dedit* that they would not go from the awerd of any Court of Arbitrators setting upon their own cause also that all trading there should sign a bond of forfeiture not to enlist any canoe man without a regular Discharge in writing from his Former Master as is practised at this post. The order I received of the 6th October barely mentioned the sending an officer and twelve men to the intent of keeping up good order.

I waited a long time in hopes of a reinforcement for the purpose, the Garrison being then as it at present too Weak to allow a Detachment and carry on the necessary duty here where I expected so great a resort of Indians. At length as no men arrived I sent off an officer one Sergt. and 5 men, the traders furnished seven Canoe men to carry them to the Portage and back to this post. I took upon me to supply the officer with two Bales of dry goods a Bale of Tobacco one hundred gallons of Rum and some Pork and Flour to enable him to receive the visits from the Indians.

I also sent two swivels mounted upon carriages with two Barrels of Powder for Saluting and tools for erecting a Fort. The goods I sent were soon expended and the Traders furnished what was more wanting for the next season. In which case I shall be glad to have your Excellency's orders whether the crown or the trader is to furnish or in what proportion, as they seem already to complain of the expence at least some of them do.

During the short stay of the party at the Portage the officer caused the Canoe men to erect a small fort which was half furnished before they left the place. The remainder is to be finished the next season with the Barracks for which purpose board will be sawed this winter all which is at th expence of the Traders.

I have the honor to be &c (Signed)

[B 96 1, p 9.] A. S. De Peyster.

TO GENL. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 21st Sepr 1778.

Sir—I did myself the honor to write to your Excellency on the *16th Instant* [Sept. 9?] by Charles Reaume when I informed you that I had sent a belt and Speech on the 10th Instant to St. Josephs to be forwarded to the Illinois to which dispatch of yesterday received the enclosed answer.

It appears by Mr. Chevaliers letters that the rebels are too firmly fixed in that important post to hazard my Belt with any prospects of success. I fear however that if they are not routed by some means that the whole Mississippi Trade is knocked up.

The Indians of the little Detroit of Labay The Manomenia Sabris Oumissigoes & Secoux being arrived and on the point of their departure I present them with a large Belt which I desire may go through the different Villages of the Nations which have been employed by Government and who have been so long protected by His Majesty. Telling them that it is my earnest request that they have not the least connection with the Rebels but keep themselves quietly at home till I can have your answer to this letter which I tell them I expect this fall or so early in the winter and to send amongst them before the rivers are open in the Spring. That should I hear of their having done anything prejudicial to the Traders or of their having entered into any alliance with the enemy I have in such case taken the precautions to request of you that the passes for the ensuing season may require of every Canoe to wait at the mouth of the French river in Lake Huryon for my further instructions so that should they misbehave during the winter they may expect I will send to order every Canoe loads of goods back to Montreal. This threat seems to have great force with the Indians present and with submission I could wish your Excellency would think fit to order it so It will detain Canoes no longer than is absolutely necessary and it will be the means of their coming up with great confidence that far so as to be ready to furnish the nations with their wants as usual to prevent the trade taking another turn Provided the traders can be allowed to proceed with prosperity.

I have as much as possible instilled into the Indians the Idea that altho the Rebels may perhaps be able to make a shew of presents at first that they can by no means be able to furnish the different nations with their necessary wants. It now remains for me to send the several nations home pleased, this will require much rum and Tobacco, those gentry the Seroux excepted having continued to employ their Kegs before they arrived here, they must be also provided of good many Canoes as many of theirs are unfit for further Service.

This letter I dispatch by a light Canoe, which will take Mr Reaume up on the way & proceed with my other letters to your Excellency. provided the Crew be not detained on Lake Huryon by hard contrary winds it will arrive at Montreal in eleven days or supposing it to be fourteen days there will be time for a light Bateau Canoe man'd with an active guide & eight men to arrive at the mouth of the French river by the 1st of November & at this place by the 10th to which time the weather will permit and even longer.

Should your Excellency judge proper to send Mr Gautier to proceed to the Mississipi he will hurry this Canoe much without him it will scarce be in my power to put any orders you may send for the movement of the Labay Indians into Execution. Mr Langdale the zealous will by no means be able to undertake so active an Enterprise.

The Indians have already declared that were Gautier here to lead them they would penetrate the Illinois Country this winter. As I suppose you will also send orders at Detroit in the winter I shall send off an express to be ready there as my Indians will know the road & as I shall be able to depend upon them & the person I shall send with them.

I have taken the liberty to enclose two returns & of assuring your Excellency that this is but a patched picketed fort at best much incumbered with wooden houses & commanded even by small arms all which has been repeatedly reported before your arrival in Canada our strength here consisting in the good understanding kept up with the Indians made it not so necessary to fortify, but had it been ever so necessary it could not be done in the place the Fort is now situated it being an intire loose sand. The friendships with the Indians may be depended upon till a greater force appear against us, and I fear no longer some few excepted.

I have the honor to be &c
(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

[B 96 1, p. 15.]

TO GENL. HALDIMAND

Michilimakinac 7 October 1778.

Sir—I am just honoured with your Letter of the 10th of August last. Your Excellency may depend on me that I shall do all in my power to keep within bounds as much as the present situation of affairs will permit. I am sorry to inform you that the Indians who had been so well provided at Montreal had made away with almost everything before they reached this (their fine cloaths excepted which they carefully preserved) & as the cold weather must pinch them before they reach their houses I could not refuse them some clothing. I likewise furnished them with Canoes as many of their Canoes were rendered unfit to proceed. Half of their guns either wanted repairing or exchanging.

Demands were made upon me for payment of their own Canoes which they said were not paid them according to promise at Montreal. They made a claim for provisions taken the second Campaign. In this I however put them off till I have an opportunity of seeing their Leaders. Some of them brought me orders for Kegs of Rum &c and I have been obliged to cover their dead afresh. The Rum they got at Montreal to take to their Vilages they drank coming up the Country & they also used their Tobacco & expended their ammunition so that I have had all those articles to furnish over or run the risk of forfeiting all we have ever done.

At length I have sent the Labay [La Baye des Puants, Green Bay] Indians off pleased with promises—on their parts not to listen to the rebels at the Illinois from which quarter I have not heard anything since my last letter. I am in hopes the Traders have received orders to turn up the Mississipy in time so as to avoid falling into their hands.

Such standing orders as have been preserved at this Post I send off to Lt. Col. Bolton. They are very few.

It gives me pleasure to hear that my last letter to Sir Guy Carleton to which no answer had been given have been laid before your Excellency as a paragraph in that of the 29 June will show you how ill I was at the time & I am sorry to say I have continued so every since. Should the regiment not be relieved next Spring I hope your Excellency will take my situation into consideration which is althogether a very disagreeable one.

The last year I received a letter from Sir Guy Carleton telling me that notwithstanding my appointment to the Majority of the regiment it was his pleasure that I should remain at this post. I then wrote to Sir Guy representing the distressed situation of my affairs at N. York requesting leave of absence when it should be convenient to which I received no answer. I cannot help observing that neither my health nor affairs have mended since those representations, & as a change of air may be had at the same time that I look a little after my affairs before it be too late. I am still in hopes that your Excellency will be more favorable to my application.

Those who are any ways acquainted with my connextion at New York can inform your Excellency that few people in the army have greater reason to wish themselves there (exclusive of the above reasons) than myself. I have the honor &c

[B 96 1, p. 12.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

TO GENL. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 24th October 1778.

Sir—Your Excellency's Letters of the 30th August and 2nd of September I received the 21st instant by De Groselier. I received about the same time a Letter from Lt. Govr. Hamilton which he left to be forwarded from Detroit. As the Indians not been gone to their several homes before I received Mr. Hamiltons Letters it would have been in my power to have seconded his attempt which he tells me he directs in person to dispossess the rebels at the Illinois and as it may be in my power to dispose the Indians here to coöperate by going down the Illinois River he gives me this notice.

The Indians at present are too much dispersed for me to assembly them in a body Sufficiently strong to go down that river and I am persuaded they would not leave their wives and children in their wintering grounds there having been no previous provision made for them I shall however send

Express to the grand river & on the borders of Lake Michigan to endeavour to spirit up the young men to join Mr. Hamilton by the most expeditious route ordering them to call at St. Josephs for further information of his situation.

I shall also write to Mr. Chevalier to give Mr. Hamilton every assistance in his power which I fear cannot be much, as the Indians mostly are gone to their meeting grounds.

I have long since by civil treatment apparently secured that gentleman to His Majesty's Interests foreseeing that he would become useful before those troubles could be at an end, the different representation of him by Mr. Hamilton and myself must appear extraordinary. I can assure your Excellency that I never heard anything that could be proven to his disadvantage on the contrary whilst at this Post, he with a becoming decency set his enemies at defiance should he however prove faithless the disadvantages arising from my credulity will be greatly overbalanced by advantages that may occur by putting some confidence in him. This much I am obliged to say in vindication of my judgment as Mr. Hamilton notwithstanding my representation to him writes me that he has represented him to your Excellency in a very unfavorable light. I shall take every possible method to procure intelligence of the present state of the Illinois and transmit (if I receive any) by way of Detroit during the course of the winter. I have now to offer my sentiments agreeable to your Excellency's request whether anything can be done for the recovery of the Illinois.

Provided your Excellency's Instructions relative to stopping the communication of the Ohio &c be vigorously put in execution. I am persuaded that Mr. Gautier or some other active person may assemble a body of Indians in his direct road from Labay to the Prarie de chiern and in the river St. Pierre to go down the Mississipi early in the spring which may be performed from the mouth of the Oresconsign in seven or eight days. That country is full of resources but the Indians must have presents whenever we fall off from that article they are no more to be depended upon. The past is soon forgot by them except when they do us a favour. Give the Indians of this country a present and they will immediately strive to make some trifling return, which we must however give them four times the value for. To second the above mentioned Indians the Pottewatamien must be also ordered to move down the Illinois river followed by the Ottawas and Chippawas those latter will be rather late but by sending belts before them to assure the Illinois Indians that they came in friendship to them provided they join in driving out the rebels it will have great effect even the brent of their intended march will settle them. The inhabitants of that country are not to be depended upon should the french offer to interfere otherwise should they join the rebels it would be thro fear of being plundered by the Stranger Indians. I some time ago represented a small armed vessel necessary to be under the direction of the commanding officer of this post as a Porte respect to the Indians and to reconoitre the different Bays and Creeks in Lake Michigan also to be ready to send to Detroit on immergency, and finding I could not carry on the service without one I armed the *Welcome* to send to Labay St. Josephs Milwakee &c as the winds are generally so strong that canoes cannot move even in a fair wind, which makes their passage very tedious on the Lakes. But finding no favorable answer indeed none at all to myself, I dismissed her. I can send such a vessell at St. Josephs and get answer to my letters in eight days or sooner whereas I must not expect it in less than a month if so soon by a Canoe or small boat. The above representation was long before Your Excellency took the command.

I hope your Excellency is acquainted with the reasons why Sir Guy Carleton ordered me to remain at this post with an hand-ful of men and no other Command to a Captain of the Regiment and remaining guide removed from what will in all probability soon become the scene of action if the Rebels are not routed from the Illinois.

I have the honor &c (Signed)

[B 96 1, p 19.] A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 27th Octr 1778.

Sir—Soon after my Letter of the 24th Inst. was despatched by a light Canoe Messrs. Langdale & Gautier arrived here and informed me they were sent up to attend my orders. I am surprised they brought me no Letters, but they tell me that your Excellency was at Chamblacé, & that Lt. Col. Camfile sent them off least the weather should get in so as to prevent their getting up. I have come to the resolution to send those gentlemen off to give every assistance in their power to Lt. Gov'r Hamilton. I have provided them with some goods which I believe with their presents amongst the Indians will do more good than I could have expected by sending dry belts by the hands of Indians. Mr. Langlade is to undertake the grand river near which the Ottawas & Chippawas from this place winter & Mr. Gautier is to proceed straight to St. Joseph when he will give orders for the Indians in that neighborhood to assemble which he endeavors to get intelligence of the route Mr. Hamilton has taken so as to be able to join him with all expedition, Mr. Hamilton by this means will not meet with any Impediment for want of such assistance as in my power to give him.

Should they find that he is returned to Detroit they then have orders to cross the Country to their old Station, to keep the Labay & Mississipi Indians in temper & there wait further orders. I also send off my interpreter to St. Joseph's to bring back necessary information.

At this Present Juncture I should have found the benefit of having the Sloop Welcome, as I have been obliged to press from some of the inhabitants their only servants to enable me to make out a Canoe to transport them to St. Joseph's & the winds are rather high.

Mr. Goddard writes me that twenty puncheons of Rum have been sent up, for this Post by General Carleton's orders. I have received only fourteen & the quantity therein contained would not have filled much more than that number of Tierces, nor did they arrive till after I had purchased rum. The goods also are sent off rather late from Montreal So that if I get them the fall they are sent it is not till after I have been obliged to purchase which is very disagreeable. I have the name of those things without the use of them in the season most wanted.

The reports I have of the little Water in the French river for loaded Canoe & of the Canoes being greatly damaged in getting up makes me fear least they should not arrive at all. I have the honor &c.

[B 96 1, p 23.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimakinac 29th Januy 1779

Sir—I did myself the honor to write to your Excellency on the 27th of October acquainting you with the steps I had taken towards giving assistance to Lt. Govr Hamilton having sent Messrs Langlade Gautier & Ains is returned with the following report viz that they were detained on their way by contrary winds, so that they did not reach the mouth of grand river 'till the thirteenth day of Novembre, where Mr. Langdale landed agreeable to his Intenction. That on their way to St Joseph's they spoke with the Ottawa chiefs who declined the expedition for want of previous notice but declared themselves ready in the Spring. That detained by a continuation of bad weather he Ains & Gautier did not arrive at St Joseph's untill the second day of December where they found Mr Louis Chevalier who had been twenty two days from Mr Hamiltons little army which near passed the pays plat before he left it that he le Chevalier was informed there that Gebease* the Priest had been at the Post Vincent & at the Ouia with a party of rebels & obliged 600 inhabitants to swear Allegiance to the Congress &c & that by the best accounts he could get the rebels at the Illinois did not exceed three hundred men who were ill provided.

The above news of Mr Hamiltons having got so far the start being told to the Indians at the grand river, where Langdale had raised about eighty they declined to follow at so great a distance on which Mr Langdale set out for his post at La Baye & Gautier finding that Mr Chevalier had already taken the few Pottawatamia which could be raised at that advanced season to Mr. Hamilton, set out for his post on the Mississipi carrying with them Belts & Speeches to exhort the Indians to be ready in the Spring if called upon Your Excellencys answer to my letter of the 21st Sept. (thro Lt. Col Bolton) is just come to hand. I have the honor &c

(Signed) A. S. DePeyster.

P. S.—I should be glad to know if your Excellency will please to allow the officer any pay for his laying out and directing the route at the Portage

[B 96 1, p 25.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimakinac 29th March, 1779.

Sir—I did myself the honor to write to your Excellency the 29th January when I informed you that Langdale had failed in his attempt to move the Indians from their hunting grounds as they heard that Lt Govr Hamilton had got so much the start of them. Since which I received a letter from Mr. Louis Chevalier of St. Joseph's informing that the Pottawatamie were returned home to pass the winter that they brought him a Letter from the Lieut Governor informing him that he intended not to leave Post Vincent [Vincennes] till the Spring. I should have been glad to have had a line at the same time. However in complyance with your Excellency's orders to give every assistance in my power I again ordered the Ottawas & Chippawas to march & send off express to Mr. Gautier requiring him to move down with a body of Sabres Toyes & Wernippigoes & he by this time should be on the March joined by some active Canadians.

A few days ago arrived an Express from Capn. Lernoult which gives me reason to imagine that an attempt will be made upon Detroit this Spring.

I have therefore thought it most prudent to send to stop the Ottawas & Chippawas least I should be left without either to assist here or to send to

---

*See appendix

Detroit if occasion should require it, and I am confident that it would be attended with very bad consequences if I suffered the Indians to go so far in search of the enemy when I hear that so formidable a body is advancing towards Detroit. Besides from the repeated messages sent to Lt. Govr. Hamilton, I have reason to supose he will return to take of his Government. Should it not be the case he will still have as many Indians as he can manage Gautier is to proceed at all events who will be sufficiently strong to harrass the Rebels should they attempt to follow Mr. Hamilton in his retreat.

The Indians properly called Grand River Indians, I have advised to go directly to Detroit as it is but a short cut across the country, & I send the chief Matchiguis with his band from Thunderbay also to hearten the Indians about Detroit as the eyes of most nations are upon him, he will serve as an Earnest of further assistance from this quarter when the Indians arrive if required.

Thus Sir I have endeavoured to act as appeared to me would be most conducive to the good of His Majesty's Service which I hope will meet with your approbation. I have the honor &c.

(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

P. S. I hope your Excellency will excuse the liberty I take in requesting of you to forward the enclosed in your Packet to New York where my affairs are greatly suffering, & I fear my letter never got there.

[B 96 1, p. 27.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac, 2d May 1779.

Sir—I am sorry to acquaint your Excellency that on the 24th of April I received a letter from Capn Lernoult dated the 21st of March informing me that Lt. Govr Hamilton & his whole party had fallen into the hands of the Virginians.

Since the arrival of this trading Bateau I have waited with the greatest anxiety for further Intelligence but finding none arrive with a series of fine winds, I have come to the resolution to send to inquire what is going on at Detroit.

I flatter myself that there are orders for me to go and take the command there, for which purpose I hold myself ready at a moments' warning.

The season here has been very open so that we had reason to expect arrivals from the grand River in the Lake Michigan some time past, but as yet can neither hear of Trader or Indian being at hand. Some Squaws who went at about forty miles from hence to visit their friends, returned with the news that the Virginians were building Boats near Milwaukee & that they had sent belts which were accepted by the Ottawas and Chippaways requesting of them to remain at the grand river till they the Virginians had taken this Fort, and delivered it into the hands of the Indian's old friends the French and that Siggenake the disafected Milwakee chief was to lead the first division—yesterday arrived a man from the same place who relates that he was informed from the chief Gicee who wintered at the Grand Traverse about forty leagues from this did not believe it, & sent the Person who brought it back to the Grand river to get further information. He further said that he understood that the Virginians were at Chicagou I have dispatched people to make all possible inquiry relative to this news.

Should they come that way I think there is hopes of their repeating their voyage, as I cannot be persuaded the Indians have so soon forgot their promise, but on the other hand if Detroit falls it must be expected that their friendship will fall with it.

The provisions at this Post turn out very bad great quantities of the Pork appearing evidently to have been condemned before sent up here the pieces being much cut and scarcely packed over & that with dry salt. What Pork we serve as good is frequently so rusty that the soldier scarcely gets half his allowance. I have the honor &c

(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

P. S. I have taken the liberty to inclose a copy of the last condemnation for the month of April.

[B 96 1, p 29.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 13 May 1779.

Sir—I did myself the honor to write to your Excellency on the 2d instant a copy of which Letter I now Inclose.

The Chipawas of the Island of Michilimackinac arrived here the 8th from the Grand River & reports that the Ottawas and Grand River Traders are on their way they declare that the news of the Virginians building Boats on the Lake Michigan was the invention of some evil minded Indians and that neither themselves nor the Ottawas would listen to the Rebels belt.

Mr. Langdale arrived last night and informed me that on his arrival at Labaye he received an order from Lt. Govr Hamilton acquainting him that he wintered at Post Vincent therefore required of him and Gautier to join him early in the Spring by the Illinois River. That he accordingly set out with some Indians & reached Milwakee where he received accounts of Mr. Hamilton's being taken when the Indians disheartened would proceed no further. The enclosed Letter from Gautier will give your Excellency an account of his Expedition Mr. Langdale assures me that a Canadian named Benclo at the head of Twenty horsemen is traveling thro' the Town and Sakis Country to purchase horses from [for] Mr. Clarke telling the Indians that they will be with three hundred men at Labaye soon, but Mr. Langdale rather believes that they mean to transport themselves to Detroit. The Indians were so much divided that it was not possible to take Benclo & his party. He was informed by a man who came from the Illinois that the Virginians then did not exceed Sixty Men that they were mostly in bad [condition] the last fall with the Maladirdu Pays,* but were talking of a great reinforcement. The Canadians who want to return to this Post have leave on taking the Oaths not to serve against the United States. Clarke assures them that he will be here nearly as soon as themselves none are yet yet arrived.

I don't care how soon Mr. Clarke appears provided he come by Lake Michigan & the Indians prove staunch & above all that the Canadians do not follow the example of their brethren at the Illinois who have joined the Rebels to a man. I am however in hopes that their connection at Montreal will be a check upon them.

If I had armed Vessels I could make them constantly coast Lake Michigan to awe the Indians & prevent the Rebels building Boats there is a small Sloop here as already reported but no sailors nor will my present garrison admit of any detachment it not being by the one half sufficient to do the necessary duty here. I shall allow the Traders to come to this Post but if things do not greatly alter I will not allow one to go the Labay rode.

The Sakis & Reinards seems to be easy about the matter as appears by Gautier's Letter but they will soon open their eyes if it is possible effectually to restrain that trade. On that head as well as how I am to act in case Detroit is taken is what I hope I shall receive your full instructions about by a light canoe. If Detroit should be taken it is evident we have but a dismal prospect however what can be expected from two Subdivisions shall be done. I think I may with propriety call my hand full by that name when a part was employed at this Canon having nine Pieces of Ordnance & only two Artillery men. I have sent to Saguina to endeavour to secure six hundred Bushels of Corn for the Indians without which our flower will run short by the fall of the year. I have the honor &c.

(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

P. S. Give me leave to assure your Excellency that nothing can be expected from the Indians without Troops to head them.

[B 96 1, p. 32.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac the 1st of June 1779.

Sir—On the 24th Instant I was honored with Your Excellency's Letter of the 25th Decemr 1778. The sending a party to the Gr Portage, is what I had represented to Lieut Colonel Bolton as by no means safe from so small a Garrison in the present critical situation of affairs I am glad to find you are of the same opinion.

Your Excellency may depend upon it that I never have nor never shall undertake any Expence lightly at any Post I may have the honor to command I am extremely sorry to find that there is a likelyhood of the Expences at this Post rather increasing than otherwise as the Indians are growing very importunate since they hear that the French are assisting the rebels—The Canadians I fear are of great disservice to Government but the Indians are perfect Free Masons when entrusted with a secret by a Canadian most of them being much connected by marriage.

Since my last Letter of the 13th of May Mr Gautier arrived here with a large band of Weenippigoes and [Menominies?] who had been with him to the Mississippi I would fain have had them stay here till I received orders from your Excellency, but they were impatient least the Chippewas of the Plains and the Sackis should in their absence disturb their villages—They are gone with promises to bring me some prisoners from the Kaskaskias scalps I have positively forbid to prevent cruelty and least they should pawn old ones or those of innocent persons a deceit I think them often guilty of. The Sioux Wabasha was on his march to join Mr Hamilton, but stopt on hearing of his defeat he has sent the interpreter with his son and some young men with a pipe telling me that he waits my further orders That he has silenced the Reynards and desires to know if I chuse he shall strike the Sabres for having had talks with the Rebels which he is ready to do. As well as all opposers of His Majesty's Arms. I am sending off some pouder and cloathing to his Nation as well as to the Weenippigoes and Menominies to endeavour to keep them firm in our Alliance, if they continue so we have nothing to fear from the Indians of that Quarter I have been obliged to purchase goods upon this occasion, great part of which will remain in Store. As the assortment I wanted lay in those parcels I was obliged to buy and I hope your Excellency will not think the purchase ill timed it being of the greatest importance to secure these people in our Interest before the Rebels make any impression on them.

The Ottawas and Chippawas are here they do acknowledge that there was a report spread over the country to their disadvantage but positively deny having entered into articles with the Rebels. I am certain that the Detroit

Indians have sent Belts to beg they will observe a neutrality which it is not possible for Indians to do.

Mr. Hamilton's defeat has cooled the Indians in General. I have however a great number to send to Detroit if they should be wanted, as yet no vessel from the Post. Your letter of the 25 Decemr. came to me by my returned express.

I have had no letter from Mr. Chevallier of a later date than the 20th Febry. wherein he mentioned that the Rebels have employed the Canadians to purchase horses (for to mount their cavalry) in the neighbourhood of Chickagou Mr. Carty who lately gave me Intelligence is now one of the Rebel Captains so poor a creature never entered into any service before, yet he was a very principal actor at Fort Sackwith.*

I am sorry to acquaint your Excellency that the scheme of supplying the Troops here with anything but store provisions is impracticable, the taking of fish too precarious most of what they take now I supply the Indians with. And as to the Indian meat there are not five carcases of any kind brought to this Post in the course of a year. Formerly there used to be more, but there are fewer animals, and the Indians since the beginning of the War are become very idle, even in the hunting Season. I am obliged to help maintain all who live within fifty or sixty miles of this place, were it not for the sugar in the spring many would starve. If purchased a dryed carcase or two is brought from afar in the Spring, the buyer pays at the rate of Two shillings pr pound.

I am extremely happy to hear that your Excellency is determined to take my disagreeable situation under consideration so soon as circumstances will allow I would willingly sacrifice every private concern to the good of the Service, were I not convinced that whoever relieves me may by my instructions be able to give as much satisfaction as I possibly could by remaining here any longer. I have prepared the Indians to receive a new Father (as they stile the Commanding officer) when ever he shall be sent.

I have the honor to be &c (Signed)

[B 96 1, p 35.] A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 14th June, 1779.

Sir—I am honoured with your Letter by Mr. Pateman in seventeen days from Montreal. The last letter from your Excellency is dated 25th Decemr. I however on the arrival of Mr. Joseph Howard without a pass, secured his arms ammunition and Liquor and orded him to dry his goods which were wet, but not to sell any until he received your pass. On receipt of your Instructions how to act I have now caused the whole of his goods to be seized and lodged in the King's store. It appears that Mr. Howard had previously detached two canoes to the Grand Portage which on his acquainting me with I sent to stop, but my orders arrived at St Mary's too late, when I have time to examine and give the invoice of the things seized Copied fair I will transmit it.—By the best information I can get the Rebels will not attempt this post. Clark is gone down to the Natches to try what he can do there, his Convoys having been stoped, could the entrance at New Orleans be shut it would effectually do their business.

---

*See appendix

It will be quite safe and highly necessary that Canoes with goods are sent up to this place to enable me to indulge the friendly Indians with traders. Twenty canoes will be sufficient & care may be taken in their distribution so as to prevent their falling into the enemy's hands. The same number of Canoes which entered the Lake Superior the last year may enter it this year. I mean those which were for the different Stations from St. Mary's keeping the North Shore such may be trusted as are used to trade to the Peek Michipcioton Neppigino and the Grand Portage so into the Northwest. Mr. Barthe at St. Mary's may have two Canoes and Mr. Cadet one included in the twenty for this place.

The Indians are hanging upon me in great numbers to know if they are to be employed. I have repeatedly wrote to Captain Lernoult to know if he wants their assistance but have no answer from him. I am loath to send off partys to the Illinois without your express orders for so doing, at best it would only be productive of much cruelty perhaps exercised upon the undeserving, still many small partys will steal off and I think I observed that the Weenippigoes are to bring in some prisoners it was necessary to put them to the test, to know if they are real friends or not, and to shew the Sacks and Reynards that they are so.

Wabasha the Scoux has sent in Roeq the Interpreter with his son and some young men to acquaint me he stoped at the Dog Plains on being informed that Mr. Hamilton was taken and that Gautier had retreated. He desires to know if he shall strike the sacks and reynards for having stop d Gautier, and for having listened to the rebels. It would by no means be prudent to encourage an Indian War & I hear that three or four hundred Chippiwas of the plains (people who never come in here) are on the march to attack Wabasha having lately had some of their people killed by the Scoux.

I do not recollect any trader having gone by here without a pass. I once reported that two men from Montreal left it on their way to Detroit or

Michilimackinac, and as they never reached Detroit it was supposed they had entered Oswego river. This Information I got from a Mr. McKamora who I believe did not recollect their Names.

I believe the Suer Calve to be a very honest inoffence man. It would not be amis to give him a Dollar & a Ration a day and send him into the sacks & Reynards Country where he has some influence, otherwise I have too many useless people about me, none but the Interpreter who can give me any real assistance, Rocq I send to the Scoux Country.

Mr. Langdale and Mr. Gautier should be kept in play [pay?] and in temper tho' they are at present rather a burthen upon me.

To send them upon an Expedition without Troops is doing nothing and your Excellency will see by my former Letters, how much it is out of my power to spare a man from this place. These two Gentlemen represent that they cannot live at this Extravagant place upon their allowance having a constant run of Indians who snatch the bread out of their mouths.

They beg of me to represent to your Excellency that should their friends apply for a pass to send them a Canoe you will please to grant them one. I can assure you upon honor that not one ounce of Provisions has ever been delivered to Indians during my Command at this Post but what has been done in my presence, therefore none could be disposed of but with the strictest justice. The worst has mostly been reserved for them, still the Soldier often gets such as he wanted [would?] not receive but at this remote Post, where he can often exchange it for Sugar or bread and if Fish sometimes enables him to sell it for money to keep up his necessarys (which articles are dear here) he gets eighteen pence and two Shillings per pound for very indifferent Pork. I think I have represented that the scheme of supplying the provisions here is altogether impracticable, and I must beg leave to repeat that the provisions sent would not keep good longer than the time it was first limited to serve.

I hope this Letter will get down in twelve days and that I shall have the pleasure of hearing from you soon if I am to obtain your Excellency's leave of absence, I hope it will be in time for me to get to New York, the hurry of the Indians will soon be over here. I am &c.

(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

P. S. I hear this moment that the Canoe is setting off Received accounts from people from St. Joseph's that some Indians are arrived there from Port Vincent, who report that the rebels are starving—The Indians living about that Country having plundered them of all their provisions & Effects, I am also told that Mr. Chevallier has wrote me the particular accounts of this, and that his Letter was sent by Land when I receive it I shall Write to your Excellency I expect Therce here soon who will be a good opportunity.

Messrs Lord & McGill having engaged to furnish five Canoes to some of the inhabitants residing at this Post. and Mr. Campion one as they tell me, I wish they could be included in the twenty. The bearer of this Letter young Mr. Aird has behaved as a good subject in this Country.

I believe he is desirous of returning with a load.

(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

[B 96 1, p. 39.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 14 June 1779

Sir—Should the Exigency of the times in your Excellency's opinion absolutely require that I should sacrifice my health and Fortune to the maintenence of this port (having myself a more humble opinion of my abilities) I humbly crave it as a mark of your favor to take it into consideration whether my character may not suffer in the eyes of the World, for want of being acquainted with the reasons why I remain here with the most inconsiderable command upon the communication, while the rebels are advancing towards a considerable body of the regiment, and other troops commanded by a Captain This I have represented to the Lieut Colo but his answer is long in coming whatever reasons your Excelly may have, the world is often to apt to judge unfavorably

It is with submission I now leave my case before you

I am Sir &c

(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

[B 96 1, p. 45.]

TO CAPT. BREHM

Michilimackinac 20 June 1779.

Sir—I am favored with your Letter dated the 30th May. The inclosed Return will point out to you the wants according to our present Situation in the Engineer and Artillery Departments. To which I must add that four light six pounders mounted on Garrison Carriages with the necessary Emplements and a proportion of Ammunition will be requisite. The two heavy Sixes are too heavy for the platforms of our Bastions and our four Amayetts are quite blown in the Vents—we have two field pieces mounted on Travelling Carriages, but it is ready they remain in the Parade ready mounted as they are. Twelve Artillery men will also be necessary, having at present but one Bombardin and one Matress. With regard to fortifying the Fort, I took the precaution to do everything that could be done to it, so soon as I heard of Mr. Hamilton's defeat by throwing down such houses as encumbered it and make use of the timber together with the cedar fences for that purpose, the whole fort is now lined with good strong cedar Picquets, and a banquet thrown up so as to fire from a good height Thro' loop holes. The Barracks are now surrounded with strong Pickets, so as to secure the soldiers from surprise of the Indians which is the chief object to be attended to here as I cannot believe that the Rebels will ever venture to come by Chickagou. If they do they can bring Cannons we need fear. But if Detroit should fall into their hands this place must of course fall tho' they should not send a man against it.

The curtain of the Fort are 100 paces long. Judge therefore if Fifty more men will not be absolutely necessary, and notwithstanding the Barracks here will hold but seventy-two men, still there are Traders houses left which may be purchased and easily fitted to serve the purpose.

Some time ago I informed His Excellency we were commanded by Sand Hills. Since which we have endeavoured to level them, much has been done but we have only twelve spades so that there remains a great Hill still to remove. The Drifts from those Hills are like snow Drifts, which we are after every storm obliged to remove. I have often reported the want of pitch and Oakum to keep the Batteaux in repair but for these few long years past, I have never been able to procure the necessary. When the several Articles herein contained are furnished whoever relieves me may sleep in security. I am Sir &c (Signed)

A. S. De Peyster.

P. S.—I will be obliged to you if you will hurry Mr. Schanks to send off the Weholms back to this Post, she is much wanted. Please also to let me know what is the soldiers allowance for Kings Works. The men here have it that at Detroit they are allowed a pint of Rum and half a Ration Extraordinary. What is the officer overseeing the work allowed?

[B 96 1, p 47.]

Return of Artillery Stores wanted at this Place Calculated According to the present situation of the Garrison, vizt.

Michilimackinac 20th June 1779.

Com'd Powder Six Barrels Musquet Cartridge Paper reams ten—Empty Shells for a Brass Mortar of 4 2-5—Proved ready for loading 100 with like number of Fuzes, ready primed, fit for Service, with Sufficient quantity of Quick Match—Mens Harness-belts four-aprons of Lead nine—Port fires dozens, four—Tin Tubes, 200—Empty Paper Cartridges for Six Pounders 200—Tan'd Hides two—Thread for tying musquet Cartridges lbs 4—

Powder Measures, Capper one of one lb—one of one oz—& one of ½ oz—

For the guns, one searcher, one Picker & one Reliever—6 prs Springers for long Six Pounders, 2 Sheep-Skins, dressed for coating springers 4—

J. Pattison
Bombr Royal Artillery

[B 97 1, p. 137.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 27th June 1779

Sir—Your Excellency's Letter of the 30th April & 6th May only came to hand the 24th instant owing to Leekey Canoes and hard gales on the Lakes.

I acquainted you lately that I had been obliged to purchase goods The Indians hung about the Fort in great numbers watting to hear if they were wanted at Detroit, at length they grew tired and all the strangers filled off to their homes.

I have received your Letters by Detroit and one from Captain Brehm by a traders Batteaux. The answer to which I have dispatched with a light Batteaux and nine oars so that he will know our wants in a few days.

On hearing of Mr. Hamilton's defeat I did all that this sand would allow of, to put his Fort in a state of Defence.

The Sand Hills lately reported, are now near leveled, so as to prevent any lodgement behind them.

By Creditable people just arrived from the Illinois, I have the following accounts so late as the 24th of April, Clarke was returned from Post Vincent with most of his people, and one Mr. George*[1] was also arrived from Carolina with forty men, & they talked of a reinforcement under the Command of Montgomery.*[2]

The Kaskaskias no ways fortified. The Fort being still a sorry pinchetted enclosure round the Jesuits Colledge with two plank Houses at opposite Angles, mounting two four pounders each on the ground Floor, and a few Swivels mounted in a Pidgeen Houses. The Militia are about one hundred & fifty men serving much against their inclination. Provisions were growing very scarce, & no supplys of goods from below the Fort at the Lower Watches [Natchez?] having sloped their Convoys thither Clarke proposed to march when he got answers to some letters. The Natches is defended by Royalists who had been ruined by *Willings**[3] depredations.

---

*See appendix

The Rebels have had several Councils with the Indians, have nothing to give them and treat them with great contempt. Their policy is to intimidate them since they cannot carress them. No Expidition was talked of towards this post, they are right for as sure as they attempt it they will never get back. The Country affording nothing for strangers to subsist upon.

One Linelot a Trader I find has entered into their service. He has too much to say amongst the Indians, every method should therefore be used to get him into our hands, for which purpose and to reconnoitre I send off Gautier with a party of Indians at Lee Pee* a small Fort on the Illinois River where he is at present with some other Traders who had better be here, Gautier has orders to Burn the Fort which will shew the Rebels that all the Indians do not intend to remain Neuter, and effectually intimidated them from attempting an Expedition this way. The Pay is about Eighty leagues from the Kaskaskias.

Your Excellency refers me to the Ordinances of the Provence for 77 respecting the affairs of Mr Howard. I see thereby he is entitled to give security which I shall take & transmit it to Montreal. I have the honor to be

(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

[B 96 1, p. 51.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 29th June 1779.

Sir—The Canoe having been detained a day the wind has brought me news from Detroit by which I find that that place is in great security.

It gives me infinite pleasure also to hear from St. Mary's that Mr. Sinclair the Lieut. Governor & Superintendent of this Post is daily expected at Quebec. I hope your Excellency will think his arrival very opportune. He being a Gentleman much liked by the Traders and well known by the Indians, who both love and fear him. In fact by what I can learn he is in every respect Calculated to please all party's here I have the honor to be

[B 96 1, p. 55.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster

TO MAJOR NAIRNE

Michilimackinac 9th July 1779.

Sir—The annexed paper are relative to Mr. Joseph Howard having left Montreal without a Pass. I will be obliged to you if you will have the affair put into its proper Channel, so that a prosecution may commence against said Joseph Howard agreeable to His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief's Intentions.

---

*See appendix

Having received intelligence that an attack is intended against Detroit by the Rebels from the Illinois, who are to march by the Wabash & St. Joseph's, I have detached Lieut Bennett with some Traders and Canoe men, Twenty Soldiers and 200 Indians, to indeavour to intercept one Linetot who is to march with a body of Horse by St. Joseph's. Everything is very quiet here, the Indians seemingly well disposed. I have the Honour to be Sir, Your most obed't hum'l Serv't,

A. S. De Peyster.

To Major Nairne, Comm'dr at Montreal.

[B 97 1, p 167.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 9th July 1779.

Sir—On the 29th June I acquainted Your Excellency that I was sending off a party towards the Pee Since which I received from St. Josephs (which they had from the Illinois so late as the 28th of May), that the Rebels were in great forwardness to march with 700 men to the Wabash against Detroit, and that one Linelot is to march 400 horse by St. Josephs.

In consequence of this intelligence I have detached Lieutenant Bennet who went off the next day with twenty soldiers, about 60 Traders and Canoe Indians to endeavour to intercept Linetot, or attempt anything in that quarter which may be conducive to distress the Rebels. The numbers of Indians will daily increase. Allowing the whole of this report to be false the Movement will still answer a good purpose as it will secure the wavering Indians particularly the pottawatamies, keep up the Spirit of the inhabitants of Detroit Settlement and greatly deter the Rebels from any attempt that way seeing they are much disturbed in thinking that the Indians would remain neuter & let them pass. I have purchased the Welcome & let her stay with Provisions and some goods to enable Mr. Bennet to speak to the Pottawatimies, Masceretins [Mascoutins] Quicapores [Kickapoos] and Miamis.

I have the honor to be

[B 96 1, p. 60.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 21st July 1779.

Sir—The Bearer of this Letter St. Paul goes down to Montreal to fetch up Canoes and provisions to enable him to send down his pack such is the necessity of quitting the place to the great prejudice of His Majesty's Service. I wrote to Detroit on this subject and hope this reasonable request will not be refused. No vessel as yet sent this year from that Quarter. I once sent the Sloop Welcome thither and she returned since which I am obliged to employ her on Lake Michigan. It would be necessary for the good of the Service (If your Excellency thought proper) to order a vessel to ply constantly twixt the two places. In the situation we are in at present. The Indians are in constant alarm, and are often much persuaded Detroit is taken that they are ready to leave their habitations. So much are they exposed to the impositions of designing people, which I have not in my power to contradict for want of more frequent intelligence. The commanding officer at Detroit gives me all the intelligence he receives. But to hear often that all is well would be most essential service in the management of Indians.

The last accounts from Lieut Bennet say that the Indians join the Collier de Guerrie fast it is a yard and a half in length, and has a great medal tied to it as a reward for him who does the greatest action free from cruelty. The other Chiefs on the March received strings of Wampum from Linctot,* who requests of them to remain neuter, and let him pass to Detroit with a body of Horse. They sent me the strings and detained his Messenger. Some Indians are just returned from the falls of the ohio where the Rebels have a Fort they killed four of their Soldiers but did not scalp them, whilst they were thus employed another band from their Village (I. E. the Grand River) upon a visit to the Rebels at Kiskaskias, they met on their return and shewed three Kegs of Rum, but declared they got no other presents such is the traffic carried on by many nations at present.

If your Excellency has not thought proper to order me to Detroit, or to give me leave of absence altogether I must in such case request as a favor you will allow me to pass the ensuing winter at Quebec to leave this when the Indians return to their wintering Ground, and all the communication with the rest of the world draws to a close, and should you find it necessary, I will return here early in the Spring. I have the honor to be &c.

[B 96 1, p. 62.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 9th August, 1779.

Sir—I have accounts that Clark is on the March to the Ouiat with 500 men followed by 200 Oxen, the remainder of his provisions to go up the Ohio, and Wabashe Linctot marches with a party from the pey to join him at the Ouiat or Miamis their object is said to be Detroit. I believe by this time we have 500 Indians on the look out to harrass them on their March and endeavour to draw them into an ambuscade, which I have ordered to be laid for them. I have sent off Matchiquis & his band with Lieut Cloves to join Mr. Benet. I am Sir &c.

---

*See appendix

[B 96 1, p. 64.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 13th August, 1779.

Sir—I have just received the annexed Letter from Lieutenant Benet, I must observe to your Excellency that when Mr. Benet wrote it, the sloop was not arrived at St Joseph's River with Lieut Cloves and Matchequis, and his band nor was Langdale arrived, with his Indians, said to be three hundred, but they must have arrived in two or three days after what effect their arrival will have I know not but it is to be hoped the Weenippigoes & Menomies will change the law of affairs there as they are naturally more brave than the Ottawas, and know they are not to have goods sent amongst them unless they strike the enemy, should they also misbehave I hope you see the necessity of curtailing the presents—one hundred men more at this post would render it independent of the Indians. I have the honor to be &c.

[B 96 1, p. 65.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

Copy of Lieut. Bennett's Letter

St Joseph's 9th Augt. 1779.

Sir—In my last I informed you what fine Speeches the Pottawatamies made me, two days afterwards a Chief called the Petit Bled from Nipicous, came at the Head of the Different Bands of the Pottewatamies, & told me what was said before his arrival was without any other design but mere compliment, but he was now come to see his pure sentiments, that, they returned the detested hatchet and Pipe, which were brought here only to render their Villages miserable, he said they desired tranquility but still insists that he held sacred, the hatchet of his former father the French King & would never quit it, as soon as he returned to his Village, the others came and made an apology for their Insolence, I gave them an answer such as I thought they deserved. Our Scouts have all been frightened back by Indian Reports, they seem all to be debauched by the thoughts of a French War.

We have not Twenty Indians in our Camp who are not prepairing for leaving us, I believe you will join with me when I say they are a set of treacherous Poltroons, even Kewigushkum himself told the Pottewatamies that he did not come here with his own consent, but that he and his whole Village were drove to it, this in consequence of threats from the Poteawatamies Belts to the Ottawas and us. Mr. Bobie, an officer in Capt. Lernoults dept. at the Miamis has joined us to offer his service, he says there are not fifty Rebells at Post Vincent, that Mr. Linetot passed by the trait [trail?] towards the River Blanche to join the Rebel army at the Illinois, Mr. Le Gras Commanded their horse (for by all accounts they do not deserve the name of cavalry) who do not proceed by this way by what I am informed.

Baptiste Point au Sable* I have taken into custody, he hopes to make his conduct appear to you spotless, he told me Mr. Linetot was at the Peé [Le Pé] with about thirty men, when he left it, but was immediately to set off for the Ouiat, which agrees with the account of Mr. Bobie. [Baby].

As we have no account of an Enemy near us unless treacherous Indians, I would immediately return to Michilimackmac did I not think myself obliged to wait Capt. Lernoult's answer, whether he wants us at or near Detroit, I have deceived him much with respect to our numbers, I thought I could depend more upon the Ottawas, however I have the pleasure to tell you that French and English are all well in Spirits, & only wait for an order to march.

I have no complaint against the Mississequis only their being in such a hurry to leave us, Nibeingushkam and his Friend the old Grey headed Chippewa stole off without giving us the least notice they complain that you sent them naked from Michilimackinac & I suppose they will make the same complaint to you of me, notwithstanding they have all been clothed.

We are luckily well intrenched. I am Sir

Your most humble Servant
(Signed) Thos. Bennett
Lieut & Adjt of the Kings Regimt.

To Major De Peyster.
[B 97 1, p. 179.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimacinac 23rd August 1779.

Sir—I am favoured with your Excellencys letter of the 3rd July, and return you thanks for the honor done me in the good opinion you are pleased to entertain of my conduct during a long command at this post.

---

*See appendix

I am very happy to hear that you send Captain Sinclair to relieve me.

I lately acquainted you that Lieut Clowes was gone with the Sloop Welcome to join Lieut Bennett he proceeded as far as the mouth of the River, where he was overtaken by a Trader sent from Lieut. Bennett, to acquaint him he was at a place called Kikanimaso, fifteen leagues away this side the river on his way home That he had waited Twenty days for an answer to his Express, sent to Detroit, which was not yet returned, and as all the Scouts were returned without having seen the Enemy, both Canadians and Indians grew home sick, and desired to come back, that seeing the Indians were filing off fast he was obliged to leave St. Joseph's the 14th instant. Some pottawatamies came with Mrs. Bennett to appologise for the behaviour of their nation.

Two young chiefs are just arrived and say that they have scouted as far as the Ouiat, but heard of no Rebels on their March, that there were few at the Ouiat, and did not exceed three hundred at the Isle aux Noix E E Virginians and as many Creoles, which was told them (near the Ouiat) by Indians who had lately been at Fort Charters. When Mr. Bennet arrives I shall be able to give a more particular account of this *Decouvert.* The Indians say, that the noise of their movement detered the Rebels from advancing, I could wish however that themselves had advanced a little farther. I am in hopes this fall that Mr. Sinclair will be able to collect some corn, as there are so few Traders here, but when Trade flourishes, this place is obliged to have recourse to Detroit.

I have the honor to be &c (Signed)

[B 96 1, p 67.] A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 4th September 1779.

Sir—I have the honor to acquaint your Excellency that Lieut. Bennett is returned from St. Joseph's. The enclosed paper is a Journal of his *Decouverté,* which I have thought best to transmit for your information.

I have to observe that the provisions from hence arrived at the river St. Joseph's at the time fixed, so that nothing could be wanting from this Quarter have enabled him to derive every advantage from his Journey thither, and had the evening [enemy] advanced, I am persuaded, that no officer of his Rank would have acquitted himself with more honor.

I yesterday had a Council with the Ottawas, and have made them most heartily ashamed of their impatience. I have the honor to be &c.

[B 96 1, p. 70.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

Lieut. Bennett's Report

MICHILIMACKINAC, Sept. 1st 1779.

SIR—In pursuance to your orders I took part [post?] at St. Joseph's on the twenty third day of July before the Potowatimies were assembled. I threw up an entrenchment sufficient to oppose a superior number of savages, in case their intention should be to insult or surprize us.

The Potawatamies of St. Joseph's of the Petit Coeur de Cerf, and the Terre Coupée were ye first who visited us, they delaid their Intentions to be to assist us in everything, that lay in their powers, and promised that they would always look upon the enemies of their Father the King of England as theirs.

I, as soon as possible, sent out parties of the Ottawa's and Chippewa's with some of the Potawatamies and Volunteers to the Pee, the Ouia and the Miamis to endeavor to get some intelligence of the Enemy, and if possible to bring Prisoners or to distress them in any other manner they might think most eligible.

The Party ordered to the Pee returned back in two days to all appearance frightened by the threat and persuasions of some of the Potawatamies they met on the road.

The Detachment to the Ouia in five or six days also returned much in the same situation, and at the same time informed me that there was but a few Canadians (residents) at the place and no appearance of an Enemy in that Quarter.

Nothing extraordinary from the Miamis.

Three days after my arrival at St. Joseph's, I also sent an Express to Captain Lernoult informing him of the Disposition of the Savages (at least as it appeared to me) and beg'd to know if I could render him any service either with my own Party, or in conjunction with any other he might send to join me from Detroit.

I had the Negro Baptiste point au Sable brought Prisoner from the River Du Chemin, Corporal Tascon who commanded the Party very prudently, prevented the Indians from burning his house, or doing him any injury, he secured his Packs &c. which he takes with him from Michilimackinac, the Negro since his imprisonment has in every respect behaved with becoming a man in his situation, has many friends, who give him a good character. He informed me that Mr. Linetot some time before had left the Pee, with thirty Canadians to join Mr. Clarke, at the falls of the River Blanche, to go to the Ouia, which intelligence was afterwards confirmed.

The Potawatamies, Head by the Petit Bled Chief of the Village Nipicons, repent of their fair promises they made me, returned the Pipe & Belt I gave them and declined engaging in a war in which their French father is concerned, and as soon as I left the Counseil I was informed that Kusigushkan (Chief of the Ottawas) told the Petit Bled that the Ottawas were forced much against their Inclinations to join the English on the present occasion, that upon their leaving Arbre Croche they were determined not to go further than St. Joseph's and seemed to coincide with him in his opinion, should the French take a part in the War.

The Ottawas want much to return, not choosing to Disappoint Captain Lernoult, should he have form'd any plan in consequence of the favourable account I gave him of the Indians. I desire them to stay till I hear from him (of which I was in daily expectation, my express having been sent off fourteen days, from St. Joseph's) with great reluctance they consented to remain three days demanding at the same time five Cags of Rum—when the time was expir'd finding I would not stir till I could hear from Captain Lernoult, a part of them went away, the remainder asked for two more Cags of which I very unwillingly gave them (they having already drank more than was at first intended for them) telling them that if there was no other method of detaining them than by constantly supplying them with Rum that I would rather choose to be left alone with the Volunteers. Mr. Langlade arrived and brought with him sixty Chippewas, who demanded Rum in so haughty a manner that I refused giving them any, & being assured that their motives in coming to us was to partake of our Provisions (of which we had only remaining but for fifteen days) I set out on my return to Michilimackinac leaving Mr. Langlade to wait a day longer for our Express (which was now gone nineteen days) intending to return should I find it necessary from the Mouth of the River where I intended waiting a Day for him—not to be any longer importuned by the Savages.

Mr. Langlade having waited according to orders at St. Joseph's informed me that the Express was not arriv'd. I therefore left the River & in two days arrived at the river Okikanamayo, from whence I saw a vessel steering towards St. Joseph's—I instantly sent a Canoe after her to inform the master were we were encamp'd and that we left St Joseph's, having provisions only to carry us to Michilimackinac, Mr Hep who conducted ye Canoe inform'd Lt. Clowes that my intention was to return to St Joseph's as soon as we had a further supply of Provisions—Lt Cloes sent me a message by Mr Hepe that he had provisions on board & that if I meant to return or wanted anything from on board, He desired I could send him a Canoe immediately—As soon as possible, I returned myself with as many of the Volunteers as choos'd to accompany me, hoping yet to be of some service, aided by Lt. Cloes—&

Michiguiss with ten of his band--I made no delay till I arrived at the river, where I found that the Vessell, had sail'd, but being in hopes that she was tacking about with an intention to return, I Encamp'd & sent Mr Langlade again up to St Joseph's to see if anything extraordinary had happened since our departure—upon his return he informed me that affairs were in ye same state as when we first left ye place, having waited two days & a half for the return of the Vessel, & having only seven days provisions left, I resolved upon returning to Michilimackinac—

I have the pleasure to inform you that the Canadians behaved with the greatest appearance of zeal for the Service possible, and seem greatly disappointed in not having had it in their power to distinguish themselves—

Also the Soldiers who were of the Party, I flatter myself I need not inform you of their Eagerness to meet the Enemy.

Amiable a young Ottawa Chief was the only Indian who returned with me, he seems no less zealous for ye good of ye service than ashamed at the dastardly, unsteady conduct of the rest of the Indians—

I have ye honour to be Your most obedient humble Servant

Thos. Bennett

Lieut & Adjnt of ye Kings (or 8th) Regimt

To Major De Peyster

Commanding the Garrison of Michilimackinac.

Endorsed: From Lieut Bennett to Major De Peyster in form of a Journal of his Expedition to St. Joseph's Dated Septr 1st Rec'd 24th in the Major's letter of 4th September.

[B 97 1, p. 209.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 24th Sept, 1776.

Sir—The Indians are all gone to their wintering Grounds apparently well disposed. I herewith inclose their speech to me on their taking leave for your Excellency's perusal.

The only assistance they have required for the ensuing Campaign was privately to beg me to Lodge with some careful trader on the way Three or four parcels of powder with a proportion of Ball, and some spare fuzees they say they hope of this moderation to make amends for the great expence they have hitherto put Government to, without doing any essential Service.

I have the honor to be &c

[B 96 1, p 74.] (Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

MICHILIMACKINAC 5th October 1779.

SIR—I have the pleasure to acquaint Your Excellency that Lieut. Governor Sinclair arrived at this Post yesterday in good health, he proposes to write to your Excellency by a light Canoe which leaves this in a few days. You may depend that nothing shall be wanting in me to give him every information in my power, & I believe I shall have full time to talk affairs over with him, as there is no vessel here to take me to Detroit whether I shall repair agreeable to your orders by the first opportunity.

I have the pleasure to give up everything in a quieter state. The Indians are all gone to their several winterings. The Traders are also sent to their different stations, after having formed a general store, in which they unanimously entered.

By this step I have been able to turn every bad man out of the Indian Country. I mean such as never desired to pay their debts or were suspected of wanting to go off to the Enemy one of them named pero lately went off *en cachet.* I sent after, and overtook him, on this side La Bay, but he rather than return blew himself up with a Barrel of powder. I did propose in case I had been ordered down to Quebec, to have verbally represented the misconduct of some of the Traders of the North West, having also waited in hopes to get some more information from Mr. Oaks, who I am informed thro a scarcity of provisions is gone directly down the country. It is that gentleman therefore and to Mr. Patterson I must beg leave to refer you for a particular Account of what they had concerning the people who were lately murdered by the Indians I understood that the mischief was brought on thro' the imprudence of two of the killed namely *Cole* and *prudheme* and by the misconduct of Messrs. Homes McCormick and Graves. I am Sir &c (Signed) A. S. DE PEYSTER.

LETTERS FROM GENERAL HALDIMAND TO LIEUT. GOV. HAMILTON

QUEBEC 2nd August 1778.

SIR—Monsr. De La Motte has been detained here, first by General Carleton, waiting my arrival and afterward by me in order to send by him Dispatches which I am preparing for you in answer to such letters of yours as I found in the hands of Sir Guy Carleton, and to inform you of some regulations which are necessary to be made for the upper Post; I find I shall not be able to finish before I get to Montreal which will be in the course of this week, and in case La Motte should go off before my letters are ready, I thought it proper to inform you this much concerning him to account to you for his long stay below here.

On account of the favorable mention which I find you have made of Mr De La Motte, I have given him a hundred pounds Sterling for defraying the Expence of his journey and as an encouragement to him. I am &c

(Signed) F. H.

[B 121, p. 24.]

Quebec the 6th August 1778

Sir—Such letters of yours as Sir Guy Carleton, in expectation of my arrival, did not think proper to return you answers to, have been laid before me, I am therefore to acquaint you, having perused your scheme of an attack upon Fort Pitt, mention in one of your letters without date, that as that place is at such distance as to make it very difficult if not impossible to be maintained by us, I think no essential point would be gained by reducing it; at the same time if you learn that any considerable Magazines of Provisions or Stores are laid up there, the destroying of these would certainly be a very usefull service to be the object of the Parties which you sent out towards the enemies Frontiers; as would likewise the destroying of the Crops and the habitation of all the advanced settlers which would increase the difficulties which the Rebels would have to encounter in case they should meditate anything against the King's Post upon the Lakes and I am of the opinion that the driving these settlers back upon their Brethren whom they would distress by an additional consumption of goods and provisions among them would prove a better measure for his Majesty's Interest than inviting them to your Post, where they must be maintained at a great Expence, unless it be such as are willing to join His Majesty's Arms, and exert themselves heartily to recover their lost liberties and Property in the Countries from whence they they retired. I should be afraid that the granting of lands to such people in the present conjuncture, would offer an expedient to the Rebels for introducing themselves into the neighborhood of our Posts, if not in numbers sufficient to surprise them, yet still so as to be able by intelligence they might so easily convey to their friends, endanger them very much: besides grants of land cannot be made but in the regular manner, thro the Governor General and there is not time at present for such concerns.

In another letter of yours without date, you have recommended Mr. La Motte concerning whom I have written to you particularly in a separate letter which he is the bearer of, and you have mentioned that about five thousand souls will be dependent for their support on Detroit during the trouble, upon which subject I cannot omit observing to you that the expense which will be incurred on this account must fall so heavy on Government that it becomes very requisite for you to be attentive to lessen it as much as possible in every part where the urgent necessity of it is not very clear and obvious.

In one of your letters of the 25th of April, you signify the desire of the savages that they have a Jesuit Missionary sent to them in the room of him whom you say is now superannuated at that Mission, I shall not omit giving the Savages satisfaction in this point as soon as my business will afford me time. You likewise mention that the Hurons and those at Sanduske expect to possess the lands they shall drive the Rebels from, and you desire to know what answer to give them; I think therefore proper to observe to you that it would certainly be good policy to give the Savages the entire property of all lands they should conquer from the Rebels, provided they make such conquests without any expense to His Majesty and that it does not interfere with any rights or claim of the five nations or any other nation of Indians, whom it is our business to keep united as much as possible not to lay foundation of Division amongst; in your answer therefore you must guard against such detrimental consequences. You also report the arms of your Militia to be very bad, concerning which at present I can only recommend that you get them repaired in the best manner you are able, as the province is in so exhausted a state, with regard to this particular, that I am not able to furnish you, till we receive a supply from England. In regard to the quantity of Gun Powder which you inform me in the same letter is requisite for the supply of the Indians, the same œconomy which I have upon another occasion above recommended, I must repeat on this, observing that it is not my intention in either to limit you in anything which shall be requisite for the good and advantage of His Majesty's service, the exigencies of which in the Department entrusted to your management at that distance from me, can only be judged of by you, and therefore must be left to your discretion in which I have full confidence.

In another letter of the same date, mention being made of the Ships upon the Lakes, I think it necessary to inform you that, I have found it best to put the Control management & payment of that department immediately under the Superior Military officer of the Posts, who is at present Lieut Colonel Bolton, and whatever assistance or service you may require of these vessels, the officers commanding them will therefore receive Colonel Bolton's orders to comply with when such requisition does not interfere with other orders which may have been given them.

There is likewise a letter from you dated the 9th of June, making with those I have already mentioned, all which require any immediate answer. In this last you desire orders how to direct the Inroads of the Indians with regard to which, in addition to what I have already observed on that article of Fort Pitt, I have to recommend strongly to you (as no doubt you have been informed of the expedition undertaken by the Five Nations under Major Butler and the success they have met with) that, if you have it in your power to support or favour the operations carrying on by them, you do immediately exert your efforts in the most effectual manner towards accomplishing those purposes.

I have nothing further to direct at present, in these matters, except that you follow all such orders as you have heretofore received, not repugnant to what I have herein recommended; all things else I must leave to your own Judgment to order and manage according as circumstances require and admit, being myself in expectation of Instruction that may enable me to be more particular.

I must desire you will transmit me, as soon as you conveniently can, copies of all the standing orders and Instructions which you have received from Home or from former Governors of this Province for your guidance as Lieut Govr and Superintendant, in order to enable me to consider of all such rules and regulations as shall appear to me to be still wanting to establish for putting the Posts in the best state of which they are capable for promoting the King's Service and for making them as little burdensome as possible.

In the mean time I have thought fit to fix, for the present, the following rule to be observed by the officers at all the Posts when they shall have occasion to draw money for discharging the Accounts of the different expenses incurred under their direction or by their orders, vizt—

That the Bills to be drawn be the Printed Copies herewith enclosed filled up (more of which shall be furnished from hence from time to time upon the officers giving notice of their being wanted) observing that the time at which they draw must be sixty days; that the money be in New York Currency; that at the end of the words His Majesty's Service, and in the space where in the copy herewith enclosed, filled up for the officers more particular direction. The words in the Indian department are written, it be always expressed what particular Service the money drawn be for; and that, as it is expressed in the Bills, a letter of advice always accompanying them, together with an account of the Expenses or Disbursement, which the sum of money then drawn is intended to satisfy or discharge.

Sending copies of all Vouchers to Mr. Dunn the Paymaster for this Department to be filed in his office, the several officers keeping the originals of such said vouchers in their own possession to serve them when they shall be called upon to settle their accounts at the Treasury or as it shall hereafter be directed. I am Sir &c.

[B 121, p. 25.] (Signed) F. H.

Montreal the 10th August 1778

Sir—This letter will be delivered to you by a Mr Bellefenille, who is of a respectable family in this Country, has served in the Canadian Troops employed by the King in this Rebellion & given demonstration of Zeal and attachment to the cause of Government; but now thinks it will be more advantageous to him to seek his fortune in the Upper Country; and I beg to recommend him to your good offices if anything happens in which you can be of use to him. I am &c

[B 121, p. 32.] (Signed) F. H.

Montreal 26th August 1778

Sir—Your letter of the 6th instant enclosing Mr Rochblaves and your other of the 8th have been received.

In the present circumstances of the affairs you relate, it becomes highly necessary to employ every means which offers, it not to retrieve the injury done, at least to stop its further progress, in which, it is not, so much the expense itself, as the care to prevent its being in vain and thrown away, which ought to be attended to. The expediency of supporting the Ouabash Indians is very evident & I cannot therefore but approve of such steps as you shall find necessary to take for this purpose: And I must observe that, from the great expense to which Government has been put for the Indians in general, it might be expected that some of them might easily be induced to undertake expeditiously to clear all the Illinois of these Invaders, and if the efforts of the parties, which you send out and have proposed to send out to the Ohio, were properly directed, the retreat of the Rebels and especially the communication & intercourse which they want to establish by that river with the French & Spaniards might be so disturbed, if not entirely cut off, as to render that object of their expedition & attempts upon this occasion entirely fruitless: & I think that unless your parties shall be able to fall upon the Vessels, boats and parties of the Rebels as they pass there is no other important service which they can render to government in that part.

The situation of the Ouabash Indians is very favourable for this design, to which all the parties you send out from Detroit, would also contribute best, as it appears to me, by acting in concert with those, as they might together fill all the Lower parts of the Ohio with bodies of savages that such constantly succeed each other, and at no time have the river without a force which would be ready to fall upon all the Rebels that appear there; and as a resource from whence the greatest benefit may arise, I must recommend to You to endeavour by Cypher and every means in your power to communicate with Mr Stuart or some of his assistants among the Cherokee and Chaktaw Nations, as, if the Southern Nations could be engaged to enter into the same views, the object of all the Indians directed to one point, there would be little doubt of their succeeding; and that the most essential services might be derived from the efforts of the Savages, which when unconnected and upon uncertain and different plans can never reasonably be expected from them.

I shall reinforce the Garrison of Detroit from Niagara, by as many men as, after a party which I am sending to strengthen that place arrives, can possibly be spared which I fear will not exceed fifty or sixty in number and orders are given for every diligence and expedition being used in forwarding provisions to Detroit in like manner as to the other posts, the difficulty attending the Transports of which provisions, and the number of places to supply render it necessary that I should recommend to your particular care to be sparing of them, as the circumstances you shall be under will possibly admit.

Fearing to distress the King's Service I shall detain Mr. Bently at this place, upon the representation you make of his being a dangerous person; but I could wish you would furnish me with some more substantial evidence of his guilt, than has yet appeared, as, in the opinion of Lawyers, this report of a Negro and an Indian seems to meet no great degree of credit: I had permitted him to send up one batteau of goods, in like manner as other Traders, which goods are intended for the Illinois, I must therefore desire you will be particularly attentive to the conduct of the people he employs and to the destination of the goods, perhaps by a prudent observing of what shall ensue from these, proofs may be obtained to comfirm our suspicions, and enable us to punish him if he deserves it, or to clear his character and to put it in my power to make him the best possible amends if he should be innocent.

By the invoices of the Merchant Goods, destined this year for Detroit you must observe the quantity of Powder bald & Fusils to be considerable, and it will naturally occur to you, I make no doubt to be the more attentive to how these articles shall be disposed of, as the present circumstances of the Illinois Country render the greatest circumspection indispensible; & I must recommend that, notwithstanding my Passports you on no account suffer any part of either to leave Detroit but according as you shall be convinced that the same will run no risk of falling into the hands of the Rebels by design or accident and that shall not be absolutely necessary for the Indians for whom you shall know it is intended, detaining all the rest, even destroying it at all events, when no other alternative remains for saving it from the possession of the Rebels & King's Enemies. I am &c

[B 121, p. 32.] (Signed) F. H.

SECRET AND CONFIDENTIAL

MONTREAL 27th August 1778.

SIR—I have communicated to you in my publick dispatch accompanying this, every instruction which at this distance, I thought it prudent to give you on the present occasion.

But as you must now be so well acquainted with the degree of confidence which is to be placed in the Savages, and what numbers of them you could collect to serve upon emergency; with the number also and disposition of the Militia of your District, and the Company which I understand you have raised and put on actual pay ready for service;—occasion must likewise have furnished you with a competent knowledge of all the different modes and Routes by which Forces of every nature can pass thro' the adjacent Countries; of the difficulties they have to encounter, and the articles necessary for them to provide themselves with; in short with all the resources to be made use of and all the obstacles to be met with.

I must therefore desire that you will immediately and by the safest and most expeditious conveyance acquaint me with your Idea of the practability of recovering the possession of the Illinois and of the means which from a consideration of what I have above suggested, you should advise to be employed for that purpose with a probability of success.

[B 121, p. 37.] I am &c (Signed) F. H.

Sorel the 7th October 1778.

Sir—I have received your letters of the 9th & 17th of Sept. The great expense and difficulty attending the Transport of Provisions to the Upper Posts, make it much to be wished that effectual means could be fallen upon at them all, for raising a supply within themselves, that might relieve them from their inconvenient and sometimes distressful dependance upon what is sent them from below, and at the same time ease Government of part of the heavy charges, to which it is now subject on this account. I am informed that the price of fresh provisions at Detroit is regulated chiefly by the Quantity of those of the King's sent up. If this be the case, much having been forwarded this year, it may be presumed that the price will fall, of which it would be right to avail yourself and therefore to purchase such a quantity from time to time as circumstances may require in order to spare the salt provisions and reserve them for time of need. Besides these expedients, I should be glad to know whether there are not Lands near the Fort, where part of the garrison might not be employed to cultivate Grain and even raise Cattle for the use of the Post and in time raise by their own Labour their own Subsistance.

It is a consideration well worth your attention and that of the officers commanding the Kings Troops there, being likely to produce great advantages as well to the settlement, as to the Troops who should have a reasonable allowance made them for what they raised, and I hope if the attempt shall appear practicable that every step be immediately taken that can promise to render it successful. I am Sir &c &c

P. S. In answer to what you have mentioned to me concerning Mr. Bellefeuille I think it may be necessary to let you know that the design of my recommendation in his favour was to engage your good offices towards him in the course of the business that he should follow there, but I should not approve of new Creations of offices.

[B 121, p 38.]

CONFIDENTIAL

Quebec 25th Decr 1778

Sir—The uncertainty of the state of Detroit and Michilimackinac as long as the Rebels remain masters of the country they have lately infested on the back of them renders it necessary that great caution be observed as to what Merchants effects particularly ammunition be permitted to pass to those places in the Spring, as such effects might be of themselves a temptation to draw the Rebels that way. I shall be very careful what passports I grant the ensuing season, but notwithstanding any I have granted or shall grant, I must desire that you will let nothing of that nature pass your post under any dubious or uncertain circumstances of the persons they belong to, or places they are intended for, but to keep the Merchants from clamouring it may be right and I must depend upon your address to appease them by promises to dispatch them as soon as possible, urging some reasons of the services for the delay, and giving them hopes that it will not continue long. I am &c

[B 96 2, p. 108.]

QUEBEC the 8th April 1779

SIR—I received your several letters previous to your departure from Detroit; the suddeness of your resolutions to march against the Rebels that had invaded the Illinois, made it impossible for me to give you any orders, but, from the knowledge of you and the spirit your letters breath, I am persuaded you have executed what appeared to you, best for the Kings Service, and in that light the measure you had pursued was stated to the Secretary of State in my Letter of last Fall.

I had since by your Dispatches of the 18th December last, which come to hand the 19th of March with their several Enclosures, learned that you have taken possession of Fort Vincennes; long before this reaches you, you will have been satisfied whether the Rebels seriously intended an attack upon Detroit, and acted in consequence or seen what further could be done for the King's service, in those parts, with the force at present with you, my anxiety for the safety of Niagara and Detroit has induced me to send there Captain Brehm my Aid-de-Camp who has my direction to consult Captain Lernoult and forward you from thence an exact view of the state of things in these parts, his opinion upon the further measures, most proper to be taken by you.

By accounts which bear every mark of authenticity, His Majesty's Arms have been attended with success to the Southward, the Province of Georgia once more reduced to obey their lawful Sovereign and great hopes entertained of the Royal Forces being able to penetrate further that way; it is likely this will engage the Southern Indians to make such a Diversion on their part as may tend in future to facilitate your operations. In the uncertainity of all things here, uninformed how far this war may spread, it is impossible for me at this distance to give you orders and directions respecting the further measures to be pursued by you; of the possibility or practicability of those you embrace, you must be the best Judge and on your doing what is best for the King's service I must and do fully rely.

Before you undertake anything considerable, I must recommend you weighing well the difficulty and expence, that must attend the Transport of every article you are to be furnished with from hence, and whether they are likely to be compensated by the advantages expected to accrue from such an undertaking.

When you write this way, I should be glad to receive the best information you can procure in regard to the most likely measures to be pursued for conciliating the Indians, preventing the Rebels designs, and securing the Upper Country, that when my Spring Dispatches reach this I may be better enabled to Judge of what is best to be done for those purposes. I am &c

[B 121, p. 40.] (Signed) Fred Haldimand.

LETTERS OF GEN. HALDIMAND TO CAPT. LERNOULT

Quebec, 8th April, 1779

To Captain Lernoult:

Sir—It is with real satisfaction I have received from Lieut. Colonel Bolton an account of the active and proper dispositions you have been making to receive the Rebels; whatever their designs may be it is happy for the King's Service, a Post of such importance, as that of Detroit, should be entrusted to so careful and diligent an officer, I hope and doubt not that you will continue to exert your best endeavours for the security and preservation of that settlement.

Anxious to be exactly informed as soon as practicable, of the true State of things in the Upper Country I send Captain Brehm, my Aid-de-Camp as far as Detroit and it is my request, you would open yourself to Him, with the utmost Freedom, as to a Person in whom you may safely confide, upon all matters which concern the King's Service in those Parts; Captain Brehm is directed to give you my orders respecting your Post, which He is to deliver you in writing, signed with His own hand, and to which you will in every part thereof exactly conform yourself.

Captain Brehm has received my Directions to consult with you, in regard to what may be done respecting the post of Vincennes, and the further steps advisable for Lieut Govr Hamilton to take, upon which he is to write to him from your Post, for at this distance and without information of the actual state of things in the Upper Country, it is impossible for me to point out to the Lieut Gov. the measure he ought to pursue.

By this conveyance I desire Lt. Col. Bolton to favour the Transport of Goods belonging to Mr. McComb of your settlement, as I understand, He is the person employed by Lieut. Gov. Hamilton to furnish the articles wanted for the Indians.

[B 121, p. 43.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC 13th June 1779.

To Capt. Lernoult:

SIR—Having certain intelligence that many of the Inhabitants of your neighbourhood are not only disaffected to Government, but, in the present critical situation of public affairs, may possibly prove dangerous Enemies to the King, I have judged it necessary for His Majesty's Service, hereby to authorize you to apprehend any Person or Persons whom you may have cause to believe is in any manner directly or indirectly aiding or abetting the Rebels, or their allies, either with Provision, intelligence or otherwise, & that you immediately send them to Niagara to be detained there, or forwarded to Carleton Island as Lieut Colonel Bolton may judge best for the public service.

And it is also your duty to require and obtain from all Persons of doubtful character, such Hostages as may effectually prevent them, or any part of their family from taking an active part against His Majesty's Government or the Troops under your Command. I am &c

(Signed) FRED HALDIMAND.

[B 121, p. 45.]

QUEBEC 23rd July 1779

To Capt. Lernoult (Extract):

I observe with great concern the astonishing consumption of Rum at Detroit amounting to the rate of 17,520 Gallons p. Year—The Expence attending this article cannot possibly be born. I must therefore recommend to your most serious attention a material diminution of it—at Niagara where the expence of it is very considerable, 10,000 Gallons is the most that ever has been expended; the men employed at the works have no allowance of Rum, except upon very particular occasions, and then never more than a Gill per day—indeed more must be hurtful to their health, independent of the Expence to Government. (Signed) F. H.

[B 121, p. 46.]

STORES ETC., TAKEN UPON LIEUT.-GOV. HAMILTON'S EXPEDITION

PROPORTION OF STORES TAKEN FROM DETROIT UPON AN EXPEDITION TO THE ILLINOIS.

Brass, 6 pr	1
Travelling carriages	1
Trunks do	1
Case shott fix'd	200
Grape shott	30
Loose round shott	50
Fix'd do	150
Tubes	700
Portfires	84
Slow match lbs	60
Spunages	2
Ladles	1
Wadhook	1
Portfire sacks	2
Lint stocks	2
Drag ropes sets	1
Mens harness do	2
Tube boxes	2
Spunage tacks	200
Flax, lbs	2
Shells grenades	20
Fuzes spare	30
Hammers claw	2
Tennant saw	1
Aprons of Laad	2
Powder horns with slugs	2
Flannell cartridges	200
Leather cartoneliers	2
Powder in barrels	4
Dark lenthorns	5
Seales, 1 pr.	
Weights from ¼ to 2 lbs.	
Common measures from ¼ oz. to 3 lbs.	
Spikes of steel	6
Prickers	2
Pinchers	2
Sheep skins	2
Carbine cartridges	480
Carbine flints	200
Paper quires	120
Thread lbs	10
Hand jack	1
Budge barrel	1
Leather bucketts	2
Filling boxes	2
Hand bills	20
Olcc cloths	4
Hanks of cord	12
Carbine ball	100
Tanned hides	2
White rope ⅔ of a coil.	
Tents	5
Grind stone	1
Cross cut saws	3
Tackles double block and simple	2
Whip saws	2
Files for do	6
Grease lbs	20
Sulphur lbs	25
Saltpetre lbs	25
Tram bye ejallt	6
Spades	6
Pincers prs	4
Sulpars do	6
Knives	6
Copper adze	1
Quadrants brass	1
Handspikes	6

HENRY DU VERNET, 2 lt. of Artillery.

Endorsed:—Proportion of stores taken from Detroit by Lt.-Gen'l Hamilton.

[B 99, p 171.]

NUMBER OF BATTEAUS AND PEROCPUS [PEROGUES] EMPLOYED ON GOVERN. HAMILTON EXPEDITION

Perocpus [Perogues]	42
Batteaus, and a very large French one	10
Total	52

THE NUMBER OF CARTS EMPLOYED, &C., ON THE CARRYING PLACE OF THE MIAMIS.

Carts	10
Carriages with 4 wheels for the Batteaus	2
Carriages with 2 wheels for the peroques	4
Total	16

Part of our provisions were sent over with Col. McLeod, the Rest got over in 6 Days from the 29th November to the 5th December.

HENRY DU VERNET,
2nd Lieut. of Artillery.

Endorsed:—Number of Batteaus and Perogues employed on Gov'r Hamilton's Expedition.

[B 99, p 172.]

LETTERS OF CAPT. D. BREHM

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

DETROIT May 28th 1779.

SIR—The waiting for a vessel has proved this time to be the speediest way of conveyance, I arrived the 25th instant in 34 hours from Fort Erie to the mouth of the River and late in the night with a Boat to the Fort.

The promises of Lt. Governor Hamilton to the Delawares and other Western Nations, that is to protect them in case attacked by the Rebells and to drive their enemy back by force if incroaching on their Territories, to support with victual and cloaths, the Indian familys, whom he desired to leave the Rebell Frontiers etc—the Indians now claim of Captain Larnould as successor the performance of the above mentioned promisses who has neither provisions nor men to keep or support said promisses, makes that the Indians are discontented and weavering what part to take, against an enemy entering into their country & all most surrounding them so far as that the Hurons of this Place, refuse to get any more in favour of Government alledging among their apprehensions of danger, the hopes of seeing their old Father the French returning again joined with the Virginians with whom the Rebells tell them, by frequent messages they are now allied.

The Rebells have five Forts, from Fort Pitt towards this place one at Beaver Creek about 27 miles from said Fort it is called Fort McIntosh 2nd at Kentuck about 30 miles above the Falls of the Ohio 3rd on the Island near the Falls 4th below the Falls and the 5th at Tuscawiawas, called Fort Laurance. The Wabash Indians expect cannon ammunition men and provisions to assist and support them in driving the Rebells from Vincenne and the Illinois. The Chanees Delawares Mingoes and Sandusky Indians expect the same to dislodge the Rebells from the above mentioned five Posts—Captn Larnould thinks that 5 or 600 men with small cannon or Field pieces joined by the Indians would go a great length to satisfy them, providing there was provisions enough to support them & their familys till they were enabled again to plant their lands which many have left, besides 5 or 600 men for the defence of the Posts he says that the arrival of the 200 men he were reinforced by has made a great alteration in the Inhabitants & even among the Indians, the former before that became incolent and almost daring in their behaviour. The absolute nessasuity of an Indian Agent being sent up is pointed out to Your Excellency by Captn Larnoulds Letter to Colo Bolton sent by him to Your Excellency without which Captn Larnould thinks that all the Western Indians will be lost he having no body but French people to interpret or to convey his Ideas through to the Indians, and thus not to be depended upon, in particular since the taking of Lt. Gen. Hamilton. Mr. Baby has been assisted for the present and altho he behaved remarkable well during the Indian War, keeps such company, that he makes himself suspitious by it, and the Rebells having spread among all the Western or Wabash or Illinois Indians by some disaffected savages that French spain even germans & americans are all Joined together, to drive the English out of America, has not only effect among the Indians, but likewise among the French from the Illinois and Wabash through this whole settlement; an Indian chief is arrived here yesterday from the Mississippy and has spread such news among those called hier by Hurons, Turean Ottowas and Chipawas to parsuade them to Join to make peace with the Rebells, who have invited them to Fort Pitt for the purpose. Captn Lernould is not Idle in countreacting the designs.

The Inclosed return will show your Excellency the Provisions now in this settlement and by calculations may be easily seen, that nothing more can be expected from them; the state of provisions in this garrison and the demands made for the northern Trade.

The New Fort is really very much advanced except Lodging Stores etc which is now Building the plan of it has already been sent to your Excellency by Colel Bolton; the inclosed return of ordnance is wanted for the defence of the New Fort, the Iron guns now hier and not belonging to the Vessells are now of the best Capt Larnould, would be glad to have an Iron 18 pounder, for a long range, as the New Fort commands its ground, for a great distance, about it, by the return from Fort Wm Henry, there are some I believe, but without Balls, garrison, carriages etc. Niagara has but one, els I would have begged Colel Bolton to send on hier, if this Fort is finished without or before it is attacked it will be very tenable and deserves attention paid to the demand made for its defence; as the Rebells view may be to possess this Post in hopes to maintain a garrison in it from the supplys of this settlement.

I wonder to find that Doctor Anthon, has not got as yet, his appointment as Surgeon to the General Hospital at this Place, as I remember your Excellency approved of appointment last summer, he has served as such before at this place, and has attended soldiers, sailors and the Indian department these many years past for a trifling allowance considering the great expenses at which he purchased his own medicines in hopes given him by different commanding officers of an appointment on the Establishment by which means he has been neglecting many of the Inhabitants from whom he must expect his chief livelyhood. Capn. Lernould requests your Excellency not only his appointment as made to the General Hospital at this place, but likewise as mate under him, to assist him in case of actual service a mate to attend the Vessels on the Lakes which are cruising about the Miamic River & Sandusky etc, either to hinder the Trade with the Rebells, from this settlement or in case crafts and forces should attempt to come that way.

Captain Lernoulds constitution is naturally week and is at present laid up with the gout and not able to sturr about, but both he and Colel Boulton to me appear verry able officers to command these posts and verry lucky your Excellency happens to have them Commanders hier at these troublesome times. It seems that I will not be able, to leave these Posts as soon as your Excellency might expect, as it requires some time to get a tolerable knowledge of things so complicated as they appear to me at present to give Your Excellency the true state of them; besides Colel Bolton & Captn Lernould both seem desirous of me not quitting these Posts just now as affairs hier, as affairs are very critical of what may be expected from being attacked or what can or will be proposed by them to defend them of which I may then fully acquaint your Excellency with.

I have the honor to be with great Respect and Esteem Sir Your Excellency's Most obliged and most obedt humble Servt.

D. Brehm.

Endorsed:—From Captain Brehm at Detroit of the 28th May Rec'd 9 June with several inclosures. 1779

[B 99, p. 71.]

TO MAJ. DE PEYSTER

Detroit May 30th 1779.

Sir—His Excellency the Commander in Chief has been pleased to send me to this place in order to get all the information of the situation wants etc. of your Post and what could be done towards its defence. I therefore begg the favour of you that you will be pleased to late me kno it, by the first and earliest opportunity, so that everything that can be got, on this communication may be sent up to you as soon as possible.

It is the generals wish and desire in case you think it necessary so that you have not done it already, that you will get made, such a side or sides of your

Fort proof (against any small canon that the enemy might bring against you) either of Fassines fulled with Earth or any other materials you can best and easiest obtain on the Spott. His Excellency further desires that you will please to communicate all the Enemys motives your want of materials succurs how the Indians are inclined or any other public affairs concerning, your or any other Posts to Detroit and Niagara as these Posts are desired to do to you, so that you may have assistance or give them, before His Excellencys the Commander in Chiefs orders for such aid or assistance, can possibly reach these Posts.

I am Sir your most obedient & most humble Servant,

D. Brehm,
Aid de Camp.

To Major Depeyster
Commanding His majesty's Troops at Michilimackinac.

Endorsed:—79 Captn Brehm du detroit du 3d Juin Rec'd le 21 d a Quebec.

[B 99, p. 76]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Detroit June the 3rd 1779.

Sir—No vessel can be sent to Michilimackinac with your Excellencys despatches for want of sailors but Captn. Lernoute has ordered a Batteau which was repaired for that purpose and only waited for want of hands to work her as it is to go for Traders, the said Battoe is to sett off to-morrow. Inclosed is an order sent to Major Depeister by your Excellencys Commands as it is necessary for the Post to know everything mentioned in it. I will stay heir till I receive an answer from the Major, by an intercepted Letter your Excellency will see that said Post is not in so much danger as I imagined or els I had gone their. Captn. Lernoute has sent and will be transmitted to your Excellency by Col. Bolton an Indian Speach of the 31st May by which those nations have still assured theyr alliance to Government.

In case Posts should be proposed to be taken or expeditions formed to dislodge the Rebells from their Forts, in the Indian Country this way I propose to inquire into the following articles and if well informed, and as soon as possible will transmit the same to your Excellency—

1st The proper plans to form Store Houses & Magazines.
2 What number of Indians may be got.
3 What number theyr familys will be to support.
4 What kind of crafts would be proper and what number.
5 The number of Periogues now in the Settlement.

6 How soon and what number of men it takes to make a certain number of them.

7 What number of oxen or horses may be got.

8 What carts may be had.

No seen in the List sent down of this settlement the 28th of May 1779.

9 What quantity of Provisions for a certain number of men, Indian familys included.

10 What sort of ordnance would be proper to reduce said Forts.

11 How the Roads of communication are to said places.

12 What time it will take to go up and down by water or land to before mentioned places.

13 The nature of the Communication.

14 What number of men ammunition provisions and Horses, a certain number of Perogues can carry.

15 And where Posts were best to be made.

Two hundred chances we got from this Town to join Captn. Bird of the 8th Regiment at the Upper Village of Sandusky to strike towards Tus-caw-awas as it is a skeim of the Indians.

I have the honor to be with great respect and esteem Sir Your Excellencys most obliged & most obedt. humble Servant D. Brehm.

To His Excellency General Haldimand Commander in Chief &c. &c. &c. at Quebec.

Endorsed:—Captn. Brehm & dated du 3m. Juin Rec'd a Quebec le 21st dr.

[B 99, p. 78.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Detroit, June 23d 1779.

Sir—As I am waiting to hear from Michilimackinac and a good *act of idle time I thought best to take the opportunity of the Vessel stationed at the mouth of the miamic River being releaved to go down as far as Sandusky Lake, and to the mouth of the miamic River to look out for proper places to contain Stores Houses &c. in case circumstances could afford to form expeditions toward the Rebells Forts in those parts, and found an Island at each of the before mentioned places fit for said purposes where in case the wind not allowing, the loaded vessels to run up as high as the upper end of the Lake or to the Rapids, in the latter, they might be outloaded and return to Fort Erie

---

*sic

without loss of time and leave small craft like Perogues to forward said stores as far as they can by water.

I have the honor of enclosing or sending with this, Your Excellencys sketches of both places marked in the former with A, and the latter with B, next opportunity I hope to send a better sketch of Sandusky Lake, lately done by Captn Grant whose zeal for the service & attention in forwarding the same by Captn Lernoult's Testimony seems to prove him a Loyal subject and a good officer.

The 17th Inst I returned hier & was honored with your Excellencys Letter of the 7th May, I acknollege with the most greatfull thanks the honour done and the confidence put in me to occupy the employment of Barrack master General, it is so much the more agreeable as it was without the least expectation I hope Your Excellency will have no raison to repent the Trust you have been pleased to hounour me with I shall always endeavor to do, as done before, to the utmost in my power for the good of His Majesty's Service.

I regard of Indian and other public matters Capt Lernoult has wrote to Colel Bolton who will transmit it to Your Excellency. The Inclosed are such intelligence as I have been able to get for the use of the Quarter master genls department, for to make out a proportion of crafts etc. in case of an expedition.

Captn Lenould and his garrison are verry bussy in forming or making a covered way, round the work on the nights, he has already finished a Bomb proof Magazin and store House and are now making Barracks, for officerrs, and men, all to be small shell proof, the wall is about 85 feet deep, but no water worth mentioning comes as yet into it; I hope perseverance will recompense the trouble taken to get water into the Fort of which a plan has been sent to Your Excellency.

Colel Bolton writes me the 6th instant of expecting an expedition against him, by his intelligence I cannot believe it possible, but believe him very right to be cautious, so that a blunder on the Rebell side, might not prove fatal to his Post.

I have the honour to be with the greatest Respect and Esteem Sir Your Excellency's most obliged and most obedt humble Servant

D. BREHM.

To His Excellency General Haldimand
Commander in Chief in & over the Province of Quebec &c. &c. &c.

Endorsed:—From Captn Brehm Detroit June 23d recd. July 10th 1779.
[B 99, p. 86.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

DETROIT July 5th 1779.

SIR—The enclosed Lettre of Major de Peyster will show your Excellency the safety he thinks himself in at that Post, consequently Trade may be carried on to the North West and Merchandise sent up without risk of falling into the enemy's hands. I wish it had been in my power to get it sooner, so as to enable Your Excellency to permit merchants to carry on Trade that way without interruption. I send this by Express, so that no time should be lost after its passing the Lakes. The inclosed are demands from the Major, also what will be sent from the post by Captain Lernoult, & what can be got at Niagara, shall be sent from thence when I return, leaving the remainder to your Excellency's orders from Quebec as soon as possible as no canon nor Papers for either canon or musquet cartridges can be got on this communication.

Captn. Shank when here last year had promised to send or bring up all Stores and Canon required for the defence of this Place, as he is arrived as far as Carleton Island, I wish he had forwarded a List of Stores, ammunition etc. that one might know what to expect this year, and by that means arrange the proportion to those posts which are most likely to be attacked, which if frequent Reports are true, will be this place after the Harvest is over. Partly the cause of great expenses being incur'd at these Posts is the want of suplys of Stores when demanded like arms· ammunition Indien goods, Rum etc, not being sent up in time and before they are wanted, reddy in Store, the great distance of these Posts, the difficulty of Transporting and uncertainty of the winds to Montreal and over the Lakes very often makes that when sent up, rather remain by the way or arrive to late, and perishable Stores are damaged or entirely sployld allong the communications consequently useless when arrive, and condemed, & supplaied from Merchants at a great and advanced price. If therefore Your Excellency, would be pleased to form a Store, or Magazine, of said things, at Niagara, being the most centrical place for the supplying of the other Posts. No Horses should be sent up without a proper person to go along with them who should, after delivering them bring a Receipt of the same to the different departments of having delivered them in good order and condition it would greatly diminish the expenses.

When Troops are ordered up to a Post they should bring allong their Camp equipage, and Barrack furniture and when ordered down should leave the later at the Post they leave and produce the Receipts or transmit them to the Barrack master genel, and the deficiency stopped from their Paymaster.

The last Barrack furniture sent up to Niagara was rotten and unfit for

Service consequently condemed for want of a person being sent up with them, when the 47th Regt or the Detachment arrived hier, they applied for Blankets and Captn Lernould was obliged to purchase them at a great expense.

The Palliases and Blankets at this Post are almost worn out, if Your Excellency would be pleased to order some Barrick furniture to be sent up for all the Posts, for about 800 men under a careful Serjt to be delivered at Niagara from whence Colel Bolton could forward them the season being to late for the same person who brings them up to proceed any further by the time they could now be sent, and also eight Iron Stoves for the use of the garrison in the New Fort, if said stoves could be got at Montreal they should be purchased there as sending up from Quebec would likely arrive to late, the navigation to Montreal being so tedious at this time of the year.

Some of the Departments are either dilatory or neglectfull in forwarding the demands of these three upper Posts, as all the commanding officers complain of no regard having been paid to their returns of wants.

The 3rd Instant Capt McKoe of the Indians, and commissary of the same, arrived hier, who says that the Chanes, Delawares, and the Sandusky Indians, are so much frightened by the encroachment of the Rebells that he doubts of their resisting them much longer, if no troops can be sent to cooparate with them as mentioned in my lettre of the 28th May; the enemy likewise takes the advantage of their having no troops to support them, say that their pretended Fathers only makes a Cats Paw of them, by setting them on when they can spare no men to support them, that they will and must drop them and consequently must fall a sacrifice if they do not in time take theyr advice and keep newtral. All means are taken to persuade the Indians to the contrary, & encourage them to fight, but they believe not further than they can see and fear acts stronger on them than all the arguments that can be made use of to convince them of the Enemy's ill designs against their Lands and so forth; they seeing themselves unable to dislodge the enemy out of the Forts in and near their country and the Enemys daily Threats and cunning dispersions among them.

I am really very much concerned that your Excellency is left to make such shifts with a few Troops in so extensive country, but however it is better to lose an arm or legg than the whole Body, as my return may be more delayed than could be expected at the time of my departure I think it consistent with the duty Your Excellency has been pleased to intrust me with, humbly to propose Your Excellency to remove the place of building Battoes, from Montreal to the Cedars, to a spott I had the honor to mention in my first letter from said place; have all provisions and stores from the upper Posts brought on slays their from Montreal, put into store houses built for that purpose, by that means the upper Posts can be supplied earlier and more certain then in the present state of it; Batteaux built there can be brought down, to any part easier then they are brought up those troublesome points and Rapids where they are tore to pieces; the provisions and stores hurt and damaged, over the carrieing places etc. in the Spring and Summer, where the inhabitants neglecting their agriculture by it, and the Battoes often from la chein several Days stopped by contrary winds at Isle Pars; two Block houses for guard Rooms will protect the Battoes and Provisions Stores; and the Battoe house at montreal, I believe may be made the Store house off, and the present store into Barracks. The Regt now at Montreal, would incamp at the Cedars and assist in building said Store houses this summer or Fall, and the guard left afterwards could be released from Montreal allmost any time in the season by water or over Ice; the transporting of provisions in the winter would cost no more or perhaps less than being carried to la Chien in carts in the summer—I had returned by the Vessel to Niagara but as some of the Chanes Chiefs are soon expected, I thought best to remain to hear their intentions, and if persuasion will do to get them to persist in defending their Lands—

I have the Honor to be with the greatest Respect & esteem Sir Your obliged & most obedt humble servant.

D. Brehm.

To His Excellency General Haldimand
Commander in Chief in Canada.

Endorsed:—From Captain Brehm at Detroit the 5th July Received by Express the 22d 1779.

[B 99, p. 88.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Detroit July 5th 1779.

Sir—After closing your Excellency's Lettre, came to my hands a return of Dayly expenditure of Rum, which will support what I have said in my letter. It is impossible to reduce or retrench said expenses in these troublesome times, when discontent and mutiny must be avoided, among whites and Indeans, otherwise Capt. Lernoult had done it long ago. I wish your Excellency could allow Mr. Baby the now acting Indien Commissary, something more than the common and low lifed Interpreters, who all have like he two Dollars pr Day when Mr. Baby now is not able to mind his own business of Trade, being entirely taken up by the managing of Indiens, and seen to lessen a goodeal the gifts formerly given to them by his knowledge, having lived among them so long in his younger Days. He seem to open himself of late, a goodeal more, seeing that more confidence, is put in him, by asking his opinions, in regard to their way of thinking, etc; Mr. Baby thinks that Indiens are unable to act in a large Body, generally composed of different Nations, without being governed and conducted by Troops, and officers to lead them. I'll be able to explain your Excellency fuller at my return which in writing would make it so tedious to have long letters, on that head, as your Excellency may be ashured that I would not the liberty to mention anything, about the matter, if Mr. Baby's opinion had not been supported by Mr. McKee who has a very good knowledge of the Indians.

I have the honour to be with the greatest respect and esteem Sir Your Excellency's most obedient humble servant D. Brehm.

Endorsed:—79 Captain Brehm at Detroit the 5th July received ay Express the 22nd.

[B 99, p 93.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Detroit July 8th 1779.

Sir—I have taken the liberty to send Capn. Maisonville to be express of this Letter, as he has been of service not only in the present troubles, (and his brother now a prisoner with Governor Hamilton) but likewise in the last Indian War. There is no way to recompense those who beheave well: the Post expenses from Montreal to Quebec are but trifling and still show that one is willing to do something to people who beheave like good subjects.

I am told that he intends to apply to Your Excellency to be grandvoyer in the Settlement: it is a new office & an eternal expense to Government, and has allways been done by the Captns of the Militia to the satisfaction of the commanding officers: besides these Roads are not the best wanted for the King's Service being only for the use of the inhabitants. I am sorry I could not set off by this vessell as Intended Capt. Lernoult is please to put my staying hier, as for the good of the Service, in Justice I cannot refuse him to get made a modell, for a wooden Caponier, in each of places of Arms, as the smallness of the Works causes the defence of it to be verry imperfect and deficient without it, your Excellency will see it, in the Plan sent of it before my arrival hier. The indispensible expenditure of Rum has been till now about forty eight Gallons pr. Day but is increasing as the number of Indians ogment, it may be computed to about Sixty Gallons pr. Day. If therefore Your Excellency, could possibly get it supplied from Montreal, it will diminish considerably the Publick Expenses.

By a Letter from Captain Schank from Carleton Island, it seems as he mentions of the Enemy's bringing gun Boats, that they have Carleton Island in view.

I have the honor to be with the greatest Respect & Esteem Sir Your Excellency's most obliged & most obedt humble Servant

D. Brehm.

Endorsed:—From Captn Brehm 8th July Rec'd by Monsr Maisonville the 30th. 1779.
[B 99, p. 95.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Niagara July 27th 1779.

Sir—Your Excellency's Lettre of the 13th June I was honored with at Detroit the 14th July. All the Indian Corn that could be got was purchased immediately at the receipt of your Excellency's orders by Captn. Lernoults prohibiting any to be exported a long time ago, it has secured and retained for Government use and had been purchased long before, if not the high price of three Dollars per Bushell had prevented it.

I am persuaded it must be disagreeable to your Excellency to hear about Indean affairs and demands of supports by Troops & Provisions, at a time when it is not in your power at present, therefore pas it over in silence, and only hope their may still be time left this year to remedy it before too late; the fault originates at home.

The enclosed is a copy of the Justice of the Peace commission whom Captn Larnoult has been obliged to apoint, he hopes your Excellency will be pleased to confirm the apointment and send him as commission in proper form, and by your Authority as without him he cannot carry on Sivil matters. The other Inclosures with what I have sent before will assist the Quarter Master Genl. to make out Estimates of Crafts etc. in case of an expedition to the westward.

The enclosed morning state of the garrison at Detroit will show Your Excellency how they men are dayly employed; the monthly return will show the particulars which Captn Larnoult has sent down. Fine Powder for the use of Indian Arms is very much wanted, often demanded but not as yet arrived; and therefore purchased at a very high price from the merchants at the different Posts; it would save Government perhaps a hundred per cent if not come from England to have it purchased at Quebec, or Montreal, and sent to the different Posts, the consumption of Powder is very considerable, and the Indians will not take canon Powder.

Captn. Lernoult wishes to have only one hundred men more, in that case he could endeavour to defend the Town or old Fort and not abandon & burn it, in case of an attack, the evacuating or destroying of it would be a greater inconveniency to him then he thinks of at present and might cause the loss of the Vessells or cutt off the reinforcements and further supplies comming to him, I believe he could persuade the soldiers under his command, to take and content themselves with less Pork untill more arrives, rather than abandon the defence of the Town as he says he must do being to weak at present to defend the whole, with the present number of men: if more Troops can be spared Your Excellency is best Judge off.

I do not know if your Excellency would have a better Adjutant General then Capt. Lernoult, he knows the Service and the detail of it better than any officer I am acquainted with in the army under your Excellency's Command; if his low ranq in the army is no objection to it; he has served last War as Brigade Major with the English Army in Germany and has twice after that done the same duty, his weak constitution is against his being employed to command an expedition if intended, I left him very bad of the Colic, after hardly recovering from a severe fit of the Gout.

I left Detroit the 15th Inst. after Captn Lernoult saying he had no further commands for me as the intelligence at Detroit seemed to indicate the Enemys motions from all quarters, and likewise by Presqu'ils in my return from Detroit I landed there saw the old retrenchment still remaining, but the whole verry much covered by Bushes and Weads even some Trees the Brick Chimeny of Coll Boisquets however standing the standing Stone walls of the Powder magazine & the Stone walls of the house where the saw mills had been but formd only a small trak, I believe by Indiens hunting there, as I saw and got meat from a young Seneca Indien who was with his wife hunting on the Peninsula but no signs of great numbers having been their lately.

The 22nd Instant I got hier and will be obliged to stay a few days longer, by Colel Boltons desire; after which I intend to go by the general Rivers, Trondiquot grand Sodus and oswego, to Carleton Island.

Fort Erie has only partly got an abatie made round it, nothing further could be made, for want of men the garrison being all employed in forwarding provisions in Battoes from Fort Schlosser up, for to keep the Vessels Loading & would not be sufficient if not a small Vessell was ordered down twice to said place to assist.

I hope Your Excellency will be pleased to consider the Subultern officer who commands at Fort Erie, & will think it just, to make him an allowance it being a very expensive Post; Colel. Bolton assured me that every one in his turn spends at said Post no less than from 30 to 50 pound extraordinary with all possible ecconomy when commanding at the above Post, the expense is unavoidable by people passing and repassing.

The officers Stores for their mess at Detroit has been charged by the merchants acct. who paid it which I have seen 63 pounds odd shillings N. Y. C. only for bringing them from Montreal to Deer Island an expense they say they were never at before, as the King's Boats were given to bring officers Stores.

The inclosed Rates of Fresh provisions at said Poste will show Your Excellency the impossibility of officers living at said Post without getting into depts; soldiers and soldiers wives live better as they work between hours and the women by needle works, for the Traders,—more money many of them then the pay of a Subaltern officer amounts to Colel Bolton when joined this garrison has been obliged to pay Boats who carried his baggage to the amount of £10-6-8 Sterling Currency; all these little grievances are disagreeable, when one is obliged to listen to them, and from officers, or a Regt. deserving all Justice and indulgencys due to Troops so dis-advantageously quartered; and whose misfortune it is to be so long in these dear Posts, when others good fortune keeps them where markets are cheap and raisonable.

At my return to Fort Erie I saw Captn. Shanks who was just at that instant setting off for Detroit but having left or sent my papers to come down in an other vessel they not being arrived and Captn Shanks desirous to make the best of a good wind; I had only time to recommend him to keep his temper, and settle things, that the Service might not suffer or be retarded, as he would be convinced when thoroughly informed himself that Captn. Grant will clear himself and has done nothing but by order of Captn Lernoul which circumstances of the times obliged him to give my Letters was not to be intended so long but as I forsee that, where partly wind and weather is concerned I may be longer detained than what I could wish, in the mean time I have the honour of assuring Your Excellency that no time shall be spent idaly, expecting what accidents of wind or weather may come.

I have the honour to be with the greatest respect and Esteem Sir Your Excellency's most obliged and most obedt. humble Servant,

D. Brehm.

To His Excellency General Haldimand
General & Commander in Chief in Quebec.

Endorsed: Captn Brehm 79. Niagara July 27th Recd August the 14th.

[B 99, p. 88.]

LETTERS FROM GENERAL HALDIMAND

QUEBEC the 8th April 1779.

SIR—Your letters to the 5th March Inclusive I have received and as Captain Brehm my aid de Camp whom I think proper to send to Niagara and Detroit, is charged with my orders, I shall only here enter into a few particulars and observations which strike me very forcibly respecting the Upper Posts. The distress which the Garrison have nearly experienced by the scarcity of provisions notwithstanding the greatest efforts used to send up a sufficiency evidently demonstrates the absolutely necessity of the greatest œconomy in the distribution of them, & if a Major Butler cannot fall upon some method to diminish the consumption made by the savages it will not be possible notwithstanding every exertion to get up a sufficient supply.—this difficulty alone prevents my taking possession of Oswego last Fall I must however absolutely do it this year, not only to satisfy the Indians, but for our own security.

I have wrote to London for the Indian Presents to be sent out as early as possible on their arrival here, no delay shall happen to have them forwarded to you. In the mean time Lieut Col. Campbell has received my orders to send up to Michilimackinac by the River Ottawa so soon as the Navigation is practicable Rum will likewise be sent. Lieut Govr. Hamilton having solicited that Mr. Macomb should supply him with what Merchandises he may want and representing that the good of the service is therein concerned I beg you will give him the preference the Expences of the Upper Posts are immense to Government and far exceeds any benefit which they have ever derived from them, but commerce must be protected everything must give to this general cry.

Your having directed the vessels to be put in proper repair and the orders you have given to ensure their safety, cannot but meet with my approbation. Too much care and attention cannot be given to matters of this import in your situation and the more especially having to do with an Enemy full of enterprise, deceit, and Treachery. I have my apprehensions of their attempting to surprize some of the vessels, which nothing can prevent their doing, but the vigilance and good conduct of those to whose charge their safety is committed.

I am extremely pleased to hear of the good dispositions Captain Lernoult has made at Detroit with a sufficient Force to attack with success, if the savages and Rangers are vigorous in the execution of their duty, which if they are put to the Trial, I have no doubt they will do, actuated by the justice of the cause they defend.

I send by this opportunity to Major Butler my answers to the Indians of the five nations Major De Peyster will likewise receive my answer respecting the Portage the letter is left open for the purpose of your information.

I beg you will cause an estimate to be made of the freight of the Vessels upon Lake Erie and transmit it down to me, some light batteau are ordered to be left at La Chine and Carleton Island to serve the purpose of your information.

I beg you will cause an estimate to be made of the freight upon Lake Erie, and transmit it down to me. Some light Batteau are ordered to be left at La Chine and Carleton Island to serve the purposes of Expresses.

In consideration to Major Butler I shall allow the Exchange of the Prisoners to take place, as by this act he is in Expectation to recover the liberty of his family.

You will therefore order all the prisoners down observing the directions which Captain Brehm shall point out for their Journey.

Should there be any useless people about your post which only serve to eat the Kings provisions you will order them down likewise that none but those whose services are required and cannot be dispenced with may be supplied from your stores.

As many of the arms &c belonging to the Artillery are deemed in their present state unfit for service, it is my intentions to send up armories and other artificers to put every thing in the best order they can.

I can't conclude this letter without acquainting you how thankful Joseph Brant has been of the mark of Protection you have shewn him without which he says he would not have been able to go through what he did, and as I think he is well deserving of it I beg that you will continue them as well as to his sister Molly & her family I am &c

[B 96, 2, p. 109.] (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC 23rd July 1779.

SIR—I have received your letters of the 27 June and 1st Instant with the several inclosures from Major Butler and Captain Lernoult You Bill for £2319 4 4 shall be answered.

The general distress for provisions in the Upper Country is a subject of infinite concern to me, as well upon account of the local evil as the disappointment it is to my other views particularly that of taking Post at Oswego this summer which with all the efforts I can make and every diligence that can be used will I can forsee, be totally impossible to effect. I have taken all imaginable pains to forward the Transport of Provisions, and shall continue to do so while the season will permit, for this purpose I have omitted sending many stores much wanted at the different Posts, the late arrival of the victuallers has occasioned this distress. Eastwardly winds are at an end, and I am obliged to order down Batteau from Sorel to carry provisions from the different crafts between this place and Montreal, as they cannot make their way up the river,—but with all in my power to do, if a sufficient quantity of Provisions for the Subsistence of the Troops already at the Posts, including the heavy demand for Indians, can be conveyed to them it is as much as can be expected. Thus situated to send Troops to Oswego to starve or to be under the necessity of abandoning it for want of provisions would certainly have a much worse effect, both in the eyes of the Rebels & Indians, than my not undertaking it at all. A Deputy of Indians from the Six Nations are here I purpose detaining them until the Fleet arrives, the appearance of which and the arguments I shall make use of will I have no doubt satisfy them that their nations will remain for this year in perfect security without having a Garrison at Oswego.

The quantity of Provisions that will arrive this year in the Province will effectually prevent my being retarded next spring in any operations I may think necessary to undertake, and the Transport to the Upper Country will be greatly facilitated by a scheme, I have in view, which is to build houses at the Cedars, and in the course of the winter to have provisions Slaid to that place, where it will be ready for Batteau the moment the River is navigable. I observe with great concern the difficulties Major Butler finds in subsisting his Rangers and Indians you will represent to him the pains that have been taken here to forward Provisions and the utter impossibility of being more successful.

The Indians should understand that all our distress on that account proceed from the amazing quantity of Provisions they consume, you will likewise represent to Major Butler the necessity there is for his falling upon means procure subsistence in the Country, either at Schohary or upon the Mohawk river. You will continue to furnish him with such supplies, as he may stand in absolute need of, and I recommend it to you to learn well the state of your stores, and if you should find it necessary to reduce the allowance time enough to prevent evil consequences for I have no idea that you can suffer from any attempt of the enemy.

Major Butlers penetrating into the Country will answer another good end, that of alarming and drawing in the settlers, and favouring any operation they may be carrying on upon the North River. It is impossible the Rebels can be in such force, as has been represented by the deserters to Major Butler upon the Susquehanah—he would do well to send out intelligent white men to be satisfied of the truth of those reports if anything is really intended against the Upper Country, I am convinced that Detroit is the object, and that they shew themselves and spread reports of expeditions in your neighourhood merely to divert the Rangers and Indians from their main purpose. Major Butler should be aware of this but at the same time be cautious of leaving the Indian Country exposed. If you should think it necessary still to reinforce Detroit do it in time to the utmost of your ability. You can occasionally reinforce yourself from Carleton Island should there be a necessity for it. Those English and German soldiers that are coming in to Major Butlers may for the present continue with him, but are by no means to be considered to be in his Corp, it would be a very bad precedent, and might even encourage disertion from other Corps on account of the high pay. If those men can be of service to him it is well but in regard to high discipline no thing of the kind is expected the business of a Ranger being to march well, to be able to endure fatigue, and to be a good marksman, any time they may have to spare ought to be employed in these Exercises, the little minutia, and forms of Parade, are totally out of their Province nor can their situation admit a possibility of their acquiring them.

The expense and the expenditure of Rum at Detroit is beyond Comprehension I wish some means could be fallen upon to prevent the Merchants from carrying such quantities, for which the Indians and even the soldiers know it is there, they will continually importune those who have the honor of supplying them, and such a quantity of Rum must be hurtful to the men's health, independent of the loss to Government, the rum I have sent up will for the future ease this expense. I hope you have issued orders to the different Posts that no Rum is to be bought from Traders while mine remains in the King's store from whence Rum for Indians and all extraordinaries are to be supplied from. From the absolute necessity of forwarding provisions it will be totally impossible to supply Detroit and Michilimackinac with the Artillery required—the former may be supplied for the present with the few guns wanted from the ships there being little probability that they will be wanted the Rebels having no vessels upon the Lakes—and as they cannot convey cannon to the Latter the supply to that place can be the better dispenced with.

Colonel McBean informs me that upon examining the return and state of Artillery Stores at Niagara he finds there is a sufficiency to furnish the demands from Detroit and Michilimackinac (Guns excepted) which I have already mentioned to you. Please therefore to supply their wants. Eight reams of paper is required for the latter that must be a mistake but in proportion to the other articles send paper. I am &

P. S. From a want of Artillery men I have been under a necessity of sending up some German Artillery you will provide them with pay to the amount of the enclosed Memorandum and no more and should they want cloathing supply them from those I sent to you for Joseph, and render their situation while separated from their Corps as satisfactory as possible.

[B 96 2, p 115.]

LETTERS OF LIEUT. COL. BOLTON TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Niagara 24th March 1779

Sir—I received a Letter from Capt Lernoult some days ago, a copy of which I take the liberty of laying before your Excellency &c. The 3d of february Simon Girtie Interpreter who was employed by Lieut Governor Hamilton to watch the enemies Motions near Fort Pitt arrived with Strings from the Six Nations, Delawares, Chawanese and Wyandots & informed him that 2500 men commanded by a General Mc Intosh advanced from Fort Pitt late last fall as far as Tuscarawa, three days march from St Dusky with 6 pieces of Canon, the largest only a Six pounder that they have built a Stockade Fort there,* after which the main body retired back to Beaver Creek leaving 250 men in that Fort under a Colonel Gibson. Beaver Creek is 28 miles from Fort Pitt where they have a strong fort and a Depôt of Provisions.

That he was informed the main body was to move towards Detroit the latter end of March & that when he left St Dusky part of the Six Nations Delawares Shawanese &c to the number of 7 or 800 men were assembled at the upper Town, determined to strike the fort at Tuscarawa & drive of & destroy the cattle & if any of the main army attempted to go to their assistance they were resolved to attack them in the night & to distress them as much as possible.

Capt Lernoult writes me that he has done everything in his power to encourage them, has sent them a large supply of ammunition & cloathing also presents to the Chiefs Warriors.

---

*See appendix

The Indians are displeased of the Governors attending to so distant a part when so large body of the enemy threatened their Lands so near hand and have also he says given him a *Lallade* for not sending his Warriors to their assistance according to their Fathers promises, now the enemy approach them They also assure him they were told by two Delawares lately come from Niagara that neither the Commanding officer or Col Butler were informed of their situation or they were certain some troops or white people would have been sent to their assistance in short they were so pressing & Capt Bird so anxious to go with some few volunteers to serve with the Indians that he was forced to comply with their request notwithstanding the weak garrison under his command he also sent some ammunition &c along with him to pave his reception & to keep the Indians in the disposition they are in to oppose and harrass the Virginians several Ottawas & Chippawas are setting off for St Dusky & many more he thinks will follow when they arrive from their hunting.

The Indians in those parts he says are greatly in awe of the Six Nations, therefore hopes a belt for them to spur them on to act with spirit may be sent him.

He wishes much for the Governor or Mr. Hay's return having no one to advise with in this critical time when it requires great caution & attention to keep the Indians in good humor & preserve their friendships, when every artifice is made use of by the enemy to draw them away.

February the 16th Wm. Tucker whom he sent out early in January last to reconnoitre with five Chippawas, is returned this day & bring intelligence which corresponds with Girtie & further that some few Wyandot & Mingoes surprised three Virginians going Express from Tuscarawa towards Fort Pitt killed two of them & brought the third a Prisoner to St. Dusky with a Pacquet of Letters that the Chief there opened the Letters and had them read to him by a white man.

That it appears by a Letter of Col. Gibson Commandant at Tuscarawa to a Capt. O'Hara at Fort Pitt, that he was apprised of the Indians design to attack that Fort, requested Provisions to be sent him & a part of the army without delay having little provisions & only 190 men fit for duty in the place. This Capt. Lernoult says is a lucky hitt, which the Indians will (he makes no doubt) take advantage off.

Capt Lernoult acquaints me that Detroit is capable in peaceable times to supply the Garrison with Provisions, but at this time the inhabitants are so much employed in Conveys & probably will continue so that they have not been able to thrash last years corn, and the great number of cattle furnished for Governor Hamilton's Expedition as well as for Detroit with what have been consumed by Indians have reduced the numbers so much that a pair of oxen cannot be purchased for less than 1,000 Livers & then reckoned a cheap bargain, in order to save the salt provisions he has fed the Garrison & Indians with fresh during the winter, but the scarcity and extravagant rate they are now at besides the poorness of the cattle at this season obliges him to deliver salt provisions.

Flour is 60 Livers a hundred & every article very dear. I have now only to acquaint your Excellency that sometime before I received this Letter a large Belt with a Speech was sent by the six Nations to their Western Brethern encouraging them to fight to the last man & to drive the enemy out of the Country. I am &c

[B 96 1, p 254.] (Signed) Mason Bolton.

Niagara April 2nd 1779

Sir—I have received an Express from Capt Lernoult by the felicity a Copy of his letter I beg leave to lay before your Excellency.

Detroit March 26 1779

Sir—I had just received copies of the several Letters taken by the Indians near Fort Laurance & the extracts of Governor Hamiltons & Mr Hays Letter when one Isidore china (an Interpreter) & two Hurons arrived from Post Vincent with the unfortunate news of that place having been retaken by a Colonel Clarke the Governor & whole Garrison made prisoners, except himself who made his escape with difficulty. This most unlucky shake with the the approach of so large a body of Virginians advancing towards St Duskie has greatly damped the spirit of the Indians.

The chiefs from St Duskie are come here with John Moutoine to Claim Governor Hamilton promises to assist them. They declare If a large detachment of with cannon are not sent without delay from below they must go out of the way, being not able to fight the enemy alone. As the loss of this Post opens a new road for the Virginians to this Place, by the Miamis River. I hope a strong reinforcement will be sent here from Niagara by return of the vessels at least what they can convey, as the new work is not yet defencible requiring many hands. The Canadians exceedingly assuming on our bad success & weakness not one of them will lend a hand, spades, shovels &c are much wanted also ammunition as per enclosed return above 30,000 lb of flower of last years allowance not as yet sent here with other species in proportion & the enormous quantity consumed in the last unfortunate expedition has reduced us greatly pray forward it, for the Indians insist on having provisions sent to them or they must starve.

The loss of Governor Hamilton is a most feeling one to me, I find the burden heavy without assistance, it requires I confess superior abilities & a better constitution, I will do my best however.

I beg leave to report to you the necessity of a reinforcement being sent as the consequences may be fatal.

I send the Felicity with this Pacquet which with the Angelica already down will convey a part of the troops as some of the Indian chiefs wait the return of the vessel to se if any notice is taken of their distress or prove me a liar. A letter to his Excellency's address I send you, it came some days before the unfortunate affair from Post Vincent by Lieut Dee vernet who is returned. All the Canadians are Rebels to a man. I shall wait your orders with great impatience.

I am &c.

(Signed) B. B. Lernoult

[B 96 1, p. 258.]

LETTERS FROM LIEUT. GOV. HAMILTON

TO GEN. CARLETON

Sir—By the accounts of prisoners, lately brought in from Fort Pitt, there is room to believe that place is by no means capable of resisting an inconsiderable force sent against it.

The Garrison (by the concurrence of the prisoners) does not exceed one hundred and twenty men, they, either undisciplined or ill affected to their present masters.

The cannon are out of condition for service, and the Garrison does not understand the serving them. The officer commanding there, & by them styled General, is one Edward Hand heretofore Surgeon's mate to Royal Irish Regiment.

Tho' these circumstances may be altered in a few weeks, 'tis scarcely to be presumed the Rebels will give much attention to a frontier post since the taking of Philadelphia must have called for all their people to the Southward, and they would scarcely send from that quarter, a good officer staunch men or serviceable artillery.

The alarm on the ohio and the rivers which fall into it from the Eastward has been very general, & a large tract of country is deserted by the Inhabitants.—disagreements have arisen among themselves. Mr. George Morgan who was agent for Indian affairs for the middle department (by authority of the Congress) has been in confinement at Fort Pitt tho' now released—different parties of Indians have related that a Serjeant from that place having been killed by some Shawanese, his officer required of the Commandant to deliver up The Cornstalk (a Shawanese Chief at that time at Fort Pitt being in the Virginian Interest) and some of his followers, this was refused, on which the Cornstalk* and his people were seized on by force, taken out of the Fort and put to Death, that the Commandant dissatisfied with this act of violence, had gone off to Philadelphia.

Several disbanded soldiers settled in the neighbourhood of Fort Pitt, have been put in confinement for declaring their attachment to Government. The parties sent from hence have been in general successfull, tho' the Indians have lost men enough to sharpen their resentment.—They have brought in Seventy-three Prisoners alive, twenty of which they presented to me, and one hundred and twenty nine scalps.

There is no room to doubt the readyness of the Chiefs of these Lake Indians, for going to war next spring, either in small parties or en gros. The Militia & light company would furnish 150 picked men—This Garrison might spare an officer & 30 or 40 men.—Should your Excellency think it advantageous for the protection of those persons living amongst the Rebels, who are friends to Government, or for the purpose of distressing the Enemy, to attempt Fort Pitt, I beg leave to make an humble offer of my service, whether to act with a body of Militia and Indians according to circumstances, & the information I can procure, or under the direction of a regular officer appointed by your Excellency to conduct an enterprize.

I have communicated my intention of writing to your Excellency on this subject to Captain Lernoult, who has heard the Prisoners examined who knows the disposition of the Indians, and who is I believe well qualified to execute the part you may please to allot him.

As we are entirely agreed as to the practicability of distressing the Enemy somewhere on the frontier next Spring, I have thought it my duty to give Your Excellency the earlyest notice of the intelligence communicated by the Prisoners since the departure of Mr La Mothe.

The assistant engineer has orders to provide wheels for transporting the Batteaus which may be employed by the way of Rivere au Boeuf & Batteaus which are much wanted at this post, shall be built in the course of the Winter. The plan of Fort Pitt which I have the honour to send by this opportunity to Your Excellency is not accompanied as I could wish by a plan of the neighbouring ground, but there are at this place several people who have given accounts of the heights, Fords & environs, from all of which may be tolerably well gathered the state of the place.

---

*See appendix

When it is considered how many people in this settlement have connections with the Americans, it will not be surprizing if the Virginians should have notice of anything projected against them from this Quarter & tho a great deal if not every thing depends upon secrecy I must not flatter myself 'twill be concealed (as it should) since an Indian for a Gallon of Rum may be engaged to carry letters or intelligence.

At all events we may find means to prevent the intercourse of the Rebels with the Spaniards by closely watching the neighbourhood of Fort Pitt and Kentucke a Fort on the Catawba River, which latter was the place to which Mr Bentley's Batteau was consigned with Powder & other Stores. A Negro now at this Place says, he was one of the Batteau's Crew & mentions the several articles of her loading.

The Deputy Agents return of Indian Goods arrived at this place from Montreal is herewith enclosed, & will I hope make appear the necessity for purchasing linnen and other articles mentioned in his remarks.

I beg leave to remark that the demand for Engineer's & Artillery Stores cannot be answered at this place, quantities of the Merchants goods not being yet arrived, among the rest, Iron, Lead, Powder, Cartridge paper, oyl & that the Posts of Niagara & Michillimackinac have sent for Provisions to this settlement, probably the number of Indians exceeding their expectation, my letter to Mr Day the Commissary general dated the 4th Decr mentions the particular Species & quantity sent to Niagara.

We are in great anxiety for some certan accounts from below I wait with impatience to know if Your Excellency may have any occasion to employ the Indians on some particular object, or in small parties as last year.

Four days since, a young man set out from this place to the Delaware towns, where a Moravian minister resides with the design of engaging him to disperse some papers signed by several of the Prisoners taken and brought in by the Indians—the purport of them to show, that persons well affected to Government may be assured of a safe conduct to this place if they will agree upon a place of rendezvous, and that an officer (of the Indian Department) with an Interpreter shall be sent to escort them thro' the Indian Villiages—I am in hopes some advantage may be drawn from this Sir.

As the Jesuit missionary at this place is advanced in years & very infirm, I have directed in case of his Death, all his papers to be secured & sealed up till I shall have your Excellency's orders relative to his Possessions.

As there has been a restraint laid upon the granting land to the settlers at this place whose farms are small & families numerous, the consequence has been, young men growing to age engage as Canoe men, go off to distant settlements & in general become vagabonds, so that the settlement does not increase in numbers as may be seen by comparing the recensment of 1776 with that of 1766.

The inhabitants having represented to me the losses and damage they suffer by being deprived of the commonage of Hog Island, I have directed Captain McDougal's brother in law who is his attorney at this place to acquaint him that unless I have your Excellency's orders to the contrary, the Inhabitants shall be reinstated in the possession of it on the first day of May 1779, which is time sufficient for him to prove a right.

If any of the Prisoners or Refugees from the Colonies should desire to settle here is it your Excellency's pleasure I should allot them portions of Land, according to the numbers of their families?

We have lately lost Eleopole Chesné who was appointed last summer a captain of Indians & who was esteemed one of the best Interpreters in the Country.

The river is this day frozen across & the season promises well for the Express, I hope by his return to hear that affairs have taken a favourable turn, and that I may congratulate your Excellency on the restoration of Peace to this unhappy country.

I beg leave to present my respects to Lady Carleton and have the honor to be Sir Your Excellency's most obliged and most devoted humble servant

HENRY HAMILTON.

Endorsed:—Detroit No. 1 From Lt. Gov. Hamilton. Detroit with't date rec'd at Montreal 4th March 1778. To Genl. Carleton. Enclosing a plan of Fort Pitt but Genl. Haldimand did not receive it. The list of goods for the Indians from Montreal not rec'd. This should be Jany. 15th.

[B 122, p 26.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

SIR—The last letter I had the honor of writing to Your Excellency was dated January the 15th 1778. January the 26th some Traders to Sandooské having given room for suspecting they were carrying on a correspondence with the Rebels, I ordered a search to be made for some papers of which I had had notice, but tho' I was well assured my suspicions were well grounded, they eluded the search, however upon examining the goods conveyed out & comparing them with the Invoices, a considerable quantity was found for which a pass had not been asked—The offenders were fined to the extent prescribed by the ordonnance of Quebec. January the 30th John Montour (formerly mentioned to Your Excellency) decoyed out of the settlement three Virginians (Prisoners) designing to have carried them to Fort Pitt, some Indians who met them a few leagues off & suspected that they were fugitives, gave me notice of it, and a party of Volunteers with an Indian Officer & some Savages were sent after them, who took and brought them all in, they had prepared arms, & meant to have stood on the defensive, but were surprised and bound.

Montour at the earnest sollicitations of a number of Chiefs of different Nations, was set at liberty after some weeks of confinement, the others, having made so bad a use of the indulgence shown them, remain in Irons. The Indians were highly pleased at their request being granted—The prisoners are to be sent down by the first vessel.

March the 7th Lieutenant Governor Abbot with his family arrived from St. Vincennes, from his report of the state of the Post, I am humbly of opinion it must be impossible for the Ouabash Indians to be kept in order, without a vast expense in presents or the presence of some Troops.

Indeed in all those Posts where the French had settled a trade and intercourse with the Savages, an officers presence with Troops is much wanted, for the minds of the Indians in remote posts are poisoned by the falsehoods and misrepresentations of the French.

As to the Indians of the Ouabash, they have been out of the way of knowing the Power of the English and from a presumption of their own importance will be arrogant and troublesome.

Monsieur de Celoron writes me word from Ouiattonong, that some parties to the number of 50 men, partly Quiquaboes, Mascontainges & Ouiattanongs are gone to war towards the Ohio, their success is not yet known. I have sent him some Ammunition & Arms & to gratify those among them who behave well.

All parties going to war are exhorted to act with humanity, as the means of securing a sincere peace, when His Majesty shall be pleased to order the Hatchet to be buried.

March 11th one hundred & twenty-five warriors, Mingoes, Shawanese & Delawares with a number of wives & children came to this place, they have accepted War Belts & I believe are too well convinced of the inability of the Virginians to do them either much good or much harm, to be sincere. The Mingoes delivered me a young boy, whose father they had killed.

29th John Turney arrived from Quebec. He brought a Belt sent by Colonel Butler, addressed to the lake Indians & all the Western Nations from the Six Nations, by which they declare their resolution to support Government & revenge themselves, desiring all the Nations of this Confederacy to act as one man—thanking them at the same time for the zeal & spirit with which they acted last year.

April the 1st Forty Shawanese arrived having four Prisoners, whom they delivered to me soon after.

April the 5th Mr. Charles Beaubin who acts at the Miamis came in from a scout not having been able to prevail on the Miamis to act with spirit He with a young man named Lorimer engaged four score Shawanese from Tchelacasé & Pecoui to go towards the Fort on the Kentucke river, east of the ohio, into which it discharges directly opposite the great Mineamis or Rocky river—the Fort is about thirty miles from the mouth—The number of men in it about 80—Here they had the good fortune to make Prisoners Captain Daniel Boone* with 26 of his men, whom they brought off with their arms without killing or losing a man. The Savages could not be prevailed on to attempt the Fort, which by means of their prisoners might have been easily done with success.

These Shawanese delivered up four of the Prisoners to me, but took Boone with them expecting by this means to effect something.

By Boone's account the people of the frontier have been incessantly harrassed by parties of Indians they have not been able to sow grain and at Kentucke will not have a morsel of bread by the middle of June. Cloathing is not to be had, nor do they expect relief from the Congress—their dilemma will probably induce them to trust to the Savages who have shewn so much humanity to their prisoners, & come to this place before winter.

The Placarts from this place have found their way among the inhabitants & one in particular signed by several Prisoners who were saved by the Indians, was seen in the hand of Mr Morgan at Fort Pitt, who refused to let it be public, however I believe he will be unable to keep his credit much longer.

April the 20th. Edward Hazle (who had undertaken to carry a letter from me to the Moravian Minister at Kurshayhking) returned, having executed his commission he brought me a letter and newspapers from Mr. McKee who was Indian agent for the Crown and has been a long time in the hands of the Rebels at Fort Pitt, at length has found means to make his escape with three other men, two of the name of Girty (mentioned in Lord Dunmore's list) Interpeters & Mathew Elliot the young man who was last summer sent down from this place a Prisoner.—This last person I am informed has been at New York since he left Quebec, & probably finding the change in affairs unfavorable to the Rebels, has slipp'd away to make his peace here.

23d—Hazle went off again to conduct them all safe thro the villages having a letter & Wampum for what purpose. Alexander McKee is a man of good character, and has great influence with the Shawanese is well acquainted with the country & can probably give some useful intelligence, he will probably reach this place in a few days. In his letter to me dated Kushayking April 4th he mentions that no expedition of any consequence can be undertaken by the Virginians from Fort Pitt thro' the Delaware Villages hither ward, but that they meditated some attempt against the Villages upon French Creek (Riviers au Boeuf) & that he had information from some Delawares that six hundred men were to set out on that design the 8th of April, but that the Savages being forewarned their scheme must fail.

---

*See appendix

I have written to Colonel Bolton to acquaint him & Coll. Butler of this, as also that a party from Fort Pitt had fallen on a Delaware Village & killed or carried off eight persons, but that unfortunately for the Rebels, they have struck in the wrong place & have sent back two squaws who were prisoners to atone for their error.

25th of April. Governor Abbott communicated to me the following extract of a letter from Mr. de Rocheblave (to one Bosseron at St. Vincennes) dated Febry 28th, 78—

"Par un deserteur arrive du Fort Pitt nous avons apris pue le peuple de "Philadelphie ayant seconé le joug du congrés avoit levé la chaine qui "empechoit les vaisseans du Boi de venir et avoit par le moyen rentré sous l' "obeissance de sa Majesté.—Que le Congrés avoit fui précipitt ament vers "les montagnes, aprér l'entiére deroute de son Armée, que le peuple soupi-"sait ardemment aprés la paix pour sortir de la plus affreuse misére et que "les Chefs des troubles sauvoient leurs effets par la route du Fort Pitt.
"Un batteau descendant de ce dit Fort a pris les Sieurs Becquet et leuris "pacquets.

"Mr. la Chance a subi le meme sort avec son eau de vie, quoique les colons "n'ayent jamais recu de deplaisir de ce paijs, preuve bien certaine qu'ils le "ménagerorent pen s'ils y parvenoient en force—certains bruits qui courent "de la mauvaise disposition des sauvages, m'engagent a parler au chef des "Loups.

"Je vous pris si vous etes a porté de les engager a me venis voir."

This letter of Mr. Rocheblave explains in part the accounts given by the Delawares of parties forming for Riviere au Boeuf which can only be calculated to draw off the attention of the Delawares, from the lower part of the ohio. I shall if possible lay a bar in the way of the communication to N. Orleans.

Your Excellency's orders & instructions which I am in hourly expectation of receiving by Mr. La Mothe will be my guides for my conduct.

25th April 1778. Mr. La Mothe not yet arrived.

A Huron of that band settled at Lorette named *detahyjas* has been lately at Fort Pitt and says Mr. Bently supplied ammunition to the Rebels, he also confirms the reports of the intercourse between the Spaniards and the Virginian Delegates.

Endorsed:—Detroit No. 2, 1778. From Lieut. Gov. Hamilton at Detroit of the 25th of April.

From Mr. Hamilton 25th April 1778 to General Carleton.

[B 122, p. 35.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

DETROIT April 25th.

SIR—Some days are past since I ordered the Sloop Angelica to be advertised for Michillimakinac at the same time directing the merchants should send in their Invoices of Goods & Provisions that I might see what part might be allowed to go out of the settlement.

The quantity appearing very great joined to the extravagant price of Grain & Flour in the Settlement I appointed Mr. Fleming the Commissary with two of the Merchants & Mr. Dejean the Justice of Peace, to take account in the settlement of the Quantities of Wheat, Pease, Flour, Indian Corn and live stock in the principal farmer's hands, that if it was found there was an improper monopoly, a reasonable Price might be fixed after securing the quantity necessary for the exigencies of the Post.

They have not yet made their Report.

The Hurons settled here on the South side of the River have desired me to represent to Your Excellency that the Jesuit Missionary who for many years has lived with them is now superannuated, and no longer able to perform the duties of his function, requesting that you would order his place to be supplied by a person worthy to succeed so good a man—He is a man of very amiable character (about 70 years of age) well acquainted with the language, tempers and character of that nation the most acute and best informed (as I believe) of any Savages in America.—I have promised them to make application to Your Excellency.

These Hurons & those at Sandooské are Rivals and jealous, except when a common Indian interest engages them to unanimity. They have lately told me that they expected what Lands they should drive the Rebels from should be vested in them as by right of conquest. I told them that was a point I could not pretend to decide, but that I should write to Your Excellency and inform them what answer I should receive.

'Tis easy to foresee numberless difficulties which must arise in satisfying the Indians at a Peace.

The arms of the Militia at this Place are very bad, should there be any at Quebec to spare, a certain number per Company would be highly acceptable, as Your Excellency's orders may perhaps employ a number of them out of the Settlement and few have arms at all proper for service.

There must be a great expence of Gunpowder this Season for the supply of so many savages as flock from all parts to be supplyed for war and hunting—fifty barrels of fine powder allows two lbs per man for two thousand five hundred, and 'tis known a hunter uses 15 lbs per annum in hunting.

I send enclosed for Your Excellency's proposal [perusal?] two letters from Mr. de Rocheblave.

Medicines not to be procured here at any rate. Also the list of Indian trade Licences at the current Prices of Provisions &c. at this place in Feby. & April 1778.

The company of Volunteers consists at present of two Sergeants, three Corporals and forty private, they behave well and have been drilled all the winter, they are to be encamped on the common in a few days, when they will be practised in firing at a mark, entrenching, making fascines &c. several of them have been on Scouts and behaved well.

I have the honor to be with the greatest respect Sir Your Excellency's most devoted and most humble Servant HENRY HAMILTON.

[B 122, p 42.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

SIR—I take the Liberty of recommending to your Excellency's favour and protection, Capt James Andrews, who has since my arrival at this place acted with the greatest zeal, activity and diligence—As to his capacity in his profession, I can only say he has the reputation of a very intelligent and experienced officer—should your Excellency be pleased to require an account of the navigation of the Lakes or other circumstances relating to his profession, I have reason to think he will acquit himself to your Excellency's satisfaction and his own credit.

Captain Thompson who has had the honor of your Excellency's commands to inspect the state of the naval department at this place, proceeds to Niagara in the Gage, which is expected to sail to morrow.

His remarks during his stay at this Post must give your Excellency a far better idea of its present state and what improvements may be made, than perhaps has ever been given at Head Quarters, I have had many conversations with him, and have been sensible of the reasonableness & propriety of his observations, in such points as a Landman may be supposed to form a Judgement.

On my mentioning the necessity of a person appointed to attend to the arrivals of vessels taking account of cargoes and being a check on the traders, examining passes, comparing of invoices from below with the stores &c. delivered at this place, he said there was an intelligent sober man at Quebec, Mr. Algée, whose character for integrity made him fit for the trust, and whose circumstances were such as to make him happy should your Excellency think proper to appoint him to the employment.

As 'tis not an easy matter to find a person here so qualified, I have taken the liberty to name Mr. Algée on Captain Thompson's recommendation.

I have the honor to be with all possible respect Sir your Excellency's most devoted and most obedient servant

HENRY HAMILTON.

Detroit April 25th, 1778.

Endorsed:—From Detroit No 3 Lt Govr Hamilton Detroit 25th April 1778—To Genl. Carleton enclosing 2 papers being the Price Current of Goods at Detroit in February and April.

[B 122, p 46.]

Prices current at Detroit the 26th of February 1778.

	New York Cy.
Flour no settled price suppose	50s. pr [qr?]
Wheat from 16s. to	20s. pr Bll
Indian Corn 20s	24s. pr Bll
Lead & Ball	1s. 6d. pr lb
Grease & Tallow	3s. pr lb
Gun Powder	6s pr lb
Tobacco	16s. pr lb
Rum	32s pr. Gallon

Endorsed:—Prices of Goods at Detroit the 26th Feby. 1778 enclosed in Lt. Governor Hamilton's letter of the 25 April 1778. Mark'd Detroit No. 3.

[B 122, p. 25.]

Prices current at Detroit the 22nd April 1778.

	New York Cy.
Flour	60s. pr [qr?]
Wheat	24s. pr Barrl
Indian Corn	24s. pr Barrl
Lead & Ball	1s. 6d. pr lb
Grease & Tallow	3s. pr lb
Gun Powder	6s. pr lb
Tobacco	16s. pr lb
Rum	32s. pr Gallon

Endorsed:—Prices of Goods at Detroit 22nd April 78 enclosed in Lt. Gov. Hamilton's letter of the 25th April 1778—marked Detroit No. 3.

[B 121, p 34.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

Sir—I am honor'd with Your Excellency's letter dated March 14th.

The savages will in a few days meet in council, & before they are dismissed I shall hope for orders how to direct their inroads upon the Frontiers, it would have made me very happy to have received them from Your Excellency, but as you have determined to go to Europe, those hopes are at end. Should there not arrive in time particular orders, I shall dispose of a part of the Savages, in small scouts & if possible retain the most reputable of the chiefs and Warriors in the neighbourhood, that if the Commander in Chief should think proper to point out some particular service for them in the course of the current year they may be in readyness—

Mr. La Mothe not being as yet returned my uncertainty as to several points hitherto undecided, continues, I shall not however despair of keeping the Indians in good temper, the principal object at present at this post.

My sincere wishes for Your Excellency's safe and pleasant voyage will accompany you and I request her Ladyship to accept my best Respects—a continuance of your Excellency's favor & good opinion whatever may be my situation in life will ever be considered as a most honorable and valuable possession by Sir

Your Excellency's most devoted & much obliged humble Servant

Detroit June 9th '78. Henry Hamilton.

Endorsed: Detroit 4. Lt. Gov. Hamilton to General Carleton of the 9th of July 78. received August.

[B 122, p 52.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

Sir—As the safety & happyness of this country are so highly concerned, in your Excellency's continuing to defend & govern the Province, those who wish its prosperity must hope that by remaining with us you will ultimately share in the general satisfaction.

Colol. Bolton writes me word that there will be a great call for Provision at Niagara, a considerable number of Indians being assembled there.

A Sloop will be ready to sail in a few hours with 30 Carcasses of Beef & about 470 Bushels of Grain 731 lbs of Suet & 1290 lbs of Rice.

Captain Zechariah Thompson has inspected the state of the Naval Department, a sudden illness prevented his returning this season he is not yet recovered entirely.

Captain Grant not being present, I assembled the other officers of the department & in presence of Captain Thompson & with his assistance drew up remarks of the present state of the Vessels &c. which will be presented to your Excellency by Captain Thompson early in the Spring.

On Captain Grants return I shewed him a copy of the remarks, desiring him to observe upon such things as he thought improper or unnecessary, he told me he thought they required no alteration but in the stile, which he was apprehensive might lead to giving an Idea of the relaxation of duty in the officers. I explained that matter to his satisfactions.

December the 1st Captain Lernoult arrived here to take the command, he tells me he shall transmit a return of the Garrison to Your Excellency.

I am well persuaded his zeal for the service will leave no room for troubling your Excellency again on a most disagreeable subject.

Mr. La Mothe is just returned from a very fatiguing scout against the Rebels, he left this on the 20th Sept. & returned the 4th December—His party consisted of 57 Canadians officers included, 75 Indians and he was joined on the way by 60 Delawares—after some time he remained with only 12 Indians and a few Canadians—the former having separated into small war parties in their own way, of the latter 39 & one officer returned having fallen sick or lame.—Lieut Gouin a very spirited young fellow and the chief support of a large family is killed. His mother lately became a widow has 3 sons & five daughters none capable of supporting this poor unhappy woman. Your Excellency's humanity & generosity need no prompters. As tis my duty to provide pro tempore for their distress, I shall order them relief immediately, as to anything of a permanent nature I would not take upon me to order it, nor will I flatter them with the expectation of it, it is fit they should owe anything of that kind to your bounty.

I hope the Shawanese & Delawares are likely to act more heartily in the cause than they have hitherto done.—They have lately received the Hatchet at this place.

Mr. Hay the Deputy Agent has made a computation that about 5000 Souls will be dependent for their support on this place, while the troubles in the Colonies subsist.

I take this opportunity (in obedience to your Excellency's directions) of sending down a list of Persons who have been nominated and received appointments, whether in the Indian department, militia or elsewhere.

As the persons resident at this place are chiefly traders & must give up their busyness if they accepted the place of Judge, as it requires the knowledge of two languages, besides some acquaintance with Law proceedings. I cannot find here any one who will undertake it—the salary is so slender it will not engage a person in this part of the world, & certainly a man must be extremely necessitous to quit expectations at home, with even moderate abilities to undertake a troublesome employment for £100 per ann.

I refer your Excellency to Mr. La Mothe for the reports of the Prisoners taken on his scout & for other particulars relating to the Indian affairs.

This gentleman deferred his marriage & quitted his trade to engage in the service, and has acted with zeal, spirit and activity.

I hope he will have the honor of presenting your Excellency the letters from the upper Posts.

I have the honor to be, Sir, Your Excellency's most devoted & most obedient servant HENRY HAMILTON.

Endorsed: Detroit No. 5 From Lieut Govr Hamilton [without date] July —by Mr. La Mothe.

[B 122, p. 255.]

Council held at Detroit June 14th 1778 with the Ottawas, Chippoweys Hurons, Poutconatamies, Delawares, Shawanese, Miamis, Mingoes, Mohawks & the Tribes of Ouashtanon, Saguinan &c. Delawares Sencas.

PRESENT

Lieut Govr Hamilton Superintendent, Lieut Govr Abbott, Mr Hay Depr Agent, Mr. McKee late Depr Agent, Several officers of the Indian Department.

Captain Lernoult, Lieut Caldwell, Kings Regt.

Interpreters—William Tucker, Joseph Drouillard, Simon Girty, Isidore Chesne, Duperron Baby, Charles Beaubin, Kissinguaa, Piaiyash.

Nations with them, War Chiefs & Village Chiefs:

Outawaas

War Chiefs—Equashawey Néekigg Ot-ta-waa-kee.

Village Chiefs—Cha-min-tawaa Pow-di-gee-ka-waa Way-wish-quoin Maa-nigo.

Chippoweys from Saguinan

War Chiefs—Wy-mee-gong.

Village Chiefs—Hes-he-waa-bimey Sha-waa-ni-ssey A-pa-quaash Wy-shi-na-dey-too Kee-jee-kainee.

Chippoweys

W. C.—A-ni-mi-kai-nee Apach-aince Wabangay Capo-miké Ki-ow-ki-ma Wy-wee-na-cam Muc-intté Wa-bi-gouey Tac-quaa-gan-cy.

V. C.—Mettu-saa-gay Massi-gay-ash Sec-ca-ha Tee-ka-mi-ga-zee Mi-ssou-bi-ni-shy Wa-by-nossée Nov-chi-ca-bocy.

Hurons

W. C.—Dy-en-tete the elder Sou-dos quaa-há Dy-en-tete the younger Ouan-da-rong Sayaa-ta Sca-tou rainee Sha-a-ris.

V. C.—Koo-quan-da-rong Ari-ouanda-tong Da-wat-tong Seon-ca-résse.

Chippoweys from Ouashtanon

Mec-kis-sin-ance Sha-ou-an-a-quá-am Mesh-kee-ma Shaq-qua-ba-no.

Hurons from Sandoskey

Inip, Ko-nio-ute-rie, Ki-ouquaan, Tohougetton

Nations with their War and Village Chiefs:

Mohawks and Senecas

War Chiefs—Acssa-yen.

Village Chiefs—Cou-na-son-a brother to the late silver-heels.

Pouteouattamies

Wyn-deego Bay-ma-nia-ki-tunk Ossa-wa-no-qu-aa Kec-ou-te-nan Kays-hay Scheequoi Wa-wi-aghten Okia Sagoney-bee Esh-kee-bee Shee-bai-nee Pinask.

Delawares

Peck-an-dogh-a-lind or the black father Village Chief, Ma-mal-tee-at or the Spotted Fawn, Capt James.

Poutcouattamies of St. Joseph

Co-quaa-niss-ey, Kee-ar-vee-weet Ma-con-see Quoi-kee-pee-nan Okia Sha-binee.

Sixteen hundred eighty three Indians of both Sexes.

The Lieut. Governor addressed them as follows.

Children! Outâwas, Chippoweys, Hurons, Pouteouattamies, Shawanese, Delawares, &c. let us before all things return thanks to the great Spirit above, who has permitted us to meet together this day, and to assemble round this council fire.

Children! I bid you all welcome, War Chiefs, Village Chiefs, Warriors, old men, women & children—with these strings of wampum, I open your eyes that you may see clear & your ears that you may listen to my words, since I speak by order of the great King my master, who is the Father of us all, whether of white or brown skins.

Having returned thanks to the Great Spirit, I must thank you all for having attended to my call, in coming to this Council fire, which I hope shall burn clear and bright, round which we shall renew that union and brighten that chain of friendship form'd last year, which shall last while the Sun and moon give Light to the World.

Six Strings of Wampum to each Nation.

Children! listen! with these Belts which I present to each Nation, I efface from your memories every disagreeable thought, I cleanse your hearts, and wipe the tears from your Eyes which are brought into them by the deaths of your friends and relations, with these I also cover the bones of your dead, that they may not appear any more and that no rain or bad weather may affect them. When you look upon these Belts and shew them to your children, you will think on the alliance formed here and will not suffer any rust to appear on the chain of friendships.

For myself, I shall never forget the manner in which you have acted, since I have resided among you, nor the good will with which you took up your Father's axe, striking as one man his Enemies and yours, the Rebels; and I shall do my utmost to strengthen our alliance, that all Nations may know us for the children of the same father. I thank you for not having listened to those birds that fly by night, and endeavour to inspire distrust and jealousy. As I have always found you faithful to your father the King, I have no doubt but that you will continue to obey his will, and attend to what I have to say at all times.

A Belt to each Nation.

Children! I return you thanks for the tranquility you have observed since you have been here, the good advice of the old men deserves the attention the young people have paid to it which givs me so great satisfaction.

As this is the first day of our meeting, I will not fatigue you by keeping you too long, therefore shall order some fresh Provisions and meet you again to-morrow.

June 15th, 11 o'clock.

Lieut Governor addressed the several nations present:

Children! let us return thanks to the Master of life for having preserved us and given us so clear a sky this day for continuing our business.

I thank you all for the attention you paid while I spoke yesterday and desire you will listen to what I shall say to you on this belt, which was sent here this spring from the six Nations, addressed to their brethren the Hurons.

Simon Girty was then brought forward and declared an Interpreter, as having escaped from the Virginians and put himself under the protection of His Majesty, after giving satisfactory assurances of his fidelity.

A large belt with 15 white squares thro' the middle, marked at one end,

W. I., at the other 1774 was deliver'd to the Hurons and the Message accompanying it repeated.

Lieut. Governor: Children! I beg your attention.

You may remember when you received a large belt of alliance here last year, the number of nations who took hold of it, you know the consequences have been good, as you have succeeded in almost all your enterprizes, having taken a number of prisoners and a far greater number of scalps.

You have driven the Rebels to a great distance from your hunting grounds & far from suffering them to take possession of your lands, you have forced them from the Frontiers to the Coast where they have fallen into the hands of the King's Troops, as I had foretold you would be the case, for which good service I thank you in the name of the King my master.

Children! I have the pleasure to inform you some of your younger brothers are desirous of having an axe delivered to them, to use against your enemies who have rebelled against the King—it is here ready for them.

A War Belt to Bourbounois Chief of the Miamis:

A number of chiefs of different nations sung the War song and danced with the Miamis Belt. Lieut. Governor then spoke as follows:

Children, I am much rejoiced to see the same unanimity subsist among us that reigned last year. I thank you for your present behaviour, & as you must be fatigued with so long sitting will soon dismiss you for this day & give you tomorrow to rest yourselves—The day after, what is prepared for you, will be ready and that you may see what you get, no Rum will be delivered. This evening only a small quantity will be given to make merry with—Some good news arrived by the last vessels shall be communicated to you in proper time, 'tis now too late.

June 17th, 11 o'clock.

This morning having proved very rainy, the delivering the present was put off for one day, but as several of the nations particularly the Wyandotts were impatient to have the Council closed that they might go to war, the Lieut Governor assembled the chiefs of the several nations in the Fort.

He then addressed them as follows;

Children! I have good news to communicate to you, brought by Captain McKee, who has escaped from Fort Pitt, to join his hand to ours, the accounts he brings are confirmed by papers from Quebec.

You are assembled here for to hear this good news, to be made acquainted with my sentiments and to deliver your own.

Children! I have to inform you that His Excellency the Commander in Chief has written to me, signifying that he is about to cross the great Lake to see the King his master, that he is to be succeeded by a great man whose name is Haldimand, but whose Indian name is not yet known. He is however well known thro' this country, having been Chief Warrior at New York, he is a brave officer, a wise man, and esteemed by all who know him. The Commander in Chief acquainted me in his letter that this Chief would write his mind to me, whenever he does, I shall communicate to you whatever relates to your interests whether for war or peace.

I shall rise up, or sit down, as he orders me. The King has ordered me to give you an ax, he has not as yet told me to bring it, whenever he does, my children shall know it immediately.

My design is to satisfy all my children if possible, I have always told them the truth, some of you have long been pressing me to allow you to go to war directly, however the most impatient have waited at my request, perhaps some wish to know what orders I shall receive from my superiors, I am well pleased it should be thus, since I think my children are sufficiently numerous to go to assist their Brothers the Hurons and Shawnese, & also to leave some in their villages, till orders come from the great chief at Quebec. The Great Spirit has given us but one mind, I hope he will continue his goodness to us.

I still look to Quebec, for the King's orders have not as yet reached this remote place this year.

Some Delawares are this day arrived who are desirous of showing their intention of joining their brethren & have presented me two pieces of dryed meat (scalps) one of which I have given the Chippoweys, another to the Miamis, that they may show in their villages the disposition of the Delawares.

A chief of the Senecas then rose and said:

Father! we have listened with pleasure to what you have said, and tomorrow you shall hear our thoughts.

June the 18th 11 o'clock.

The Lieut Governor addressed all the nations present: Children! you may remember that when you first received your Father's War axe, I told you, he would have attention to your necessities, while you acted the part of dutifull children. I have often told you that what you receive does not come from me but from the King who has thought of you, tho' at a great distance, & has sent you ammunition, cloathing & other matters necessary for you.

Children! I have always endeavored to assist you in your necessities, this day you will receive what is allotted for you, in such a manner that each person will have a share.

The King has also sent me some marks of his approbation to be given to those, who have listen'd to him & gained the esteem of their nation. The number which has merited this distinction is too great to admit of all receiving at this time, but I have my eyes fixed on those who shall receive them in course of time. I have to request of you Chiefs, that you will keep up the same good order I have hitherto observed among you, and which deserves my hearty thanks, but you have the approbation of my master the King for your good behavior in War, as well as peace which I take great pleasure in acquainting you with.

I shall finish this day's business by delivering what is prepared for each nation according to its numbers & I return thanks to the Great Spirit for giving us clear skies and good weather at this general meeting.

The union and good understanding which appears among us all proceeds from his goodness to us.

June the 19th 1778.

The different Nations were occupied in distributing to each family their part of the present delivered the preceeding day.

June the 20th.

Lieut Governor Hamilton opened the Council this day with the accounts brought by the last vessels from Fort Erie and having related the most material told them he was ready to hear what they had to say. Chaminitawaa a Village Chief of the Outawaas then rose up and said:

Father! I am chosen to speak the sentiments of the Outawaas, Chippeweys and Poutwuattamies.

Father! I beg you will listen to the words of your children and I beg they will be attentive.

Father! since I am appointed to speak for your children, I hope you will excuse any impropriety, in my speech, I am but a poor ignorant man—You see by this string, the color of our hearts, we have no other thought than that of making one with you, and obeying your will.

5 long strings white Wampum

Father! where should we learn sense, but from you, 'tis from you we expect everything that is good.

Father! we all thank you from the eldest to the youngest for what you have said during this meeting and at all other times.

8 white strings & 8 strings of white & black mixed.

Father! These are the centements of all your children.

When you first came here, you told us children, I am sent here by your Father the King for the good of you all, which we find is true, and you have always told us the truth, for which reason we all, men, women & children return you our thanks.

A Belt of 8 Rows of Wampum

Father! What shall I say, I can only repeat the thanks of your children for the good things you always say to them.

Father! You see your children who are gathered together from different parts of the Country and will act as you desire them. You told us you was obliged to keep us in the dark a little, till you should hear from our Father at Quebec, but that you would soon open our eyes for which we thank you.

A Belt of 7 Rows.

Father! it is from you we expect every assistance, you are our support and notwithstanding bad birds come about us and whisper in our ears, that we should not listen to you, we shall always be attentive to what you say.

Father! Your children who are assembled from all parts to see you, listen to you, you told those who were impatient to go to War this Spring to remain quiet, untill you spoke to them, which they did, we thank you father for that good advice.

A White Belt of 8 Rows with 4 black crosses.

Chamintawáa continued:

Listen Brethren! I am going to say a few words to our Grandfathers the Delawares in the name of all the Nations here present, I speak in the name of their War Chiefs.

I speak in the name of our War Chiefs, because in their path they have sometimes found Branches or Stumps laid across, which they desire to know the reason of.

Brethren! we see you, tho' you be far distant, and we observe you breaking down the branches from the trees to lay across our road, at the same hanging down your heads and with tears in your eyes.

Six strings black and white Wampum.

Brethren! we speak to you now in presence of our father, we are not like you, we speak from the bottom of our hearts and want to know why the Path of the Warriors going against the Rebels has been blocked up. We believe you to be the authors of it, this is the opinion of all the War Chiefs, you now see round our father.

We speak to you, because when our Warriors went your way, they were obliged to go out of the road and thereby have suffer'd and return'd with tears in their eyes.—We speak once more to you who came here in fear & trembling.

We address you as well in the name of the village as the War Chiefs, and desire if you have anything bad in your hearts, that you will leave it here & not carry it away with you, we know you sometimes take your hearts to the Virginians, but we beg you will now leave them here, where ours are all assembled, we beg you to have sense and listen to our father as we all do & obey his will.—These are the sentiments of all here present & this is the last time we intend speaking to you.

A Belt of 8 rows black, 3 white bars. Cuquandarong (or old Baby) then rose up and spoke as follows:

Father! we can have but little to say besides returning you thanks in the name of Sastakaritze, what I shall deliver is in the name of the Wyndotts & Miamis.

Father! we thank our brothers, the Outawaas, Chippoweys and Pouteouattamies for what they have said, it touched our hearts, we are of the very same way of thinking with them—What can we say different from them? No we and our brothers, the Miamis are of one mind with them, they have not missed a single thought we could have had on the same subject.

Father! we are very happy to find all your children continue to be as unanimous as formerly, & if there had been one dissenting voice it would not have been pleasing to us.

Father! we will remember when you tyed all our arms together last year, with one chain, & we beg you will be strong & unite us yet more closely.

These are the sentiments of Sastaharitze and the Miamis—

He then addressed the Delawares, Nephews! now that we are face to face, I shall refresh your memories, with some things that are past—Nephews! listen to us, we are sick at heart that you do not keep your word, our Father Touraighwaghti (Mr. Hay the Agent) was present at your promises, and yet you turn your heads towards the Rebels—Nephews we hope you will be sensible & remember that all the Nations in this country are united, & that you seem to keep aloof, but we beg you will bear in mind what you have just heard and take care of yourselves.

This is what I had to refresh your memories, and I now salute you—

Lieut. Governor: Children! If any of you have anything to say further, let me hear it, this is the place and time for seeing your hearts.

Charles a Senecca then spoke.—Father! I have listened to what you have said & to what your children have said, I who am one of the Six Nations am well pleased with what is past, it is gone to my heart & makes me very happy, I thank you for it.

4 strings white Wampum.

He then addressed the Delawares:

You have heard what your father & his children have said & you see they are agreed in opinion, I pity you, & look at you with tears in my Eyes, it is to be hoped then you shut the ear you have kept open to the Virginians & listen to none but your father.

He then address'd the Lieut Governor—Father! I spoke to you with empty hands, you know my busyness at this place was to bring you some Prisoners & Scalps. I had no thought of a Council or should have had the precaution to bring Wampums.

Snip a Wyandott War Chief from Scioto then spoke:

Father! I hope you will listen to your children that come from the town situated between the two Creeks. We are of the same mind with our brethren who have Just, we beg you will have pity on us in our distress, we who inhabit the little Sciota, we are in want of many things, chiefly, Blanketts, Spirits, powder, Ball & knives.

4 Strings black Wampum.

Lieut Govr Hamilton then spoke:

Children! I shall say a few words to you all, and desire you to be attentive.

I have heard the good advice you have given the Delawares, accept this Belt as a proof of my approbation, you have said nothing but what is true & what I shall support.

My Children the Delawares! I have a few words for you.

Listen to the War & Village Chiefs who have spoken very properly to you & who shall never resant what the King shall be pleased to order for their supply—observe that some ill advised people among you have said that the Hurons were the only people who complain'd of the road towards the Rebels being blocked up by you, & that they alone sent you Belts, I must remark to you that all the nations here present agree in opinion with the Hurons & that I am entirely of their way of thinking also, I therefore give you this Belt to carry to your Village & to be sent round to all the Delawares that they may grow wise. I have not forgot the conduct of White Eyes who came with speeches to this council last year, nor do I forget how I treated him and the speeches he brought.

I hope my children the Delawares will be wise that when they come to my council fire, they may see clear & that I may give them my hand which I refused to White Eyes.

You, Captain James, took hold of your Father's Axe yesterday, hold it fast be wise & remember that the Belt, I present you with repeats all the words of the War and Village Chiefs whom you have heard speak this day.

A Belt.

My Children! Outawaas, Chippoweys, Hurons &c. I have always wished to promote friendship among the Indian Nations but such as do not take hold of the chain of friendship I gave you last year or attempt to break shall know and feel its strength.

Children! War Chiefs, Village Chiefs, Warriors &c. it has pleased God I should meet you all here a second time in general council, the fire I first lighted for you burnt clear, & I hope this one will blaze yet clearer & its smoak ascend to the clouds.

The great Spirit is good to all his creatures, he has given you sense & courage & one heart to think as well as one hand to act for the King your Father, if I have any sense, 'tis from him, who gives you understanding, I am happy to meet my children & I feel that I am their friend and Father, I will always tell you the truth & never deceive you.

When you first took up your Father's axe, you asked me how you should act, I consulted with your wise men & experienced War Chiefs, God has been favorable to our Councils, I tell you the same this year, before you go to War, I shall consult with your Chiefs—

I have already told you my thoughts, that you are sufficiently numerous to drive the Rebels from the Rivers that water your hunting grounds, & at the same time to leave Warriours in your Villages to act under their experienced War Chiefs, when the King's orders arrive, which are not come over the Great Lake.

I thank you Outawaas, Hurons &c. for your sensible speeches, which I shall lay up in my heart.

Senecas! You have pleased me in speaking as you have, and I shall acquaint the Six Nations with your good sense in joining hands with us all present, & you will tell them what you have been Witnesses to.

Snip! You have spoken the Sentiments of the Mingoes &c. I thank you & all those who shew good sense before this assembly, I shall not forget your words nor that you helped Captain McKee to find the road to this place—

Children! When I gave you the axe of your Father the King last year; You turned your Medals behind you, that you might see more easily the Rebels his Enemies—You may perceive he takes care of all his children, I give you these Medals that you may think on him who threw down the French King who was once your Father but is no longer so—You have but one for which reason I take from your necks the old French Medals & replace them with those of your true and only father.

Perhaps others among you merit such a distinguishing mark, I shall be glad to have the sense of the several nations on the subject, which shall be treated on some future day.

English Medals were then given & French ones taken off—

Captain James of the Delawares then spoke—

Father! I am well pleased with what you & your children have said this day, you have cleansed my heart, and the hearts of those who live at my village, there are sixty of us for whom I will be answerable, tho' I cannot say anything for the rest of the nation.

To convince you of my sincerity, I desire to sing the War Song, on that Belt you have given me. We intend to hold fast the axe.

This was repeated to all the nations, after which he sung the War song, & danced the War dance. The Lieutenant Governor then cover'd up the Council fire in the usual form & dismissed the assembly.

(Signed) HENRY HAMILTON
[B 122, p. 54.] Lieut Govr & Superintendent.

Council Held at Detroit, June 29, 1778.

DETROIT June the 29th 1778.

At a conference with the Ouiattonons, Quiquaboues, and Mascoutins were

PRESENT.

Lieut. Governor Henry Hamilton, John Hay Deputy Agent, Captain McKee.

Sworn Interpreters—Charles Beaubin & Isidore Chesne.

Ouittonons.

War Chiefs—An-qua-sa-ca, Men-wee-shinga, Ree-mee-ca, Packing-qua-shinga, Cha-ha.

Village Chiefs—Qui-qua-po-quois, Me-lou-e-sou-ata, Ya-pa-ti-a.

Quiquaboues.

War Chiefs—Egh-kee-too-wa, Miquetto.

Village Chiefs—Mahinamba, Pi-e-mash-kee-canny and Thirsty Warriors.

Mahinamba spoke on a Calumet or pipe—

Father! You see here a pipe that came from your hands, it has been round the Nations on the Ouabash, and the Illinois and has had the effect you said it would have when we smoaked out of it; we felt our hearts and minds at ease. The person whom you sent with this pipe, told us, that after it had been round the Villages in our neighborhood, it should return from whence it came, for which reason we present it to you.

A Pipe.

Qui-qua-po-quois then spoke and declared the satisfaction his nation felt on receiving the above mentioned pipe; and a road Belt and invitation to come to Detroit. That they had forced their march; the Delawares having informed them the Rebells from Virginia were on their way towards them, that they had not however met with the least obstacle in their way towards them, but found the road traced by their Father to be very plain and even.

He then spoke with a green Belt of Wampum, which denoted the uprightness of their intentions and was the custom of their ancestors.

presented a green Belt.

Ta-pa-ti-a then spoke:

Father! The road you have traced for us, so clear & good, that our Women & children may follow it, we like it & think it is by permission of the Great Spirit above; that we frequent it. I am sent here by the War Chiefs of the Nation to know your will. They smoaked out of the pipe you sent us & addressed themselves to you, as there are many bad birds (evil minded people) who come whistling about our ears. We hope you will set us right and have compassion on our women and children.

Six strings of Wampum.

Ma-hi-nam-ba then presented a pipe painted green, to show the sincerity with which his nation acted towards their Father!

He then presented one of the Qui-Qua braves, & Mascoutins, saying their chiefs had authorized him to do so, and to assure their Father that they had no other will, than his, and were happy to find a Father who would take pity on them and assist them.

That, Chiefs then present had each a Tribe.

Cha-ha War Chief spoke:

Father! I am a War Chief, but speak on Wampum that came from our Village Chiefs or those remaining of them, for you know the loss we have met with. The Great Spirit was kind to us in our distress & inspired us with sense to look towards you. We return thanks to the master of Life for having taken pity on us, we are happy to have found the road good as we hope by your means, we shall soon meet some of those birds called Big-knives (Rebells but particularly Virginians) our young men will wait our return, and meet us with great Joy. Our Chiefs have never known what it is to disappoint anybody & they will not begin with you.

Eight strings of Wampum.

Lieut Governor:

Children! I have listened to you with attention. I am glad to find you did not meet with any obstacle in your way, you are wellcome, as I know the loss you have met with in the death of your great Chief Wa-bene-kiah & his son & some others, has justly grieved you very much, I shall condole with you before I enter into any discourse.

Then according to their custom condoled with them, by giving White

Wampum, black strouds &c. &c. to cover the graves and bones of their dead & told them they should get a small quantity of Rum every day while they remained here & when they went away would receive a little to take to their villages &c.

To morrow morning I shall meet you again & let you know (according to your desire) my Sentiments as well as those of all the nations in this neighbourhood.

In the mean time here is a party of my children the Poutawattamies who are going to war, I am glad you will have an opportunity to see them before they go away, by which you may judge of the intentions of the rest.

Lieut. Governor then presented a war axe to Peemembikactack Poutawattamie War Chief, with the recommendation of sparing the blood of the aged, Women and Children, and that as they shewed a firm attachment to His Majesty and Government in taking up the axe at his request, it was hoped & expected they would lay it down, when required in the same obedient manner.

The above War Chief then sung the war song & expressed his resolution of paying the greatest attention to what he might hear from His Father, who was his, as well as their nations support.

An Outawa & a Chippawa War Chief being present by accident likewise sung the war song, which was followed by a War Chief of the Qui-qua-bones.

The Lieut Governor returned them thanks for this mark of their attachment & in particular to the Qui-qua-bones who, he said he was convinced intended acting with the same vigor as the rest of their Brethren, his children.

The weather being bad the 30th June the conference did not begin till 1st July When the above mentioned persons were present.

Lieut Governor Hamilton spoke:

Children! You are assembled here to hear what I have to say to you, I pray you to pay attention, and I shall also hear what you may have to say.

Six strings wampum to each nation.

Children! I am happy that you found the road so clear as you expressed to me the 29th June. I hope that your young men, &c., will trace the same path, & come in to see their Father. I should like to communicate to you the news we have received & what I have already communicated to all my children.

The Rebells at the beginning of these troubles had the advantage in Canada, at that time we had nothing to apprehend or to fear; & had no occasion to have a number of troops. The Indians in this neighbourhood at the beginning of this affair came to me & demanded an axe to act against the

Rebells, who had rebell'd against their King & who meant to inhabit their lands. I told them, children, you had better wait untill we hear further; perhaps the King may command you to take the axe; that we may all act in concert throughout the colonies. What could they have done last war, if the King had not given them assistance? I speak to you of these things knowing you will know I speak the truth.—I speak to you who are an ancient nation—you know that last war the Spaniards joined the French & were obliged at last to ask peace—The English Forces have taken N. York, Boston, & Philadelphia, and driven the Rebels wherever they dare face them both by land & sea, & I believe in a little time the King will bring their Necks under his feet, & whenever they acknowledge their disobedience & return to their duty, The King will then acknowledge them for his children. The rebels not contented to act against their sovereign have also acted against the Indian nations and want to dispossess them of their Lands, the King always attentive to his dutyfull children ordered the axe to be put into the hands of his Indian children in order to drive the Rebels from their Land, while his ships of war & armys clear'd them from the sea.

Children! These strings are to remind you that the King never tried to take any of your Lands, but that it was the rebels,

Six strings to each nation.

Children! I now speak to you the three nations on the Ouabach to inform you that the Ottawas, Chippawas, Hurons, Pouatattamies, Senecas, Shawanese, &c. have hold of their father's axe, & are all of one voice & will not burry it, untill the King their Father shall order peace.

Thirteen strings.

Children! It would have given me pleasure to have seen you here assembled in Council at the time it was held, but as you came too late, you will be informed of the Proceedings by some of your Friends or the Interpreters.

Children! I am glad to see you all composed. What I am now going to say is of importance to you, your wives and children. I heard that the Spaniards have given sucor to the Rebels and given them what assistance they could. Notwithstanding they were rebels against their King & enemies to the Indian nations. I have heard that the Spaniards have said to you the Indians on the Ouabach, that they owned the Lands there, & that the King of England had no claims thereto.—I desire to know from you if it be true or not? Is it possible that the Spaniards have forgotten allready that they were obliged to ask for peace from the King of Great Britain & don't they know that the King will protect his children the Indians in the security of their Lands & that no power whatever shall dispossess them—I give you the three nations, Qui-qua-bones, Ouiattonons & Mascontins each a Belt to assure you that the King will protect you from any power that may attempt to invade your just rights I have the King's orders to protect those that shall shew themselves his children.

I don't want to purchase your friendship with Liquor.

The King knowing that his children who act with his axe, are unable to provide for themselves, has accordingly provided for them. I am persuaded you have worn out your shoes &c., I shall therefore give you something that when you return, your people may see you have given me your hands and are well received and perhaps they may tread the path you have done. I am well assured that the Delawares have acted in favour of the rebels, I have accordingly in Council deliver'd a Belt in my name and that of all the Nations neighboring here around and in the name of the six nations, that if they still continued to favor the Rebels, that I would with all my children look on them as rebels.

The Lieutenant Governor changed their Medals and told them that they were from the King, he looks on you as his children, therefore wishes you should ware his picture, you not having any other Father but him, (Note) a medal given to Mahin-amba in lieu of a small English medal received in 1764.

A medal to Me-lou-son-ata in lieu of a french medal.

A Do to Pi-e-mash-kee-canny in lieu of a Ditto.

A Do to Sa-pa-ti-a who had not any before.

Lieut. Govr. spoke:

Children! As you are all here present and wanting to return, I will finish what I have to say to you before we break up this meeting. I cannot but praise the behaviour of the Indian nations who have taken hold of their Father's axe and who have acted as men. I hope you'll act the same part and not redden your axe with with the blood of Women and Children or innocent men. I know that men, kill men and not children. I speak to you who are men.

Fourteen strings.

Ta-pa-ti-a then spoke:

Father—You are in the right to ask of us our sentiments, we will inform you, we acknowledge you say right when you say this island is yours, it is true, some birds have told us otherwise, but we have not paid any attention to them, we address ourselves to you, who is our true Father.

Who are the Chiefs, that pretend to be ignorant that the French King has been conquered by the English.

We the Indians on the Ouabash never pretend to go the Spanish side for succour, but come to your side as you are our Father, even the least of our children will know that we are at present the King of England's children as we have been conquered by you. As to the Bigknives, we know them, we have rec'd your Belt in our Village, one of our chiefs is gone to take a walk with it towards them, he will soon return. All our War Chiefs are much pleased to go against the Virginians and act in concert with their brothers.

Our intention is never to act against children, but against men. We thank you for saying you'll take care of us, we are assured that our young men will tread the path which we found so clear and smooth.

Lieut Governor spoke:

Children! I am glad to hear you express your sentiments, agreeably to those of the other nations.

Qui-qua-po-quois then spoke:

Father! You are in the right to think that the Spaniards try to draw us to them, the son of old Tobacco, who is a pian in company with another were on the spanish side & asked us to go, we would not, we told them we had you for a father—we saw a road and our eyes were open, & we followed your path well beaten.

Father! Believe that we the Ouiattonons, Qui-qua-bones and Mascontins are all as one man and we are sincere for you—don't imagine that altho' we go for Rum to the Spaniards that they have our hearts!

3rd July 1778.

The Chiefs &c. assembled as the 1st July. The Lieut Gov. then presented an axe to Cha-ka Ouiattonons war Chief, told him that as he sang on the axe belonging to Peemembekeetach (a Poutawatoamé War chief) he now presented him an axe for his use to act against those people who want to possess themselves of your Land it's the King's command that I put this axe into your hands to act against His Majesty's Enemies. I pray the Master of Life to give you success as also your warriors, wherever you go with your Father's axe.

Cha-ha Ouiattonon War Chief received the axe with marks of satisfaction and sang the War song & presented it to a Ouiattonon War Chief who sang & presented it to Mis-quitto, Qui-qua-bones War Chief who sang and said

Father! I have never as yet sang the war song, I am but a young man, notwithstanding I have killed men, I shall endeavor to sing.—Sings.

Lieut Governor then spoke:

I thank you Misquitto for having sharpened the Ouiattonon's axe, I present you this axe (giving a War Belt) to use against the King's Enemies, I am persuaded the Ouiattonons will sharpen it for you in return. Misquitto sings the war song & presents it to Cha-ha, Ouiattonon W. C.

Cha-ha then spoke:

Father! It gives me pleasure to see you have given the Qui-qua-bones, an axe, and that we the Ouiattonons should sharpen it as for my part I am almost ashamed to say anything as the Qui-qua-bones are greater warriors than we are. Sings.

Lieutenant Governor presented a certificate to Qui-qua-quois for his attachment to His Majesty & Government.

Ta-pa-ti-a spoke:

Father! We return you thanks for your attention towards us, you have asked us what time we want to return to our villages. We answer you that we want to return directly if possible. You know that we Village chiefs have nothing to say in war, when we get at our villages, shall interpret everything which occurred to our War Chiefs who know how to act in War.

Father! We hope you'll provide us with Water carriages that we may be enabled to return speedyly. we are assured that everything is at your command, therefore you can order us some with ease.

Lieut Governor:

Children! I have attended to what you have said, the same water carriages which brought you here shall take you back, as to what regards my children, I assure you I never shew more favor to one nation than another. I look on them as with one Eye and use them all alike. I have nothing more to say but to wish you all a good voyage & a safe return to your Villages.

Endorsed: Council held with the Indians at Detroit, June 1778.

[B 122, p. 75.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

Sir—I have the honor to enclose to your Excellency a letter brought this evening by an Express from Monsieur de Rocheblave.

There has been a flying report at this place that there are some emissaries from France & Spain at St Joseph's, who have Belts & Messages for the Savages.

Every Intelligence confirms what I had the honor to mention to your Excellency about a year since, that the Spaniards are doing their utmost to alienate the Savages by promises & presents.

By Mr de Rocheblaves letter to me it appears that hitherto they have not gain'd their goodwill or confidence.

I have the honor to be Sir Your Excellency's most devoted and most obedient servant HENRY HAMILTON.

Detroit 6th August 1778.

Endorsed: from Detroit No. 7 Lt Govr Hamilton August 1778 to General Carleton enclosing a letter Mr. Rocheblave of the 26th May 1777 & one of the 4th July.

[B 122, p. 107.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

Sir—Since my last of the 6th Instant, an Express is arrived from the Illinois, with an account of the arrival of a party of Rebels in number about three hundred who have taken Mr. de Rocheblave prisoner have laid him in Irons, and exact an oath from the Inhabitants binding them to obedience to the Congress &c.

There is an officer with 30 men detached by the Rebels to Cahokia to receive the allegiance of the people at that Post, and I have no doubt that by this time they are at St. Vincennes, as, when the Express came away, one Gibault a French Priest, had his horse ready saddled to go thither from Cahokia to receive the submission of the Inhabitants in the name of the Rebels.

'Tis now but twenty one days since the Rebels got possessions of Kaskaskias.

Monsieur de Celoron sets off this day with Belts for the Ouabash Indians whose deputies went from this not long since, well satisfied with their reception & took 3 War Belts.

A Letter from Mr Rochblave written some little time before his imprisonment mentions there being four English frigates in the entrance of the Misisipi.

As there is not one of the vessels here at present, I send this Express in a Batteau to Fort Erie by Lieut Chabert of the Indian Department.

I beg leave to take notice to Your Excellency that if the Ouabash Indians are supported properly, it will entail a considerable additional expence, at the same time 'tis well known to your Excellency that these nations are the only barrier to be opposed at present to the inroads of the Rebels & the attempts of the French and Spaniards.

I am also to observe to your Excellency, that there remains yet a large quantity of provision to be forwarded to this Post, that scarce any merchandise is yet arrived, the goods of last year left on the carrying place being not yet forwarded, that large quantities will be wanted for the savages as well as for supplying the trade and that the vessels alone will not be sufficient to transport the Quantities wanted.

If the Merchants were allowed to forward their goods in batteaus all the way, they would many of them I believe chuse to venture rather than abide the damages, losses & delays they suffered last year.

I have the honor to be, Sir, your most obedient and most humble Servant.
HENRY HAMILTON.

August 8th 1778.

Endorsed:—Detroit No. 8. Lt Govr Hamilton 8th August 1778.

[B 122, p 115.]

TO GEN. CARLETON

SIR—Being desirous of giving Your Excellency the earliest notice of whatever comes to my knowledge relating to His Majesty's Service, I yesterday sent off Lieut. Chabert of the Indian department, with some men in a batteau for Niagara, there being no vessel at this place at the time.

He is charged with Letters for your Excellency and the Commanding officer at Niagara, reporting that an Express arrived here the 8th Inst. from Cahokia, with the news of a party of Rebels having surprised Kaskaskias & seized Mr. de Rocheblave the Commandant, whom they have laid in Irons.

The party is reported to amount to three hundred men, but I cannot think they are so numerous, since by what the Express has related, it seems they are but a part of those Marauders who left Fort Pitt last January, under the orders of one Willan, a man who is of one of the best families in Philadelphia, but of infamous character and debauched morals, a proper head for the band of Robbers he has conducted down the Mississippi.

I should judge, that the repulse he met at the Natchez where one of his Boats with six swivels was taken, and thirty of his people killed or taken, joined to the news of four English frigates being in the River's mouth, has altogether induced him to return without getting ammunition at N. Orleáns, which was probably the principal object of his Expedition.

After having taken the submission & oaths of fidelity from the Inhabitants at Kaskaskias, they sent an officer and 30 men to Cahokia, to do the like, & unless they apprehend [encounter] the Savages, will probably send to St. Vincennes for the like purpose.

I yesterday sent away Monsr de Coloron with Belts and Speeches for the Miamis & Ouabash Indians & a particular order to have 4 Iron Cannon which are at St. Vincennes spiked and the Trunnions knocked off, for if they thought of fortifying themselves there, the very name of Cannon would perhaps deter the Indians from attacking them.

In my Letter of the 8th Instant, I have taken the liberty to mention to your Excellency the Expense that must necessarily attend the supporting the Ouabash Indians, & how expedient it must be in case of rupture with the

Spaniards to keep frontier Indians in good temper, who will no doubt be courted by the Spaniards.

Their deputies who were here lately & took up the axe were well pleased with their Reception & promised to act with vigor against the Rebels.

Reports are industriously propagated among the Indians of a War having broke out with France & Spain, we earnestly look out for the arrival of a Vessel, which may bring Intelligence orders, & Instructions.

I mentioned likewise in my last, that the Merchandize for this Post, which was to have been brought up last year is not yet arrived, & that the great quantity of Provisions to be forwarded to this Post, will employ the Shipping to a very late Season, by which the goods to be sent up may be kept back altogether, unless your Excellency thought proper to permit Merchants to bring Batteaus over the Lakes with goods at their own risque.

The commanding officer here, gives his orders for the shipping, having it seems authority from Col. Bolton so to do.

How far it may be right in me to speak my sentiments in a point left to his discretion, I won't pretend to say, but I hope your Excellency will excuse my adverting to what continues still to deserve my concern and attention, tho' I may have orders not to interfere.

My situation is thoro'ly disagreeable at present, however I still look with patience for some instructions by which to guide myself and others.

I have the honor to be with all possible respect, Sir, your Excellency's most devoted and most obedient humble servant.

Henry Hamilton.

Detroit August 11th, 1778.

Endorsed:—Detroit, 1778, No. 9, Letter from Lieut. Govr. Hamilton, the 11th August, recd, 8th Sepr.

[B 122, p. 118.]

TO LIEUT. GOV. CRAMAHE

Detroit, August 12th, 1778.

Sir—When I had the honor of seeing you at Quebec last year, I left in your hands all the papers I could collect relative to Hog Island. If Captain McDougal should prosecute his pretentions in the Courts, I request of you to produce the claims of the inhabitants, which in my humble opinion are sufficient to support their title. An Island being a Royalty, if it has ever been granted from the Crown as a common, I apprehend the Inhabitants have no power to surrender that right, as their posterity would thereby be injured past redress. Till the Law decides however, we must be in suspense, which makes me wish the dispute may be terminated next session.

I have the honor to be, Sir, your most obedient and most humble servant.

HENRY HAMILTON.

Govr. Cramahé.

Endorsed:—From Lieut Govr. Hamilton, 12th August 1778.

[B 122, p. 124.]

TO LIEUT. GOV. CRAMAHE

SIR—You may well imagine how earnestly I look towards Canada for Intelligence, instructions & orders. 'Tis true the Indians continue to act with good temper, unanimity & success, but to say the truth, it is surprizing, considering the state of matters here, the coolness if not disaffection of numbers, the reports of a French and Spanish War, that the Indians are left to themselves, the few I can possibly send out with them being too inconsiderable to be mentioned.

They often apply to me for some Whites to be sent to share their fatigues and dangers my apologies to so reasonable demands can be but specious, and indeed my authority has lately been so cramped, that it will shortly have very little force or influence. While my presence here can contribute to carrying on the service my feeble efforts shall not be wanting, but without countenance and support I must become a cypher and very shortly.

Colol. Bolton has empowered the officer commanding the Troops here to give his orders for the direction of the Vessels, so that the officers consider themselves as dispensed from making me any Report—lately there was not a single Vessel at the Post and I was under the necessity of sending off an Express by water in a Batteau as well as by Land to prevent Miscarriage.

The disposition of the people at this place requires something more than the shadow of authority to keep them in the Bounds of Duty. I have frequently represented the situation I have been left in, hitherto, and that those persons are countenanced who have undergone the censure of the Law, and who must rejoice to see me neglected or opposed.

A storm however threatens, and I won't quit the Deck while I can do the duty of a common man.

I long much to have a line from you, and will endeavor to keep hopes alive.

Adieu my dear Sir, believe me to be with true regard and attachment, your faithfull and very humble servant. My good wishes to Margaret and honest worthy friend Y. D.

HENRY HAMILTON.

Detroit 12th August 78.

Endorsed:—From Lt. Gov. Hamilton 12th August 1778.

[B 22, p 122.]

TO LIEUT. GOV. CRAMAHE

SIR—I trouble you with a number of Papers by this opportunity & request of you to cause such as relate to the Prisoners to be delivered to the Chief Justice as by sending them to the Sheriff at Montreal as heretofore they might miscarry, as has been sometimes the case.—

No 1 is the deposition of a witness taken at Michilimackinac by Major De Peyster, and by him transmitted to this place.

No 2 contains the deposition of the same witness taken before Justice Dejean, in the presence of twenty four Jurors.

No 3 & No 4 certificates produced in Court at this Place to invalidate the Testimony of the aforesaid Witness. I am to observe on these Certificates that the Subscribers had reserv'd their accusation, 'till they thought they might be favorable to the party accused of the Manslaughter or Murder, tho' several Months interven'd.

These four papers relate to the Prisoner Nicholas Thibault alias Lamy Thibault, charged with the murder of a Panis, the only witness is Jean Baptiste Dumet or Dumay—As to the character of the Prisoner, he had maintained a very bad one, instanced in Mr. Dejeau's letter which I know to be grounded on fact.

No 5. The Examination of Michael O'Neil a Volunteer in C. La Mothe's Company, with the opinion of the Jury.

The Witnesses against him are Pierre Le May and Patrick McKinley of the same company, whom I request may be sent back as soon as the Tryal is over.—

No 6 is the return of Indian trade licences.

I transmit also the petition of sundry inhabitants relative to Hog Island, tho' if I recollect, I have already deliver'd you one with other papers on that subject.

Our Law proceedings here are as vague & perhaps irregular as can be, but our situation must excuse & account for it.

We have heard Judge Livins is gone to England, but know not who replaces him.

I shall send down for His Excellency the Commander in Chief, such a state of this Post & Settlement as I can procure, but 'tis in vain for me to give orders for the reasons I have detail'd to you in former letters.

The few American newspapers which I send being of a later date than any from Europe, you may conceive, have furnished surmises to the disaffected here, not likely to produce agreeable effects, I shall watch & seize the first however, who shall dare make a parade of his disloyalty.

A Brother of Girty (the Interpreter who made his escape from Fort Pitt with Captain McKie) came in here a day or two ago, he says the Delawares still go to Fort Pitt, but 'tis only 'till their corn be ripe enough to allow their moving to the head of the Scioto a place pointed out for them by the Six Nations. If they do remove the Frontiers will repent it severely.

Girty's Brother adds, that there are at least 400 Indians assembled to attack the Fort of Kentucke where Captain Boone was taken last year and that several large parties of Indians range the banks of the Ohio.

I have taken every step in my power to intercept the Batteaus from the Mississippi on their return, parties having been sent six weeks ago for that purpose. I am in hopes to have a good account of them. I beg leave to remark that three Batteaux Loads of goods have been brought up in the last vessel from Fort Erie on behalf a Trader at Michilimackinac. As the officers commanding at each Post on the communication have probably received particular orders relative to passing Merchants' goods, I should be glad to know what they are, as a partiallity for a particular person may draw complaints and occasion Jealousy.

I have the honor to be, Sir, Your most obed't and very humble Serv't

Detroit 17th August '78— HENRY HAMILTON.

Governor Cramahé.

Endorsed: Detroit No. 12. From Lieut. Governor Hamilton 17th Augt 1778. To Lieut. Govr Cramahé. Mentioning to have sent 6 papers concerning a criminal, but were not given to Genl. Haldimand, also a return of Indian Traders Licences.

[B 122, p 125.]

TO GENL. HALDIMAND.

SIR—Having Just received an account of Your Excellency's safe arrival at Quebec, I take the earlyest opportunity of presenting my duty full respects, & of congratulating your Excellency on the choice His Majesty has made in appointing you to the distinguished post of Commander in Chief of this province.

As soon as possible I shall have the honor to transmit a state of this settlement, & of the different posts dependent, as also of the Militia, the Indian Department, Volunteers, &c.

A Plan of the Fort with the alterations which have been made since the month of November 1775 shall be prepared & sent off this autumn if possible.

The Indian Nations in general who resort to this place have acted with great chearfullness & unanimity.

The Delawares are least to be depended on, tho' lately some of them have declared their resolution to act against the Rebels, & but a few days since one of their parties which had been at war brought in fifteen scalps to this place.

Many of the War Parties bring in Prisoners, and have shewn a humanity hitherto unpracticed among them, they never fail of a gratuity on every proof of obedience they shew, in sparing the lives of such as are incapable defending themselves.

A Prisoner brought in here by the Shawanese lately, who was taken near one of the Forts on the River Kentucke, tells me the Rebels were lately reinforced with three Companies each of 70 men.

There are three different forts on that river & a forth has been begun lately at its conflux with the Ohio.

The Shawanese who are very Jealous of such incroachments, have drawn together a considerable number of Warriors with design to attack them, by the last accounts their numbers amount to upwards of 400. Monsieur de Quindre a Lieutenant of the Indian Department who went to carry them ammunition & took ten white men with him, writes me word that a deserter from the Virginians declares that the Rebels have lately been vanquished in every quarter by the King's Troops, that they are in the utmost distress for cloathing and other necessaries & that they are wearied out & unable to support the war any longer.

A letter sent by Major De Peyster from Michilimackinac confirms the account of the Rebels having taken possession of Cascaskias & Cahokia on the Mississippi.

As to the Spaniards, however willing to take a part against the English, I apprehend the depredations of the Rebels in their neighborhood may make them backward in encouraging them, for I hear that some Spaniards were at a conference between some of the Indians from St. Joseph and the Rebels at Kaskaskias, that they listened to what passed without saying a word till the Rebel speakers went away, when they told the Indians not to listen to those people, for that they were unable to perform the promises they had made them.

For the French Inhabitants, at all the out Posts, I firmly believe there is not one in twenty, whose oath of allegiance would have force enough to bind him to his duty, added to this that the greatest part of the traders among them who are called English, are rebels in their hearts.

Mr. de Rocheblave having fallen into the hands of the Rebels, is an unfortunate circumstance for his Majesty's interest in those parts, his understanding, experience and authority over a troublesome set of people, render'd him thoroughly capable of managing such subjects. No Intelligence from the

Illinois or Post Vincennes has been communicated since my last by express, but I shall not be surprised to hear that the Rebels are driven away, nor shall I be surprised to hear they are well received. The Indians are very well able to effect the first, the French very capable of the last, & they would gladly receive the idea of a French father with the Indians, tho' they have enjoyed advantages under an English Government, they were formerly strangers to.

One Chevalier a Frenchman, who lives at St. Joseph has lately written to me & to Major de Peyster at Michilimakinac on the subject of the Poutconattuamies going to the Illinois to confer with the Rebels and Spaniards. He is the person to whom is attributed the assassination of several traders at St Joseph, & as I have not the least confidence in him, have sent his letter to Major de Peyster, that he may compare his two accounts which I dare say will be found to vary.

Whenever the means are in my hands to root out Mr. Chevallier, I shall not let an opportunity pass by.

Sir—I have the honor to enclose to your Excellency a list of Indian goods lately purchased from Messrs. Alexander & William Macomb; with the remainder in store, being partly what was sent last year design'd for a present (but which only received this year) and partly what has been purchased at different times to answer the exigencies of the Indian Department. The voucher showing the prices paid for the principal articles accompanying this. Prices are very high at this place, on account of the current prices I have been used to sent down at different times, that the Commander in Chief might (if he judged proper) order an enquiry with regard to purchases made on account of the Crown.

Mr. Macomb deserves that I should add thus much on this subject, when I had occasion to make purchases of provisions & goods on account of the Crown, the traders in general refused or scrupl'd to accept my orders & drafts, this person made no hesitation & from the beginning of the year 1776 to the present time has furnished goods at a more reasonable rate than any other Merchant. If his prices are compared with goods taken up for the Crown at other Posts, I am well assured they will be found more moderate. The distance and risque from Niagara to this place might make a considerable difference in Mr. Macomb's charges. I am informed he has sold cheaper *here* than they have at Niagara.

He has never charged commission or expences, tho' he has given himself a vast deal of trouble in the purchase of Indian corn, flour, cattle &c. He has advanced on the Credit of the Crown to the amount of 12,000 £ N. York Currency at one time, tho' his place was at that period, threatened with an attack by the Rebels.

While I enlarge on this subject, I but do justice to a perfectly honest man, who I believe has so far defied Envy, as to have the suffrages of his rivals in trade.

His Excellency Genl. Carleton was pleased to order that the Merchandize engaged by Mr. Macomb should be forwarded over the carrying places on the communication in preference (after the King's stores and provisions) to other Goods. The season is now very far advanced, and the attention to an order delivered long since will receive sufficient force, should your Excellency be pleased to give your sanction to a person who has asked more disinterestedly than is common with a set of people, whose secondary object is generally their reputation, their primary one, gain.

Your Excellency will I hope excuse my troubling you on a variety of subjects, but from the peculiar situation I have been in, it has been impossible for me to get an answer, much less satisfaction on most of the objects of my concern since I have been at this place, I am therefore under an indispensible necessity of being prolix, tho' I must know your Excellency's time is called for upon a multiplicity of subjects of Public and private busyness. Late in November 1775 the Chippowey was wrecked on the southern coast of Lake Erie, Lieut. Col. Caldwell judged it expedient to have her cargo destroyed, Mr. Adhemar St. Martin was the principal sufferer on this occasion, his loss upwards of four hundred Pounds. A Memorial in his behalf was sent from this place, but he has never heard of its having been attended to.

He has a large family with a good reputation for its chief, almost only support. His losses by the Government, hitherto unrepair'd, have distress'd him in a degree I need not paint to Your Excellency, loss of goods, loss of opportunity, while the Traders on every side are enriching themselves in this time of trouble, and he has known of upwards of 100 pr. ct. given for articles indispensibly necessary to the service, and render'd valuable by their great scarcity, Pitch, Tallow, Salt, sugar, soap ½ a dollar the lb. Powder £30 and £40 the ct. I humbly recommend Mr. Adhemar therefore to your Excellency's compassionate feeling for his distress.

Sir—On the 29th Decr. 1775 I gave an order on Brigadier General Robertson for £109 0s 0d y. currency being for firewood for the Garrison; and on the 14th Jany. 1776 another order for £126 17s 6d for the like article. That gentleman has thought proper to protest them both.

Mr. Hay Deputy Barrack Master writes particularly on the subject to Mr. Murray the Barrack Master at Quebec, who will lay the transaction before your Excellency that I have ordered payment at this place, that His Majesty's service may suffer as little as possible.

General Robertson has been content to protest without assigning any cause or giving any notice.

Last February two traders of this place were detected in sending off goods to the post of Sandusky without a pass, using the sanction of a permit signed by me for a *certain* quantity of goods, I ordered the goods to be sold and the produce to be apply'd to the payment of a fine of 200 dollars each. Mr. Abbott, one of the traders having consulted Mr. William Grant at Quebec (who he tells me is Attorney General), an opinion is given against me by Mr. Grant. The necessity, however, of obliging the traders to a compliance with the regulations of this Post, agreeable to the Tenor of Sir Guy Carleton's passports, obliges me (with all due deference and respect to Mr. Attorney General's opinion in writing) to persist in this strict treatment of Traders who act against orders, as to my knowledge the Enemies of the Crown are supply'd or have been from this place, proofs of which I am possess'd of. I am to observe to your Excellency that a person is appointed here for the application of these arbitrary fines, which are employed for the serivce of the public, and an account kept of the disbursement open to the inspection of everybody. I expect to be represented in proper colors to your Excellency, and Mr. Abbott has my liberty to go down to Mr. Grant for a revisal of his opinion.

Mr. La Mothe not being yet arrived, who was so long delayed at Quebec for orders, I have been constrained to trouble your Excellency on some points which I ardently wish to find settled on his arrival.

A very able and amiable person (Mr. Owen) was destined for the place of Judge at this Post, his absence which I have sufficient cause to lament, has occasion'd me to act at the risque of being reprehensible on many occasions. The loss of so estimable a man as Mr. Owen must be doubly felt, while I am obliged to act as Judge & in several cases Executor of Justice (there is no Executioner or Gaoler, nor is a Gaol yet built, tho' greatly wanted).

I should be inexcusable if I omitted to acquaint your Excellency, how much I have been indebted to the attention and knowledge of Mr. Hay, the Deputy Agent for Indian affairs, to his acquaintance with the Indians at this Post, and his information on various subjects relative to this settlement I am to attribute my having been able to manage the Savages, for without his assistance I should have been totally at a loss on many occasions—to great diligence he adds a great chearfullness & readyness to act in every capacity for the good of the service. I must be obliged to him for the plan I purpose sending down to your Excellency, being myself unqualified. As, to the alterations about the Fort, I have in all of them consulted Mr. Hay, being fully conscious of his being judicious and capable.

Mr. Dejeau who has been Justice of the Peace here for a long time, is indefatigable, but he as well as myself requires to be better informed and better supported I shew him all the countenance I am able, but till my own authority be on a proper foundation, it can serve him but little.

The incessant calls on one occasion or another, prevent my acquiring the knowledge I would wish to gain of this Post & its dependencies, so that whatever information I may venture at giving Your Excellency beyond the limits of the settlement, I must premise are from hearsay & to say the truth, I can know but little du local, having not slept a single night out of the Fort. When opportunity shall offer any enquiries Your Excellency shall order to be made will be set on foot with the greatest cheerfullness.

Commissions for the officers of Militia, those in the Indian department, Interpreters, Mr de Celoron, Captain La Mothe, my own Commission for the Peace &c. have not yet appeared. no orders have yet been given for building a Barrack for the seamen, hands are so scarce, that however willing I cannot yet form a Magazine of timber for the shipping &c.

I have been obiged to buy all the Powder for Indians this year, their consumption with all possible economy was last year 8000 lb.

A General return of Horses and Provisions accompanies this, & I have the honor to transmit also to your Excellency the return of Barracks, Militia, volunteers &c.

Governor Cramahé has letters from me explaining the cause of my not being able to send to Your Excellency the state of the Naval department, I shall therefore decline troubling you excepting with the assurance that my best endeavours shall at all times be exerted for his Majesty's service.

I have the honor to be with the most profound respect, Sir, Your Excellency's most devoted and most obedient humble Servant

HENRY HAMILTON.

The state of the settlement taken by order of the Lieutenant Governor, Detroit, April 26th, 1778.

Men	564
Women	274
Young men and boys	530
Young women and girls	438
Male servants	172
Female servants	39
Slaves	127
Total	2,144

Oxen	478
Cows	885
Heifers and steers	650
Sheep	470
Hogs	1,312

Endorsed:—Detroit, No. 13; Lieut.-Gov'r Hamilton without date, received at Sorel the 27th Sept., 1778; supposed to be the 5th September.

[B 122, p 184.]

Prices current at Detroit 5th Sept., 1778.

Flour	60s the ct.	Grease	3s pr lb.
Wheat	20s pr bushel.	Tallow	3s lb.
Corn	20s do	Pease	20s pr bushel.
Rum	32s gallon.	Gunpowder	6s pr lb.
Tobacco	12s lb.	Ball	£8, 8s p C.
Beef	18d pr lb.	Slaves, from 180 to 260 Pounds, N. Y. Curr.	
Pork	2s lb.		

HENRY HAMILTON,
Lieut.-Gov'r & Superintendent.

Endorsed:—Prices current at Detroit 5th Sept., 1778, enclosed in Lieut.-Gov'r Hamilton's letter; without date but supposed to be the beginning of September & rec'd the 27th at Sorel; marked Detroit No. 13.

[B 122, p 143.]

List of officers, Interpreters, &ca., in the Indian Department, District of Detroit, Sept'r 5th, 1778.

Jehu Hay, Esq're	Deputy Agent.
Alexander McKee	Captain and Interpreter.
Duperon Baby	do
Charles Reaume	do
Isidore Chesne	do
Jacob Schieffelin	Lieutenant.
Frontenay Dequindre	do
Antoine Dequindre	do
Francois Dequindre	do
Francois Chabert	do
Louis Jencaire	do
Claude Labate	do
Joseph Bondy	do
William Tucker	Interpreter for the Ottawas & Chippewas.
Pierre Drouillard	Interpreter for the Hurons.
Simon Girty	Interpreter for the Six Nations.
Medard Gamelin	Store keeper.
Etienne Ballard	Smith.
Augustin Lefoi	Extra do

At Sandusky	Francois Dyelle	Smith.
At the Miamee	Charles Beaubien	Interpreter.
	Louis Duplesis	Smith.
At Ouiattanon for the nations there	Monsieur de Celoron	Command't.
	Le fevre Chapaw	Smith.

HENRY HAMILTON,
Lieut.-Gov'r & Superintend't.

Endorsed:—List of officers: Indian Depar't District of Detroit, 5 Sept., 1778. Enclosed in Lieut.-Gov'r Hamilton's letter without date but supposed to be the beginning of September & rec'd the 27th at Sorel; marked Detroit No. 13.

[B 122, p 144.]

A List of Goods on hand for the Indian Department, Detroit, 5 *September,* 1778.

30	Boxes Ball, bar lead & shot.
300	lbs Pewter Bassins.
500	lb Vermillion.
150	doz scalping knives.
100	doz paper Looking glasses.
50	Pieces striped Callimancœs.
134	Pieces linnens, different qualities.
12	Pieces 5-4 Striped cottons.
72	yellow & white lencil laced Hats.
72	plain felt ditto.
700	lbs Brass Kettles.
200	lbs Copper camp do.
40	lbs brass Wire.
350	lbs Indian Beads.
560	yards Oranaburgs.
20	doz black silk Handkfs.
150	fine 3 point Blankets.
100	com. 3 point ditto.
200	com. 2 point ditto.
200	com. 1½ point ditto.
200	com. 1 point ditto.
60	pieces blue strouds.
4	pieces crimson & scarlet strouds.
4	pieces scarlet cloth.
2	pieces fine blue strouds.
4	pieces blue & light coating, fine.
2	pieces white flannell.
6	pieces white penistone.
10	pieces blue ditto.
9	pieces brown ditto.
20	pieces embossed serge.
4	pieces plain swanskin.
4	pieces spotted ditto.
2	doz. Gun Sacks.
2	doz finer ditto.
24	doz. steel spurs.
1	Gro. brass Thimbles.
2	doz Paper snuff boxes.
2	doz steel ditto, spring Tobacco boxes.
2	Gro. Indian Auls.

40	Gro. Indian gartering, assorted.
20	Gro. bed lace, ditto.
400	yards tincel Lace.
24	doz com. horn Combs.
12	doz. Ivory ditto.
20	lbs coloured thread.
10	lbs white ditto.
6	M com. Needles.
60	pieces Indian Ribbond.
2	Boxes pipes, 32 gro.
100	N. West Fuzells.
6	Cutteau de chasse with Belts comp'l.
4	Pairs Pistols.
6	fine fowling pieces, long.
2,000	com. 2½ point Blankets.
300	fine 2½ point ditto.
4	pieces fine black stroud.
6	pieces brown, blue & green Batteen.
1,400	fine, } 2,000 lbs Gunpowder.
600	coarse,
37	Bars Swedes Iron.
2	Fagots steel.
1,600	Gallons West India Rum.
5	pieces Muzlins.
30	pieces Callicoe.
12	Saddles.
6	ditto with shag seats.
6	fine blue housing with fringe.
6	saddle cloths.
6	doz. snafel Bridles.
3	doz. d'ble reign'd curb ditto.
24	Gro. Morris bells.
2	Gro. fire steels.
20	Gro. Gun worms.
20	Gro. finger Rings.
36	doz clasp Knives.
16	doz Toy ditto, enambled.
5	doz raizors.
40	Tin Kettles.
6	M English Gun Flints.

EXCLUSIVE OF THE ABOVE NOW IN STORE.

2,000	lbs of Powder.
35	p's of stroud.
150	Fusees.
77½	pr of 11 pt Blankets.
31	pr. of 1 pt do.
8	pr. of 11 pt do.
71	pr. of 1 pt do.
8	pieces of striped cotton.
8	doz of Callimanco Bed Gowns.
6	p's of Callimanco.
200	Shirts.
80	lbs of Rose Pink.

420	Canotts of Tobacco.
1,900	lbs of Shott, Ball & Bar lead.
50	Axes & Tomahawks.
50	Hoes.
24	Copper Kettles.
6	Saddles.
36	Bridles.
10	Gross of knives of sorts.
50	Capots.
100	Gallons of Rum.
50	lbs of Vermillion.
20	pieces of Callico.

And many small articles such as Gun Screws, Flints, Combs, looking Glasses, thread, awls' thimbles, Ringes, Crosses, Coat Buttons, Powder Horns, one piece of scarlet cloth & £350 worth of Silver works—N. Y. currency.

HENRY HAMILTON,
Lieut.-Gov'r & Superintend't.

Endorsed:—List of Indian Goods remaining at Detroit the 5th Sep'r, 1778.

[B 122, p 145.]

DETROIT, September 5th, 1778.

Return of the Barracks and Furniture, Bedding, Utensils, etc., in the Barrack Master's General Department at this Post.

State.	Barracks and Furniture.																			Bedding.					Iron Utensils, Etc.														
	Officers' Rooms.	Soldiers' Rooms.	Guard Houses.	Doors with hinges, etc.	Locks and Keys.	Tables.	Forms.	Racks for Arms.	Hanging Shelves.	Ash Boxes.	Water Buckets.	Chairs.	Births for four Men.	Births for two Men each.	Blinds.	Window Shutters.	Windows.	Window Sashes.	Panes of Glass.	Pairs of Sheets.	Bed Cases.	Bolster Cases.	Ruggs.	Blankets.	Iron Kettles and Pots Sound.	Iron Kettles and Pots Cracked.	Iron Trammells.	Pairs of End Irons.	Pairs of Tongs.	Fire Shovels.	Candlesticks.	Felling Axes.	Iron Wedges.	Mason's Hammers.	Grindstones.	Iron Spindle and Handle fixed.	Iron Mawl Rings.	Marking Irons.
Serviceable............	8	12	2	54	42	27	31	14	12	18	30	24	25	6	25	15	85	120	1,080	159	112	90	93	173	22	10	96	30	74	55	19	24	5	1	1	1	4	1

HENRY HAMILTON,
Lieut. Govr. & Superintendt.

JEHU HAY,
Actg. Barrack Master.

Endorsed: Barrack Return 1778, 5 September, enclosed in Lieut. Govr. Hamilton's letter without date, but supposed to be the beginning of September & recd. the 27th at Sorel, marked Detroit, No. 13.

[B 122, p. 157.]

List of officers of Militia at Detroit 5th September, 1778.

Jehu Hay, Esq'r, Major to the six Companies.

CAPTAINS.

Gregor McGregor, Capt & Adjutant in the place of James Sterling.
Joseph Bondy.
Alexis Mais-onville in the place of pierre reaume, dismissed.
Jean B'le Campeau in the place of Jacques Campeau, resigned.
Charles Morand in the place of J. B'te Chapaton, resigned.
Medard Gamelin in the place of Joseph Gamelin, incapable.

Lieutenants—James Renkin, William Sterling, Augustin La foy, James Cassety, Joseph Cardinal, J. B'te Chapanton, Jun'r, Francis Drouillard, J. B'te Reaume, J. B'te Licot, Francis Gamelin, Claude Reaume, J. B'te Beaubin, Banaventure Reaume, Francis Marantete godette, Pierre St. lorne Charles Gouin, Joseph Reaume, Francis Bartelett.

Medard Gamelin, Adjutant to the five companies, without the fort.

HENRY HAMILTON,
Lieut.-Gov'r & Superintend't.

Endorsed:—List of officers of Militia at Detroit 5th September, 1778. Enclosed in Lieut.-Gov'r Hamilton's letter without date but supposed to be the beginning of September & received the 27th at Sorel, Marked Detroit No. 13.

[B 122, p. 149.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

DETROIT Sept 9th 1778

SIR—Your Excellencys Letters of the 2nd 6th & 10th of August, I had the honor of receiving on the 8th Inst when Captain Grant arrived in the Gage by which vessel came also Captain Shanks, Mr Bellefeuille, Mr La Mothe the Master builder & several Passengers.

The Letter of the 2nd mentions the causes of Mr La Mothe's detention in Canada, that gentleman is preparing to go on a Scout & I am in hopes will have found his company well prepared to act, they are young vigorous men & express an eager desire to be employed.

Mr La Mothe is extremely sensible to your Excellency's goodness for him, & I beg leave to express my thankfullness for the countenance & encouragement you have been pleased to shew him.

Your Excellency's Letter of the 6th referring to letters of different dates addressed to Sir Guy Carleton & conveying your opinion with answers to several points contained in them, has made me very happy as I waited with the utmost impatience, unable to account for so long a silence.

The cautions, instructions & orders you are pleased to favor me with, shall be attended to most scrupulously, and that attention paid to the Expences which your Excellency recommends. 'Tis sufficient that Mr. Bellefeuille has Your Excelency's good opinion for me to look for an opportunity of rend'ring him any service in my power, as there is not any person appointed here as surveyor of the roads & bridges, of which there are a great number, perhaps it might appear to your Excellency a proper appointment, I shall wait your orders on that head, in the interim I shall be happy to shew Mr Bellefeuille every civillity in my power.

I am to observe to your Excellency, I have never taken upon me to grant lands at this place, on the contrary, I convened the principal Inhabitants & the chiefs of the neighboring nations, read to them the Proclamation relative to purchases from the Indians and told them that no deeds should be considered as valid till passed by the authority of the Chief Governor, registered at Quebec and enter'd at the office in this place, further that they should be drawn out fair on Parchment & publickly witnessed by the Chiefs of the respective nations.

'Tis true I have allowed necessitous persons with large families to till land for present subsistence but with this caution that they must not look on that Tempory indulgence as a grant, & that any fences or buildings they should raise would be destroyed or removed whenever it was thought necessary.

I write to Coll Bolton by this opportunity to inform him that on his requisition any assistance necessary for the assistance of Coll Butler that can be sent from this Post, whether of Volunteers, Militia of Indians shall be sent while the season will permit.

I have the honor to be, with the most profound respect, Sir Your Excellency's most obedient and most humble servant,

HENRY HAMILTON.

His Excellency Genl Haldimand &c. &c.

Endorsed: Detroit No. 14 1778 From Lieut Govr Hamilton of the 9th Septr. recd 5th Octr.

[B 122, p. 152.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

SIR—As soon as time will permit, I shall have the honor to transmit to Your Excellency Copies of the orders I have received from Head Quarters, from the Time of my quitting Montreal in the Month of September 1775 to the date of your Excellency's first letter received the 8th September 1778.

I have the honor to be with profound respect Sir, Your Excellency's most obedient humble Servant

HENRY HAMILTON.

DETROIT Sept'r 9th 1778.

His Excellency Gen'l Haldimand.

Endorsed: Detroit No 15 1778.
From Lieut. Gov'r Hamilton of the 9th Sep'r rec'd 5th Oct'r.

[B 122, p. 155]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

DETROIT 16th Sept'r 1778.

SIR—Your Excellency's letter of the 26th & 27th August were delivered to me last night by Captain Betton who has had a remarkable quick passage in the Dunmore.

I have the honor to assure Your Excellency that every means in my power shall be used to second your intentions with regard to the Indians of the Ouabash & the Invaders at the Illinois, & *Post Vincennes* (for intelligence is arrived from the Miamis, the Rebels had sent three Persons to that place & have nominated three Frenchmen of that settlement to act for them & Mayette as Commandant, Baron as Major & Monbrun as Lieutenant.)

I have this account from Monsieur de Celoron whose letter I shall send for Your Excellency's perusal keeping a Copy.

As to the Savages of the Ouabash, it must be supposed they cannot relish the invasion of the Virginians, as the purchase from the Piankashaws gave a general disgust & I hear they now reproach the Piankashaws with having enticed the Virginians into the country.

Mr. Charles Baubin employed for His Majesty at the Miamis writes that the Savages at St. Vincennes will not take the Rebels by the hand, that the Delawares, Illinois, Outawas & Chaonanoes were determined to strike the Rebels, but the Piankashaws interfered the latter want to know the determination of the Quiquaboes & Quiattanons, he adds that the French are said to be in the interest of the Rebels.

25th August a party of 15 Miamis went to war towards the Ohio, 5 Sep'r another of a chief & 30 men, the 6th Baubin himself with five Chippawas & 15 Miamis for Post Vincennes.

Captain Lernoult has promised me every aid in his power & as I purpose going with the Indians, I hope to be able to keep up their good disposition. I rely much on the experience & zeal of the gentleman who has been deputy agent here & is well regarded by them.

I have an account that the Shawanese with Mr. DeQuindre to the amount of 300 had divided into two parties for the purpose of attacking two rebel forts on the Kentucke. He is expected in about 14 days at this place.

This day I have written to Major de Peyster acquainting him that I should set off in about 12 days & requesting him to engage his Indians to cooperate by the way of the Illinois River I shall send a message to St. Joseph to the same effect.

17th Sep'r. The water of the Miamis is reported to be extraordinary low, but the weather having lately changed it may be expected to rise, and by the time the Equinoctial gales are blown over that there will be water sufficient.

As I expect to get off by the first of October, I am to request of your Excellency that any letters you may please to send with design to be first read by Capt'n Lernoult, may have a flying seal.

Sir—finding from correspondents at Ouiattonon & the Miamis, that the Ouabash and other Indians are averse to the Virginians settling at the Illinois, I concluded no time was to be lost in supporting & encouraging them, especially as by the letter I receive from the Miamis it appears that the French are too much disposed to favor the Rebels. I purpose carrying a present for the Savages as little bulky as possible.

Several articles necessary for such an enterprise had been forwarded long since, so that the time necessary for convening the Chiefs & settling matters for departure may be easily calculated.

Your Excellency is no doubt aware that in an undertaking depending so much on Indians, and in a settlement where I am but too sensible there are many disaffected persons, secrecy is impracticable, I hope notwithstanding to second your Excellency's views by preventing the Rebels from confirming themselves at Illinois.

That part of your Excellency's letter mentioning Mr Bently leads me to think some material papers relative to his affairs have never been presented to you, for beside those trifling corrobatives of the Indian and Negro, there were sent from this place, several depositions taken on oath at Kaskaskias, forwarded to me by Mr de Rocheblave, as well as papers found on Mr Bently when searched by my order—Captain Lernoult will pay due attention to any of his Engages or other persons employed for him, as well as to the several instructions & notices conveyed in the letters of the 26th & 27th August.

Some time since I had called in all the traders at the Sandoske as their commerce with the Virginians appear'd thro' all their concealments. My design was to fix persons of character & well disposed to Government, and gradually to withdraw all petty traders from every post as a trifling advantage or a scurvy bribe can generally purchase their sordid souls. Captain Lernoult and Captain Grant give me every possible assistance, and I see none but cheerfull faces since the scout has been mentioned.—I am to meet the Chiefs in council this morning, after which Captn Lernoult will send off the Angelica to Fort Erie.

As I mean to consult with the headmen on the numbers necessary to be taken with us, I hope to leave for your Excellency a return of the Effectives for the enterprise. Since last May the Indians in this district have taken

34 Prisoners 17 of which they delivered up and 81 scalps, several prisoners taken and adopted not reckoned in this number.

The weather has not permitted the Savages to assemble this day, and a vessel being ready to sail I shall defer to the next opportunity the account I had proposed sending of their determination, numbers &c.

I have the honor to be with the most profound respect, Sir, Your Excellency's most devoted and most obedient, humble Servant

HENRY HAMILTON.

Detroit 17th Septr 12 noon.

Endorsed: Detroit No 16 1778. From Lieut Govr Hamilton of the 16th & 17th Sept recd 5th Octr inclosing a letter from Mons. Celoron of the 28th May at the Miamis.

[B 122, p. 156.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Detroit Sep 22nd 1778.

SIR—I have the honor to acquaint your Excellency that the preparatives for our little enterprize are forwarding with alacrity. This day 15 large Pirogues capable of transporting from 1800 to 3000 lbs each, having had a thoro' repair set off for Wold Rapid where cattle and wheels are likewise sent to expedite the carriage at that portage. Biscuit is baked, provisions packed in small barrels or bags, the Militia Companies drafted, artillery stores prepared, boats mending and all that can be thought on, put forward.

If it be possible to move off on the 1st of the next month, I shall use my best endeavours to do it. I cannot foresee (tho' I shall provide against) any inclemency of the weather which ought to prevent our taking and maintaining a post, till reinforcements can join us, light cannon, and an able Engineer (as I must profess my own want of knowledge in a branch which requires abilities which I could never pretend to) are capital points.

I purpose taking presents not only for the Ouabash and more Western Indians, but to encourage the Delawares, Mingoes & Shawanese to keep good watch towards the banks of the Ohio during the winter the season when the Savages are usually dispersed for hunting.

If the Western Indians express their resentment for the inroad of the Rebels into their Country, this will be a noble opportunity to build a Fort on so important a spot as the Forks at the conflux of the Ohio & Mississippi, which may be in future a bridle on the Americans of whatever denomination or interest.

The falls on the Ohio are another important pass, which I believe the Rebels will not omit to secure and fortify, the Forks of the Théakiki are a third object with the mouth of the Missouri for keeping in temper, the only way of subjecting savages here we might undersell the Spaniards.

As there are points perhaps too difficult to be attempted in our present situation, perhaps liable to objection in any, I mention them with that distrust and diffidence which my humble station and abilities demand—it would however make me very happy to think a proposal of the kind should meet with your Excellency's approbation and that I could be in the slenderest degree a means of promoting the honor & interest of my King & country.

The Spaniards are feeble and hated by the French, the French are fickle and have no man of capacity to advise or lead them, the Rebels are enterprizing & brave, but want resources, and the Indians can have their resources but from the English if we act without loss time in the favourable conjuncture.

This may appear a picture with strong lights & little or no shade, but as the effects of pushing a force supported by the zeal of the Indians (who have hitherto acted with perfect compliance) have not yet been tryed, I hope to be excused if perhaps too sanguine.

The most considerable of the French in this settlement have shewn a very good example, & 'tis better followed than I had expected, the appearance of a reinforcement from Niagara will fortify them in their good disposition.

I design forming a depot at the Miamis, but shall take a survey of the Portage before I fix on its being on this or the other side of the carrying place: should the Indians act with zeal for us, it shall be on the other side, if cooly on this.

An account of the numbers which leave this place shall be transmitted to your Excellency by the next vessel which goes to Fort Erie, the savages are to give their answer this day.

Some working oxen and horses set off this day for the Miamis to forward the transport of provisions at that carrying place.

Major Hay (of the Militia not yet confirmed from Head Quarters tho' his Commission & those of the other officers in the Militia & Indian department were sent down above a year since for the Commander in Chief's approbation) and Lieut Du Vernet R. R. A. Ely will commit to paper their remarks upon their communication from this to the Illinois, and should any occur to me on our progress I shall venture to communicate them to your Excellency, trusting to your candor & indulgence for the errors, omissions & incorrectness which want of information, hurry, or my want of Judgment may occasion.

Several appointments with pay taking place on this occasion, a list of them shall be prepared for your Excellency, and I hope shall appear not too lightly undertaken.

Sepr 23rd 1778. This day I met the Outáwas, the Chippoweys and Poutcouattamies in Council by their own appointment, present Capt. Lernoult, Lieut Shourd and the Interpreters. The Hurons were to have come but the bad weather prevented them, however the Outáwas spoke with a sort of resentment at their failing to meet as agreed upon. Some days ago I had called the chiefs together & without directly asking them to join me, had told them I was going to rise up to keep my word with the Ouabash Indians, who had taken up the axe of their Father the King, had accepted his Medals & professed their attachment to the English. I further informed them that my hands were loosed by your orders, that I should no longer consider myself as a Village Chief, and that Capt Lernoult would act the part of a father to them in my absence, this with the mustering the militia, pressing all the craft on the river and other preparations inform'd them sufficiently of my design of going to war. I had previous intelligence of some designs to traverse the good dispositions of the Indians who at these times have always been tampered with, two lieutenants of the Militia who have betray'd a backwardness I have broke & ordered to do their courvée. James Cassety an Irishman & Francois Marantete a Frenchman.

Your Excellency will receive inclosed an extract of the Council.

The copies of orders mention'd in your Excellency's letter of the 6th of August shall be transmitted as soon as my present hurry will permit & should I be too much press'd in time, Captain Lernoult will send them by the earlyest opportunity.

Sepr 24th. The oath of allegiance was tendered to the Volunteers from the different Companies who appeared to the number of 75, to the officers of Militia & of the newly formed Companies &c.

In the afternoon the Indians had an ox and Captain Lernoult with several of the officers & principal inhabitants assisted at their feast.

Sepr. 25th. A chief of the Poutconattamies took charge of a letter and message for St. Joseph's. From Major de Peyster's opinion of Louis Chevallier, I have written to Chevallier in a style to prompt him to deserve a confidence I must own there is much reason to think ill placed, at all events there is no other person there can engage the Pouconattomies to act, and as Interest in his Deity, perhaps he may reconcile his worship with his Duty.

26th. I gave Capt McKee a message & present of Ammunition for the Shawanese who are under Mr. De Quindre and have not yet broke up their little seige.

This evening Mr. Charles Beaubin came in from the Miamis, letters which he brought mention one Clarke with 80 men being at St. Vincennes where the French receive them well. The Indians at Ouiattanon as yet undecided & timorous, I shall lose no time to encourage them.

Should I arrive time enough at Ouiattonon to speak to the Chiefs before they take a decisive part, I don't doubt the sight of the Chiefs from the Lakes will determine them as I could wish.

I hope to have your Excellency's approbation for a step I mean to take with the air of authority & support, which is to cancel the bargain made for the land of the Bankashaws, the effect of this with that nation & those of Ouabash will probably be to beget a confidence in the English, as the French & Virginians have been jointly concerned in an underhand purchase, unauthorized by His Majesty.

Gibault the Priest has been active for the Rebels, I shall reward him if possible.

27th. Ordered a Lieut of the Indian Department with a small party of the Militia to the Miamis to assist the workmen in repairing the carrying place, assisting the Master Carpenter, Boat builder &c, with written instructions.

Monsieur de Celoron writes that Jean Babtiste Chapoton (late a Captain of Militia at this place) Bosseron Qunior, Junior & Monss Le Gras are on the best terms imaginable with the Rebel officers at St. Vincennes.

This last person had been equipped at this place, was in partnership at Detroit, and had received favors at the hands of the English & French at this place, not to say anything of Governor Abbotts kindness to him.

Mr. J. B. Chapoton was dismissed at his own request on the pretense of being too old to fullfill the functions of his place. He has exceeded the terms expressed in his pass, so that he proves himself a worthy associate of Mr. La Gras, in perjury treason & ingratitude.

My determination is to set out as soon as possible Captain Lernoult will send forward any reinforcement, thus the time spent in indian councils (which are sometimes very deliberate) May be employed at the Miamis, in fortifying that Depot, calling in the Indians, building craft, and storehouses, and procuring intelligence.

Captain McKee has orders to make enquiry what is doing at the falls on the ohio, his information shall be forwarded by express if necessary.

Expresses shall be sent to Niagara from time to time, thro' the Winter. I am persuaded troops may be forwarded to the Southward all times, the Winters are mild & the Rebels are not so well clothed as we. Good arms are our greatest want.

I shall use every means in my power to communicate with Mr. Stuart, but believe it will be scarce practicable.

Sir, it is with due deference I take the liberty to mention what occurs to me at present relative to the post at the Miamis.

There will be a store of provisions, perhaps of ammunition & Indian goods at that place, as soon as I arrive there I shall order a Redoubt to be thrown up the houses to be fortified, or such other precaution taken for its defence, as may appear best suited to the number of Inhabitants and nature of the Ground.

If the Rebels at Fort Pitt with the assistance of the Delawares in their interest could effect the surprize of such a place, they would not only possess themselves of our magazine but cut off *one* of our communications with Detroit, as we might in that case be obliged to return by the way of St. Joseph & be distress'd for Provision; I shall represent this to Capt Lernoult who will judge how far a detachment sent from Detroit to the Miamis, will be a cover to Detroit and facilitate and secure our correspondence and communication.

The weakness of the Garrison of Detroit is known to Your Excellency, I need not therefore dwell on that subject, but at *all events* I shall proceed, guided by the best information I can procure. Among several persons very capable of informing as to the nature of the country and character of the inhabitants, Mr. Alexis Maisonville is perhaps the most so & I must render that justice to his zeal & goodwill which they merit, he has been very forward on this occasion & every other to act the part of a good subject, I beg leave to recommend him to Your Excellency's favor, when we shall arrive at the Ilinois, I expect great advantage from his enterprizing spirit.

I have engaged a person to go from the Miamis to the Chickasees, from whom he will procure guides to lead him to Mr. Stuart—a verbal message is all I shall charge him with for fear of discovery.

Enclosed is a letter to the commandant on the Spanish side of the Misisipi, which I shall send by the first opportunity which may present.

The Copies of orders which I have the honor to transmit, are not by any means in the correct form I could wish, your Excellency will I hope make allowance for my hurry.

Favorable rains for some days past, & the good temper and disposition of the Indians encourage me to hope our little enterprize may be attended with some advantage, when Mr. Beaubin left the Miamis, there was no notion there of any preparations, so that the first reports at the Ilinois will probably gain little credit.

Octr. 2nd. We have found it a difficult matter to find two savages to go Express with letters for Niagara, they are so desirous of going towards the Ouabash, I hope however to procure them by tomorrow.

On account of all the vessels being absent, the repairing our craft goes on but slowly, the master builder is this day to give in the return of those which are in condition and a second Brigade will set off the 5th inst.

The violent rains which were so necessary for raising the waters of the Miamiss River, have retarded us in many particulars.

Your Excellency will please to observe that on the list of volunteers for the enterprize several persons are employed who must carry arms when occasion calls, as to the high pay, wages are so extravagant here, that the common men receive but half what they might earn, were they to stay at home—this encouragement therefore was necessary.

Octr. 3rd 1776 11 o'clock A. M.

Last night the Savages were assembled, when I sung the War Song, and was followed by Captain Lernoult and several officers &c and Warriors going on the Enterprize, the best disposition and alacrity shewn by all.

Two Indians set off Express this day with the Letters.

As Captain Lernoult cannot spare men from the Garrison, I leave two small Howitzers behind as they would be but lumber without people to work them I have for the six pounder which we take, 2 Artillery men, 1 Sergt., 1 Corpl. & 12 of the Volunteer Militia under the orders of Lieut. Du Vernet, who has exerted himself in providing and preparing the many necessaries coming under his direction.

We shall set off for the Miamis river the 6th without fail.

I have the honor to be Sir with the most profound Respect, Sir, Your Excellencys most obedient and most devoted Servant

HENRY HAMILTON.

I take the liberty of enclosing three letters in Your Excellency's Packett.

Endorsed:—Detroit No 17, 1778 From Lieut Govr. Hamilton with several Enclosures. Dated from the 22nd September to the 3rd Octr. Recd: 29th. The Enclosures marked Detroit No 17.

[B 122, p 167.].

Extract of a Council held by Lt. Govr. Hamilton, with the Outawas, Chippewas, Poutawattamies, and Fifty of their Warriors.

DETROIT 24th Septr. 1778.

Mettusaugay Chief of the Chippawas, spoke:

Father, We listened to what you said the day before yesterday and were well pleased at it.

We told you in the spring that we should be rejoiced to see you and your officers, together with some red coats marching towards the enemy. You now tell us your hands are untied by order of our Father General Haldimand, and that you are now rising up to strike the Rebels, which gives us great pleasure.

Father! I am too old and infirm to go where my Heart would lead me, but Father here is my Son and the Son of my Comrade Chief and the young men present will follow you.

Father, You know you can dispose of us as you please, being of one mind to obey you upon all occasions. These are the sentiments of your children, the Outawas, Chippawas & Poutawattamies.

Egoushawry Chief of the Outawas then spoke:

Father, I beg you will listen to me, as also you my brethern, the Chippawas, & Poutawattamies.

Father, What my brethren the Chippawas have said, is what I should have said, if I had spoke first. I however observe there are some who keep back, that I should have thought would have been among the first (meaning the Hurons who did not attend the meeting) as for myself and my friend Cha-min-ta-wa (another Outawa Chief) we shall follow you, with some of our young men, and not abandon you.

The Poutawattamies then spoke in the same terms.

Lieut. Govr. Hamilton:

Children! What you have said is very pleasing to me and nothing more that what I expected from you. Your behavior has been so uniform for this three years, since I have been among you that I have not had the least reason to reproach you, and am very happy to find upon this occasion. that you are still of the same mind you have always been of; & have only to recommend a continuance of your behavior & to always remember your Father who has authorized me to listen to your demands and assist you.

As to your Brethren, the Hurons, I cannot yet say they are backward, this rainy weather (which is a lucky circumstance for us, as it will raise the water) has probably prevented their coming in, for they have never shewn the least disobedience & I believe they are of the same mind with you.

Children! Your Father Captn Lernoult here present will take care of your wives and children in my absence. His words and mine are the same; you see we are all united and of one mind.

The above is the substance of what pass'd between Govr. Hamilton & the above mentioned nations as interpreted by Isidore Chesne, sworn Interpreter.

Jehu Hay,
Deputy Agent I. Dt.

Endorsed:—Extract of a Council 24th Sepr., 1778. Come inclosed in Lieut. Govr. Hamilton's letter of the 22nd Sept. to the 3rd Octr. Recd. 29th, marked Detroit, No. 17.

[B 122, p. 181.]

Return of a detachment of the Royal Artillery Captain Lamothe's Company of Volunteers & the Volunteer Militia of Detroit, who offer'd themselves between the 17th Septr 1778, to serve on an Enterprise against the Rebells:

	Commis'd officers.			Staff.		Non commi'd officers.				
	Majors.	Captains.	Lieutenants.	Adjutant.	Quartermaster.	Surgeon.	Sergeants.	Drummer.	Mattrosses.	Volunteers.
Royal Artillery	....	....	1	....	....	....	....	....	2	....
Captain La Mothe's Comy Volunteers present	....	1	1	....	....	....	3	....	....	35
Volunteer Militia	1	2	4	1	1	1	4	....	....	71
Total	1	3	6	1	1	1	7	....	2	106

Volunteer Militia of Detroit.

Names of the officers and others employed on this enterprize with their daily pay, exclusive of the officer of Artillery.		New York Currency.		
		£	s	d
Jehu Hay, Major	Sterling, 15s			
Guillaume La Mothe, Captain	do 10s			
Normond McLeod, Captain	do 10s			
Alexis Maisonville, Captain	do 10s			
Schieffelin, Lieutenant		......	8	......
Jencaise Chabert, do		......	8	......
Chevallier Chabert, do		......	8	......
Medard Gamelin, Lieutenant & Adjutant		......	16	......
Pierre St. Çosme, Lieutenant		......	8	......
Chapman, Quarter Master		......	8	......
John McBeath, Surgeon		......	16	......
Antoine Bellefeuille, Interpreter		......	8	......
Charles Lovain, Commissary of Provisions at the Miamis		......	10	......
Adhemar St. Martin, do. for the Detachment & Indians		......	10	......
François Maisonville, Boat Master		......	8	......
Amos Ansley, Master Carpenter		......	12	......
Serjeants at		......	6	......
Volunteers		......	4	......

Volunteer Militia of Detroit.

Officers of the Indian Department.	New York Currency.		
	£	s	d
Jehu Hay, Esq're, Deputy Agent ... Sterling, 10s			
Charles Reaume, Captain & Interpreter ... do 10s			
Isidore Chesne, Capt'n & Interpreter ... do 10s			
Alex'r McKee, Captain & Interpreter ... do 10s			
Lepiconiere Dequindre, Lieutenant	......	8	......
Pontchartren Dequindre, do	......	8	......
Joseph Bondy, do	......	8	......
Augustin Lefoi, Armorers	......	8	......
Amable St. Cosme, Armorers	......	8	......
Nicholas Lasselle, Store keeper	......	6	......

N. B. Lieut't Fontenoy de Quindre on a scout with the Shawanese. Lieut't Claude La Bute sick at Detroit.

Henry Hamilton,
Lieut't-Gov'r & Superintendent.

Endorsed:—Return of officers, &c., for the Enterprise against the Rebels, Detroit, Sep'r 30th, 1778. Came inclosed in Lieut.-Gov'r Hamilton's letter of the 22nd Sep'r to the 3rd Octo. Received 29th, marked Detroit No. 17.

[B 122, p 179.]

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Sir—I beg leave to represent to your Excellency, that Mr. Montforton, late of Michillimackinac has done what was in his power to open the eyes of the French people at the Ilinois, who have lately taken the Rebels by the hand, by a letter written to Mr. Cerré of Kaskasquias.

Should things take a favorable turn in that country, I take the liberty to request that he may not be forgotten. He appears to me a man of sense & information far above the common standard in this country, & his having a large family will I am certain be an additional motive with your Excellency to make a provision for him, should there be a favorable opportunity.

I send a copy of his letter, which I think must plead more strongly in his favor than anything I can advance.

I have the honor to be, Sir, your Excellency's most devoted and most obedient servant,

Henry Hamilton.

Detroit Octr 4th, 1778.

Endorsed:—Detroit, No. 18 1778. From Lieut Gov. Hamilton enclosing a letter from Mr. Montforton to Mr. Cerres at Kaskasquias of the 4th Octr. Recd. 29th.

[B 122, p. 203].

TO GEN. HALDIMAND

SIR—The 2nd Instant an Express went by land from this place to Niagara with a letter in form of Diary commencing the 22nd of September 1778. I have the honor of transmitting to your Excellency by an Indian express the occurrences since that letter was closed.

The 5th of October late in the evening Messieurs Charles & Nicholas Gouin, came to Detroit, the latter express from the Miamis with an account that Mr. de Celoron was at Ouiattonon when one De Couagne the bastard savage son of the old man now Interpreter at Niagara, & who is chief among the Peorias, arrived with 5 other Persons having Belts from the Rebels & speeches address'd to the ouabash Indians nearly in the following terms:

"You Indians living on the River Ouabash! we are not come with design "to take your lands from you, we only desire to pass thro your country to "Detroit to turn out your father who is there, for now your late Father the "King of France is come to life and will recover the country he lost to the "English.

"Here are several belts for you to consider upon—a white one for the "French—a red one for the Spaniards who mean to assist them—a blue one "in the name of the colonies—a green one offering peaceable terms from "the Americans if you allow them to pass freely, and lastly a red one offer-"ing you war if you prefer that.

"We desire you to leave a very wide road for us, as we are many in num-"ber and love to have room enow for our march, for in swinging our arms "as we walk, we may chance to hurt some of your young people with our "swords.

Mr de Celoron, as I am informed contented himself with hearing thus much, and without waiting to hear what reply the Indians made to this flourishing speech, mounted his horse and rode off for the Miamis who have sent a Chief & some men to meet the Rebels, I suppose with friendly overtures as they are reputed but a dastardly nation & have done nothing this war tho' treated as well as the bravest.

Mr. de Celeron's expeditious movement rather surprizes me, but in this country where indulgence pleniere takes place, there can be but slender confidence on protestations or even stronger tyes. However his own account may throw a different light on his actions, I own the proceedings of several people at the different posts, give but little room for confidence in any of them.

Two men of the name of Rainbault went lately from the Miamis with goods for St. Vincennes, notwithstanding Mr Beaubin positively forbad them, representing the obligation of their oath, and the terms of the pass received from me at this place.

Mr. Bellestre who has been some time amongst the Spaniards is said to be at the head of 200 French who have Joined the Rebels on their march, 100 from Illinois the rest from St Vincennes &c.

The 6th our tents were struck before day and most of our stores embark'd when three Hurons from Sandooské arrived with a very circumstantial account of the approach of the Rebels by several different routes, that the advanced guard of their main body was 800 strong, that they were provided with cannon to come against Detroit, with various particulars calculated to alarm and disconcert the Indians.

I told the Messengers, however little credit I gave to this account; it should be communicated to the 4 neighbouring nations, but that I had engaged to assist the Ouabash Indians, I would keep my word.

The Indians being assembled in the afternoon, heard my opinion of the intelligence, and with the utmost chearfullness agreed to accompany us. During our meeting the Vessels hove in sight. The 7th at 8 in the morning Capt. Bird with 50 of the King's Regt from Niagara landed.

Capt Lernoult has permitted Lieut Shourd with 2 Serjeants and 30 men to accompany us, which considering our hasty levies will be a reinforcement of consequence. The true spirit of the service prompts Lieut Shourd his Serjeants & I think the greater part of his men to present themselves on this occasion.

Our strength will now consist of one Lieut of Artillery, with two Gunners —one Lieut of the Kings 2 Serjeants and 31 Rank & File & the Volunteer and Militia as mentioned in a former letter.

The Indians about 70, several of them chiefs,—the rest pick'd men. My satisfaction is all are Volunteers.

Your Excellency will I hope excuse the hurry & incorrectness of my letter.

I have the honor to be with the greatest respect, Sir,

Your Excellency's most devoted, most obedient & most humble Servant,

HENRY HAMILTON.

Detroit.

LETTERS OF LIEUT. GOV. ABBOTT TO GEN. CARLETON

DETROIT April 25th 1778.

SIR—I left St Vincenne the 3rd of february, & after a painfull journey of thirty three days through the woods, arrived here the seventh of March.

I once flattered myself (as I had the honor of informing your Excellency) of being able to remain without incurring any great expence, experience has convinced me to the contrary, which determined me to leave the place before the Indians returned from their winter Hunt, knowing they would be much exasperated my not making large presents.

I hope your Excellency will approve my conduct, it was the only alternative left, under the restrictions you was pleased to lay on me; it was not possible for me to meet thousands of savages, without presents of ammunition, Liquor, & Merchandize, notwithstanding every precaution in my power, I have been obliged to incurr a great expence to keep the Indians in the crown's interest, for which I have drawn on Mr. Dunn.

The necessity, & the nature of my situation, I hope will induce your Excellency to order payment, however unfortunate I may have been to fall under your displeasure.

The utility of a Person to command at St Vincenne to prevent the Savages entering into the Rebels service, I submit to your Excellency, if this is necessary, it must of course be attended with expence.

I enclose the instructions I left with Major Beaulon senior officer at St. Vincenne. I have the honor to be Your Excellency's most obedient & most humble servant

EDWD. ABBOTT.

I enclose a copy of a letter sent me from St Vincenne, which arrived this morning.

His Excellency Sir Guy Carleton.

Endorsed: From Lieut Govr Abbott Detroit 25th April 1778, inclosing Instructions given to Major Beaulon commandant at Post Vincennes.

[B 122, p. 48.]

DETROIT June the 8th 1778.

SIR—I have enclosed Your Excellency the declaration of Monsr Monbruin which yesterday came to my hands from St. Vincenne. Your Excellency will plainly perceive the employing Indians on the Rebel frontiers has been of great hurt to the cause, for many hundreds would have put themselves under His Majesty's protection was there a possibility: that not being the case, these poor unhappy people are forced to take up arms against their Sovereign, or be pillaged & left to starve; cruel alternative. This is too shocking a subject to dwell upon. Your Excellency's known humanity will certainly put a stop if possible to such proceedings, as it is not people in arms that Indians will ever daringly attack; but the poor inoffensive families who fly to the deserts to be out of trouble, and who are inhumanely butchered sparing neither women or children.

It may be said it is necessary to employ Indians to prevent their serving our enemies. I will be bold to say, their keeping a neutrality, will be equally (if not more) serviceable to us, as their going to war, for the reason I have already gave; & surely the presents they receive will prevent their acting against us.

I have the honor to be Your Excellency's most obedient humble servant.

EDWARD ABBOTT.

His Excellency Sir Guy Carleton. Quebec.

Endorsed: Gen. Abbott of June the 8th recd July 7th. Inclosing declaration of Monsr Monbrun.

[B 122, p. 50.]

ACCOUNT OF THE EXPEDITION OF LIEUT. GOV. HAMILTON

SIR—The last letter I had the honour of addressing to Your Excellency was dated May the seventh 1781, and was accompanied with returns of the Prisoners and general account of disbursements and of cash received at different times, duplicates of all which shall be sent by the first opportunity.

The Packet which brought Major Hay and myself sail'd from Sandy Hook on the 27th of May, and arrived at Falmouth on the 21st of June.

Yesterday being the 5th of July I had the honor of paying my respects to Lord George Germaine. His Lordship was pleased to attend to the account I gave of an ill success, and the treatment we experienced from the rebels, from the day of our being made prisoners of War, the 25th Feby. 1779 to the 4th of March 1781, when we were totally out of their power by a final exchange.

Having mentioned to His Lordship that I had preserved a diary of transactions He directed me to commit to paper a brief account, and transmit the same to Your Excellency.

In obedience to His Lordships orders I shall endeavor to avoid detail and supply as well as may be the want of such papers as were seized by order of the rebel governor Mr. [Thomas] Jefferson, on our being thrown into the Dungeon at Williamsburg. [Va.] Some things previous to the arrival of Your Excellency at Quebec it may be proper slightly to mention.

On the 9th day of November I arrived at Detroit, and almost immediately applications were made by the Indians for my assent to their making inroads upon the Frontiers of Pennsylvania and Virginia, this I declined giving not having received possitive orders on the subject, and the Rebels being in possession of Montreal, all intercourse with Sir Guy Carleton was cut off.

In the month of June 1777 Lieut. Governor Cramahé wrote me a letter containing a copy of Lord George Germaines orders and instructions, by which I was authorized to appoint Proper officers and Interpreters & to send them with the Indians against the rebels with the strictest injunctions to discourage & restrain them from their usual barbarities.

A most strict adherance to these injunctions has been observed on my part, & as whatever I advance can be well supported, I shall mention some of the measures taken with the Indians, to invalidate the odious falsities propagated by the rebels in different parts of America, & to show that the Savages have yielded to restraint & foregone their habits of cruelty.

When any party of Indians were desirous of going on a discovery, they were brought to me by the Interpreters, every dissausive against cruelty was used their pretensions to the title of Warrior set in a just light, presents promised them for prisoners brought in alive, which the liberality of government enabled me to make them, and the stability of future peace urged it after the conclusion of it, the Americans had living proof of the humanity of the Indians, in the preservation of their children and other defenceless persons.

Some or all these arguments had their weight with the very first party sent out which returned with seven prisoners alive, who testified to the gentle treatment shown by the Savages. The presents given on this occasion were incentive to other parties to act in like manner, and when we went against St. Vincennes we left 129 prisoners of different ages and sexes, who seemed heartily greatful for their humane treatment, being clothed and fed at the expense of the crown, and allowed all liberty within the settlement.

On the 6th of August 1778 intelligence was brought me by Mr Francis Maisonville of the attack of the Ilinois by Colonel Clarke, the shameful treatment of Monsr de Rocheblave, who was laid in irons and put into a place where hogs had been kept, ankle deep in filth, the indignities offered Madame de' Rocheblave, the destruction of his property &c.

Expresses were dispatched with all possible speed to inform the Commander in Chief at Quebec, Lieutenant Colonel Bolton, commandant at Niagara, and Captain De Peyster commandant at Michilimackinac.

No time was lost in making preparations for executing the orders of the Commander in Chief should he approve of an attempt to dislodge the rebels.

Monsieur de Celeron was sent off directly for Ouiattanon with Belts and Speeches for the Miamis Indians, and those of the river Ouabache, his orders which were given him in writing, as was the case with all partizan officers, directed that he should as soon as possible, give me information of the dispositions of the Indians, the numbers & if possible the views of the Rebels, and that he should not fail to have the few small cannon at Fort Sackville spiked, and the Trunnions knocked off, a detail of his treacherous conduct I had the honor of laying before Your Excellency in a letter from Ouiattanon.

Sept. 15th I had the honor of a letter from your Excellency, and in consequence wrote to Major De Peyster at Michilimackinac informing him of my design of attempting to dislodge the rebels from the Illinois.

Having received the companies of militia I found there would be as many of them turn our Volunteers as with the regulars. La Mothes company, and the Indians would employ what little craft we had.

Capt. Lernoult who at that time commanded the Detachment of the Kings (8th) Regiment assisted me greatly in forwarded everything necessary to be provided, and gave permission to Lieutenant Howe [Shourd?] two Sergeants and thirty rank and File who were all Volunteers to accompany me.

Orders having been given in time for putting the carrying place at the Miamis in order, repairing the carriages &c proper artificers engaged, craft overhauled and the weight of the provisions, ammunition, stores, Indian goods, &c calculated. The Indians being found well disposed, & messengers sent to the different nations resorting to Detroit, apprizing them of my design, & exhorting them to send out frequent parties upon the frontiers, the day was fixed for our departure.

Pere Potier the Jesuit Missionary a man of a respectable character and venerable figure, came to the head of our little encampment on the common of Detroit, and having attended to the reading the Articles of War, and the renewal of the Oath of Allegiance to His Britannick Majesty, he gave the blessing to the Catholics present, conditionally upon their strictly adhering to their oath, being the more engaged thereto as the indulgence and favor of their prince merited their best Services & had exceeded their most sanguin expectations. The subsequent behavior of these people has occasioned my recalling this circumstance.

Our numbers (by recollection as the rebels got possession of the returns with other papers) were as follows—Of regulars one Lieutenant fir worker two Mattrosses—One Lieut 2 Serjeants 30 rank & file of the Kings (8th) Regiment. Of Irregulars one Captain one Lieutenant 2 Serjeants 4 rank & file—being volunteers who had been disciplined in the best manner we could compass, for about one year, about seventy Volunteers selected from those who presented themselves at the reviews of the Militia Companies of the Settlement, & about 60 Indians. On the 7th of October, the various necessaries for the Winter Movement of 600 miles being provided, by the activity & goodwill of Captains Lernoult & Grant the latter of whom had attended to everything afloat, and by the assistance of Major Hay and Mr Fliming the Commissary, we struck our tents & embarked with one Field piece which was all could be spared from the Garrison.

One single person, he an Indian, was affected with liquor.

We proceeded a little way down the river & encamped. I shall observe once for all that Camp duty was as strictly attended to, as the slender knowledge I possessed would admit, & that the Guards, Pickets & advanced Centries, were regularly visited from the setting the watch, which was usually at sunset till broad day light that the boats were loaded, manned & arranged in such a way as to be perfectly secured within our centries every night. That the Indians camp'd and decamp'd as regularly as could be wish'd, & that among them not a single Instance of drunkenness or quarelling occur'd for 72 days; nor the least repining at the fatigues of the journey or the hardships of the season. Their Customs in War, Their Ceremonies on the way, & what pass'd in the meetings with various tribes, with the Speeches, are entered upon my diary, & may be of service to persons who wish to be acquainted with their forms without an attention to which, no hearty assistance is to be expected from them.

On the 9th a snow storm having subsided, it was debated whether or not we should hazard the passage of the Lake from the mouth of Detroit River, to that of the Miamis, but considering the advanced season, and that contrary winds or the freezing of the Lake, would frustrate our design, I determined to make the push. The Traverse is of 36 miles and it was noon before the swell on the Lake was fallen sufficiently.

The night proved extremely dark, the head boats with guides, carried lights for the direction of those astern. About 11 o'clock the wind shifted, it begain to rain, a heavy swell roll'd in, we were on a lee shore, and all was at stake, what I suffered on this occasion may more readily be conceived than expressed. After rowing some time we lay on our oars with our sterns to the swell till we judged the most distant boats could discern our lights, and then rowed in shore when happily we made an ouzy beach within a mile of the entrance of the Miamis river. It blew so hard all night we could neither pitch a tent or make a fire, and yet were happy in our escape, for if providentially we had not passed an extent of rocky coast before the storm arose, we had all inevitably perished.

This day Monsr. de Celeron met us on his return, he made his report aloud that the rebels were already arrived at the Miamis. I affected indifference, tho' astonished at his imprudence, and said I had already heard of it. I ordered him to proceed to Detroit. It soon appeared that his design in giving that false intelligence was deliberately treacherous, as he had been industrious in passing the Indian settlements on the way to spread the alarm.

I apprised the commandant at Detroit by letter of this menáge. On the 11th we arrived at the foot of the rapids, where we found Captn. Grant, who in the sloop Archangel had brought 14 tonns of provisions to expediate our journey. The next day we lost Lieut. Shourd by the accident of his piece going off which shattered his leg, we sent the surgeon with him in a light boat to Detroit, where he suffered the amputation but a mortification ensuing he lost his life.

On the 24th we arrived at the Miamis Town after the usual fatigues attending such a navigation the water being remarkably low. Here we met several Tribes of the Indians previously summoned to meet here, and held several conferences, made them presents, and dispatched messengers to the Shawanese as well as the nations on our route, inviting them to join us or at least watch the motions of the Rebels upon the Frontiers; for which purpose I sent them ammunition.

Having passed the portage of nine miles we arrived at one of the sources of the Ouabache, call'd the petite riviere, the waters were so uncommonly low that we should not have been able to have passed, but that at the distance of four miles from the landing place the Beavers had made a dam which kept up the water, these we cut through to give a passage to our boats, and having taken in our lading at the landing pass'd all the boats. The Beaver are never molested at this place by the Traders or Indians, and soon repair their dam, which is a most serviceable work upon this difficult communication. With Great Labor we next passed a Swamp called les volets, beyond which the little Riviere a Boeté Joins the one we had made our way thro'.

The Shallowness of the water obliged us to make a dam across both rivers to back the water into the Swamp, and when we judged the water to be sufficiently raised cut our Dyke and pass'd with all our Craft. The same obstacle occurred at the riviere a l'Auglais, and the same work was to be raised.

In our progress down the Ouabache difficulties increased, the setting in of the frost lower'd the river the floating ice cut the men as they worked in the water to haul the boats over shoals and rocks, our Batteaux were damaged, and to be repeatedly unloaded, caulk'd and payed 97,000 lbs. of provisions and stores to be carried by the men, in which the Indians assisted chearfully, when the boats were to be lightened. It was sometimes a days work to get the distance of half a league. It was necessary to stop frequently at the Indian villages to have conference with them, furnish them with necessarys, and engage a few to accompany us. At length we got into a good depth of water a fall of rain having raised the river, this advantage was succeeded by fresh difficulties the frost becoming so intense as to freeze the river quite across, however by hard labor we made our way and now approaching within a few days Journey of St. Vincennes, our reconnoitering party brought in a Lieutenant and three men, sent from Fort Sackville to gain intelligence.

The officer had in his pocket two commissions, one from Lieutenant Governor Abbott, the other from Colonel Clarke, and was in the pay of congress. I gave their arms to the Indians, but would not proceed rigorously with them, wishing to gain these people by lenity, and apprehensive, that an instance of severity might rouze the ferocity of the Indians which I wished of all things to avoid.

Learning from the prisoners the state of things at St. Vincennes I sent off parties to lay upon the roads from thence to the Illinois, and to the Falls on the Ohio, where the Rebels had a Fort and a number of families lately come to settle, their orders were to intercept any messengers, secure them and their letters, but not suffer any violence to be offered to their persons, they executed their orders and took prisoners two men sent off by the officer commanding for the rebels at Fort Sackville with letters to Col. Clarke acquainting him of our arrival.

Major Hay was detach'd with orders to fall down the River, & sent to the Principal Inhabitants of St. Vincennes acquainting them that unless they quitted the rebels and laid down their arms, there was no mercy for them, some chiefs accompanied him to conciliate the Pean Kashaa Indians residing at St. Vincennes, and to shew the French what they might expect if they pretended to resist. Major Hay secured the arms, ammunition, & Spiritous liquors, as soon as the inhabitants laid down their arms, & the officer who commanded in the Fort (Captain Helm) being deserted by the officers and men who to the number of 70 had formed his garrison, and were in pay of the Congress surrender'd his wretched fort on the very day of our arrival being the 17th December 1778. Thus we employed 71 days in coming only six hundred miles, which is to be attributed to the extraordinary difficulties of the way owing to an uncommon drought, the severity of the season, and the inevitable delays at the Indian Villages, particularly at Ouiattanon, where the chiefs who had received the rebel colours came in to us from their hunting, acknowledged their error gave up the flags, & accused Monsr de Celeron of having deserted them, besides that he never distributed to them the goods entrusted to him for the Indians. In the Fort we found two iron three pounders mounted on truck carriages two swivels not mounted, a very small quantity of ammunition, & thirty two stout horses, which had been purchased for Congress, and which I gave to the Indians.

As to the State of the fort we found it a miserable stockade without a well, barrack, platform for small arms, or even lock to the gate. Such was the moderation and good order observed by the Indians, that not a single person had the slenderest cause of complaint, not a shot was fired nor any inhabitant injured in person or property. It is remarkable that tho' on our arrival at this place our number was increased to 500 men, there was not one sick, nor had there been a single instance of drunkenness among the Indians or soldiery from the day we left Detroit, tho' rum was delivered out on every occasion when the fatigues or bad weather made it necessary. As soon as proper precautions were taken for securing our boats, landing our provisions, etc., it became a point of consideration whether we should proceed directly to attack the rebels at the Ilinois, or content ourselves with establishing ourselves in this post where we had those several advantages, the command of the River Ohio by which the Spaniards had supplied the Rebel Forts with powder, &c., the cutting off the communication between the Ilinois, and the falls of Ohio across the country. The being situated so as to check the river Indians, and encourage the Delawares and Ottawas or White River, further to divide our small force, since we must leave a garrison in Fort Sackville, appear'd not eligible, and we could not expect the Indians to remain much longer with us.

The state of our provisions, the length of the journey (240 miles) and the want of carriages added to the nature of the country, subject to inundations all combined to direct our determination to fortify ourselves here, and wait for reinforcements in the spring.

On taking an account of the Inhabitants of this place of all ages and sexes we found their number to amount to 621, of this 217 fit to bear arms on the spot, several being absent hunting Buffaloe for their winter provision. Having summoned the inhabitants to assemble in the church, I went to meet them, reproached them for ther treachery and ingratitude, but told them since they had laid down their arms and sued for protection, that on renewing their oath of allegiance they should be secured in their persons & property. Lenity I thought might induce the French Inhabitants at Kaskaskias to follow their example, tho' the conduct of the Canadians at large was but poor encouragement. I read twice to them the oath prepared for them to take, explained the nature of it, and cautioned them against that levity they had so recently given proof of. The oath being administer'd they severally kissed a silver crucifix at the foot of the altar, after which they signed their names to a paper containing the same oath in writing. It was conceived in the following terms:

"A St. Vincennes, ec 19th December, 1778.

"Nous sousigneés, declarons et avonous avoir prêté le serment de fidelité au congress qu'en faisant cela, nous avons oublie notre devoir envers. Dieu, et avons manqué vis a vis des hommes. Nous reclamons le pardon de Dieu, et nous esperons de la bouté de notre Souverain legitime le Roi d' Angleterre qu'il acceptera notre soumission, et nous prendra sous sa protection commè boas et fidelles sujets, que nous promettons et poious devenir, davout Diet et devant les hommes, en foi de quoi nous signous de notre main, ou certifions de notre margue ordinaire, le jour et mois surdit de l'an 1778."

[Translation (not in the original):

At St. Vincennes this 19th December, 1778. We, the undersigned, declare and avow that we have taken the oath of allegience to Congress, and in so doing that we have forgotten our duty towards God and have failed towards men. We ask the pardon of God and we hope for the mercy of our Legitimate Soveraign, the King of England, and that he will accept our submission, and take us under his protection as good and faithful subjects, which we promise and pray to be able to become before God and before men, in faith of which we sign with our hands, or certify by our ordinary marks, the day and month above named in the year 1778.]

Those who had accepted commissions under the Congress delivered them up, and all who had laid down their arms & renewed their oath of Allegiance received their arms, & on application had passports to hunt Buffaloe. The state of the fort was one of our first concerns, in the course of the winter, we built, a guard house, Barracks for four companies, sunk a well, erected two large block houses of oak, musquet proof, with loop holes below, and embrasures above for five pieces of cannon each, altered and lined the Stockades, laid the fort with gravel. Several parties were sent out chiefly towards Kaskaskias and the falls of Ohio by land, and to the mouth of the Ouabache by water.

The Indians who came from different quarters all seem'd pleased with our arrival, & from their jealousy of the Americans, would I am persuaded have acted to our wish.

Messengers were sent to Mr. Stewart, the agent of Indian affairs to the Southward, with Letters proposing a meeting in the spring at St. Vincennes, or the Cherokee river, the object of which was to reconcile the Southern Indians with the Shawanese and other Northern Nations, and to concert a general invasion of the Frontiers.

A letter was also sent for Capt. Blomer at the Natchez by a person who I expected would betray his trust & show it to Don Bernardo de Galvez at New Orleans.

A party of 30 men with an officer was sent to the mouth of the Ouabache to intercept any boats that might be sent up the Ohio—as soon as Indian Parties returned, others supplied their places, & so well did they execute what was recommended to them, that they did at different times bring in prisoners and prevent intelligence being carried from St. Vincennes to the Ilinois. Till the desertion of a corporal & 6 men of La Mothe's company in the latter end of January, who gave the first intelligence to Colonel Clark of our arrival.

As the Corporal and some of the men had hitherto behaved well, it was apprehended that they were moved to desert by ill intentioned people among the French at St. Vincennes.

One of the deserters was brother to Gibault the Priest, who had been an active agent for the rebels & whose vicious & immoral conduct was sufficient to do infinite mischief in a country where ignorance & bigotry give full scope to the depravity of a licentious eclesiastic.

This wretch it was who absolved the French Inhabitants from their allegiance to the King of Great Britain. To enumerate the vices of the Inhabitants would be to give a long catalogue, but assert that they are not in possession of a single virtue, is no more than truth and justice require, still the most eminently vicious and scandalous was the reverened Monsr. Gibault.

The several nations of Indians inhabiting the banks of the Ouabache, came in at different times; made great professions, and declared their distrust of the Virginians, but there was but one chief with his party who realy acted with zeal & spirit, tho' the Lake Indians showed them a very good example. An Ottawa Chief in particular soon after our arrival at St. Vincennes offered himself with a party to go down to the river's mouth where it falls into the Ohio, where having remained some time without having taken any prisoners, he declared he would not return without attempting to be of further service, and went accordingly by land (a very fatiguing march) to

Kaskaskias, where had he not been prevented by the treachery of a Canadian he would (as Col. Clarke afterwards told me himself) have taken prisoners Col. Clarke with several other officers who were going to Cahokia. This Canadian was the Interpreter to the Miamis Indians, Charles Baubin by name, who contrary to my positive orders took away their horses from some of the French hunters of the Ilinois, & would have kept them but for the chief already mentioned who reproach'd him with acting contrary to my orders. Baubin further threatened that the Indians were to be brought down to the Ilinois and everything put to fire and sword which directly contradicted the written messages & letters I had sent by him and Hypolite Baulon to the Inhabitants of the Ilinois.

It is said Baubin is still employed as Interpreter to the Miamis, which make me conclude some of my letters to Your Excellency have miscarried. When he returned from the Illinois, he asked leave to go the Miamis, and his behaviour displayed the consciousness of a Villian who had betrayed his trust. Colonel Clarkes account of his treachery was supported by the testimony of other of his officers, thus at different periods, secret treason brought on our final misfortune.

The fort was on the 22nd of February in a tolerable state of defence the work proposed being finished. This day Mr Francois Maisonville returned from a scout having been in Pursuit of Deserters, and brought in two Virginians prisoners whom he had taken on the Ohio. He took me aside immediately and told me he had discevered about four leagues below the fort fourteen fires, but could not tell whether of Virginians or Savages. I instantly sent off Capt. La Mothe Lieutenant Scheifflin and 20 men to bring me a more perfect account. The water being out, the meadows were so greatly overflowed it was necessary to take a circuit. Mr. Maisonville had taken it upon him to serve as a guide tho fatigued. They lost their way night coming on, and were only appriz'd by the firing of Cannon at the fort that it was invested, returning to the village & finding it impossible to make their way good they concealed themselves in a barn, sending from time to time one of their number to explore & make report, but as they employed Canadians none of them returned. The militia of the Post had been ordered under arms in the evening. The Major Legras, and one of the Captains. Bosserou, with several of the private men being reported absent, I suspected treachery, the two officers however made their appearance at sunset. About 5 minutes after candles had been lighted we were alarmed by hearing a musquet discharge, presently after some more. I concluded that some party of Indians was returned, or that there was some riotous frolic in the village, going upon the parade to inquire I heard the balls whistle, ordered the men to the Blockhouses, forbidding them to fire till they perceived the shot to be directed against the Fort. We were shortly out of suspense, one of the Sergeants receiving a shot in the breast.

The fire was now returned, but the enemy had a great advantage from their rifles, and the cover of the church, Houses, Barns etc. Mr McBeath the Surgeon having been in the Village when the firing began, pushed to get to the gate, & narrowly escaped being killed, he reported that as soon as the first shots were fired, the Women of the house where he was told him that Colonel Clarke was arrived with 500 men from the Illinois.

This very house had lately been searched in the night on suspicion of a stranger being concealed, but the Serjeant & party could not discover any such person. Tho' the night was dark we had a Serjeant Matross & five men wounded. The weather was still so cold we were obliged to bring the wounded into our own quarters. The officers who had continued in tents all the winter were exposed to the fire of the enemy's riflemen as the picketting of the Fort was so poorly set up, that one might pass the hand clenched between the Stockades. We dislodged the Enemy from the Church, and nearest houses by a few cannon shot from the Blockhouses, but when day appear'd and we saw that the Inhabitants of the Village had joined the Rebels, we dispared of Captain Lamothes party regaining the fort, but to our great surprize & joy about half an hour before sunrise they appear'd & got into the Fort over the Stockade which were upright & 11 feet out of the ground wtih their arms in their hands.

Two Canadians of his Company had deserted the preceeding night & Mr Maisonville was betray'd & delivered to the Rebels by his own Cousin. The firing was but slack after sunrise, and about 8 o'clock a flag of Truce from the Rebels appear'd carried by Nicolas Cardinal a Captain of the Militia of St. Vincennes, who delivered me a letter from Coll Clarke requiring me to surrender at discretion, adding with an oath, that if I destroyed any stores or papers I should be treated as a Murtherer. Having assembled the officers and read this letter to them my intention was to undergo any extremity, rather than trust to the direction of such sort of people as we had to deal with.

They all approved of this resolution, on which I assembled the men and inform'd them of our determination. The English assured me they would defend the King's Colours to the last. adding an homely but hearty phraze, that they would stick to me as the shirt to my back. they then gave three cheers. The French on the contrary hung their heads. I returned for answer to Coll Clarks note, that threats would not prevent us from doing our duty as British Subjects, and the Flag having returned, the firing recommenced. La Mothe's Volunteers now began to murmur, saying it was very hard to be obliged to fight against their countrymen and relatives, who they now perceived had join'd the Americans. As they made half our number, and after such a declaration were not to be trusted. The Englishmen wounded, six in number were a sixth of those we could depend on, and duty would every hour fall heavier on the remaining few; considering we were at the distance of six hundred miles from succour, that if we did not burn the Village we left the enemy most advantageous cover against us, and that if we did, we had nothing to expect after rejecting the first terms, but the Extremity of revenge, I took up the determination of accepting honourable terms if they could be procured, else to abide the worst.

I stated these considerations to the officers first, who allowed them to be reasonable, then to the men, who very reluctantly admitted them, and here I must declare that if the defence of the Fort had depended on the spirit of the English only the rebels would have lost their labour but Colonel Clarke has since told me, he knew to a man those of my little garrison who would do their duty, and those who would shrink from it.

There is no doubt he was well informed, The propositions which I sent out to Colonel Clarke were as follows. Lieutenant Governor Hamilton engages to deliver up to Colonel Clarke, Fort Sackville as it is at present with all the stores, ammunition and provisions, reserving only thirty six rounds of powder and ball per man, and as many weeks provisions, as shall be sufficient to subsist those of the garrison who shall go by land or by water to their destination which is to be agreed on hereafter.

The garrison are to deliver themselves up prisoners of War, and to march out with their arms, accoutrements and knapsacks.

A guide or guides to be given, with a safeguard to escort the garrison to their destination, as also horses for the transport of provisions, provided the garrison marches by land.

The garrison not to be delivered up till the person employ'd by Colonel Clarke shall have receiv'd an account of the stores &c.

Three days time from the signing the articles to be allowed the garrison for providing shoes, &c necessary for the journey (if by land) for the baking of bread, and for the settling accounts with the traders of this post.

Officers or others of the garrison who have families, to be permitted to return to their homes, on promise of not acting during the present contest between Great Britain and America.

Sick and wounded are recommended to the humanity and generosity of Colonel Clarke, any charges incurred for them to be answered by Lieutenant

Governor Hamilton who will leave a draft for £50 New York currency for their use officers to take their private baggage.

Signed at Fort Sackville Feby 24th 1779.

H. HAMILTON.

Before anything was concluded the following scene was exhibited, of which I give your excellency a relation, as it serves to contrast the behaviour of His Majestys subjects with that of the rebels, so often celebrated for humanity, generosity and indeed everything virtuous, and noble.

About two o'clock afternoon a party of Indians with some Whites return'd from a scout, with two Canadians whom they had taken prisoners near the falls of Ohio, probably with information for the rebels at the Fort. Colonel Clark sent off a Detachment of 70 men against them. The Indian party was 15 or 16 men, who seeing the English Flag flying at the Fort, discharged their pieces an usual compliment with those people, they were immediately fired upon by the rebels and Canadians, two killed on the spot, one shot in the belly, who however escaped, the rest were surrounded and taken bound to the village, where being set in the street opposite the Fort they were put to death, notwithstanding a truce at that moment existed. The manner (as related to me by different people, and among others by the man at whose door this execrable feat was perpetrated) was as follows—

One of them was tomahawk'd immediately. The rest setting on the ground in a ring bound—seeing by the fate of their comrade what they had to expect, the next on his left sang his death song, and was in turn tomakawk'd, the rest underwent the same fate, only one was saved at the intercession of a rebel officer, who pleaded for him telling Col'l Clarke that the savages father had formerly spared his life.

The chief of this party after having the hatchet stuck in his head, took it out himself and delivered it to the inhuman monster who struck him first, who repeated his stroke a second and a third time, after which the miserable spectacle was dragged by the rope about his neck to the river, thrown in, and suffered to spend still a few moments of life in fruitless strugglings. Two sergeants who had been volunteers with the Indians escaped death by the intercession of a father and sister who were on the spot. Mr. Francis Maisonville whom I formerly mentioned was set in a chair, and by Col'l Clarkes order a man came with a scalping knife, who hesitating to proceed to this excess of barbarity on a defenceless wretch, Colonel Clarke with an imprecation told him to proceed, and when a piece of the scalp had been raised the man stopped his hand, he was again ordered to proceed, and as the executor of Col. Clarke's will, was in the act of raising the skin, a brother of Mr. Maisonville's who had joined the rebels, stepped up and prevailed on Col. Clarke to desist. The poor man who survived this cruel treatment, and shew'd an unshaken firmness in the minute of impending death, was not afterwards proof to the long confinement he underwent at Williamsburg, the gloominess of his situation affected his spirits first, the apprehension of suffering an ignominous death lower'd them still more, till his reason began to be impaired. The surgeon a man of great humanity, tho' attached to the cause of rebellion, wrote to the Governor and Council of Virginia to solicit a little enlargement for this poor man, as the only means likely to save him, what the answer was I know not, but the unfortunate creature put an end to his miseries and his life, in spite of two persons who watched him, and were aware of his situation.

Colo. Clarke yet reeking with the blood of those unhappy victims came to the Esplanade before the Fort gate, where I had agreed to meet him and treat of the Surrender of the garrison. He spoke with rapture of his late achievement, while he washed of the blood from his hands stain'd in this inhuman sacrifice.

He told me it was in vain to think of persisting in the defence of the Fort, that his cannon would be up in a few hours, that he knew to a man who might be depended upon with every other circumstance of my situation, that if from a spirit of obstinacy I persisted when there was no probability of relief and should stand an assault not a single soul should be spared. I reply'd that tho' my numbers were small I could depend on them. He said he knew I had but 35 or 36 staunch men, that 'twas but folly to think of defence with so small numbers so overmatch'd, that if I would surrender at discretion and trust to his generosity, I should have better treatment than if I articled for terms—my answer was that I would then abide by the consequences, and never take so disgracefull a step while I had ammunition & provisions.

You will be answerable (he said) for the lives lost by your obstinacy. I said my men had declared they would die with arms in their hands rather than surrender at discretion, that still I would accept such terms as might consort with my honor & duty, that knowing what I could pretend to little time was necessary for drawing up articles. He said he would think upon it and return in half an hour, he return'd accordingly accompanied by one of his Captains. I went to meet them with Major Hay, the soldiers in the mean time apprehensive of some ill design manned the East Blockhouse ready to fire at an instant. The conversation was resumed, and Colonel Clarke appeared as determined as before, I then said further discourse was vain, that I would return to the Fort and to prevent mistakes, the firing should not take place for an hour after our parting, took my leave & was proceeding to the fort when Major Hay and Capt'n Bowman called me back, the subject was renewed & Col'l Clarke agreed to my sending terms for his consideration. They were sent that same evening, Colonel Clarke made his alterations and I agreed to them having first call'd the officers together, and exposed to them the necessity of the step. The men were then assembled, and were convinced that no advantage to His Majesty's Service could result from our holding out in our present circumstances.

Among reasons not mentioned on the face of the Capitulation were the treachery of one-half of our little Garrison, the certainty of the Inhabitants of the village having joyned the rebels. The North East Angle of the fort projected over a sand bank already considerably undermined, the miserable state of the wounded men.

The impossibility of effecting an escape by water, while the half of our number had shewn their poltronnerie and treason and our wounded must be left at the mercy of a mercyless set of Banditts.

Having given the necessary orders, I pass'd the night in sorting papers and in preparing for the disagreeable ceremony of the next day.

Mortification, dissappointment and indignation had their turns.

At 10 o'clock in the morning of the 25th we marched out with fixed Bayonets and the soldiers with their knapsacks—the colours had not been hoisted this morning that we might be spared the mortification of hawling them down.

It had been told Col. Clarke, that we had laboured all night to lay powder chests under the gateway, and had planted the six pounder loaded with grape which by a train was to destroy the rebels as they entered to take possession.

This report may reasonably be imputed to the invention of the French inhabitants since they had had the effronterie to give Col. Clarke a written account of cruelties exercised by us while at St. Vincennes, which our own American prisoners confuted in their accounts to Colo. Clarke.

Thus by the baseness and ingratitude of a People who owed their lives and properties to us we were betray'd into the hands of our enemies.

Permit me Sir to make a little digression, and attempt to shew that a correspondence with the french Inhabitants, and not to our supineness or neglect, the rebels owed the information necessary for accomplishing their design.

On our arrival at St. Vincennes a strict search was made for gunpowder, all that was found on the place was put into the magazine, and a heavy fine was laid on those who should be found to conceal any, nevertheless Colonel Clarke was supplied by the Inhabitants, his own to the last ounce being damaged on the march.

He himself told me that he should never have attempted to attack us but that he was minutely informed of our situation in every respect.

The Indians who after a march in winter of seventy-one days had acted with great zeal & fidelity, and furnished us as many parties as I wish'd, had almost all returned to their homes. Two companies of Volunteers from Detroit had testified so much uneasiness and unwillingness to remain that I chose to send them away rather than keep them against their inclination. Several persons who had been on pay as partisans with the Indians I believe fomented this discontent which I attributed to their surmizing that France would join the Americans. Those people I discharged and sent away. The conduct of the Canadians in general has shown that no ties that have force upon enlightened and generous minds, can bind them and that they prefer any subjection to the freedom of Englishmen. The artful menége of the inhabitants of the Ilinois is not to be forgot. When news was carried to that place of the Indians coming against them under my orders, the young men offer'd their services to Col. Clarke to bear arms against the English, but their fathers and uncles told him they had sworn allegiance to the King of Great Britain, therefore could not act the same part, but that they would not fight against the Americans.

The terms granted by Col. Clarke and which I reluctantly sign'd were as follows:

1st Lieutenant Governor Hamilton engages to deliver up to Col. Clarke, Fort Sackville as it is at present with all the stores, ammunition, & provision &c. &c.

2nd. The garrison are to deliver themselves up prisoners or war, and to march out with arms, accoutrements and knapsacks.

3rd. The garrison to be delivered up tomorrow at ten o'clock.

4th. Three days time to be allowed the Garrison to settle their accounts with the Traders of this Town.

5th. The officers of the Garrison to be allowed their necessary baggage.

Signed at Post Vincennes the 24th day of February 1779.

GR. CLARKE.

Agreed to for the following reasons—

The remoteness from succour. The state and quantity of provisions. The unanimity of officers and men on its expediency. The honourable terms allowed and lastly, the confidence in a generous enemy.

HENRY HAMILTON.
Lieutenant Govr & Superintendent.

If it be considered that we were to leave our wounded men at the mercy of a man who had shewn such instances of ferocity as Colonel Clarke had lately done, a compliment bespeaking his generosity and humanity may possibly find excuse with some as I know it has censure from others.

The evening of the day we capitulated, Colonel Clarke ordered neck irons fetters and handcuffs to be made which in our hearing he declared were designed for those officers who had been employed as partisans with the Indians. I took him aside and reminded him that these prisoners were prisoners of war included in the capitulation which he had so lately set his hand to he said his resolution was formed, that he had made a vow never to spare man, woman or child of the Indians or those who were employ'd with them

I observed to him that these persons having obeyed my orders were not to be blamed for the execution of them, that I had never known that they had acted contrary to those orders, by encouraging the cruelty of the savages, on the contrary, and that if he was determined to pass by the consideration of his faith and that of the public, pledged for the performance of the articles of capitulation, I desired he might throw me into prison or lay me in irons rather than the others. He smiled contemptously, turned away, and ordered three of these persons to the guard till the Irons should be made. The scalps of the slaughter'd Indians were hung up by our tents, a young man of the name of Rainbault was brought into the fort with a halter about his neck and only for the interposition of the volunteers from the Illinois some of whom were his relations, would infallibly been hanged without any crime laid to his charge but his having been with a scouting party, he was half strangled before he was taken from the tree.

Our soldiers told us that some of the rebels had sworn solemnly to destroy Major Hay and myself the first opportunity. As we could not guard against any attempt in the situation we then found ourselves, we thought it best to appear unacquainted with any such resolution, but we were twice in the night obliged to fly for security to Colo Clarke's quarters in the fort, two men that were intoxicated and whose names had been given us, attempting to shoot us in our tent. The attempt was proved but no punishment ensued.

We were kept in the dark as to the day of our departure, tho' I had repeatedly ask'd it, that we might have bread baked, & prepare what was necessary.

On the 5th of March Monsieur Dejean was brought in prisoner along with Monsieur Adhemar [St Martin], the latter had been sent up with ten Pirogues and thirty men to the Miamis, to bring down provisions and stores that had been forwarded from Detroit. Mr. Dejean had obtained leave of the commandant there to pass to St. Vincennes and had taken charge of letters from Detroit for me. The day before Captain Helm (an American officer who commanded the party sent to take the convoy) arrived at Ouiattanon Mr. Dejean heard that we had fallen into the hands of the rebels, but he had not sufficient presence of mind to destroy the papers, which with everything else was seized by the rebels.

Besides the provision cloathing and stores belonging to the King all the private Baggage of the officers fell into the possession of Coll. Clarke, not an article of which was offer'd them, tho' they to conciliate the good offices of the rebels to our wounded men and those we apprehended would not be permitted to go along with us, gave away to Coll. Clarke and to his people several things we should otherwise not have parted with, we afterwards heard that the prisoners were notwithstanding treated with great severity.

Our Surgeon was robbed of his medicines and instruments Coll. Clarke being arbiter of that article of the Capitulation by which the officers were to take their necessary baggage.

At length on the 8th day of March we were put into a heavy oak boat being 27 in number, with our provision of flour and pork at common ration, and 14 gallons of spirits for us and our guard which consisted of 23 persons including two officers. We had before us 360 miles of water carriage and 840 to march to the place of our destination, Williamsburg Virginia. The 10th in the afternoon we reached the Ohio, whose waters were out in an uncommon and astonishing degree. The depth above the banks 18 feet with such a swift current as made it very fatiguing to row which we all did in turn while our guard were distributed in four light boats. At night we were obliged to lye in our boat making it fast to a tree, for the flood extended as far in the woods as the eye could reach, we made a miserable shift with our mast and oars to throw a cover overhead to keep out the rain, and lay like swine close jammed together, having not room to extend ourselves. We presently found the discipline of our guards such as would have enabled us to seize their arms and escape to the Natchez, this was agitated among us but the idea given up on the persuasion that our companions left in the hands of the rebels at St. Vincennes would be sufferers for it.

We fell in with four delaware Indians who were hunting having only their bows and arrows, our escort obliged them to accompany us part of the way, but they disappeared one day, and we were given to understand they were quietly knocked on the head.

Not to trouble Your Excellency with remarks made on my journey which are however noted in my diary, we arrived at the Falls of Ohio the 30th of March. Here we found a number of settlers who live in log houses in eternal apprehensions from the Indians. It is remarkable that the parties from St. Vincennes had been so vigilant that the news of Fort Sackville falling into our hands the 17th December was only known on the 27th of March. Coll Clarke had promised to send 15 horses to this place for our use on the march, but that never was perform'd He had apprized us that there was but little chance of escaping with our lives, the people on the frontiers were so exasperated by the inroads of the Indians, and in this we found he had told us the truth, being often threatened upon the march and waylaid at different times.

Our guard however behaved very well, protected us and hunted for us else we must have starved for our rations were long since expended and our allowance of bears flesh and Indian meal was frequently very scanty.

The people at the forts are in a wretched state, obliged to enclose their cattle at night within the fort, and carry their rifle to the fields when they go to plow or cut wood.

On our long march we had frequently hunger and thirst to encounter as well as fatigue. At length we gained the settled country and at Lynche's ferry on James River, were put into canoes and continued our progress by water.

On the 20th of May being on shore to get refreshments we were agreeably surprised to find ourselves at Brigadier Hamiltons quarters, who endeavoured by his kindness and hospitality to make us forget our hardships. The same evening halting at the house of a rebel Colonel Lewis, we had the good fortune to see two officers of the convention army, Captain Freeman aid de camp to General Reidevel was so obliging as to be the bearer of a Letter from me to General Philips, as also one for your Excellency containing the Capitulation and some returns. On the 26th a Rebel Captain with a guard marched us from Beaver dam to Richmond, from thence to Chesterfield, where we remained till the 15th June, on which day an officer having a written order under the hand of the Governor of the Province Thomas Jefferson for taking me in Irons to Williamsburgh. I was accordingly handcuff'd put upon a horse, and my servant not being suffered to go with me, my valise was fastened behind me, Captn. Lamothe was ordered to accompany me, being in like manner handcuff'd. The fatigues of the march having heated my blood to a violent degree I had several large boils on my legs, my handcuffs were too tight but were eased at a Smith's shop on the road, thus sometimes riding and sometimes walking we arrived the 2nd evening at Williamsburgh, having come 60 miles. We were conducted to the palace where we remained about half an hour in the Street at the Governor's door, in wet clothes, weary, hungry, and thirsty, but had not even a cup of water offered to us. During this time a considerable mob gathered about us, which accompanied us to jail. On our arrival there we were put into a cell, not ten feet square where we found five criminals and Mr. Dejean who was also handcuff'd.

This poor man could not refrain from tears on seeing our equipment. We had the floor for a bed, the 5 felons were as happy as rum could make them, and so we were left to our repose for that night.

The next day we three were taken out about 11 o'clock and before a number of people our handcuffs taken off and fetters put on in exchange. I was honored with the largest which weighed eighteen pounds eight ounces. As I thought opportunities might not offer frequently, and seeing some of the delegates present, I took occasion while my irons were riveting to speak a few words.

I told them that the ignominious manner in which we were treated without any proof of criminality, or any hearing, without even a crime being laid to our charge, was a reproach to those only who could act in that manner by prisoners of war, under the sanction of a capitulation. That after a proceeding so unjust I was prepared for any extremity, but desired the persons present to observe that punishment was exercised on us before any enquiery had taken place or any persons who might have accused us being confronted with us—some by their gestures appeared to feel for us, but no one uttered a word, and when our fetters were properly fixed we were remanded to our dungeon from which the 5 felons were removed. The light we received was from a grate, which faced the court of 20 feet square, with walls 30 feet high. The prison having been built 60 years it may be conceived we were subject to one very offensive convenience, in the heat of summer almost suffocating, our door was only opened to give us water, we were not allowed any candle, and from the first to the last of our confinement we never could find that the Governor or Council had ordered provision of any kind to be made for us except water with which we were really very well supplied. The variety of vermin to which we were a prey, bad air, chagrin and want of exercise began to produce their effects on my companions: having therefore obtained from our gaoler (who was left sole arbiter to deal out his indulgence or straighten our captivity) paper, pen and ink, I wrote the following letter to the Lieutenant Governor and Council of Virginia, the humility of the stile was adopted in consequence of finding that a bold representation of our situation would never find its way out of the prison.

Your Excellency will I hope pardon me for giving a copy of the paper which I gave to the Gaoler the day before and which he returned to me with the greatest insolence of contempt, telling me that dignified Characters in that country were not to be treated with so little ceremony. It was worded as follows:

"Mr. Pelham Having understood from you yesterday that the Governor "was gone to the Country to stay for a month, I request you to wait on the "Lieutenant Governor, present my respects to him, acquainting him, that by "a written order sign'd by the Governor, I with Mr. Dejean and Captain "Lamothe have been ironed and thrown into a Dungeon where we have "now been upwards of 40 days—That we have not been informed of the "cause of this treatment—we do not hear of our being to be confronted with "our accusers, we hear no mention of any publick enquiery, we suffer without any trial; We understand that these proceedings are not agreeable to the "Laws of this Province, or to any known rule of equity, that it is inconsistent with the tenor of the Governor's oath, and breathes the genuine spirit "of lettres de câchet in the most arbitrary government. The governors "departure, without bestowing a thought on men in our situation, shows "that we may suffer in reputation, health and loss of time, with as little "prospect of redress, as if we were in the cells of the inquisition. Mr. Pelham please to inform the Lieutenant Governor that I do not think common "justice to be less the birthright of every man, than the enjoyments of light "& liberty, but that since our arrival in this State, we have in lieu of common justice, experienced uncommon injustice. I do therefore for myself "and the gentleman confined with me, demand *justicc,* justice as open to "the publick, as our treatment has been notorious.

"Mr. Pelham when you shall commit this message to paper, I beg you "will give me a copy of it certified with your own name signed."

This being as I mentioned contemptuously refused—I was necessitated to lower my tone, or give up all thoughts of redress, and this I might have done for the Lieutenant Governor never deign'd an answer to the following letter:

WILLIAMSBURGH JAIL, July 30th, 1779.

GENTLEMEN—Mr. Pelham having very obligingly procured me the means of addressing you, I take this first opportunity of representing to you the circumstances and situation of the two gentlemen, at present in confinement along with me. I am to suppose they have been put in prison for having acted under my orders, if there be any criminality in those orders, Justice demands that I alone should be the sufferer. I therefore make it my request that I suffer alone.

The health of these Gentlemen are daily impaired by the consequences of their restraint, as they are in want even of a change of linnen highly necessary at this sultry season. As to my own conduct however misrepresented, I have a confidence (which will I hope hereafter appear well grounded) that it will support itself against the attacks which have been made upon it in this country, and that it will abide the test of that inquirey which I am to expect it will undergo, whenever I shall be call'd upon by those Superiors whose orders I have endeavoured to execute, with humanity and moderation.

Gentlemen whatever may be the result of this application I shall with patience wait for the day when I may more largely expose to the world the whole tenor of my conduct, which I have all the reason imaginable to think, has been discoloured and misrepresented.

I have the honor to be with all due respect, Gentlemen, Your most obedient very humble servant,

HENRY HAMILTON.

To the Honorable the Lieut. Governor and Council of Virginia.

Having been by order of the Governor (with the advise of his council) prohibited the use of pen Ink and paper, or the converse of any one but our Jailor we had no employment but in our reflections, at length the prisoners in the next cell contrived to thrust the newspapers thro' a hole and in them we found the formal charge drawn up against us entirely unsupported by truth or evidence. I have the honor to enclose to your Excellency copies of these publications. The day after our confinement the Jailor came to ask me for my keys which having deliver'd my box was searched, and such papers as would have disproved their assertions, taken out, however, as I had had many proofs of the disengenious part these people were capable of acting, I had hid my Journal, with copies and useful papers, which I have found means to preserve, tho' our place and mode of confinement was so often changed.

August 31st Major Hay with the other prisoners from Chesterfield arrived at Williamsburg, the soldiers were confined in the debtors room, the officers 5 in number were put into the Dungeons with us which made the heat intolerable.

At eleven at night we were obliged to alarm the prisoners in the next cell who pass'd the word to the guard for the jailer, our Surgeon being on the point of suffocating an asthma to which he was subject having seized him at this time with that violence, that he lost his pulse for ten minutes, we had tried by wafting a blanket to draw some air thro' the grate but this was insufficient and if he had not had presence enough of mind to open a vein he would probably have expired for the state of the air was such that a candle with which we had lately been indulged would barely live if held near the top of the cell.

The jailer took Mr. McBeath out and suffered him to sleep in his own room, and I must declare in justice to him that in several points he showed more feeling by far than his employers.

The door of our cell continuing shut for several days, the poor prisoners young and old, men and women, offered to be lock'd up and debarred the use of the court, if we might be allowed that liberty, which at length we had.

The humanity and attention of these poor people is not to be forgot, they offered themselves to do a hundred kind offices, cleaned and wash'd our cell showed us how to manage our Irons, wrapped them around with rags, offer'd to saw them off whenever means of escape offer'd, but what struck me most was, that when we were indulged with the use of the court and sat to eat these people always withdrew. Gratitude calls on me to mention the difference of characters we experienced from the leaders in this country and those subjected to their control.

Being attack'd with a fit of the Gout a surgeon was sent for who treated me with the greatest tenderness—by his means my fetters were taken off and handcuffs put on, but these were little restraint, for as I had fallen away considerably I could slip my hands thro' them with ease.

Others persons persuaded of the falsehood and infamy of the charges laid against us found means to convey to us intelligence, and what was still more acceptable, sometimes a loaf of bread, meat, vegetables, fruit &c and this at their great peril—On our first arrival a person came who proposed to furnish us provision at four pounds per man of their paper money per day. General Philips knowing our situation had sent us an unlimited credit and his letter having passed to us thro the hands of the Governor and Council we for a time lived plentifully and had the means of helping out the miserable ration of the prisoners, but after a while the Executive power order'd our purvey—or to limit our allowance, and at length after we had rejected the parole he was forbid to furnish us any longer, so that in the depth of a winter the severest ever known in this country, we had water alone for drink, and our provision was bread of Indian meal and very poor salted Beef,

October 1st a parole was tendered to us which having read and duly considered we all rejected, as some people thought a spirit of obstinacy rather than prudence dictated on this occasion, I send your Excellency a transcript of it. Copy of the first parole tender'd Oct 1st 1778:

I do promise on my parole of honor, that I will not depart out of the limits which shall from time to time be prescribed to me by the Governor of the Commonwealth of Virginia, or any other person having authority from him to prescribe or alter such limits. That I will not say or do anything directly or indirectly to the prejudice of the United States of America or any of them. That I will hold no conference with any prisoners of War, other than those fixed at the same quarters with me, but in the presence of such persons as the Governor or some one acting by authority from him shall appoint, nor send nor receive any letter or message, nor communicate any intelligence to or from any person but with the privity and permission of the Governor, or other person authorized by him for that purpose, to whom all letters or other papers coming to my hands shall be delivered before their seals shall be broken, or they shall be otherwise opened; and this promise which I make on the faith of a gentleman shall be binding on me until I shall be enlarged from my captivity by exchange or otherwise with the consent of the Governor of Virginia.

VIRGINIA [L. S.]

Under the faith of the above parole———is discharged from his confinement in the Publick Jail, is to prepare himself immediately and to take his departure with such Gentlemen as shall be appointed to escort him to Hanover Court house where he is to continue till further orders, not going more than one mile from said court house in any direction.

The County Lieutenant of Hanover has authority to inspect and license all letters from the said.

(Sign'd) TH. JEFFERSON.

As we had suffered already from the simple assertions of obscure persons, one of whom John Dodge, was known by several Virginians to be an unprincipled and perjured renegade, and as we had experienced the inhumanity of the executive power. It plainly appeared that this parole was offered from no other motive than to lay us open to the malice of the first informer when we should probably have been imprisoned as before, with the aditional Stigma of having broken a parole which it was next to impossible to observe in all its parts.

October the 9th. The soldiers were sent from the Jail to the Barrack where being allowed to cut wood a part was sent to the Jail for us, and even the American Soldiers on guard, tho' miserably bare of cloathing themselves, used to spare a part of their own fuel for the dressing our victuals.

On Christmas day the Soldiers were marched away to King William County.

The weather at this time became so intensely cold that we could not rise from the floor, but continued day and night in our blankets. The Scurvy began to make its appearance and our legs to swell. The Jailor then concluding we could not survive the severity of the cold in our present situation, took us to an upper room in the Jail where Prisoners had formerly been kept, this tho' it had no windows but an open grate was more tolerable than the Dungeon, we could light a fire in the chimney and sacrificing part of our blankets to stop the grated window and stuff the cracks in the ceiling we made a shift to endure in the daytime, at night were remanded to our Dungeon.

April 18th 1780. Lieutenant Schieffelin made his escape in company with Monsieur De Rochblave and after great resques and difficulties got to New York.

June 1st Mr. Maisonville destroyed himself August 1st. We were marched from Williamsburgh—Major Hay and I sent to the Jail at Chesterfield. The Surgeon and Mr. Bellefeuille to King Williams Court House. Captain Lamothe and Mr. Dejean sometime in last October accepted the parole formerly rejected, the former went to Hanover, the latter went to Colo. Clarke but what is become of him I have not since learn'd.

Some time in September a second parole was offered for our consideration which varied so little from the first that we chose to remain prisoners rather than accept it.

While at Chesterfield our confinment was rendered very tolerable, and several of the Military and others who were convinced of the injustice and illiberality of our treatment shew'd by their behaviour what opinion they had of the executive power. In this Jail Major Hay and I had a very severe tho' short attack of fever which was pretty generally felt thro' the country, we were well attended. We had liberty to walk about in the neighborhood of the jail. On the 23rd Lieutenant Col. Towler who had been a long time prisoner to the English on Long Island arrived at Chesterfield.

He had had hopes of procuring an exchange, and got permission to come to Virginia to effect it if practicable. He brought me letters from my friends at York which gave me to understand, that unless I accepted the parole, there was little probability of my procuring an exchange. Having therefore written to Brigadier Hamilton to request the continuence of his kindness to the prisoners now removed to Fredric Town, I with Major Hay accepted the parole following.

I Henry Hamilton Lieutenant Governor and Superintendant of Detroit hereby acknowledge myself a prisoner of war to the Commonwealth of Virginia, and having permission from His Excellency Thomas Jefferson Governor of the said Commonwealth to go to New York, do pledge my faith and most sacred promise upon my parole of honor, that I will not do, say write or cause to be done said or written, directly or indirectly, in any respect whatsoever anything to the prejudice of the United States of America, or any of them, untill I shall be enlarged from my captivity by exchange or otherwise with the consent of the said Governor of Virginia or his successor & that I will return when required by the said Governor or his Successors, to such place within the said Commonwealth, as he shall point out, and deliver myself up again to him or the person acting for or under him.

In testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal at Chesterfield this 10th day of October 1780.

HENRY HAMILTON, [L. S.]

The within mentioned Henry Hamilton, having sigined a parole of which this is a copy, has permission to go to New York and to remain within such parts of that State as are in possession of the Armies of his Britannick Majesty, until he shall be exchanged or otherwise liberated with consent of the Governor of Virginia for the time being, or until he shall be recall'd by him.

Given under my hand and Seal of the Commonwealth of Virginia at Richmond, date within written.

TH. JEFFERSON, [L. S.]

Having accepted this parole we hastened to Williamsburgh on our way to Hampton and there were stopped by the Lt. Governor who as General Leslie had just arrived thought it not advisable to let us pass, and gave orders for our being escorted back to Richmond. This treatment I resented telling them they might march me back a prisoner, but that this was a step they might judge imprudent in the present juncture.

They seemed to think so for we had liberty to proceed. As soon as I had given certificates, recommending to General Leslie such of the Inhabitants as had shown an attachment to Government or had been kind to us in our distress, we proceeded to York, where some turbulent people were minded to set a guard over us and stop our progress, at length we got to Hampton. This short journey cost us one thousand pounds such was the depreciated state of the paper money at that time.

At Hampton people were civel to us, furnished us with a canoe, which to our inexpressible satisfaction put on board His Majestys Sloop Delight, Captain Inglis, who by his kind reception of us presently recruited our lowered spirits. We next went to wait on Captain Grayton commander of the Squadron.

The chartel vessel which was to have convey'd us from Hampton to New York, had been taken and the Master's certificate not appearing genuine, he with the vessel were detained.

Having paid our respects to General Leslie who received us with the greatest politeness we returned to the Romulus, Captain Grayton's ship. The chartel master was suffered to go to Hampton to prepare for his voyage.

The stores which General Leslie and Captain Grayton had most liberally supplied us were plundered by the Americans on shore for we did not choose to resque ourselves out of a King's Ship. At length we set off from the Romulus in our Chartel, a little miserable sloop of 36 feet keel, for a passage in which we were obliged to pay four hundred hard dollars. A violent gale of wind obliged us to anchor off Smith's Islands, where we were very near perishing, our crew was three hours at work to get the anchor out of the ground, at last we got it home, leaving one flook behind, and to our no small mortification were obliged to put back to Hampton. Here we were on the point of being detained by order of General Wilson who had assembled some militia, but our skipper being desirous to get away, and having got another anchor, we once more set sail for New York. A very severe gale of wind took us near the Capes of Delaware when our skipper not having a log lime on board laid the vessel to, and we had reason in the morning to admire our good fortune, for the wind was right on shore, and it was twelve at night when we lay to, judging by the sun that we were opposite Delaware Bay, as it proved for we had driven seven leagues up the bay from the time of laying to.

We arrived at New York very squalid spectacles, not having had any sleep for three days and nights, our clothes ragged, shoes broken, and so altered in face and figure that our acquaintances could scarcely recollect us. His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton, Major General Phillips, Lord Rawdon were so good as to take several steps towards procuring our Exchange, which finally took place on the 4th day of March 1781, we took our passage for England the 10th but the packet not sailing till the 27th of May our arrival in this country was so late as the 21st June.

Thus Sir I have attempted to give Your Excellency some account of my unfortunate failure, with the causes of it which while I lament I must attribute chiefly if not entirely, to the treachery of persons, whom I had reason to expect, Lenity and moderation would have gained, and whose interest it was to be faithfull.

Among those to be raised for this Service, there was but little choice, the arts of some rebel emmisaries, and the brigues of persons still attach'd to the Interest of France got the better of the good intentions the Canadians might have set out with.

The difficulties and danger of Colonel Clarke's march from the Illinois, were such as required great courage to encounter, and great preseverance to overcome. In trusting to traitors he was more fortunate than myself, whether on the whole he was entitled to success is not for me to determine,

If my conduct appears to your Excellency in a justifiable light, I may hope to be more pitied than blamed at least your approbation will enable me to support the weight of that censure which seldom fails to accompany an unsuccessful enterprise.

I have the honor to be with profound respect, Sir, Your Excellency's most devoted, most obedient and most humble Servant,

HENRY HAMILTON.

Jermyn Street London July 6th 1781

Endorsed: Lt. Gr. Hamilton London the 6th July 1781. Rec'd from Himself N. B. Ent'd Book marked B. no. 1. folio 73.

[B 123, p. 53.]

LETTERS OF HALDIMAND, BREHM, AND SINCLAIR.

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—From the means of conveying this I cannot do myself the honor of sending Your Excellency a copy of the letter sent from my Lord George Germaine relative to me. When His Lordship judged proper to send me to join General Howe.

No opportunity tho' repeatedly petitioned for, offered for my attending my Duty in your Province, which I endeavoured to draw General Howe's attention to, by applying for leave to carry with the Artificers from Philadelphia in order to make them of service in Canada, and that they might not remain for the conveniency of the Rebels.

I have only to assure Your Excellency that it gave me the greatest satisfaction to find that I was to have the honor of being under your command, having for you Sir the most perfect esteem and respect.

PATT SINCLAIR,
Lt. Gov'r of Michill.

Halifax 20th Oct'r 1778.
[B 97 1, p. 76.]

INSTRUCTIONS FOR CAPTAIN PATRICK SINCLAIR, LIEUT. GOVERNOR & SUPERINTENDENT OF INDIAN AFFAIRS AT MISSILC.

1. As soon as you have received those orders you will repair to the Post of Michilimackinac with all possible Dispatch.

2. His Majesty having been pleased to preserve to you your Rank in the Army after Major Depeyster's Departure, to re-unite as much as possible the Civil and Military Powers in the same Hands, besides the above mentioned Civil Commission. You are appointed to execute, your name is inserted in the Commission of the Peace, for the acting wherein you will immediately Qualify, and are to act as Commandant at that Post, untill a senior officer of the Regiment stationed there arrives, agreeable to orders that shall be given for that purpose.

3. You are to give out the Parole, receive the Honors usually paid to the Commanding officer and order all that is necessary for the Security of the Post and its immediate Defence. If you want to Detach any part of the Troops, with or without arms, beyond the natural limits of the Garrison, you are to require the same in writing from the Senior officer, specifying your Reasons for such Requisition, as he is to do those for his Refusal, in case the complying therewith appears to him Improper.

4. The Gratuity paid out of the Contingencies to the officers commanding at the several posts, being a Douceur intended for the Military, is to continue to be paid to the Senior Officer of the Troops at that Post, who is answerable for preserving their Discipline and the usual Regimental Economy.

5. You are to correspond with the Commanding officer of Detroit, and forward all Returns to Niagara, as customary.

6. You are to pay great attention to the Indians, usually resorting to Missilimackinac, or furnished with necessaries from thence, endeavour to preserve them in good Humour, and attach them by every in your Power to the King's Interest.

7. You are to study the Humours and Dispositions of the several Persons attached to this Post, the Traders thereto and Interpreters, communicating to myself such observations upon them, as you Judge necessary for the King's service, to be known here, should any of them behave in a manner unbecoming the Fidelity & Allegiance they owe their Sovereign, You will send them down by the first safe opportunity.

8. You will draw Bills of Exchange for defraying the Contingencies incident to that Post, in the manner practised by Major Depeyster, taking care to moderate & reduce those Expenses as far as can be done, without injuring the Service.

9. You are to endeavor to cultivate and promote a good agreement among all Ranks of men, residing at or repairing to the Post.

10. You will procure the best Information in Your Power, concerning the Lakes, Rivers and the several communications leading to Missilimackinac, as

well as every circumstance relative to the interior Parts of that Extensive Country. You are from time to time to inform me of these, and of any observations that offer themselves to you upon the Spot, respecting the security of the Post, the furnishing it with Provisions, or promoting or extending the commerce thereof—as well as of every Improvement you Judge, can be made respecting its civil, commercial & military Regulations.

Given under my hand at Quebec this —— 1779.

10. Having built a Vessel for the purpose of going between your Post and Detroit, you will in all respects conform to the orders and Regulations already given in regard to Vessels & Bateaus, navigating the upper Lakes, and of which Captain Schank, Commissioner of said Lakes, is to transmit you a Copy, *said* Vessel as well as all others—being under the immediate direction of the officer commanding at Niagara.

Endorsed:—Instructions given for Lieut. Governor Patrick Sinclair Supert. of the Indians at Missc.

[B 97 2, p. 564.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—By the Commission I had the Honour to lay before your Excellency upon my arrival here, His Majesty was graciously pleased to appoint me Lt. Governor and Superintendent of the *Post* of Michilimackinac.

The 2nd Article of Instructions addressed to me as Superintendent of Indians may eventually limit my charge to that duty and the Civil Business of the Post.

The 3rd Article gives me Infinite Scope for disobedience of orders, and makes the officer to whom requisitions are to be made a judge of their propriety, when, at the same time, it makes me responsible to your Excellency for the Security of the Place.

The 4th Article respecting the Gratuity paid out of the Contingencies to the officers Commanding at the Posts, being a Douceur intended for the Military, & to continue to be paid to the Senior officers of the Troops, must imply that I do not command at that Post, & must destroy the Authority derived in the 2nd Article of these Instructions from the retention of my Rank in the Army.

I beg leave to make these remarks with that respect which I ever entertained and with which I have the honour to be.

Sir, Your most obedt Humble Servt.,

PATT. SINCLAIR.

Quebec, 27th July, 1779.

[B 97 1, p. 177.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC, 17th August, 1779.

SIR—Since I received your letter with remarks upon the Instructions I had prepared for you, I have re-considered the Tenor of your Commission as Lieut. Governor and Superintendant of the Post of Michilimackinac. From which I do not apprehend that I can justify going the lengths I did in these Instructions with regard to Military Powers, Your Commission being in every respect similar to that of Lieut Govr Hamilton's without the least reference to the Rank you retain in the Army, which as a Civil Governor cannot be of any consequence, and if your appointment were a Military one, would be unnecessary. I cannot therefore invest you with fuller powers than I now enclose to you, a Copy of which I shall transmit by the first opportunity to Lord George Germain, in order that His Majesty's pleasure may be known thereupon. In the mean time you will repair with all convenient Dispatch to your Government, as I have given Permission to Major De Peyster to leave it on your arrival.

Upon your showing this Letter to Major De Peyster he will give up to you the Civil Command of the Post, and superintending of Indian affairs, furnishing you with every Instruction & Information relative to the direction of them.

I am, &c., &c.,

(Signed) F. HALDIMAND.

Lieut. Govr. Sinclair.

[B 97 1, p. 187.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—Prompted by duty and affection to my Sovereign in obedience to my Lord George Germain's command to repair to this Province as Commandant of Michilimackinac (an appointment which I never solicited) I came here as early as possible to have the honour of receiving your orders.

Finding upon my arrival here that the undefined powers of Lieut. Governor had embarrassed the King's Service at Detroit, & that the appelation of Commandant in my Lord George Germain's letter respecting me, was considered by Lieut. Governor Cramahé as an expression which had escaped some person young in office, I took the earliest opportunity in offering my service in any line wherein Your Excellency thought proper to employ me.

Your Excellency very obligingly permitted me to make remarks on the first Instructions sketched out for me, on the last Instructions & letter both being signed by your Excellency, it is impossible to make any with the respect I ever wish to preserve for the Commr. in Chief.

These considerations with the state of tranquility in which the Province is at present lead me to ask your Excellency's leave to return to England. I have the honor to be Sir

Your Excellency's most obedt. & most humble servt.

QUEBEC 17 August 1779 PATT. SINCLAIR.

[B 97 1, p. 183.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—Anxious to avoid the appearance of embarrassing the Kings Service & wishing to make no reply on Instructions honored with your Signature, I request Your Excellencys Permission to Return to England, regard for the Service & Respect for you were my Motives, which your Excellency's letter of this Day's date lays me under the necessity of more fully explaining.

The *Civil Command* of the Post, Superintendency of Indian affairs, with the Instructions & Information relative to them, are to be given up to me, on producing to Major De Peyster your Excellencys letter to me, of the 17th Inst. highly expressive of your displeasure, which I am sorry to have incurred, abridging powers given in the first Instructions prepared for me, placing my authority in, (what with submission I conceive) a state of oppugnancy to that of the Senior officer of the Troops, and annihilating my Military Rank, procured by Purchase & earned by Twenty-five years Service.

By the General Tenor of the Instructions, accompanying the letter, the safety of the Post depends upon the Senior officer of the Troops, & his powers are so blended with those of the Civil Lieut. Governor that from my regard to His Majesty's Service, I must beg leave to say (as well as from my knowledge of the duty of that Garrison) that their unavoidable interference must obstruct the Kings business, and to avoid such disagreeable consequences, it must be obvious to your Excellency, after a tedious perseverance in getting to this place, that for that reason, only, I request your Excellency's leave to return to England.

I have the Honour to be Sir Your Excellency's most obdt & humble Servt

PATT SINCLAIR.

Quebec 19th August 1779.

[B. 97 1, p. 187.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC, 19th August, 1779.

Lt. Govr. Sinclair:

SIR—I have your letter of yesterday's date, and see no Reason, whatsoever to change my sentiments respecting the nature of your commission of Lieut. Governor & Superintendent of the Post of Michilimackinac, on which account & Major De Peyster's services being wanted somewhere else, I am to Desire you will Repair thither without loss of time—the Major only waiting your arrival to come away.

I am, Sir, your most obdt & most humble servant.

[B 97 1, p. 186.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC, 20th Augt, 1779.

SIR—However occupied I may be in the variety of affairs, which at this juncture necessarily press upon me, I am unwilling to spare any pains to remove the Impression my letter of the 17th inst. seems, by yours of yesterday, to have had upon you. I have looked over it & cannot find any part of it in the least expressive of Displeasure. I never meant it should be & if you construe it in that sense, you do Injustice to the sentiments I have of you.

I have ever viewed the situations of the Lieut Governors of the Posts as awkward & productive of misunderstandings, I shall therefore be happy how soon the line of their command is drawn. In the mean time I cannot admit the *Possibility* of oppugnancy taking place, wherever His Majesty's Service is in question, with officers of whom I entertain so good an opinion as I do of those who are to occupy those Posts, and I am satisfied that notwithstanding their Powers are so unhappily blended, they will, as they have hitherto done, unite upon every occasion that may offer to promote His Majesty's Interest, and their own honor. In this Faith, I must refer you to my last Letter as a guide, for your conduct, & I assure you that, as well for my own Tranquility, as for yours, and the satisfaction of other Gentlemen in the same Predicament, no endeavor of mine shall be wanting to have the matter finally determined, which, I have already told you, I cannot take upon me to do—for it is not in my power to alter the words of your commission to the sense which perhaps I could wish they could convey.

Far from wishing to annihilate your Military Rank procured by purchase and earned by Twenty-five Years Service, I shall only observe upon that part of your Letter that, on the Contrary, it would give me pleasure did you possess a Company in the Regiment Stationed at your Government.

I am Sir

Lieut Govr Sinclair. ————————

[B 97 1, p. 191.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—I had the honor to deliver to your Excellency in June last for your consideration, My Commission, and My Lord George Germains Letter sending me here as Commandant of Michilimackinac, in that, or in any Military Capacity, I am ready to go, when and where your Excellency may be pleased to order me.

The office of Civil Magistrate not vested in the officer who commands the Garrison, it seems to Your Excellency as productive of misunderstandings, it has already produced them at Detroit, & it must unavoidably impede & obstruct the Kings Service at a time when every facility should be given to it, therefore in the most respectfull manner I decline it, & have the honor to be, Sir, with the greatest respect, Your Excellency's most obedt. most humble Servt.

Quebec, 20th August 1779. PATT SINCLAIR.

[B 97 1, p. 194.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC 20th August 1779.

SIR—I have received your letter of this date referring me to your Commission and Lord George Germain's Letter, wherein you are mentioned a Commandant of Michilimackinac, it is an Authority I have great Respect for, but the tenor of your Commission by which my orders to you must be guided, is, very Different.

The misunderstandings at Detroit however Disagreable to the Individuals concerned did not produce any bad consequences to the King's Service, which, I apprehend is the first object to be considered, & those misunderstandings were sensibly accommodated (from a conviction of your observation, that, in these Times, every facility should be given to the Service) by a mutual & cheerful acquiescence & assistance to promote the Publick Service, until such time as their respective duties should be more fully determined.

I do not well comprehend the last Paragraph of your letter. As Lieutenant Governor you are of course Civil Magistrate. Mr. Hamilton whose Commission is expressly the same with yours has always acted as such in cases where it was necessary, declining to act where your Service is wanted, particularly in these Times cannot Recommend you to His Majesty's favour, nor is it in my power to employ you in any other capacity than that, for which I conceive (by your Commission) You was sent to this country. I therefore wish you to consider maturely before you determine upon a matter of such importance to you. I am Sir &c.

Lieut. Govr Sinclair. (Signed) FRED HALDIMAND.

[B 97 1, p. 189.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—I have the honour to inform your Excellency that Major De Peyster intends to leave this place and to go, in the first vessel that may arrive, to Detroit.

The Major has given me the fullest Information with great readiness, and will leave this place in a state which does him great credit, and yields me great satisfaction and aid.

I beg leave to refer your Excellency for my remarks on the Island of Michilimackinac (the principal of which I have communicated to Major De Peyster) to my letter of this date to Captain Brehm, and

I have the honor to be Sir with the greatest respect Your Excellencys most obedient & most humble Servant PATT SINCLAIR,

Lt. Governor & Sup of Michilimackinac.

Michilimackinac 7th Octr. 1779.

[B 97 1, p 233.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM*

MICHILIMACKINAC, 7 Octr. 1779.

DEAR BREHM—Allow me the liberty of an old Friend and acquaintance in asking the favour of you to communicate to his Excelly. such parts of the following remarks you may judge necessary, or deserving early attention.

The situation of this Fort is in every point of view exceptionable, one capable [incapable?] of being secured against any annoyance but small arms, of giving any protection to vessels, Traders, or any collection of Fuel, Forage, or other Articles necessary or convenient for the Garrison. It also defeats His Excellency's scheme of making a saving of Provisions by agriculture or by procuring any regular or certain supply of fish. A recent and melancholy instance proves how precarious & dangerous the occupation of fishing is, from wind either in Lake Huron or Lake Michigan. Three soldiers of the 8th were very near being lost & one of could not be recovered with all Major De Peyster's great care of him. In the winter it is equally dangerous as the ice breaks up suddenly.

---

*See appendix

On my way to this place I stop't at Michilimackinac Island for several hours, in a very fine Bay well covered by the little White Wood Island. The situation is respectable & convenient for a Fort, in Major De Peyster's opinion, as well as in mine.—

It is so much so that were we to be attacked by any considerable force provided with artillery, that Island would be our place of greatest safety with even temporary works which the Garrison might raise against such an Event— for the space of two days— A Mason, Carpenter, Brick maker & a man acquainted with soil favorable to vegetation were sent over to examine the Island & grounds— I remained there a whole day to examine their discoveries. I can assure the General that Vessels can winter there, that there is very good Timber, & good Clay for Brick— The only stone is limestone and that hard or soft as exposed to the sun—very fit for facing works or building a Powder Magazine should at all events be constructed with it & rendered Bomb proof— There is a large space of lower ground which I hope the inclosed sketch will give you some Idea of, the most convenient for Store Houses, Traders, &ca. The nearest of the upper Grounds & the most favorable, the point marked * rises from a little small ridge which divides the plain and continues to cover the Bay for the distance of 500 yards, it * commands all below and is not commanded by any ground for 800 yards behind it.

This point of rising ground overlooks all the accessible beach on that side of the Island— In short no situation can be more favourable—but for God's sake be careful in the choice of An Engineer & don't send up one of your paper Engineers fond of fine regular Polygons.

Now My dear Brehm as the General wishes for obtaining Provisions from the Labour of the Garrison, & for the removal of this Post to an Island more favourable to that view & more respectable & secure as a post of great consequence in this upper Country—and I am sure equally desirous of drawing from the Expence incurred here—all the advantages which can be derived from it to the King's Service. I will give you my opinion with a freedom which I could not use in a correspondence with the General, of the most effectual way of obtaining these ends—so much wished for, & so essentially necessary.

From amongst the Canadians, particularly those occupied in the trust requisite and laborious occupation of working canoes up the Grande River—& from amongst the Refugees from the other colonies, a Corps might be raised, honoured by way of encouragement, with the title of General Haldimand's Royal Forresters, in which I wish with all my heart you were Lieut Colonel, they would not only be usefull but necessary in forwarding provisions up the St. Lawrence at a time when an alarm might disconcert those who do it now encorve at a greater expence with discontent—It would employ some officers in the Indian Department actively. It would enable the General to begin the scheme of Agriculture at all the Posts, as the Canadians and Provincials have more plyability and patience than our soldiers, some knowledge of that business & of making Implements of Husbandry or substituting things sometimes in their stead. I need not tell you that our soldiers are recruited from an aversion to the plough & to labor. A Detachment from such a Corps, with our Trader's Servants would enable us to remove this Post, next year, and from amongst such men, some would be found of an enterprising turn & might be found usefull to act with Indians in the field, and they would certainly answer one great and good purpose, that of conveying expeditiously the Indians to those objects, to which we might have occasion to draw their attention. They would also be brought to put with a manner of living, which in time, from example, improvement and imitation, our soldiers might either slide into, or by authority be brought to. The lower part of the Province would not be the worse of the General's having some pledges here for their good behaviour, & the Indians would see the reverse of what I believe they are often told by vagabonds amongst them. I need not dwell upon the subject with you, who can so readily judge of any propriety in it, & can improve on this hint. I will only add that as I shall always give the Indians an idea that the General's Conservation of all the Hunting grounds in North America, and willing to cheque any invasion of them from the Colonies against which I will raise their jealousy, to interest them the more at this juncture. Let these comotions terminate how or when they will, it requires no great foresight to say that the Political Perspective of North America must be totally reversed & in my humble opinion the Powers necessary for a conservation of Indian hunting grounds ought to be lodged wt. the Governor General of Canada.

From the Evident Propriety of every step taken by Major De Peyster, &

from his unwearied attention nothing has been left unessayed to attach the Indians to Government, still the affair of St. Joseph shows a disposition not favourable, & that the Doctrine of neutrality is become as well theirs as the Canadian Creed.

Therefore they must be fairly entered & made to step farther into the business by ushering them into Active Service, either against the Rebels posted at the Illinois—or on the Mississippi—or at St. Vincent before these Gentry get a more secure footing by any change or turn of affairs. It is true, that neither Troops, nor Provisions can be spared from hence. Partisans we have not. Oeconomy must be observed, therefore untill the General thinks proper to extend matters on a larger scale, all that can be done by Indian exertion shall be tryed. To guard against the Indiscreet and loose expressions of Traders—I have already administered & will administer to every Trader, whether British or Canadian, who goes amongst the Indians, the following oath—"I do Swear that I will bear true faith & allegiance to our Soverein Lord King George IIId, that I will disclose & make known without delay, all such matters as may come within my knowledge touching His Majesty's Sacred Person & Government, either to the King, to his ministers, Generals, or to some Civil or Military officer acting under their authority & that I will from my detestation & abhorence of the present unatural & horrid Rebellion and of the insiduous intervention of Foreign Power called unto its aid—Manifest by my words & actions a becoming zeal and affection for the Sacred Person & Government of our said Sovereign &c &c., whom God long Preserve."

After troubling you with so long a letter, I need not make any apology for not sending you a sketch of the route by which I came here with some remarks.

Hereafter, the General may think it necessary to improve that communication, and to draw all the Fur Trade from hence, down that way, to prevent any sliding into the other Provinces before it is manufactured at home. I shall however keep them and endeavor to make them Intelligible to you, who was always so good on former occasions, as to make my lame performances in that way intelligible.

It would be almost a breach of friendship to bid you to remember my situation here, I will however assure you that I am Dear Brehm with real regard and esteem, as well as obligation,

Yours faithfully

Patt. Sinclair.

P. S.—I had forgot to mention one thing to you, which I beg you will convey with tenderness. The Indians from Montreal, some of them of little note, & other dispicable receive a profusion of Presents. I met some young men with four guns each, their clothing was too good & in too great quantity, but endeavor, I beseech you, to bring about an attention to the necessity of keeping them dependant upon us for arms, & as much so for everything else as possible. The difference in value between a present here at Montreal is not so immediately obvious to an Indian, but of moment to the Crown and to the attainment of that disposition in the Indian for which the present here is given.

[B. 97 1, p. 234.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

Dear Brehm—I must again so early trouble you with a letter of Business & request that small as it may appear (for from small evils great ones may arise) it may meet with your attention & be communicated to His Excellency on a favorable occasion.

General Carleton & the Bishop sent up one Gibon a Priest on a Mission, for reasons best known to themselves, the part which he at present takes in the Rebel Interest, and may hereafter improve upon, requires in my humble opinion a Mandate from Mon Seigneur for his appearance at Quebec. His conduct will certainly justify me to the General in making this representation, & I do it to avoid any future severity which may, by means of Indians, be necessary to direct against an individual of the Sacred & respectable Clergy—He removes to the Spanish and this side of the Mississippi occasionally, & may be addressed at the Cascaskies.

Intrenching Tools & steel & Iron are as necessary to us as our Provision, & without them we cannot call the provision our own—of the first, there are a few which do not deserve to be mentioned, but of the last indispensible articles, there is not one ounce, therefore, Let me beseech you to send a supply in the Spring, with a Smith's Forge &c. and such artificers, particularly one Blacksmith & Ship or Boat Carpenter for this Post.

I am sorry to represent that there is but two men of the Royal Artillery here, one of them a Recruit—There is no powder here belonging to the Crown. The last Returns will show the want of Shot and Shells, fuzes for them, Rockets and other articles, which, on Examining the Return—you are the best judge of the necessity of sending.

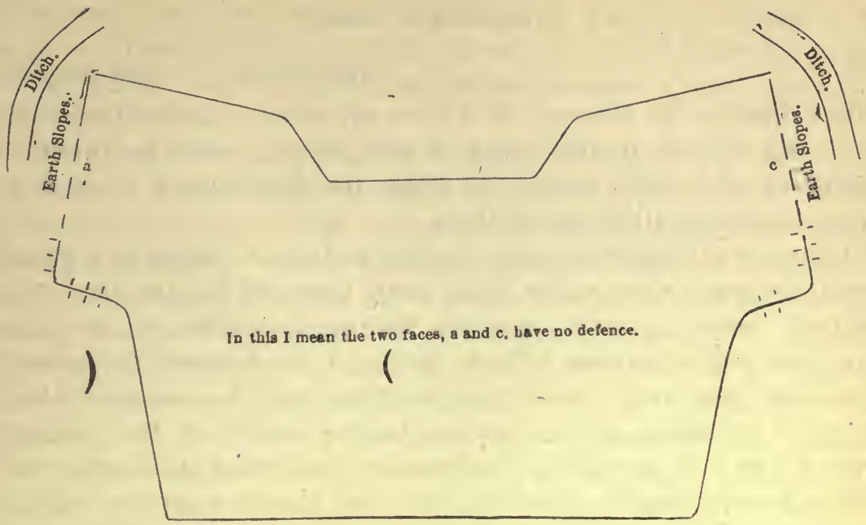
Allow me to add one request which concerns myself, and as such I flatter myself it will not be disregarded by you. The General proposed that I might repurchase a company & it is agreeable to me for many reasons, so to do, particularly as it will bring me into the Rank of Major when the Brevets reach me, without making use of private interest—& it will remove difficulties in the connection with Troops detached, and at Posts to which a Regiment may be separated—still relying on the General's Indulgence to permit me to Exchange afterwards with a capt. in the Regiment which may be stationed at the Post. I now beg leave to return myself a Purchaser and to assure the General the money shall be ready as Mr. Ellice & Coy will take security on my private property & do agree to advance what I want here, or in London, by endorsing any bills on Mr. James Phyn mercht there.

Major De Peyster goes to Detroit by the vessel which carries this, & assures me it will reach you, before winter, in which hope I cannot forbear to mention again the necessity of taking Post at the Island of Michilimackinac, the expense and labour cannot be very great The face of two Bastions made strong with the half faces of both, & the two Flanks to the land side made strong would be all that is requisite, the curtain on that side & the rest piquets. A ditch will be little expense from the angular figure of the ground, the earth being easily removed & that what is not wanted in the inside will be rolled down a bank which is all fine green sodd, very firm & that kind of earth which will not from its adhesion, being limestone, loam, &c., wash away with rain or crumble with frost. It is the most respectable situation I ever saw, besides convenient for the subsistence of a Garrison, the safety of Troops, Traders and Commerce. The Influence it would retain & command with the Indians of this Extended country, & its capability of its supporting itself, for a long time, if the communication with below should be interrupted, are with the General, sufficient argument, I dare say, for setting about the removal of this Garrison as early as possible. When contrasted with our present situation they will become stronger arguments for it with the General himself.

This place being defenceless, & all our dependence on fish, or other supplies of Provision entirely cut off the moment we are invested and shut up within our picquets.

We are certainly liable to be attacked by Lake Michigan, and this may very justly be looked upon as the object of a separate expedition by the Rebels.

In my opinion it would be less expensive to face with stone the part of the work lined thus ——— with the magazines.



In this I mean the two faces, a and c. have no defence.

As there is abundance of stone easily raised & may be cut or shaped, at pleasure the work on the lower ridge may be Pickets—storehouses might be stone at a small expense, that may come in course of time, I mention this only to give you the information necessary for sending artificers. The upper ground for officers and soldiers barracks, Powder Magazine & Provision Store House—The lower for other Store Houses—Traders and the house of the Person who managed the Indians, will be a safe and easy disposition of the whole charge at this post. If it appears to you in the same light the engineer may be advised to follow this idea as far as he may see it proper before he leaves you.

I have only to add that I am Dear Brehm with esteem & regard Yours very sincerely

Patt. Sinclair.

Michilimackinac, 15th Oct. 1779.

My best compliments to Mr. Tenevay, who I would have troubled, & must still give the trouble of my correspondence, if the Service required your absence, for any time from Head Quarters, at the same believe me, that I do not, from a motive of convenience, ask the honor and favour of being permitted to write to you, tho' it certainly adds to the length & trouble of my Letters—

Endorsed:—No. 7, Rec'd the 24th November. From Lieut. Gov. Sinclair.

[B. 97 1, p. 244.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

MISSILIAKINACK 29th Octr 1779.

DEAR BREHM—As this may be the last opportunity that will offer this season, I beg leave to trouble you with some things I wish the General to be acquainted with early enough to know His Excellency's Pleasure in the Spring respecting all or any of them.

Finding the Disposition of the Indians in Lake Michigan very wavering & several Depots of Corn in the rivers there, I sent on the 21st Inst. the Sloop "Felicity" with a carefull man Mr. Robinson as Pilot for the Lake two Canadians well acquainted with the Rivers, & Mr. Gautier, Interpreter, with some small presents for the Indians, directing them to purchase all the grain Grease & Provisions in that country, on the credit of the Merchants & Traders here & to use that of Government if necessary, that where they met with refractory disaffected persons they were to seize upon the corn giving a receipt, for what they could lodge in the vessel & to destroy the rest. Mr. Gautier carries a string of wampum to the Chief of Michlc Island, to tell him that we are to cut down some brush this winter, in order to judge whether we can flatter him with any assurance of making use of his Island, it seems he was for it, I have ordered Mr. Gautier to exhort the Indians to good behaviour during the winter, & to tell any of them who are desirious of going to war, that an Ottawa Chief Minable and A Chipewa Chief Machiquewish with select warriors goes from this to act in concert with the Scioux's, Sac's & Rhenards against the Rebels on the Illenois & in that quarter—that their operations will be directed against Bodies of Armed Men and against Forts or strong holds by Blockade as that Garrisons are dependant for their daily Bread on the Inhabitants who are wearied out of their Demands (such are the orders sent to Roeque & Calvé Interpreters by a Mr. La Croix) and that their services tending to these objects will be rewarded. I have sent several small craft into Lake Huron to bring in all the Corn &c on its banks.

I beg to inform the General that I have given a Copy of the inclosed instructions to Mr. Jean Baptiste Cadot of St. Mary's, a man who was much esteemed by Sir William Johnson & paid for several years by the Crown. He has always maintained a good character in this Country, rendered services in the Indian Commotion "63," he has great influence with the Indians, & is considered by them as a great Village Orator besides. St Mary's is a pass deserving some attention & will be more so when the General receives fuller information relative to the Grande Portage & the North West. I cannot pronounce on their design, but they have endeavoured to hide from General Carleton how easy it was to supply the Illinois & Mississippi from the South side of Lake Superior the wretched conduct of the people in that Country this years disgrace us, and may hurt the Kings Service. The Indians showed uncommon forbearance and a manly open conduct theirs the reverse.

One Pierre Durrand who has been four years in the Illinois Country arrived here with 120 Packs of Furs & expects in the Spring by his Clerk Michael Bello one hundred more. From several unfavourable reports of both I examined his papers very strictly (amongst which are none that required any summary proceeding). However he is made to enter into bond with two responsible men for £1000 sterg., not to aleniate by sale, gift or otherwise any part of his Property, but what may be requisite for his maintenance before the 1st May next. If anything appears then, or within that time, much against him, the terms of the Bond shall be Extended to the General's decision on their conduct. I shall send down in the Spring (Mr. Durrand not wishing to go sooner) the Rebel Paper Dollars found in his possession "the amount of 180 Bills in favour of a Jean Baptist for 447 Dollars, in favor of a Jean Baptiste La Croix 68 Dollars, all drawn by a Colonel Clarke on the Rebel States. Also a Certificate from a Rebel Major that Michael Bello his Clerk had taken the Oaths to their Congress. In palliation of these interferences with the Rebels, Mr. Durrand says that he was obliged to give his goods & take their paper money, and that he was so much afraid of his property as to supplicate Don Leyba a Spanish Lt. Governor at Pencour to allow him to become a subject to His Catholic Majesty. Mr. Durrands petition will be sent with the other papers, and any information that may come hereafter. As certainly the General will not permit Individuals to negociate Bills of Exchange & things of that nature with the Rebels.

Monsr Durrand, upon oath, relates the affairs of the Illenois to be much in the state represented by Major De Peyster to His Excellency excepting that there is no Fort at the Pé. He left that place on the 12th of July last, and saw a Mr. Langto with 40 Rebel Canadians, who were mounted, in that Settlement in March, for Post St Vincents, the day before he left it. He says that the R [Rebel?] Garrison at Cascaskias consists of a few sick men and young giddy recruits from the Country near it. That the Priest Gebou and one Mayette a Canadian are very active in the Rebel Interests.

As some Indians in our neighbourhood are possessed of Rebel Commissions, and particularly one an Ottawa Chief Manétéwabe I have judged it very unsafe to let any vessels or Crafts winter in the River where they used to be lay'd up; it being on the main land. Therefore I have sent a Corporal & four men of the 8th Regt a Trader who is bred a Carpenter with some Trader's Servants to build a Wharf in Haldimand Bay. Michilimackinac

Island, to erect a Block House to cover them, & to prepare Timber for hutting the officers & seamen during the winter. As their services will be required so late this year—that they would not provide shelter for themselves, after gathering in all the Corn from the Different Lakes, which is necessary to get out of the way of Rebel Scouts, & for the use of the Traders here. Since my last letters I employ'd for three days from Sun to Sun in examining the Island of Michilimackinac on which I found great quantity of Excellent Oak, Elm, Beach & Maple with a considerable vein of the largest & finest Cedar Trees, I ever saw. Thro' which there is a run of water sufficient for a Saw Mill. The soil is exceedingly fine throughout, with abundance of Lime Stone on the high banks which almost surround the Island. (Pére Charléboix in his description of it) great quantity of differnt clays, several fine Springs, and the best fishing is all around this Island. I shall employ the vessels crews during the winter & the Corporals Party to clear away the upper ground & prepare Timber &c for any change the Genl may see necessary. In the mean time the vessels will be near to us & safe. The situation is so apparently advantageous that numbers of the People established & well lodged have applied for leave to remove their Effects this winter on a supposition that my examination was from a design of having the Garrison removed next year, I have declined their offers, unwilling to proceed till I have the honor to receive His Excellencys orders. On a review of the ground, I wish to have the General's permission to advise with any Engineer who is sent up as to the diffi't objects which may require his attention in the Construction of any works there. To have the Provision on opposite sides of the Square in this crowded Fort, Lieut. Mercer is directed, to fit up the Indian Council Room— & to overlook & command hollow ground behind a Sand Hill which the Troops could not reduce, he is to raise a Block house, which will also flank the Trader's Houses, that Jobb with cutting down some Brush in & too near these places, will, I hope be our last essay here, in that way. I will depend upon hearing from you in the Spring, were it only to scold me for troubling you so often, yet after I shall not cease to assure you that I am Dear Brehm, with sincere regard. Yours,

PATT. SINCLAIR.

From real necessity Lieut Brooks of the 8th has received my directions to take under his care all Public & Private Boats, Canoes, & their appurtenances, a temporary allowance.

[B 97, 1 p 260]

Memo in Explanation of Letter 29th Octr.

From a stricter examination of the Provisions here, I have to inform His

Excellency that there are 34000 lbs of Flour which has been already from 18 to 14 months at this Post. From this circumstance I have been induced to hire nine People for the winter to work at the Island, in preparing timber, shingles, Pickets &c. which the General will not think too precipitate, when they are wanted even here, if it should be difficult to remove us. The expense of raising a Block House here and clearing the Brush were unavoidable, as the Oxford Blues might have come within 50 yards of our Picketts unseen. As there is so much old Provision here, it is in my opinion a favorable time for posting us on the Island, where we must go to, if we are threatened with any great Force, and then it will appear to the Indians to be a step taken from timidity. I am determined not to put my name to any condemnations of flour but what is thrown into the Lake—and to no Pork during the Rebellion that can be kept in Store.

We now mix a Barrel of old Flour (indeed not good) to three of new to make it eatable. If the General sends in the Spring men capable of erecting & working, a saw and Grist mill with some of the Dutch Refugee Families below, I will answer for the success of the scheme, of Agriculture & make Provision turn to some account which might have been useless.

Mr. Cadot has a son who is about to enter into the order of Priesthood. As he is young and may be managed as to principals (under a very honest Father), it would be good Policy to send him to our new Establishment, & in time might answer other good purposes.

He is at the Seminary, Montreal.

[Written on back of preceding letter:]

Michilimackinac 6th Novr. 1779.

Dear Brehm—This Inst, the Felicity is arrived from Lake Michigan without accident, her Journal kept by Mr. Robinson, who will now direct the Wharf for the security of the Vessels in Haldimand Bay, Michlic. Island, and the other work's during the winter. I enclose having no time to select from it what only is worth attention.

I am ever yours affectionately

[B 97 1, p 267.]

Patt Sinclair.

BREHM TO SINCLAIR

Quebec April 17th 1780.

Sir.—His Excellency has carefully preserved your letters of the 7th & 29th of November. After signifying to you his perfect approbation of your observations and Proposals in General, as well as of the beginning you have made in consequence of them, I shall proceed to answer to each in particular in the order they are laid down by you beginning with that of the greatest Import. The Removal of the Post to the Island.

The Inconveniences attending its present situation & the advantage of which being so fully demonstrated by you after so careful & minute an examination (cannot fail to result for the change.) His Excellency is determined to carry it into Execution, altho' he is sensible many difficulties & delays will unavoidably occur, because the great demand he has for artificers &c. will not permit him to send you that supply, which your situation seems to call for.

His Excellency has however ordered you a Foreman of Carpenters with a Sergeant & twelve artificers from the 84th Regmt, who are to go by the Great River Ottawa, and take with them a small assortment of Tools, a Smith's Forge with Iron & Steel, also Intrenching Tools &c—will be forwarded over the Lakes as soon as possible but in the present situation of affairs, His Excellency thinks it more essential to employ your strength in the immediate Execution of your Defences than to begin by building a Saw Mill, which must therefore be an after consideration.

I am sorry to inform you that His Excellency cannot Spare you an Engineer to Conduct the Works of your new Post, but he has that confidence in your abilities as to think you will be able to proceed very well without one—particularly as Captain Twiss the Commanding Engineer will transmit to you, by this opportunity, his ideas, respecting the proposed situation, as far as he could obtain a knowledge of the Ground from your Sketch—You must endeavour to reconcile his plans to the ground, rather by adhering to the principles he lays down, than by following the Exact figures he proposes. All these Circumstances being well considered, His Excellency leaves it to your Judgment to determine whether the Forces for command, added to the advantage of employing all the Canadians who will occasionally be at your Post, it will be prudent entirely to evacuate your Present Post, for my own part, as Captain Twiss informs me, most of the Artificers belonging to the 84th Regmt. are exceeding good workmen, I think you might remove entirely, because from old materials, if transported with care, will serve to cover you, & when your Garrison is collected on the spot, your Firewood will be so easily procured as to leave a great deal of time for working.

I know it is His Excellency's determination to send you a large supply of Rum, which distributed with Oeconomy & seconded by the endeavors of the Merchants, who I have no doubt will afford you every assistance in their Power, cannot fail to advance your works, & that expeditiously but previous to the work being put in forwardness, the General desires that whatever agreement it may be necessary to make with the Chief & nation, who claim the Property of the Island, may be executed in the fullest & most satisfactory manner, to prevent any after Demands for Purchase Money or claims of the Land. Besides this it would be well, as much on account of the Utility to Trade—as in a Military view—if the Merchants were to represent the necessity of removing their Protection to the Island, setting forth the advantages that would accrue to them by it—and at the same time removing at their own expense their Houses, Stores, &c. which must be situated upon the new ground, subject entirely to the direction of the Governor, & upon such sufferance as the Kings Interest may require, it is unnecessary to enter more fully into this part of the Business with you, who, from long experience, are so well acquainted with the situation & the people and consequently with the Precautions it will be needfull to take with them. These Preliminaries settled, the more vigorously you can proceed in establishing the new Post, the Better.

The scheme you have suggested of raising a Corps, formed of Canadians and Loyalists appears eligible, & would certainly facilitate this understanding, but how far such measure may be found expedient, I cannot pretend to form any judgment of—however in case the Kings Service requires it you may order four or six Horses with Harness compleat from Detroit, and these, together with a reinforcement of about Forty men, which will be sent to you, as early as possible by Major De Peyster, is all the assistance you are to depend upon.

Your observations upon the temporizing Disposition of the Indians, so manifest by their conduct at St. Joseph's, are very just and were it possible that the Extension of Scale, which you point to, & be adopted, it would effectually determine them in our interests, but so circumscribed is our system of war in this country from a scarcity, if not an almost total want of every article necessary to prosecute it vigorously, that we are, on all sides, reduced to shifts & obliged (in the Language of the World) to make the best of it. The precaution which you have taken to preserve the Fidelity of the Traders, & to employ the minds of the Indians is all, in your present condition, that you can do, and from the Talents you have already discovered in the management of both, His Excellency has no doubt that as much as can be done with those people will be effected.

Your necessary hint concerning the superfluity of presents given to Indians of your Country at Montreal has been as you desired—tenderly convey'd & will be attended to. Your observations upon that subject are obviously just, and will not only be a saving to Government but answer the great end of keeping those Indians whose services you are to expect, immediately depending on you. While occasionally at Montreal they are constantly debauched with Liquor and to procure which they sell their presents, & get them replaced perhaps three or four times. They should be accustomed to receive presents where they are employed from the Hands of their Employers only, & it would be well of you to discourage as much as possible their coming down upon the Subject of Presents, & Indian Expenses in General. I am particularly charged by His Excellency to be full with you, & here I am to signify to you the Pleasure your confidential and enlarged manner of writing affords the General. It is much to be wished that it were more generally practiced, as it is the only means by which a Commander in Chief can arrive at a knowledge (so absolutely necessary for the good of the service) of Remote Posts not in his Power to visit.

Major De Peyster from his established character, & from every report during his command at Michilimackinac has been zealous, active & attentive to his Duty—but from the very enormous sum that has been expended at that Post in the course of the last 18 months (for which nothing appear, to have been done) very far exceeding that at Niagara for the whole six nations, including the Pay of their officers (not contained in the Michilimackinac accounts) it appears impossible but that some very great abuses have been made by those employed in the Indian Department, many of whom are very improperly concerned in Trade—whose Interest it becomes to excite the Indians to everlasting Requisitions from the commanding officer—who taught to believe that they must be indispensibly complied with, thinks himself obliged to submit. As all evils are more easily prevented than remedied, it will be difficult suddenly to retrench,—the Indians being now accustomed to receive so bountifully, yet His Excellency hopes much from your Abilities & Experience in this Business. The Improbability of the Indians in your Quarters being supplied by the Enemy, makes them absolutely dependent on you, for every necessary which it will be in your power to Extend or withhold according to their merits, in this you will find but little assistance from those you should most expect it—for the Reason above mentioned—but your perseverence & attention I am sure you will bestow to this so essential an object may in a great measure conquer all difficulties.

His Excellency very much approves your having sent to collect the Corn in the Depots made by the Indians upon Lake Michigan & Huron, as a serviceable measure to increase the Stock of Provisions & a very proper precaution to prevent supplies being formed for the Enemy's use—never theless in these critical Times, you should be extremely careful to avoid giving any grounds of offence to the Indians.

His Excellency will be glad of every Information you can procure relative to the Pass of St. Mary's, the Grande Portage &c and particularly the advantages you hint at by supplying the Illinois & Mississippi, from the South side of Lake Superior, and the most likely means of correcting the abuses of the People in that Country, whose conduct you so much complain of in these Inquiries—Mr. Cadôt from the favorable character you give of him, is a likely Person to be useful to you—

I am farther to signify to you His Excellency's approbation of your Proceedings with Mr. Durrand, he waits his arrival & your farther Information & opinion concerning him—

Your Reason for Laying up the Vessels in the Bay at the Island, His Excellency thinks prudent, & approves of your preparations for that purpose, depending upon your particular attention to Œconomy—His Excellency has no doubt that it has been indispensibly necessary to appoint a Person to take care of the Public & Private Boats, &c., he has therefore no objection to your employing Lieut Brooks for such time only, as you may find it necessary.

Your Resolutions respecting the condemnation of Provisions & your good management in turning the old remains of that article to advantage gives satisfaction to His Excellency & justifies your having hired the men you mention for the useful purposes you have employed them—

The General is much pleased by the flattering Prospect you give of success in his favorite scheme of Agriculture, & you may Depend on having every assistance in his power in forwarding it— Some Garden Seeds will be sent by this Opportunity, & some Rye if it can be procured, the General thinking that Grain will, as in all Northern Countries answer best with you, but an experiment may be made with all kinds.

Your Hint concerning young Cadôt will be attended to, & if it should be brought about may have very good effect.

His Excellency will likewise profit of your Information of Pere Gibeau.

Necessary artillery stores will be sent to you, & if possible some men to employ them, the want of these has made it necessary at the several Posts particularly at Niagara constantly to practice the soldiers in that Branch, who are now tolerably expert.

I have His Excellency's orders particularly to inform you, that he has received certain Intelligence that the Spaniards & French from New Orleans have taken the Post of Manchack, Baton Rouge, & the Natchés, which may very probably have unfavourable consequences amongst the Indians, & may perhaps enable the Enemy to push forwards towards the Ohio, & form establishments there; probably you are better acquainted with these facts than we are. Indeed you cannot be too attentive in your endeavours to procure authentick intelligence from these quarters.

I sincerely congratulate you upon your appointment to a Company in the 84th Regmt. in the room of Captain McDougal, by purchase.

I enclose you the King's speech. I have no other Public news to mention to you, except that Sir Charles Hardy with the Grand Fleet was cruizing off Brest on the 10th of Novr. & that the combined Fleets were both there.

Admiral Rodney is appointed to the command of both Fleets in the West Indies, where Admiral Parker appears to have taken a number of armed victuallers, which has so distressed D'Estaing as to leave us with a great superiority. I am, &c.,

(Signed), D. Brehm,
Aid de Camp.

P. S. His Excellency has ordered light set of Horse Harness, six syth's, and 12 whetstones for do. from Montreal, and four pair cart wheels and six horses from Detroit, supposing the rest.

[B 97 2, p. 307.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

Michilimackinac 15th Feby 1780.

Dear Brehm—By my several letters in Autumn last, I informed you that the Vessels were to winter at the Island of Michilimackinac, in the course of which, I have been able with aid of a Mr. Robertson, an able artificer and sensible man, to erect a Block House, detached and placed so as to cover the defenceless side of this Fort, & to allow us some safety in opening our land gates—before our Partie de Decouverte makes its round. It is a square of 16 feet, pierced for Cannon on three sides, & will enable us to keep musquetry, at a distance from its over-looking every hollow way for 600 yds.

Our savages on this side have produced 16000 feet of Plank and Boards.

On the Island Mr. Robertson has the Inspection of the Works, and has carried out a Wharf to 150 feet in two fathom water well framed & partly filled with stone.

I hope to have it completed agreeable to the enclosed plan about the end of March. It will show you that the Vessels are already perfectly secured against Ice or winds. However as the winter is the best season for this kind of work I will take advantage of the Ice to finish it, having our Quarry for stone & wood convenient for the purpose—There are 3000 Cedar Picketts already cut to drive in a very fine clay bottom to bind in the whole map—& after they are drove in their upper ends will be confined by a strong double frame and squared Loggs laid on that to finish the whole—We have nearly 30,000 shingles made and dressed on the Island which affords the best Cedar & Oak, I ever saw, Six men are at present, & ten will be employed in twenty days in squaring us Cedar to the astonishing size of Eighteen Inches, for the purpose of having ready framed to put up at an hour's notice.

Five Block Houses for Cannon, twenty feet square—either to cover any detachment sent up to assist us, or to secure the Kings stores, Merchandise and the Garrison in case of the worst. The mens Barrack's on this side will remove with ease & little trouble, as we shall saw the shingle roof, without hurting it, in pieces fit for transportation. The provision store, tho' small will be worth removing, & two men are squaring cedar to make an additional to it. As this place was never the seat of Industry I had to Combat with some Difficulties which nothing, to tell you the truth, but very strict attention to the Kings Previcions enabled me to overcome—and, now, with all these works going on pretty well & regular, I have all the Traders, their servants, and —— employed in carrying over the Church to the Island, which will be I expect completely rebuilt about the latter end of March. The French Church will stand where the Traders will be hereafter fixed, not in the Fort. By this removal the Worship & work of the Canadians will be drawn to the Island next year—and a space left open for us to throw up an interior Redoubt for our Provision, Goods & Garrison—and if such a step becomes necessary I must give up a part of our present space, & with the Pickets extended our work equal to that, towards the Sand Hill on the S. W. but, as yet a retreat to the Island seems a preferable security. The Indians are apprized of the matter in the light of a Personal Dislike to this place, which I always express to them.

But from the attachment of two or three People to their good Houses, on this side, some artful insinuations were sliding amongst the Indians, which, with several advantages attending the removal of the Church, were soon silenced. The Priests House will follow. The subject leads me to enquire whether or not Mons Seigneur Briand will issue out two mandates for the appearance of the Vagabond Gibault who stiles himself Vicar General of the Illinois.

Allow me in an official capacity to request that you will mention this again to the General as indispensibly necessary. *Let them be sent to me,* I will forward them and publish them at the Illenois in order to blast any remains of reputation which the wretch may have been able to preserve among Scoundrels almost as worthless as himself. To return to the subject of our preparations for a removal of the Garrison. A corporal & eight men have now cleared about four acres of the upper ground, proper for placing a Fort on, In, so doing we have prepared Sixty Chord of firewood, Saved all the Timber that would square, with Pickets, Poles, &c fit for use,—So far we are ready for lime burning, which we shall quarry Stone for—out of a Ditch which shall be cut from Bank to Bank—It is a dry limestone, very light, easily quarried, and with it we will fill up at a cheaper rate and with more expedition and ease, between our Cedar Frames, the officers Barracks, the addition to the Provision Store & a kind of lodge for the Indian Manager in the Village, which will be enclosed in the Pickets & covered by two Block Houses, or Redoubts on two sides, and by the Lake and Fort on the other two sides, The situation is the most favorable, & for that purpose five Cedar Pickets of Eighteen feet & 10 inches diameter are required and cheerfully granted by every white man residing at the Post, and will I dare say, be agreed to by every one who may resort to it hereafter. The Soil is so very good that the General cannot try his scheme of Agriculture in a better one.

Our Village will be washed on one side by a fine Spring which with some care may be brought to turn a mill at least one day in seven. On the opposite side of the Island there is a fine stream of Water which runs through a large Vein of the fine Cedar we now use for Shingles &c.

Two Canadians are preparing Post & rail fence to enclose a fine grass Platt of about thirty acres for the King's Cattle which will be sent to the Island before the Ice breaks up. After giving you this long detail, you will naturally think of the Expense attending our work, & how far it may divide our attention from the proper care of our present ruinous situation. As to the first, I have made no friends, by any display of Liberality in the Disposal of the King's Money, & I will venture to assure you that I will rather be represented by some as parsimonious in that matter. Our Expenses in May will amount to about £1500 New York currency by my calculation—our Canadians are fed with Provision which would not be fit to use in warm weather.

There has not yet been Five Barrels condemned since my arrival at the Post, and, till the end of the Rebellion very little shall undergo that sentence—I have a Sergeant and six men employed in fishing & perhaps I may be able over & above Indian consumption, to send some thousand weight of fine trout to Niagara for the use of our brown allies there—we smoak it with juniper, after keeping it one night in salt, amongst the many Disappointments in my coming so late here last Fall, there is that Material one, that our Fishing Tackle did not come up, nor was I able to get the proper fisher-men from among the North West Canoe men, who are so expert that I have ordered Monsr. Cadot to hire three for the Crown for the sole purpose of fishing—had this taken place in time One Hundred Thousand weight of delicate fish food might have been provided for Indians yearly—with ease—Excuse another Digression—For the Defence of the Works on the Island as well as for the Safety of the King's stores here, one vessel must remain if I can not make a flat bottomed vessel of Mr. Askin's bear Oak Planks on the side and the shock of a Three Pounder. That kind of security & a Block House for the reception of some trusty Canadians will be all we can spare for the Island—whether the situation of the other Posts will admit of a Detachment to assist us on the Island or not, we will still avail ourselves of the aid of the Canadian Canoe men &c. & 4 or 5 days work, in the course of next summer from 1000 men said to visit this place yearly will help us on, if any restraint which the General thinks necessary to lay on Trade will admit of such a number—Having seen few Indians, & being as yet a stranger to the consequences of the Genl. Store formed here last year, I can only say that what goods come to the Post shall, in case of danger, be placed as a cover for the Troops, as well as a Provision or any other stores worth exposing to destruction if they cannot be defended—It is in that way I mean to comply with your Honor's orders—As I will not disobey them—coming from a Friend and being very proper—Mr. Clark is to visit St. Joseph's, with a Design, as he gives out, to destroy it as being a nest of Tares—However I am not so easily duped, as I am an old soldier—I will do all I can to sweep it clean for his reception, as soon as possible, and he will highly gratify me by destroying everything animate & inanimate there.

It is most probable that as their attempts agst. the Center posts of the Communication did not succeed last year, that they will begin with the weakest flank this year. Therefore on the same principle that I wished for more Canadians in the Upper Country, I will use my utmost endeavours to send away as many as I can of the Indians to attack the Spanish Settlements as low down as they possibly can, in order to procure the assistance of the others at home. I am so perfectly convinced of the General's Geographical as well as other knowledge that I do not know where to look for the cause of a doubt about giving some and [aid?] to General Campbell from this Quarter, but in His Excellency's opinion of some want in me—and that so material a want that I ought to be considered as a very unfit person for this place—the most advanced on the Continent, if it is so.

Lieut Govr. Hamiltons disaster has nothing in it to make the Scioux and other nations far to the West-ward, even to recollect the circumstance, many of them never heard of it. The short sighted harpies, which necessity has thrown into the service dwell upon the stories they heard from fretfull bands of Delawares, Mascontins, and Kicapous near where the Event happened.

Admit that the Disaster has all the supposed consequent misfortune, it is still more necessary for us to engage the Indians to take a part which will at once declare their Enmity to the Party they are engaged to act against, and make it more difficult for their French Friends to effect a Reconciliation should inattention or neglect leave room for the change on our part.

On the day after I received the extract of Lord George Germain's letter, with a part of the General's letter to Colonel Bolton which Major De Peyster very properly forwarded, I sent a War Party engaged by the Lieut Cadot to be in readiness by the South Side of Lake Superior into the Country of the Scioux, a warlike people undebauched, under the authority of a chief named Wabasha of very singular & uncommon abilities, who can raise 200 men with ease, accustomed to all the attention and obedience required by discipline.

I have also wrote to a Monsr Rocque, an Interpreter paid by the Crown, for that nation, enclosing one of Genl. Haldimand's printed commissions, with a power from myself for enabling Wabasha to draw some necessaries from Rocque, to raise a body of his own Indians, and of any others, whether Indians or whites, which he may choose to add to his Suite. I have recommended to him to lose very little time in getting as low down the Mississippi as the Natchez, to take for his Interpreter amongst our Friends there a Mr. Key who I have instructed to put himself under Wabasha's command and to serve him in that capacity of a commissary, to carefully attend to the accounts which he may receive of any body of our Troops coming up the River Mississippi, and to consider well the People he may have occasion to confide in before he takes that step, to point out the Wabasha, which I have done also, by letter to Rocque, that no Difficulties can occur from the want of Provision—both sides being well stored with cattle and game, and that the difficulty of remounting the Stream can never be fatal as he has the Two Florida's & the Natchez for a retreat, should he at once think of proceeding as low as New Orleans. But as he will be able to get information at the Natchez that, if he did not hear of an English army coming up the Mississippi to attack by surprise any of the Spanish Forts, and by assault any of their exposed Parties, settlements or Villages.

By the Extracts from Lord George Germain's & from the General's letters sent to me, I am a loss to know whether this preparation may not be too early on account of want of secresie in the people I have employ'd, and from their getting too near Orleans before the arrival of the Brigadier.

Or, on the other hand, they may be too late, which, will I hope be the case to promoting the Conquest of the Town itself. As afterwards they can act against the Rebels on this side which I have pointed out to them. I have confidence in and hopes of their Leader, as Wabasha is allowed to be a very extraordinary Indian and well attached to His Majesty's Interest.

Being at a loss, as I said, in point of time, I have supposed the Army for that service will arrive before Orleans about the first of May. Our information on such occasions requires to be very pointed, from the distance we have to hunt for our means of executing the wish of our Superiors.

Mr. Hamilton's disaster proceeded from want of system, uncertain information & want of attention in others as much as from the precipitancy of the measures he took himself, and the want of a regular district correspondence will ever produce such ill effects.

The intervention of a winter can only apologize for the length I have spun out mine to, with a desire to make you acquainted with as much of our situation here as comes yet within my knowledge.

I enclose a letter for His Excellency, which, as confidential, I would not wish to appear in any Secretary's office, not so much for any personal consideration as from the ill consequences which might attend giving private character of People, who shall never be able to discover the opinion I entertain of them further than what may be necessary to correct abuses very detrimental to the King's Service—Some of that kind have required such an execution, it has been applied with all the tenderness possible, and the Husband of an old acquaintance of yours laid himself very open to it.

You knew the man a little & may remember him by the circumstances of his bringing me in your debt for money which he forgot to put to the Credit side—however from duty not from pique, I have been obliged to tie up his hands a little without quarrelling with him. Could I possibly be in an ill humor when I write to you, I might mention some grievances.

Now, let me ask you how you keep your health, how the world goes with you, & when you are to write to an old acquaintance—Give my kind compliments to Mr. Tennevay, & assure him of my good wishes, & that I shall certainly trouble him with such another letter as this, if the King's Service requires your absence.

If I had endeavored to be concise in writing this letter I could not well have given you much less trouble unless I had omitted this excuse which I know you would have been so kind as to have dispensed with.

I am Dear Brehm with regard & esteem yours very sincerely

Patt Sinclair.

[B 97 1, p. 271.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

DEAR BREHM—After writing you a Letter of fifteen pages, I now enclose you a demand of Medicines from Dr. Mitchell which I assure you to be necessary for Artificers, Indians &c. and as such you will be so good as to represent it to His Excellency, that it may be ordered up this year. I have desired Mr Ellice who sends me what things I want, to forward nothing with the Generals particular permission, which Galls begs for a Mr Meldrum who promised to supply the Crown at a sure & easier rate than any Person here. If the General has granted such Indulgence at the other Posts, I hope on your representation that it will not be denied to me—As I can with truth say that I have not made one Shilling here, or will not to the prejudice of the Kings Service.

I send you a letter for my Brother to be forwarded by the first opportunity in the Spring & I am Dear Brehm Yours very Sincerely

Michilimackinac 17th Feby 1780. PATT SINCLAIR.

[B 97 1, p. 289.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—I have the honour to inform Your Excellency, that in compliance with My Lord George Germain's requisition in the Circular Letter sent from Detroit, on 22d January, I sent, on the day after its arrival here, a War Party of Indians (for some time past in readiness) to the Country of the Scioux to put that nation in motion under their own chief Wabasha, a man of uncommon abilities—They are a People undebauched addicted to War, & Jealously attached to His Majesty's Interest. Their Force is considerable & their situation very favorable from its proximity to the River Mississippi, Mons. Rocque, the King's Interpreter for them will probably attend Wabasha, I have ordered a Mr. Key to act as their English Interpreter & Commissary. They are directed to proceed with all dispatch to the Natchez & to act afterwards circumstances may require, & as I have pointed out more fully to the Sieur Rocque—I shall send other bands of Indians from hence on the same service, as soon as I can with safety, disclose the object of their Mission—I am at a loss to judge, in point of time, & can only hazard an opinion that the Brigadier & his Army will be at the place of their destination some time in May. I beg leave to refer Your Excellency to my other letter of this date & to Capt Brehm for further information.

I have the honour to be with respect Sir, Your Excellency's Most obedt. & most humble Servt. PATT SINCLAIR.

Lt. Govr. of Michilimackinac.

Michilimackinac, 15th Feby 1780.

[B 97 1, p. 285.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—In this letter I mean for your Excellency's Information, to give a description of men & matters as I conceive them to be.

The King's Provision Store has required not only my strict attention, but my vigilance, being in the charge of a man who has a Contract with the North West Traders—the daily waste is lessened and to prevent the yearly depredation, I will make the enclosed requisition to the officer of the Troops, when the Ice breaks up.

The utility of a General Store for Trade formed by Major De Peyster is more conspicuous for its care in choosing proper Persons for the wintering grounds than in taking collective security for Individual conduct. Half of the little Merchandise sent up last year will purchase all the Furrs this winter. The other half, value at Montreal 40,000£ Y. Curry, only, remains here for the benefit of the Adventurer, not of the State & the Indians, I fear, will not be interested in the presentation of their half, for which they must pay so dear. The Remedy will not apply immediately.

This Post is defenceless, & without proper Cannon, Artillery, Stores, Artifices, or materials to secure the few men, & large Deposits of Provisions & Merchandise.

From the vanity natural to young men, the Indians have heard of a division of Authority here, at the repeated solicitations of all the officers I gave an order for one Court Martial, on which no Punishment followed, or been since necessary.

The Sieur Cadot of St. Mary's a very honest man, has my orders to remove part of a square of 120 feet per side fortified by Messr Askin &c. &c.

The Post of St. Joseph's in its present state will intercept or impair such aids as I may intend from this, to cut off the supply of any Rebel Force directed against the Detroit or Niagara—Whether I am to look for Monsr Chevallier's demerit in his several intrigues, or in the villany he openly displays, I shall be less puzzled than in bringing Him & his Compatriots to this Post, I have requested of Major De Peyster to second me with all possible address.

No communication with Niagara & this place is opened by Toronto, tho' very easy & short. The services of the Indians must be used or lost—and until the arrival of the circular letter from my Lord George Germain it was much more difficult to say how than when they were to act.

A Supply of Indian Presents is wanted very early—in that Department a Monsr Langlade with a Captns Commission from Genl. Carleton, a Mr. Gautier (Interpreter in the room of Mr. Ainsea, a man of abilities allowed to retire by Major De Peyster) are men of no understanding, application or steadiness, though I believe well disposed to undertake services which I cannot confide in either. As no accident of any kind has happened to any sett of People here since Major De Peyster left this, The returns will go agreeably to your Excelly. orders, later in the spring.

I have prepared nine large Belts Geographically descriptive of the strides made in Colonization, of our and the Spanish situation on the Mississippi, & placed two Indian figures with pointed hands & raised axes in the Country between this & that River—It serves to please them—

I have the honor to be with respect Sir—Your Excelly's most obedt
Humble Servant

PATT SINCLAIR
Lt Govr of Michilimackinac

[B 97 1, p. 286].

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

MICHILIMACKINAC 17th Feby 1780.

SIR—Since my letter of the 15th Inst the arrival of an Indian Chief personally acquainted with me, affords me an opportunity, earlier than I expected, of ordering Mr. Hesse, a Trader and a man of character (formerly in the 60th Regt) to assemble the Minominés, Puants, Sacks & Rhenards, in the neighborhood & to take Post at the Portage of the Ousiconsing's & Foxes Rivers, there to collect all the Canoes and Corn in the Country, for his own and for the use of the nations higher up, who will be ordered to join him at the Confluence of the Rivers Mississippi & Ouisconseing. Mr. Hesse is ordered not to move from his first stand, until I send him instructions by Sergt. Philips of the 8th Regt, who will set out from this on the 10th of March with a very noted Chief Machiquawish & his band of Indians. For want of a Cypher & to assist the Serjeant, I am unwillingly obliged to send a Private of the Kings Regt, a Highlander, writing in that language to the Brigadier.

The Reduction of Pencour, by surprise, from the easy admission, of Indians at that place, and from assault from those without, having for its defence, as reported, only 20 men & 20 brass Cannon, will be less difficult than holding it afterwards. To gain both these ends the rich furr Trade of the Missouri River, the Injuries done to the Traders who formerly attempted to partake of it, & the large property they may expect in the Place will contribute.

The Scious shall go with all dispatch as low down as the Natchez, and as many intermediate attacks, as possible, shall be made. We will endeavour a system and connection in directing their operations to the service in view.

I have only to add that, I am with the greatest respect Sir Your Excellency's most obdt & most humble Servt

PATT SINCLAIR.
Lt. Govr of Michilimackinac.

General Frederick Haldimand.

P. S. I have told Mr. Hesse & all the Traders to observe strict Œconomy & I have assured them that any pecuniary advantages they may deny themselves, in making all the same compleat preparations, shall be amply made up to them in a better and surer way.

[B 97 2, p. 290.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC 10th May 1780.

SIR—Should you find it necessary for the Protection of Trade, or safety of your Post, to have a Party of Soldiers stationed at the Falls of St. Mary, the reinforcements you will receive from Detroit, and the assistance that will naturally be afforded to you, in carrying on your Works, by the Traders will, I hope enable you to send such a Detachment as will answer the Purpose.

Lieutenant Glennie (late of the Royal Artillery) having called upon Corporal Charles Davidson (of that corps) as an evidence at a Court Martial to be held at Montreal as soon as possible, You will please to send him down by the most Expeditious Route, His Place shall be supplied from Detroit or Niagara. I am Sir &c &c.

Lieut Govr Sinclair. (Signed) FRED HALDIMAND.

[B 97 2, p 336.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC 19th June 1780.

SIR—I have Received your Letters of the 15th & 17th of Feby & much approve of the measures they advise me you have taken in the arrangement of the War Parties intended to favour the operation of Brigadier Genl. Campbell agreeably to the Circular Letter forwarded to you directing that

Service after having so successfully engaged the Indians in their pursuit, it is very unfortunate that the Expedition should have been either abandoned, or not undertaken so early as was intended, owing probably to the Fleet having been Dispersed which from what has happened upon the Mississippi, it would appear has been the case. The intermediate attacks you have proposed the Indians should make, will however answer a good end, & keep them in employment, ready to undertake any service that may occur.

Your Dispatches of the 29th ultimo are Received, time will not permit their being answered by this opportunity my last Letters will in a great measure save that Purpose. I am &c (Signed)

Lieut Govr. Sinclair. FRED HALDIMAND.

B 97 2, p. 366.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—Your Excellency was informed by my letter of February last, that a Party was to leave this Place on the 10th of March to engage the Indians to the Westward in an attack on the Spanish & Illinois Country. Seven Hundred & fifty men including Traders, servants and Indians, proceeded with them down the Mississippi for that purpose on the 2nd day of May.

During the time necessary for assembling the Indians at La Prairie du Chien, detachments were made to watch the River to intercept craft coming up with provisions and to seize upon the people working in the lead mines. Both one and the other were effected without any accident.

Thirty six Minomies (at first intended as an escort) have brought to this place a large armed Boat, loaded at Pencour, in which were twelve men & a Rebel Commissary.

From the mines they have brought seventeen Spanish & Rebel Prisoners, & stopp'd Fifty Tonns of Lead ore and from both they obtained a good supply of Provisions. The Chiefs Machiquawish and Wabasha have kindled this spirit in the Western Indians.

Captain Langlade with a chosen Band of Indians and Canadians will join a party assembled at Chicago to make his attack by the Illinois River, and another party are sent to watch the Plains between the Wabash and the Mississippi.

I am now in Treaty with the Ottawas about furnishing their quota to cut off the Rebels at Post St. Vincents, but as they are under the management of two Chiefs, the one a drunkard and the other an avaricious trader, I met with Difficulties in bringing it about. Thirty Saguinah Warriors are here in readiness to join them, and the Island Band can furnish as many more.

The enclosed papers will show Your Excellency the arts practiced on the Indians by the Rebels, & French Emissaries.

I have the honour to be Sir, Your Excellency's most obedt & most Humble Servant
PATT SINCLAIR

Michilimackinac 29th May 1780. Lt. Govr.

P. S.—Serjt. Phillips of the 8th Regmt who has my warrant to act as the Lieut during Your Excellency's Pleasure will Garrison the Fort at the Entrance of the Mississippi Captain Hesse will remain at Pencour, Wabasha will attack Misere & the Rebels at Kacasia. Two vessels leave this on the 2nd of June to attend Machigwawish who returns by the Illenois River with Prisoners. The small Vessels remain at Milwaké with some provision after visiting the Pottawatamies side of the Lake to give the alarm expected at St. Josephs, at least by Chevalier.

All the Traders who will secure the Posts on the Spanish side of the Mississippi during the next winter have my promise for the Exclusive Trade of the Missouri During that time—and that their canoes will be forwarded.

The two Lower Villages of the Illenois are to be laid under contribution for the support of their different Garrisons & the two upper villages are to send Cattle to La Bay to be forwarded to this place to feed the Indians on their return.

A part of the Menominis who are come here, some Puants, Sacks & Rhenards go away immediately to watch the Lead mines. Orders will be published at the Illenois for no person to go there, who looks for receiving Quarter, and the Indians have orders to give none to any without a British Pass. This requires every attention & support being of the utmost consequence.

Endorsed:—From Lieut Govr Sinclair Commanding at Michilimackinac of the 29th of May. Rec'd by Express (St Germain) 11th of June with several Enclosures.

[B 97 2, p. 349.]

MEMORIAL OF MERCHANTS AND TRADERS

SIR—As we the Merchants & Traders in a General Partnership at this Post, are all enrolled as Militia, for its Defence, ready to undertake whatever may be proposed for the good of His Majesty's Service, & heartily determined to use the authority you have given us during General Haldimand's Pleasure, to secure our Trade in every Quarter to which it may be permitted to go. We request that you will lay our Proposals before His Excellency the General For Furnishing all Indian Goods (not sent from England) which may be wanted at the Post.

And that a New Sett of Men may not be allowed to Intrude upon us after we have laid such a foundation of security for the commerce of the Upper Country.

We have the honour to be, Sir, Your most obedt & and most humble servants.

Michilimackinac 27th April 1780.

MATT LETSEY
DAVID MCCRAE
JOHN MACNAMARA
PK DUGGAN
HENRY BOSTWICK
BENJAMIN LYON
AUGT. CHABOILLEY
JAC. GAMELIZ

[B 97 2, p. 323.]

To His Excellency Frederick Haldimand, Captain General and Governor in Chief in and over the Province of Quebec and the territories depending thereon in America, Vice-Admiral of the same, General and Commander in Chief of His Majesty's forces in the said Province and the Frontiers thereof, &c., &c.:

The Memorial of the Merchants and Traders from Montreal to the great Carrying Place in Lake Superior and the Interior Country commonly named the north or Mer de West, Humbly Sheweth:

That your Memorialists have for a number of years past carried on an extensive and valuable Trade into the parts from whence the annual returns have some years been esteem'd at Fifty Thousand Pounds Sterling in Furrs, which have served to remit, to Great Britain in payment of the manufactories imported from the Mother Country.

That there is usually, and actually, employed in that Country, near to three hundred men, who generally arrive from the Interior parts of the Grand Carrying Place from the 10th June, to the 10th July, but from the length of the voyage and barreness of the Country added to the smallness of the Canoes and innumerable Carrying Places are reduced from want of Provisions to very great misery and distress which has constantly laid your Memorialists under the dutiful necessity of sending Canoes with Provisions very early from Michilimackinac, in order to meet the Canoe men of the distant Posts, without which precaution great part of their property after being converted into Furrs must have been left, and lost to them, and a more painfull circumstances might have happened in the death of those employed in that adventurous Business.

That they are well informed last Fall from their Correspondents of Detroit and Michilimackinac that no Provisions of any kind will be allowed to go from thence for supplying the Trade to the North West which heretofore was the Case, and therefore your Memorialists have taken the precaution to provide Indian Corn, Pease, Flour, &c, to send from hence for that purpose.

That the length of the voyage to the Grand Carrying Place is at least Four Hundred and fifty Leagues, and from thence to the distant Posts, above Six Hundred more, which cannot be performed in less time, than six months, and sometimes it happens that winter sets in before your Memorialists can arrive at the Factories where they intend to pass the Winter, and when that unfortunate circumstance takes place there are instances of several having starved & even so direfull have the consequences been as to occasion the casting of Lotts for an unhappy victim to serve as food for his more unhappy companions.

That your memorialists have been encouraged to continue in this Trade, from constantly finding a facility to carry it on, in the ready zeal of Government in granting passes and Licenses to that Effect, and they had reason to hopé, from the notification which Your Excellency was pleased to give your memorialists some time ago, that no lett or hinderance to their departure would have taken place this Spring, but notwithstanding lists of the Canoes Goods and number of men, were immediately given into Mr. Grays office, to be forwarded to your Excellency, your memorialists have heard nothing more on the subject since that time.

Your memorialists from the causes set forth, are under the most anxious apprehension, for the lives of their People, employ'd in the Trade and fear greatly, that they may also suffer very much, in a Loss of their property, unless your Excellency is pleas'd to grant immediate permission for them to send off their Canoes with the Goods and Provision intended for this purpose of continuing that extensive and valuable Branch of Business, and they beg leave to assure your Excellency, that with all the industry which can be exerted, in collecting the men who are hired from the different parts, of the country, supposing the Passes, to be here at this Hour, it would still be the seventh of this Month, before the Canoes, could be sent off, and it is against the Interest, and of course the wish, of any North West Traders to remain here so late.

Your memorialists cannot have the smallest doubt of Your Excellency's Good will and zeal to encourage the Commerical Interest of the Province over which you preside and particularly that part of which lies at a great distance from the Frontiers, of the unnatural Rebel States of America. Therefore submitting their Case to Your Excellency's Consideration, They humbly and most earnestly request speedy relief, in the Premises, and your Memorialists as in duty bound shall ever pray.

Montreal, 11th May, 1780.

Endorsed: 1780, Memorial of Merchants Trading to the Upper Country.

JH PORTEOUS	TODD & MCGILL
HOLMES & GRANT	BENJN. & JOS. FROBISHER
SIMON MCTAVISH	MCGILL & PATERSON
CHARLES GRANT	FOREST OAKES
	GEO. MCBEATH
	ADAM LYM CURNERD.

[B 99, p. 116.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

MICHILIMK, 29th May 1780.

DEAR BREHM—I have only time to tell you that every man & boy have been at work all this Spring to make the Two Land Bastions here terrapse, to erect cover for the security of our communication with the water & to carry out a Redan from our S. W. Curtain to enable us to break ground on the Sand Hill when requisite for such purpose fascines, Plank & Sleepers are ready—still our situation is bad—No cannon—no ammunition no naval stores, & one vessel of 25 tons Burden to guard the Island—to act without & for the security of the Post, ce triste, I shall send on the first alarm a company of Militia to the Island, with a part of the Stores—I have one Good Block House erected for the Defence of the Wharf where the People sleep—It is of the largest cedar hewed & well finished—Three more are reddy but I am afraid to raise them on the upper ground, more from fear of Rebels from Detroit than from any other quarter.

Mr. Lyons has given Bond for removing the Houses at the entrance of The French River—Urge it with the General for God's sake.

The North West society are not better than they ought to be. Their conduct in sending an Embassy to Congress in 76 may be traced now to matters more detrimental—I believe, to every one of the Provision Stores on the communication.

I have all their Craft in from Lake Superior, St. Mary's, &c., but one which will be brought in, or destroyed, the ensuing week. I hope the Genl. will grant them no Passes without insisting on their bringing the King's Stores from the Portage.

Lieut. Bennett of the 8th can inform the Genl. of the Disposition of the Indians in that Quarter.

They obtained Indulgence from Genl. Carleton for the worst purposes in the world.

Excuse haste & believe me with friendship.

Dear Brehm yours sincerely

Patt Sinclair.

[B 97 2, p. 356.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—It is necessary to get as good a footing on the Island as possible to avoid the artfull management of the Indians who were tutored by some people here—who had good Houses, & by others who were too indolent to remove from a situation worse than that in which we are in, if worse there can be.

I wrote to Major De Peyster that our attention would be divided by a proper care of the works on the Island, & that any aid he could send us would be acceptable, no vessel is yet arrived from Detroit, but from the Majors Letter of March last it seems that no artificers or materials can be Spared—To avoid a waste of Provisions, I send down six of the Prisoners in this Canoe, Four are employ'd on the Island, Six are allowed to engage for the Traders at the Post—Six Rebel Prisoners are fed on corn & Fish & the other seven being Spanish subjects will be a burthen on the Provision Stores Untill I have the honour to know your Excellency's pleasure relative to them.

Several Vagabond Canadians will be brought in to settle on the Island, Mr. Chevallier manages, with his usual address to keep St Josephs still occupied. Inclosed are his two last letters which I read to three Hundred Indians, on the day after I received his last. In return for being so communicative they have sent me in many speeches, from different Quarters, & assure me that they will conceal nothing from me.

The immoderate Expense of purchasing Goods here occasions the Indian Presents, given this year, being less than what I think the times require. if large supply's are not sent up the Expense will be enormous.

If the Post becomes useful in the course of the War, it will require more attention, as to proper armed vessels, Materials & men. If it does not Your Excelly. will confer a very great favor on me by calling me from it.

I propose sending a Captain of Militia to St Joseph's one to La Bay & one to St Mary's. There are to be the Traders at these Posts, & to have a little Rum only on account of Government, with an equipment, for such men as will mount a guard there & be ready to serve when called upon.

Your Excellency will perceive by the Letters from Pencour & St Joseph's, the frequency of their correspondence. Mr Chevallier will certainly endeavour to introduce a French or Rebel party at St. Joseph's if our movements do not take place before Autumn. The Pottawatimies have struck, it is true, but for a private insult offered to them last year.

I mentioned to Captain Brehm a Monsr Durrand who arrived here in October last. He serves as a guide for the Illenois Party under Capt. Langlade & leaves his Property here as a security for his conduct—his Paper Dollars & Rebel Bills are enclosed under this cover amounting to 695 Dollars.

I have the honour to be Sir, with Respect Your Excellency's most obedt. & most humble Servt. PATT SINCLAIR, Lt Govr.

Michilimackinac, 29th May, 1780.

P. S.—As there are no Private Bills of Exchange here, I cannot agreeable to orders, draw for any money, tho' at this time my Promissory notes are in Circulation for near Two Thousand Pounds, New York Currency.

PATT SINCLAIR, Lt Govr.

[B 97 2, p. 353.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—Under this cover I have the honor to send the Returns of the Garrison, and to inform your Excellency, that when a removal to the Island seemed impracticable for this year, every officer, one excepted, & every non-commissioned officer & man here assisted in strengthening this Fort, making the two Land Bastions, Terraces, & giving thickness to one curtain as well as preparing Fascines, oak Plank, &c., to redoubt one-half of it in case of the worst. Every Trader & servant here are enrolled in the Militia, I have granted warrants during your Excellency's pleasure. The dishonest conduct of the commissary obliged me to place a sentry on the Provision stores, and after that step I was obliged to give the charge of it to Mr. Mitchel, Surgeon's Int. to the 8th Regmt. He is honest & sober. I am under the necessity of sending the commissary's Son in Law to Detroit a prisoner, from his bad behavior we have lost the life of a tailor, which is the only accident since Major De Peyster left this. To whom will your Excellency have charges for the Civil Government addressed? A Duplicate of the coroner's acc't is sent enclosed.

I have the honour to be with the greatest respect your Excellency's most obedt. & most humble servt.

PATT SINCLAIR,
Lt. Governor.

Michilimackinac, 29th May, 1780.

Mr. Askin has given Bond in £4,000 to settle his acc't where your Excellency may order.

[B 97 2, p. 348.]

BREHM TO SINCLAIR

Quebec 19th May 1780.

Sir—His Excellency the Commander in Chief having reflected maturely upon the Distress which may attend the Garrison, under your Command & consequently His Majesty's Interests in that Important Quarter, should supplies of Provisions by any casualty happen not to reach you at the usual Periods. he has thought proper to direct that in order to have the Sole management of that Essential Article more immediately subject to your observation, You will upon Receipt of this appoint an officer of your Garrison (whoever you shall think best qualified) making him the same allowance the commissary now has, to Receive into his Charge all Provisions in Store, the management of which, under your Direction, he is to be answerable for, & in order to provide against the above mentioned accident, & to lighten the expense of so precarious & so distant a Transportation. His Excellency desires you will fall upon every means of œconomy you can possibly devise, to save the Provisions in Store, particularly by seeing that the officer you employ, purchases from the Soldier every ounce of Provision, which, supplies of Fresh Meat or Fish, at certain seasons, may enable him to save, which saving must be carefully received & Packed up in Store & appropriated to no use whatever but that of the Crown. By this means a seige may be protracted, your Garrison be reinforced without sending supplies of Provisions, & your Post may be maintained. It is His Excellency's wish, never to have a less quantity of Provisions in Store at Michilimackinac than will serve a proper Garrison two years.

I am likewise to observe to you that the Requisitions for Passes up the Grande River, have this year exceeded all conception, in so much that His Excellency is Persuaded that under a Pretext of the Fur Trade, great abuses are exercised in transporting Rum & Goods into the Indian Country, which it is to be feared find their way to the enemy, altho' you have already had the General's fullest authority to make what ever alterations the Good of the King's Service and the Trade may suggest to you. He again repeats his strictest Injunctions that you will make whatever arrangements you may think most conducive to their Prosperity, always considering the necessity of the Times.

If a Barrack Master is wanted, you will appoint some Person to that Duty.

His Excellency flatters himself that upon receipt of his last dispatch, giving you full powers to exercise the zeal and Tallents you have discovered for His Majesty's Service, that your situation will be satisfactory to you.

I am &c &c

(Signed) D. Brehm,

To Lieut Governor Sinclair. A. D. C.

[B 97 2, p. 342.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—I have the honour to Enclose you the opinions of the Public in Trade, and others attached to the Post, relative to the removal of their command to the Island.

They who wish well to the King's Interest are more impatient than I am, for the Event. And I can assure you, that all are convinced that the Island will give security which cannot be found here. They are removing their Houses, and giving every assistance I can desire from them. In return and in order to ease them as much as possible, I have filled up the Spanish Boat taken in the Mississippi to transport their materials. She with the small Vessel belonging to the Crown and another Sloop, Private Property, are continually employ'd in that Service. I am, Sir, with esteem,

Your most obedt most humble Servt.

Patt Sinclair,

Michilimackinac 8th June 1780. Lt. Govr.

[B 97 2, p. 361.]

Opinions Regarding Removal of the Fort

Sir—A few days ago we were honored with a letter from you requesting that the Inhabitants of this place connected with Trade would give their opinions respecting the advantages or Disadvantages that would arise from a removal of the Garrison to the Island of Michilimackinac.

In answer to which we are of the opinion that our Commerce would derive several very great advantages from the removal.

In the first place our lives & Property would be in much better security from the attacks of any enemy, or the Insults of Indians.

Secondly—The necessaries of life may be procured much cheaper & easier when properly established on the Island from the superior Fertility of the soil & the Fishery being much more convenient, and Lastly—If ever the Commander in Chief should think proper to permit us having Vessels as private Property, we are assured of a good Harbour for them, which here we have not.

The great Disadvantage that will arise to us from the Removal is the loss of our Houses which have cost us very dear, from the enormous wages we are obliged to give Labourers in this Country. These Houses when pulled to pieces will not be worth Transporting although at present they answer all the Purposes of our Trade, full as well as Houses of more real value.

Provisions being excessively dear & at the same time very scarce this year, our Trade at present at a very low Ebb from the low price of Furrs & the great Extra Expense attending the transportation of our Goods from Montreal ourselves People of small capital unable to bear any loss without being much distressed. Is the great and the only Disadvantage that we can foresee will arise from such a removal.

However, Sir, we hope that you will represent our situation to His Excellency the Commander in Chief, when that is done we are convinced that he will upon duly considering it not allow us to be sufferers by the Change.

We have the honour to be, Sir, Your most obed't humble Serv'ts

JOHN MACNAMARA
BENJAMIN LYON
HENRY BOSTWICK
DAVID MCCRAE
WM. DUGAN
MATTW LESSEY

Michilimackinac 21st June 1780
[B 97 2, p. 367.]

The Managers of the General Store at Michilimackinac having demanded of me in behalf of Lieut. Governor Sinclair my opinion as to the advantage that might accrue from Removing the Fort & Village from this place to the Island of Michilimackinac commonly called the Gros Island.

In my opinion many advantages may arise from Removing both the Fort & Village from this place to the Island as then the Village will be thoroughly protected from the attacks of an Enemy, or the Insults of the Indians, being Immediately under the Command of the Fort, besides the Block Houses that Lieut. Governor Sinclair intends to erect. The Island is very Strong by nature well watered, plenty of good wood, & fish in abundance, one of the best Harbors to be found in the upper Country is close to the

Village door for a vessel drawing fourteen foot water may lay afloat with very great safety.

This place is attended with many inconveniences being situated on the main land an enemy may attack the Village. or the Indians Insult the Traders without hardly being able to receive any immediate relief from the Fort. Good Firewood & the Fisheries are at a great distance, and a Vessel, let her be ever so small can Ride with no safety before the Fort.

The greatest disadvantage in my opinion that may arise from removing the Fort & Village is that Proprietors of Houses must build new ones, which will be very expensive, especially as there is at present a great scarcity of Provisions Government will be obliged to employ a number of men to build the Fort and the Traders to build their Houses &c which would otherwise be employed in fishing Bringing in our Packs from the different Wintering Posts & Transporting them to Montreal. I am an intire Stranger as to the situation of things here in the Winter whether the traverse from this place to the Island freezes or not.

William Grant.

Michilimackinac 21st June 1778. [1780?]
[B 97 2, p. 562.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—I have the honour to inform your Excellency that the two vessels sent into Lake Michigan have returned.

They fortunately carried from this a force sufficient to enable the Party retiring from the Illinois by Chicago to pass with safety through a Band of Indians in the Rebel Interest & to embark in security, Some in canoes & some on board the vessels. The others retired in two Divisions, one by the Mississippi with Monsieur Calvé, who allowed the prisoners taken by the Sacks & Outagamies to fall into the hands of the enemy. The other Division penetrated the country between Lake Michigan & the Mississippi & are arrived here with their prisoners. Two hundred Illenois Cavalry arr'd at Chicago five days after the vessels left it. On the 26th of May Mr Hesse with the Winipigoes, Scioux, Ottawa, Ochipwa, Iowa & a few of the Outagamies, Sacks, Mascontins, Kickapous, & Pottawatamies.

Twenty of the Volunteer Canadians sent from this, and a very few few of the Traders and the servants made their attack against Pencour & the Cahokias. The two first mentioned Indian nations would have stormed the Spanish Lines if the Sacks and Outagamies under their treacherous leader

Mons'r Calvé had not fallen back so early, as to give them but too well grounded suspicions that they were between two Fires. A Mons'r Ducharme & others who traded in the country of the Sacks kept pace with Mons'r Calvé in his perfidy. They have long shared the Profits arising from the Lead Mines & from the commerce with the Illinois. The Attack, unsuccessful as it was, from misconduct & unsupported I believe by any other against New Orleans with the advances made by the Enemy on the Mississippi, will still have its good consequences. Many of the Indians are entered & many are riveted in our interest. The Traders who would not assist in extending their Commerce cannot complain of its being circumscribed to necessary bounds, and the Indians who received a profusion of Presents without Distinction will now be Discriminated.

The Winnipigoes had a chief & three men killed & four wounded, I fear one of them mortally. They are the only sufferers.

The Rebels lost an officer & three men killed at the Cahokias & five Prisoners.

At Pencour sixty eight were killed & eighteen Blacks & white people made Prisoners. Amongst whom several good Artificers many Hundred of Cattle were destroyed & Forty three scalps are brought in. There is no doubt can remain from the con current testimony of the Prisoners, that the enemy received Intelligence of the meditated attack against the Illinois, about the time I received a copy of my Lord George Germain's Circular Letter. A like disaster cannot happen next year, and I can venture to assure your Excellency that one Thousand Scioux, without any mixture from neighbouring tribes, will be in the field in April under Wabasha (if no accident happens to him). His Interpreter Monsieur Rocque is a thorough honest man, & both have conceived the necessity for a profound secrecy, as well as the design and manner of executing it. In order to avoid the bruited reports of couriers, & the curiosity & suspicion they always excite in traversing such an extent of country, everything was settled with Wabash here, & his wants were supplied principally by the timely arrival of the King's Cannoes. Sixty Winipigoes & a party of Indians from the West side of Lake Michigan are sent to cross the roads leading from the Rebel Posts—on the Ohio and Wabash—to the Illinois, to cover Captn Bird of the 8th, who may be encumbered with Artillery, & to intercept Convoys of Provisions or Partys of the Rebels occasionally in motion from either Quarter.

From this to the close of Harvest, small parties will be sent from here in that direction. I have hired for a year three men who undertake to carry Expresses from Niagara to this Post, in ten or twelve days, which Your Excellency may think a preferable Route to that of Detroit, for such matters as may require secrecy or dispatch. I have the honor to be Sir your Excellency's most obed't & most humble Servant.

PATT SINCLAIR, 84th Reg't.

Michilimackinac 8th July 1780.

P. S. No accident happened to any of the Indians or others in retiring. Mons'r Ducharmé permitted two profligate Frenchmen who were in his charge as Prisoners, to go to the Illinois. Numbers of that stamp are brought in from the Indians with their consent & approbation & the whole are ordered in Mr. Ainsés, call Interpreter here, is sent to bring in the Crew from St Joseph's, Mons'r Chevallier is his uncle, & will come in, I believe through favor & compulsion, if he is not encouraged to stay here.

[B 97 2, p. 389]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—By one of the Chiefs of the Ottawa Village, sent with Mr. Ainse to St Josephs, I received this moment the letter which I have the honor to enclose.

By it I see plainly that the Troops sent from Detroit will be embarrased. Therefore I will hurry off Several Parties for the Plains. I wish they may get there in time. Major De Peyster has not marked this route so distinctly as to enable me to judge with precision of the steps which might be taken here to second or relieve them. I am, Sir, with the utmost respect Your Excellency's most obed't humble Servant,

PATT SINCLAIR,
Capt. 84th Reg't Lt. Governor.

Michilimac, 8th July 1780.

[B 97 2, p. 397]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—I have the honor to receive and to thank your Excellency for my Commission in the 84th Regiment, in the Execution of which I shall, as in every line of Duty Endeavour to merit your Excellency's Protection.

I have the honour to be, Sir, Your Excellency's most obedt & most humble Servt,

PATT SINCLAIR,
Capt. 84th Regmt, Lt. Govr.

Michilimackinac, 8th July, 1780.

[B 97 2, p. 404.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—The most leading information I can procure for your Excellency respecting the Quantity of necessaries for Indian Presents at this Post, will be drawn in Part—from what Major De Peyster has accustomed the Ottawas to receive yearly, every spring & Autumn & from what I delivered to Monsr Roque & Wabasha for the Scioux this year.

The measure of procuring goods from England will be attended with a considerable saving to the Crown, convenience & the certainty of having the requisite supply at the Posts, & with the advantage of having Goods of a better quality than what are exported for the Indian Trade.

In proportion to the Services required & yielded—The Indians ought always to be rewarded—For the ensuing year Six Thousand Blankets, Four Thousand Shirts & One Hundred Pieces of Stroud & Molton with the usual small articles. I shall use every Œconomy & endeavour to be more particular in dispensing than I can possibly be in fixing the Estimate of Indian Presents for one year.

I have the honour to be Sir, with the greatest respect Your Excellency's most obedient & most humble Servant,

Patt Sinclair.
Captn. 84th Regt. & Lt. Govr.

Michilimackinac, 8th July, 1780.
[B 97 2, p. 405.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—From the Enclosed Articles of General Partnership entered into by the Traders of this Post, You will see that it was represented to them as a measure recommended by His Excellency the General, and as such I have supported it to the satisfaction of the Different members concerned in it, finding it a mode of all others the most favorable to the Service during the War.

It is not so advantageous to commerce, or so flattering to the Individual Trader, yet it yields both one & the other security & a certain Profit, which ought, & I believe would satisfy them all if the requisitions in their Letter was comply'd with—They only wish that no Merchant in Canada may furnish goods purchased in the Province, or imported in it for others, & afterwards purchased to be sent here for the Crown—As you will observe by their Letter to me—

I think their request very reasonable as it does not interfere with His Excellency's intention of getting goods from England, & in Compliance with it, I wish that Mr. Ellice may not apply for any pass for Mr Meldrum.

Major De Peyster has allowed Three Traders from Detroit to bring Goods here although he knew that they could not be permitted to Trade, but with the General Store.

The Traders from Montreal will be under like restraint untill the 30th of the month. I was much surprised to find them, on their arrival here, strangers and unacquainted with the manners in which the Trade was carried on at this Post.

They see that the restraint imposes no hardships upon them, but what Equity requires, & they will become in a few days Partners of the General Store and share with others—the security and advantages attending it.

Some few may be discontented but in general they approve of the measure.

I am, Sir, with esteem Your most obedt Humble Servt,

PATT SINCLAIR
Captn. 84th Regt. & Lt. Govr.

Michilimackinac 8th July 1780
[B. 97 2, p. 398.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of Your Excellencys letter respecting the Trade in the Indian Country, with Remarks & memorandums which have been presented to your Excellency thereon.

The Impatience of the Traders (who are in fact so many adventurers in a Lottery) to receive their Passes before your Excellency hears from the Upper Posts fully demonstrates how unwillingly they bear any restraint in the prosecution of their Commerce however necessary it may be. They very justly represent the Indian Trade to be carried on at very great Expense, Labour & risk of both men & property. The Indigence of the People who carry it on is not less apparent, but their Remark on the consequences of putting the least stop to the Indian Trade in these troublesome times—is by no means admissable, as His Majesty's subjects cannot fall a sacrifice to the rage of disappointed Barbarians in a Country where they are not permitted to go.

The augmentation in Furs to Canada of late years, may be owing to the encroachments on the Hudson's Bay Company, and the Traffic with the Spanish Traders on the other side the Mississippi. The consumption of

British Articles of Commerce may probably have been augmented by the large Presents given to Indians, and by some of these articles sliding into the Rebel Colonies. The Remarks and memorandums are drawn up by a Person unacquainted with the Upper Country, with its Commerce and with the Provincial & National Interest in extending it.

Your Excellency's orders and the necessity of the precaution will engage my utmost attention to the Destination of the Traders for this Season. All the evils which Your Excellency mentions have arisen from their Abuse of the Indulgences granted to them and from Latitudes given to Traders, which were to be determined by their avarice or inclinations.

The labour and difficulty in conveying supplies to the enemy by way of Lake Superior, are not great, they may reach them by the Mississippi from that Lake by three different Routes.

Dis-affected Traders have done and can do much mischief in that Lake by fomenting the Quarrel long subsisting between the Scioux & Ochipwas, who are scattered over that Country and the Banks of all the other great Lakes.

The Sioux are perhaps the only Indians on this Continent who can render essential service to Government which cannot be availed of while in their absence they have everything to fear for their Families from a People bordering upon their Country & actuated of late to commit very great Excesses.

The principal Chiefs of the Nations have promised to stop the Quarrel. I have more dependence upon the measure of bringing into the Post all the White People from every Quarter, for a due performance of their engagements to keep peace, & I expect much Service from it in other respects.

There is not the least necessity for an officer or Troops at St Mary's, as the enemy will never attempt to enter the narrow passage at the Detour to go up fifteen Leagues in land to seize on a pass from whence I can hear by Land in thirty hours & prevent with an armed Boat their getting back to the Lake. Besides the Indians are under the absolute authority of Mr. Cadot, who is a very honest man. A War Chief & twelve men from that place is just returned from their stand in the Chegagoe River, which they did not quit until the Rear of the Detachment by that Route had passed them. I may even say that the Indians there are obedient.

The General Store formed here will remove every jealousy subsisting between the Canadian & English Traders. The amount of their adventure for this year will discover which Party may have a claim for redress on that score, & on every other there will be no distinction.

The Servants of Government have been so deeply engaged in Trade that it called for an immediate stop without murmur in time.

I have the honour to be with the greatest respect Sir, Your Excellency's most obedt. most humble Servt.,

PATT SINCLAIR,
Captn 84th Regmt & Lt Govr of Michilmc.

P. S.—If an armed Vessel can be spared from Detroit or from this Place to remain in the French River for a few weeks every spring, it will tend much to the security of the Goods coming up the Ottawa River. Unfortunately its consequence was pointed out by permitting Store Houses to be built at the Entrance of it. It will only raise it more, I fear, into an object of attention to destroy them. The Proprietors are under Bond to remove them when ordered. Mr Askin who schemed that project vaunted before Major De Peyster of having the Key of Canada in his Pocket, & then received my answer that I would endeavour to put every key in this part of the Country in Your Excellency's hands.

[B 97 2, p 407.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC 10th Augt 1780.

SIR—His Excellency thinks the Proposal of the Merchants who have form'd a general Store, very reasonable, and has no objection to comply with it, as far as may be consistent with his General Plan of supplying the Indian Presents from England or purchasing by whole sale here, and sending them up at the King's Expence, but whatever goods may occasionally be wanted, shall be purchased at the General Store, provided they are sold at a reasonable Price. It gives His Excellency Pleasure, to hear that the Indians have entered so cheerfully into the scheme of occupying the Island & that they have made it over to the King for that purpose, a suitable Present must be immediately made to the Indians for the consideration & a Conveyance conceived in the fullest Terms, received from them. The White's who have connected themselves with the Indians, may be allowed to settle upon the Island, but it will be difficult to make them understand that their settlements are not their Properties with the Power of Disposal, on making them over to others the sole right of which, must remain with the King for that purpose.

Although His Excellency considers St Joseph's from its situation more immediately Dependant upon the Post of Michilimackinac at Detroit & wishes of course to have it under your direction, Yet as the Indians of that

Place some times resort to the latter, perhaps more particularly to visit their Lake Father, you should be mutually informed of what passes & perfectly coincide in whatever measures may be judged necessary to Regulate their conduct, for consistently with the good of the Service, there can be no Line drawn to prevent their Communication at both these Posts, and wherever an Indian speaks he will expect an answer.

Whatever has been hitherto the Custom in Regard to Trading to Saguinant Bay, or other Places, in the Vicinity, either from Michilimackinac or Detroit, His Excellency would have observed, subject at all times to whatever changes the Exigencies of the Service may Require, these matters cannot possibly be Determined, exceptg by you & Major De Peyster, who there can be no doubt will cordially unite in whatever measure are best calculated to promote the Kings Service.

In regard to Mr. Robertson nothing can at present be done for to bring him to Trial, it probably might be necessary not only to call you down, but perhaps a great part of your Garrison. These kind of People know the Difficulties that attend prosecutions by Law in remote situations, & take the advantage of them. His Excellency therefore wishes they should be avoided as much as possible, & that in instances where legal positive Proof cannot be obtained, that the offenders shall, if employ'd in the Service, be dismissed from it. Civilians, sent from the Post, the reasons for which & the best Proof that can be had, to be transmitted in writing with them & copies of the same to Remain at the Post. His Excellency desires you will transmit Robertson's Examination.

These are little despicable Talks at all places, who to ingratiate themselves, & answer private views, will never fail to misrepresent circumstances. This may have been practised at Detroit, & it would appear that Major De Peyster has been deceived by some in whom he had confidence, but after having perused with attention his Letters to which you refer me, I protest I cannot see the smallest reason to interpret them in the lights you have conceived. From the Distribution he gives you of the shipping, it would appear that he had it not in his Power to assist you sooner, nor at all with the Principal Articles you Required, probably not with the oxen, the horse & mares mentioned by him were to be sent by the General's orders for the purpose of working & Breeding upon the Island—these he might have understood to be in the room of the oxen, which when sent together with the Live Stock from St. Josephs that might have been expected from very moderate Industry, may have been made him less anxious about sending the oxen. No part of his Letters, in my judgment indicate his having taken offence at your conduct, altho' there may be leading circumstances I am unacquainted with. His recommendation of Mr. Berthe, had he seen, or understood his Letter to Robertson as you did, would have been much worse than improper. He may however be a very unfit person to trust at St. Mary's, and if you have reason to think so, His Excellency highly approves of your not permitting him to go there. It is, as affairs have turned out, high time to counteract the Plans of that Partnership. Mr. Barthe's Letter is difficult to Decypher & cost some Pains to reduce it to what you will see, "la Moquer" is evidently la Moitre, and it is a merchant's letter in regard to securing as much wheat as possible & his intelligence of Major De Peyster's Intentions, but such they will write.

You will by this opportunity Receive an Official Letter, and another will be sent to Detroit desiring that all Letters & Reports that may be circulated from one Post to another, tending to create misunderstanding, may be mutually Transmitted in order to Discourage the Promoters of them, and that the commanding officers may have confidence in each other, without which the service cannot properly be carried on.

I have Received your Letter covering the opinions of the Traders concerning the Propriety of Removing to the Island, and likewise the Letters from the Illinois and other enclosures, all which have been laid before His Excellency.

Enclosed is an extract from a Letter of His Excellency to Major De Peyster, to which he desires your attention.

I am, &c., &c.,

To Lieut. Govr. Sinclair. (Signed) Fred. Haldimand.

[B 97 2, p. 441.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

Quebec 10th Augt 1780.

Sir—In my letter of the 18th Ultimo, I acknowledged the receipt of your Dispatch dated the 29th of May, my wishes upon the material parts of its contents having been communicated to you by my letters of the 17th of April & 16th of July, there remains but a few articles to be answered.

In regards to the Prisoners you already have, & and those which may hereafter be brought in, those who are Sanish Soldiers must be sent down to save your Provisions but from the barbarous treatment of our Prisoners by the Rebels in many Instances particularly in that of Lieut Govr Hamilton & the Troops taken with him (who are still confined in Dungeons) upon scanty & unwholesome Provisions, and their obliging many (even in the character of Gentlemen) to work for their maintenance, I have given orders to the Commanding officers of the Several Posts to employ the Rebel Prisoners in whatever work they may be most useful, if necessary under a guard, allowing them a full ration & pay equal to the Soldiers, who are employed as Labourers—which is to be applied to Cloathe them.

The air & exercise will preserve their health, & there cannot be a doubt of their being treated with Humanity.

You will please to observe the same at Michilimackinac for which your situation of the Island is favourable, but if your Prisoners should multiply so as to be inconvenient those who are most troublesome send down to Montreal.

I approve entirely of your sending Captains of Militia to St. Josephs, La Bay & St. Mary's, upon the Terms you propose, convinced you will make choice of such as will observe your Instructions.

I herewith send you one Hundred Printed Bills, persuaded that I shall see no more of them return here, than the necessities of the Service absolutely require.

In one of your letters of the 29th of May You say I can hardly suppose that passes will be granted for Lake Superior or Lake Huron independent of this Post, after the irregularities of this & last winter. You have in General Terms Complained of the conduct of the Traders of those Lakes & Indeed I have not the best opinion of them, but none of your letters having mentioned the particulars wherein they have offended, nor the Persons all which it would be necessary for me to be acquainted with before I can with propriety reject their applications for Passes, in which I purpose at all times to be directed by the Reports you make me.

I am sorry that a man capable of Dishonesty has been so long entrusted with a charge of such consequences as the King's Provision Store, & I must applaud the Discovery & measure you have taken for amendment in that Line. Mr Askin, is, no preparing immediately to settle accounts with the Commissary General, & to make up all Deficiencies that appear to have arisen from the management of the Stores.

I shall give Directions that two Small Vessels (the Hope & Welcome) be stationed at Michilimackinac, to be entirely dependent upon that Post, I hope they will be able to supply your Provisions & other wants from Detroit.

My Letter of the 16th Inst covered two Letters from the Bishop to Mr Gibaut.

I am, Sir,

(Signed) F. H.

P. S. The Engagees who were last sent up with the Indian Presents complain heavily of having been detained a long time to work at Michilims.

without having received any Gratuity whatever, & it is with Difficulty Lieut Col Campbell could procure those sent, & not without promising that they should not be detained, but if the Exigencies should require it that you would satisfy them for their labour which I have promised to the last. You will therefore give them what you think reasonable, should any of them return, otherwise let me know what they should have, that I may order Colonel Campbell to pay them.

[B 97 2, p. 446.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

Quebec 10th August 1780.

Sir—I have received your letter of the 8th ultimo covering Brown's Information & Reporting the return of the Vessels sent into Lake Michigan & the Service rendered by them to the Party retiring from the Illenois, & likewise the attacks made upon Pencour & Cachokias & the cause of their being unsuccessful. It is very mortifying that the protection Monsr. Calvé & others have received should meet so perfidious & so ungrateful a Return. The Circumstances of his & Monsieur Du Charmes Conduct, you are best acquainted with & to you I leave to dispose of them as they deserve. If you have evident proof of their counteracting or retarding the operations committed to their Direction, or in which they were to assist—I would have them sent prisoners to Montreal, in all events they are improper Persons to remain amongst the Indians, and I imagine you will think it necessary to remove them. Their influence with the Natives, unless employed for the King's Interests, must be dispensed with, and there is no doubt that the Indians will soon be reconciled to who ever may be appointed to supply their wants.

I am glad to find that altho' our attempts proved unsuccessful they were attended with no inconsiderable loss to the Enemy.

You will find the captive Artificers very useful at present, my Letter of this Date will authorize you to Employ them.

After the removal of the two interested or disaffected Traders, I hope you will find the management of the Indians less troublesome & more satisfactory. I hope no accident will happen to Wabasha, His and the conduct of his nation merit Distinction.

Your intention of discriminating I am persuaded will have a good effect, & I hope the operations of the ensuing campaign will discover it.

I approve much of your having engaged the three men as couriers between your Post & Niagara—it will open an expeditious communication Between those Posts & this part of Canada when the men are not out you can employ them otherwise.

I am, Sir, &c &c.
(Signed) FRED: HALDIMAND.

Lieut Govr Sinclair.
[B 97 2, p. 449.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—Wishing to get over the difficulty which I foresaw would arise from the presence of Mr. Ainse, late Interpreter at this Post, I sent him to St. Joseph's, to bring in his uncle Mr. Chevalier, & the other lawless strange class of People at that Place, for many years settled for the sole purposes of overawing Commerce & making themselves usefull to whoever did most for their services which ever more ready for doing bad than good.

On this Excursion, notwithstanding my caution to him not to incur expenses, he wished to repeat the usual profusion in which he had no small share—Check'd in that, & finding himself not of the consequence he expected, He very imprudently listened to Traders & Indians & Engaged both to represent (I can hardly say their wish) but their demand to have the goods out of the Fort at the discretion of each Trader for the disposal of them.

Upon my absolute refusal of their request, He promoted discontent all he could and endeavoured to circulate idle stories to intimidate such as, that Indian Chiefs & Bands were to go away without taking leave &c. &c.

He was Privy to Counsels held with Monsr. Chevalier under the guns of the Fort without giving me notice. He was present and interpreted for one of the Ottawa Chiefs who desired that Mr Chevalier and Mr Ainse should return to St Joseph's, & after my refusal of their Request he was witness to one of these Chiefs, who he had been the means of bringing to me on that errand, declaring that notwithstanding my refusal, the Chevalier would go to St Joseph's autumn.

I had no inclination to yield to the discontent of Mr Ainse or to the refractory Disposition of the Indian, therefore I have secured during their stay here, Monsr Ainse and Mr Chevalier in the Fort and will oblige both to give bond for their future conduct, before they are sent down.

I keep some very bad People here for some time, being a stranger to what may happen below. Here they can do little harm untill Grain is ripe, & I have secured all the Provisions & Goods.

It seems Mr Bently made his Escape, for which rejoicings were made at the Illenois.

Numbers of the People who used to winter at the Illenois & Mississippi will be allowed to go down late in the year, if they should not, be required by the Traders for Lake Superior or near wintering Grounds—

I am obliged to prevent anything going to the South side of Lake Superior for some months hence to avoid the Intrigues of the Traders, who concert with disaffected Indians the means of supplying them. As an Instance of their Turpitude, Monsieur Calvé & Le Croix with some others, after sending some of their Prisoners to the Enemy Equip't one, Provencal, with what goods remained in the wintering ground & sent him to the Illinois which they made a sham attack upon.

They also knew Provencal to be a person who opposed Major De Peyster's orders & who had refused to come in to the Post, & otherwise a man of an Infamous Character.

I therefore think it my Duty to prefer checking evils of that nature, to the silence of People who will now very probably become very clamorous.

I am Sir, with Esteem Your most obedt humble Servt.

PATT. SINCLAIR
Lt Govr.

Michilimackinac 2d Augt 1780
[B. 97 2, p. 435.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—Having already informed His Excellency that the Trade of this District was confin'd to a General Stock, the produce of which was shared amongst the whole. It now remains to explain the Difficulties which have for this year occasioned a change in the management of it, notwithstanding my unwearied efforts to support the former plan & to convince every Individual concerned in the Trade that there could be no other measure equally advantageous for the whole.

Many of the Traders were convinced a General concern were good for the whole, yet they were equally convinced that the restriction which militated against the disorderly part was hurtful of their Interest of the most deserving part of them—still as reasonable people who considered the nature of the Times, They agreed to it but with that indifference which a patient subjection to necessity always produces.

The consequences of which were men who Traded with the property of other people became extremely impatient & they with the people who came up this season with goods Engaged the Indians formerly to represent that they Lay under great Hardships by being obliged to Take their goods from one particular store at an advanced price when their Former Traders desired only to have their goods in their possession, to remove the Grievance, desirous as I was of obliging the Indians I did not think it proper to yield to solicitations which I knew them instigated to—more by the Designs of others than by their own real grievances.

For the space of Two months I endeavored to reconcile them to an equal share of the trade, as they could not all be permitted to go from the post, and as there were not at present a sufficient number of places to which goods could be sent, I even Deviated a little from orders in purchasing from the General Store, what things were wanted for Government, at a higher price than the others would have sold, for in order to reconcile them to it I gave up my own Perquisites & every means of obliging one Individual at the Expense of another—& I stop'd all the Servants of the Crown from meddling with Commerce to put the Trade upon the same footing without making any Distributions amongst the Traders.

One third of them would not sign the agreement for sharing all alike. Those who did sign it were permitted for some time to use as a threat, that no Trader who did not sign before a certain day would become a Sharer in the Trade.

That time expired & those who did sign could not have expressed their dislike to the measure they had entered into, in a stronger manner—than they manifested by their choice of the person who was to manage their Business upon a footing which required authority in so great a degree as to stop the Trader who came up with the General's Pass from selling his goods.

I would not have used such authority in favour of the most necessary measure, but when I found it was to be required in favour of only a part of the Commercial people, who considered their commerce of so little consequence as to put it under the management of a new England Trader of no abilities, a Bankrupt in his fortune, a Republican in his Principals & an Invalid in his health, I immediately gave permission to the Trusty People amongst them to carry their goods to Places where there is the least Risque, with leave to the others to take a Certain Quantity of their goods out occasionally to trade at the Post.

This is the present state of the Trade.

The N. W. Trade and the located Passes excepted in which there are no alterations.

I am, Sir, with Esteem Your most obedt & most humble Servt,

PATT SINCLAIR, Lt. Gov'r.

Michilimackinac, 22 Augt, 1780.

An amazing clamour raised against me at Detroit obliged me to refer to a Detroit Trader for his opinion. He has collected the Enclosed Suffrages of the most respectable part of the Traders which I enclose for no other purpose than to remove the fears of their Correspondents below, should such fears be communicated to the Governor of the Province.

[B 97 2, p. 475.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—As it has been unfortunately left to my lott to check several abuses, to purge the Indian Country of many bad People, who shelter themselves in it. from Authority, Justice & their Creditors—Each will be naturally armed with a dagger against the Person who has undertaken the Task which I could not refuse, Even, in the fullest consideration of the Times, and the consequences which may tho' than less dangerous, result from so necessary Measures.

To pass over the Whim & Caprice of several engaged in the Service, Experience has taught me as excusable often, but, when from a Disposition altogether unfriendly to the source of Authority in the Province & to that exercised in conformity of it (of which I am sorry to say there is too much apparent at Detroit) I then think it is my Duty to take determinate Steps as must root out so great an evil, if pursued everywhere.

Please to observe the insolence of a man, who is indebted to His Excellency for his daily Bread, borrowing the language of the discontented at Detroit & at this Place—You will see that he is not mistaken, If I am presise in obedience of orders, & will Justify these People's opinions in calling this Fort, Fort Haldimand. They all do me honor which I shall be happy if my conduct may claim.

This far I write officially thro' the medium of Friendship.

Were it necessary to offer any other justification for conzning Mr Harrow to the Fort, only, that the account which he sends himself of the matter to Mr Grant. I would observe to you that I have parties of Sawyers, parties of Axe-men, cutting Picketts, Parties cutting Hay, the Corvées as they arrive to transport Provision in small quantities to send at a time for each of these Parties, their safety to watch over, as well as their humours, and besides the danger of some one lurking Villian destroying what we have done on the Island. Rebel Belts & strings are brought in every week by the Indians who still cannot prevent some bad ones from doing mischief. However at the time when Mr. Harrow displayed his insolence, I had the Sacks and Renards Indians here, who I then told were not to receive goods this year in their Country as they had allowed themselves to be debauched by the Rebels & that they could not murmur as they could not deny it, They being the only Western Indians in their interest. I also told them how short sighted they were not to observe that as they had mines in their Country, it was the Interest of the Rebels to pay them more attention than to the others—tho not more friendship for they meant them less. To return to Mr Harrow—He is told to remain here untill General Haldimand's Pleasure is known, & his report in the Enclosed letter with the ordinary additional circumstances which agravate, & not necessary to trouble you with, is near the truth.

I am, Sir, Your most obedt. humble Servt

Patt Sinclair,

Michilimackinac 3rd Augt 1780. Lt Govr.

[B 97 2, p 438.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

Quebec 21st Augt 1780.

Sir—An opportunity just offering for Niagara I have no more than time to acquaint you that Captain Brehm has communicated to me the contents of your Letters of the 2nd & 3rd Inst & to express the hightest Displeasure at Mr. Harrows Conduct—even as represented by himself to Captn. Grant—the Enclosed is an Extract from the Instructions He received when stationed at your Post—which he has thought proper so groosly to depart from. If you think Mr Harrow through inexperience, or bad advice, has fallen into this Error, and that he is an officer otherwise worthy of Indulgence, I leave it in your option to look over what has passed, upon his making the fullest & most ample apology to you for his Behaviour, otherwise you have my authority to dismiss him the Service.

As you have not said whether Captn. Grant has been made acquainted with Mr. Harrow's Conduct, or any particulars concerning the Letter & Enclosure from Mr. Harrow to Capt. Grant, I forbear mentioning the affair to him, but you will please acquaint him therewith and of my determination, together with what you may find necessary to do in consequence of it.

There is a Paragraph in one of your Letters respecting the name of the New Fort which Captain Brehm does not sufficiently comprehend to explain to me. It is however my desire that the Post although moved to the Island, may still be called Michilimackinac & the Fort be styled Fort Makinac. I have never known any advantage result from changing the names of Places long inhabited by the same People. I am, Sir, &c.

Lieut Govr. Sinclair. (Signed) F. H.

[B 97 2, p. 455.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

His Ex. to Lt. Govr. Sinclair:

You will give orders that two vessels ought to be put under the direction of Lt. Gov. Sinclair for the purpose of carrying on all the Transport necessary for his post, from Detroit—but we suppose the King's Service would only require one vessel to winter at Michilimackinac, and all repairs to be carried on at Detroit, for if the Artificers Stores & Tools are divided, great inconvenience will arise and much unnecessary expense will be incurred in the Naval Department.

To preserve regularity Governor Sinclair might continue to give every necessary orders for whatever service any vessel is to perform, but we humbly think if he did not interfere with the interior Destination of the officers it would be the best means of avoiding confusion in future. At the same time Governor Sinclair would always have it in his power to give his orders on any Point, whenever the King's Service was essentially concerned.

[B. 97 2, p. 587.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC, 1st September, 1780.

SIR—I here enclose copies of Letters from Mr Askin, late Commissary of Provisions at Michilimackinac, and his friend Mr Magill, Merchant at Montreal, by which you will preceive Mr. Askin is Desirous to Come to this Place by way of Detroit, to Settle his Public & Private Affairs. As you found it expedient for the King's Service to take the Charge of the Provision Store out of the Hands of Mr. Askin, You are the best Judge how far it may be consistent with your Reasons for so doing, to comply with his request. Considering the King's interest the first object of your attention, that done, I am persuaded the motives of Humanity & good nature will induce you to grant every reasonable Indulgence to those under your Command as Mr. Askin's Public Business must rest entirely with the Commissary Genl.

I should think the shortest route the most Eligible, any Provision Returns in the Hands of Mr. Fleming necessary to a Settlement can be transmitted to this place, this business finally arranged, Mr. Askin will have more leisure to attend to his Private Concerns, when I shall have no objection to return to Detroit. I am &c. &c.

Lieut Govr Sinclair. (Signed) FRED HALDIMAND.

[B 97-2, p. 496.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC 12th Septr 1780

SIR—Your Letters of the 22 ult. to me and to Captain Brehm with their Enclosures are received, their contents give me infinite concern, having promised myself that from the steps lately taken the Service at your Post would have gone on with general satisfaction—In order to remedy the Evils you have Represented, I Dispatch this immediately to desire that if it should arrive before your communication with Detroit is shut up, you will upon Receipt of it, send off as many officers & men as you shall think proper with safety to your Post—making choice of those without Regard to Rank or Company, who are the most troublesome, & have discovered an inclination to disobedience, tho' their conduct may have merited it, you will not send them in arrest, our time & Situations being such as will point out to you the impossibility of entering at present into Inquiries & discussions, they must be reserved for a future period, but I am determined when it can be done, that the whole shall be minutely investigated—You will therefore please to make such notes & Remarks as you may Judge necessary for that Purpose—in the meantime I have the utmost dependence upon your attention and Perseverence in forwarding the King's Service under every circumstance that may occur—

I shall send up with the Express 6 or 8 men of the 84th Regmt & you have my authority to raise for three years, or during the American War, as many men as will compleat a Compy in that Regiment.

With regard to your Rank, disputed by Captn Mompesson, your former Rank preserved to you by a Letter of Service, as you are again employed in the Military Line—can admit of no doubt, and I have the pleasure to acquaint you that I have at length obtained His Majesty's Decision upon the Disputed Rank of Lieut Governors of the Posts, which you will receive by this opportunity & publish immediately.

As I shall not Detain the Express I shall add nothing but to recommend the King's Service to your attention, with regard to the Trade. I am persuaded that whatever change has been made, you have found necessary & that the utmost impartiality will be shewn them—

P. S.—I have sent orders to Major De Peyster to send with the Troops any Families lately brought from the Ohio—who may be inclined to settle at Michilimackinac, should they arrive you will settle them on the Island.

Lt Gov Sinclair

[B. 97 2, p. 502.]

MATHEWS TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC, 9th October, 1780.

SIR—I am commanded by His Excellency General Haldimand to acquaint you that a few days ago Mr. Chevallier and Mr. Ainse waited on him from Montreal, with memorials, copies of which are enclosed. As you had not acquainted the General of them being sent from Michilimackinac, or furnished Him with the particulars of their offences, or any materials whatever that could justify His detaining them here, or enable him to commence a Prosecution against them, His Excellency has thought fit to permit them to return to Montreal to their Families, until such time as he can hear from you, & He desires you will furnish him by the first opportunity with every charge & information that is to be laid against them, in order either to prosecute, or release them from Bail, & likewise such answer, to the demands made by them for goods furnished to Government, as may Determine him to discharge them, or justify the contrary. In these matters it will be necessary to be very particular, for as those People cease to enjoy the Benefits they have so long reaped under Govt, disappointment and Resentment will induce them to contend to the utmost Limits of the Law.

I am, sir, &c., &c.

(Signed,) R. MATHEWS.

Lieut. Govr. Sinclair.

[B 97 2, p. 530.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

SIR—As I have ever avoided offending Individualls, and endeavoured as much as I could to bring their several abilities to one Point, and reconcile Private convenience and Public Exigencies as much as possible, I took uncommon Pains with the Person who is the subject of this Letter to make him usefull to the service, & to himself, notwithstanding his attachment to the King's Interest, was suspected. He is a good mechanic and was useful upon the Island. But this Spring, whether, Biassed by his commerce, or mis-led by his Father in Law Mr. Askin, or desirous of thwarting the service, he had the rashness to gain an Indian to deliver a Letter of mine addressed to Mr. Cadôt at St. Mary's, on His Majesty's Service, which letter he broke open and cut out the words in it which offended. He then sent it by a sailor, in whose pocket it was found, I suppose to inform Mr. Askin of the reason for intercepting it. It was wrote in French & therefore he had no occasion for putting it under cover. The unhappy carrier perished on the ice. It was not possible therefore to prove it but by circumstances & after the most circumstantial proof possible, I gave Mr. Robertson leave to give Bond which he refused to procure. Afterwards he requested the permission but in the interim, I allowed him to be at large, upon Mr. Mercer, his connection, passing his word for his behaviour & for delivering him over at Detroit. At last Mr. Mercers own behaviour rendered it necessary to put him under the Bond, which I now enclose.

They are capable of telling many Falsehoods, I mean Mr. Askin & Mr. Robertson, Mr. Mercer has already vented grievances to Major De Peyster which he has not with Candour explained to me. I know so little of all the three men, excepting their Demerit, that I cannot conceive what they have said or will say to the General. I shall always be happy in giving my reasons for every action, even from its Spring & I will rely upon your requiring them, when they do not appear. On this occasion I believe they can assign none themselves but their own faults & my having turned the key in the Provision Store. I am, Sir, with esteem

Your most obedt humble Servt

PATT SINCLAIR

Capt. 84th Regt. Lt. Govr.

Michilimc. 8th July 1780

I should have informed you that Mr. Robertson is a Sailor, a Merchant & Carpenter—he managed the Private Vessels in Lake Superior & this Lake, wishing to hire one of them for the Spring Service I apply'd to him & had agreed for £40 N. Y. C. per month.

But my Letter to Mr Cadôt requiring Canadian Volunteers militated against his Private Views, Canadians managed Mr. Robertsons Vessels & Trade at St. Mary's which he suspected from the operations then going on & afterwards to be in agitation—therefore he cut out the word Canadians.

He was refer'd to six men of his choosing & six chosen by the officers commanding the Troops to Exculpate him from the Charges against him. They reported his inability of weakening any one of them, at all events he is an unfit person for this part of the Country. If the General desires the whole proceedings to be sent down, they are ready.

Excuse so disagreeable a Detail.

[B 97 2, p. 393.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

Dear Brehm—I beg leave to lay before you what I hope will be convey'd to His Excellency in the manner which may best answer the intent of putting a stop to little prejudices, conceived by all of us who are in charge of Posts at which the Commander in Chief will expect obedience to his commands.

The Letters of Different dates from Major De Peyster will shew you how much he has been influenced by reports from this Place. My Letters could not have given him offence. Major Gamble writes me from Detroit that many complaints are sent from this against me. If they are well founded they cannot be too early enquired into, I therefore expect that you will, in friendship to me & justice to the Service procure His Excellency's permission to write to Major De Peyster an official Letter demanding a copy of such information as he has received from this respecting my conduct.

It is obvious that these reports have produced bad consequences which require to be stopped. I have taken no new measures here—if a proper care of the King's Provisions, Property, & His Majesty's Interests are not reckoned innovations.

What can give Major De Peyster offence? I do not complain of his not sending my Baggage & my little stores which were sent up last year, but I do heavily complain of his not sending the working Cattle which you ordered. They are the Stone, Horses & Masons alluded to (I suppose) in his letter. Canoes are allowed to come contrary to orders. They bring tatling Letters. The last Canoe brings a Mr. Finchley known to be ill disposed to the Service. A Mr. Fisher, of Albany is allowed to winter in Saginaw Bay, where there are Rebel Belts. Last year Mr. Askin sent a Cannoe to the Grand Valley in July. Rebel Belts were there & several Rebels quit it some days before. Mr. Bennet of the 8th passed in his way to St. Joseph.

The Lattitude given to Monsr Grosselier in the Inclosed Pass seems extraordinary. Lattitude were given to the People who ventured on the Mississippi. On the whole I am astonished at the management of every part of the Service, of last year which depended on this Post.

There was no want of ingenuity in managing the Indian Presents—Mr. Askin, can, if he will, give the General clear Information on these points, and account for Expenses which I can form no Idea of—The Major would not allow a receipt to be given for the Shovels you sent—they were bad he observed.

What Tools were wanting for Land? Your orders directed the Fort to be strengthened—The Bastions were before terrassed, not a part of the Defence—The Curtains which required Defences were pierced for 1000 musquets.

Nothing kept me from the Island this year but a want of Cover for our Provisions. Could I have completed the Church before the 30th of April, the whole Garrison would have been over, but that with the danger of leaving Pickets & Houses standing here, or the loss in destroying them hindered me, as the Indians who were disaffected required check and the whole much attention.

I am, Dear Brehm, with esteem Your sincere Friend

Patt Sinclair.

Michilimc 8th July 1780.

I send the Illenois Pass under cover to His Excellency with Letters brought by Mons. Groselier from that country.

We shall be much interrupted in fortifying this year—I forgot to mention to you that the Indians have delivered up the Island, removed their Houses and formally surrendered it without any Present, as yet, in the Presence of Chiefs of Eight Different Nations who all rejoice at the change—I have explained His Excellency's intentions to them, to make Corn Fields of the whole Island—no more of their Country is required for that purpose. The Fort to be on the upper ground where no Indians will be allowed to enter.

Their Agent's house will be in the Stockaded Village—They expressed much satisfaction with the whole arrangement.

They were told that all of the White People who were married amongst them were called in & would have lotts of land on the Island—They send them in daily now & I hope we shall be able to clear the Country of such Destructive Members and make them usefull to themselves & to the Post.

[B 97 2, p. 400.]

LETTERS OF SINCLAIR, DE PEYSTER, AND OTHERS.

DE PEYSTER TO SINCLAIR

Detroit 12th March 1780.

Dear Sir—I am favoured with your letters of 15th Feb'y. Missabogs arrived on the 7th Inst. with Thebault. I have detained him whilst I could dispatch an express to Niagara, in hopes also that my express might return from thence in time to send with him, but I have given over hopes therefore least Assin grow impatient, I now dispatch your Courier.

If it was in my power to send or encourage Artificers to go to Michilimackinac, I would readily do it, but I am at a loss for a number sufficient to carry on the necessary works here. I have passed the word for Cannon & ammunition & Capt. Grant has forwarded your letter to Lt. Col. Bolton, and to the Commissioner without whose order, nothing more than a supply of Pitch, Oakum & such trifles, for the repairing Batteaus, or the vessels stationed at your Post, can be sent.

When I Commanded I was never able until the last year to obtain wherewith to repair a Batteau, I wish you better luck.

I am sorry to hear that the Wiandot has not yet arrived at Michilimackinac, should she still make her appearance, you will then have more than your Proportion of Rum, but should she be lost on short notice you shall have some sent to you.

Your movements down the ——— shall be seconded from this place, by my sending a part of the Garrison with some small Ordnance. All the Indian officers, & as many volunteers as can be got, Joined by a very considerable body of Indians.

Their Route shall be to the Ohio, which they shall cross & attack some of the Forts, which surround the Indian Hunting ground in Kentuck. I have had the Wabash Indians here by invitation, they have promised to keep Clarke at the Falls, about sixty of the Michilimackinac Indians have been here upon a visit, some of them have engaged to join the Wabash Indians. It would be therefore wrong in me to send any message to La Fourch. As I am convinced you will see more of them in the Spring than can possibly be of use to you, especially as they now know the Illinois Country is Evacuated.

The Article of Secret Intelligence I have not as yet communicated to any one.

I must beg leave to observe, least the Indians should tell an untruth, that they are engaged to assist their friends, of their own accord, excepting Amiable, the son of Louison Chevallier, who with Bengsew-abriné are to march at my request, and at the desire of Amiable, have given him a letter to DeQuinté, to request he will lead the Party, assuring him that you will be glad to engage him in the King's Service.

The Errand Amiable came upon was to bring me a letter from Chevallier to acquaint me with the Rebels having evacuated the Illinois, leaving only McCarty behind.

I am surprised that Chevellier did not leave his Cassette with Mr Askin by way of securing it, perhaps he has thought better of it and sent it to Montreal to purchase him a retreat.

I never intended formally to take either the Cassette, or his bond, for his appearance. I could not have acted with so much indelicacy to a man who I put confidence in, sufficient to give him a commission to act in behalf of the Crown, who had the Commander in Chiefs letters to the same purpose & who had never yet in my opinion deceived me, notwithstanding the reports of his enemys, most of whom I know to be very bad men. Mr Ainsse told me that his uncle intended to leave 60,000 livers in the hands of Mr. Askin, and I took it for granted, but was indifferent whether I did it or not. I was however to blame mentioning anything of the matter to you without being sure of it before I left the place.

Everything here is in the greatest tranquility, except the cry for bread. The Inhabitants being so much in want, that without the assistance of the King's Stores many must starve.

Our Indian news is that I have had a great deputation from the Mingoes Shawnese, & Delawares to crave the assistance promised by Mr Hamilton & other commandants, as the enemy have now surrounded their Hunting Grounds & threaten to cross the Ohio at the mouth of the little Miamis. I shall answer their deputation by sending the above little document to the Ohio.

I have the honour to be Dear Sir Your most Humble & obedt. Servant.

AR. S. DE PEYSTER.

To Lieut Govr Sinclair,

[B 97 2, p. 293.]

DE PEYSTER TO SINCLAIR

DETROIT May the 18th 1780.

DEAR SIR—I have the mortification to acquaint you that my Express is just arrived from Niagara without any letters more for me than one from the Adjutant Requesting in the Lt. Colonel's name that I would send him all the Provisions I could spare. A letter to Mr. Fry and one to Mr. Du Vennett inform that Count D'Estaing landed one Genl Clinton at Savannah, but was soon repulsed by the British Troops, they no sooner embarked but a British Fleet came up and totally destroyed that of the Count. This does not look like him having stormed. Jamaica, according to savage reports, and transported the cannon &c to Post Vencennes, such Pitiful stuff turned back the Puttawattimies, with which Monsr Du Quindre is come to acquaint me. I have taken this young man into the Service, and send him back to St Joseph's to execute such orders as may be occasionally sent him.

Yesterday being the Earliest thought prudent to send off a Vessel for Fort Erie, The Anglesea sailed. The Bar at Fort St Clair is not yet passable for a Vessel, nor will it be for some time.

I however sent off Capt. Burnett in a Batteau yesterday to try to Push through, in order to assist the Wiandott in getting off. A Sailor arrived from her yesterday, and reports that she lays on the Beach about 60 miles on the East Shore in Lake Huron—crew and cargo safe. The Gage and Dunmore are taken to pieces & it will be late before they are thoroughly repaired. The Wellcome is near compleated to Run another year, when she will want a thorough overhaul. I'll send her to Sagina as soon as she can sail, after which she shall sett out for your Post, and by that time the Felicity will undoubtedly be arrived here—when she will be much wanted. Captain Bird left this with a Detachment of about one Hundred & fifty whites and one Thousand Indians, he must be by this time nigh the Ohio. Your man is at the Pinery & will Remain there till a Vessel from Michilimackinac passes.

Mrs. De Peyster is well & Desires to join in compliments to you.

I am, Sir, your most Humble & obedt Servant

AR. S. DE PEYSTER.

To Lieut Govr Sinclair.

P. S.—The Adjutants Letter informs me that there are a great number of letters arrived at Niagara by Express the 10th of March, while the Coll proposes to have forwarded when a vessel arrive there from this Post. They also daily expected the First vessel. from Carleton Island with News.

Please to excuse the hurry I am in, the Indians give me no rest.

This moment 60 Pottawattamies arrived.

Endorsed:

N. B.—I requested of Major de Peyster to send me an Express should he find Col Bolton in want of Provisions. He sent none.

Monsr. De Quendre is one of the People too long at St. Josephs.

The information relative to Captain Bird is not clear enough for my comprehension.

This place ought to have secured Post St Vincent, if the attack of Captain Bird is directed against it.

PATT SINCLAIR.

Lt Govr, 1780.

From Major De Peyster to Lieut Govr Sinclair, 18th May.

[B 97 2, p. 337.]

WM. PARK TO SINCLAIR

DETROIT 18th May 1780.

SIR—On the 20th of January last I wrote to you inclosing a memorandum of what Furniture &c Mr James Stirling had formerly in his care here belonging to you, & now disposed of, as also assuring you that the Cattle & every thing you wanted should be ready for the first vessel.

I waited upon Major De Peyster some time ago, letting him know I was about bying oxen &ca and to have his permission to send them off per first vessel, but he told me he could not allow of their leaving this place, & had done well not to have brought them, & further added that you had order'd in all Live Stock from St Josephs & could not be disappointed.

As I intend to leave this place in a few days for Montreal in Expectation of returning immediately with a Cargo of Goods, which should leave that place early this Spring, and in order to settle a correspondence there, so as to have no occasion to go for a few years hence, when returned I shall be extremely happy to have it in my power to furnish you in whatever you may want, either the Country produce or anything else, your orders shall be executed with the utmost dispatch & upon the most reasonable terms, which I flatter myself to be able to do as any other, from my General acquaintance with the French Inhabitants here, and am with Respect Sir Your most obedt. Servant,

WM. PARK.

Endorsed: From Mr. Park to Lieut. Govr Sinclair Detroit the 18th May.

I cannot conceive how Major De Peyster expected working oxen from St Josephs where the idlest People in the world have nestled, for years.

PATT SINCLAIR.

[B 97 2, p. 340.]

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM CAPTAIN BIRD

MONSR. LORIMER'S, May 21st, 1780.

SIR—I have the pleasure to inform you that everything is six leagues below the Portage where the perrauques are making. They are not yet finished, therefore nothing on our part retards.

The Hurons of St. Dusky will give the Shawnese no answers about joining, they are ill disposed and not worthy your countenance. People from Detroit tamper with them. McCormic & Dawson mean to join me. Colonel Clarke is advertised of our coming though ignorant of our number and artillery. There are ten or fifteen Forts near each other—houses put in the form of a square. I keep the little gun for quick transportation from one to the other. I flatter myself you will not disapprove. I forgot to mention one of the Delawares who join neither Party came from Col. Clarke. Col. Clarke says he will wait for us instead of going to the Mississippi, his numbers do not exceed two hundred, his provisions and ammunition short.

Major De Peyster begs leave to observe upon the above extract that he is since informed by a message from the Indians, at St. Dusky, that they are waiting the arival of the Hurons from Detroit in order to strike with them towards Fort Pitte.

Endorsed:—Preparations 21st May. The Enemy—where? are apprised of his coming. Where are the Houses & Forts? This is the extract sent from Detroit, not copied here, with the Major's Letter.

[B 97 2, p. 345.] PATT SINCLAIR

DE PEYSTER TO SINCLAIR

DETROIT, 26th May, 1780.

DEAR SIR—The bearer of this Letter (Monsr. Barthe) sets out to morrow with his Family for your Post, on his way to his house &c, at St Mary's, at which place I fix't him with the approbation of the Commdr in Chief, on Mons Cadots declaring his intentions to quit it, who afterwards offered the King's Barracks for sale.

Mons Barthe has been at much Expense in arranging the place, agreeable to my orders to him, & I did promise him my protection, as a Person proper to be instructed with the Execution of the Commanding officers orders at St. Mary's.

As it is no more in my power to fulfil my promise I must request that you will please, during your command confirm what I have done with the approbation of Sir Guy Carleton.

Everything is quiet here except with the constant noise of the War Drum, all the Seigneures are arrived at the instance of the Shawnesse & Delawares. More Indians from all Quarters than ever known before & not a drop of Rum.

Mrs. De P. joins in compts, she hopes you will not over fatigue yourself.

I am, Sir, Your Humb. & obedt Servt,

Ar. S. De Peyster.

Lieut Govr Sinclair.

[B 97 2, p. 347.]

DE PEYSTER TO SINCLAIR

Detroit 15th June 1780.

Sir—I received your Letter by the Ottawas, together with two Miamis Indians. Everything shall be observed which may conduce to bring about a friendship with the two Nations. I yesterday delivered the Speech of the Six Nations & Canada Indians brought by Kyashota & a deputation of two from each nation, which Amiable will deliver to the Ottawas, & Chippewas. The Parole is contained in Four Belts of Twenty Thousand Wampums which remains with the Hurons. It Imports an Injunction to the Western Nations to hold to their General Alliance denouncing bad Luck to whatever nation shall fall from it. I herewith enclose you all the Letters and paper & impatiently await the arrival of the Felicity from your Post—to send your Baggage & other articles with two Companies Cloathing—the sooner she is sent the better—As she is destined to carry your Provisions agreeable to Lieut. Col. Bolton's orders, nor have we a Vessel we can send to you. The Gage is repairing. The Dunmore in the same condition. The Faith to ply betwixt Fort Erie and Little Niagara, with the Windott when got off so that there will be for a time to come only the Hope & Angelina from L. Erie—& the Felicity & Wellcome for to transport to Michilimackinac. So soon as the Wellcome returns from assisting the Windott, I shall send her to your Post, it will however be some time first, as I hear they are much difficulted to get her off, & that the Wellcome has not got farther on her way than the Pinery, the Windott laying about Eighty miles in Lake Huron. The Hope is Just come to anchor & has brought a company of Rangers & only one Circulary Letter. I have orders to compleat the Companies at your Post, which shall be done when Captain Bird Returns with the men, when the order was sent the Genl. did not know of him being out.

Whatever requisitions you may make shall be punctually sent by the Felicity if to be had here. Please let me know if you require the Stone, Horses and Masons or whether you have not already more Horses than Hay to feed them with. I am your humble and obedt Servt

AR. S. DE PEYSTER.

Lieut Governor Sinclair

Endorsed: This letter will convince His Excellency to what lengths private intrigues have been carried on & how much the Service has been hurt by them. What Stone Horses & Masons does the Major mean ? & Indian Corn for working cattle.

PATT SINLCAIR.

[B 97 2, p. 364.]

SINCLAIR TO DE PEYSTER

MICHILIMACKINAC 30th July 1780

SIR—I have represented to His Excellency General Haldimand that our endeavors to secure this Garrison have been retarded for want of working Cattle, Tools, the materials and Rum forwarded to carry on the works upon the Island, and for want of Rum due upon last year's distribution only 18 Barrels appear upon the Different Invoices since my arrival here. The Conduct of the Commissary then in Charge of the Provisions as well as that of his Connections growing daily worse obliged me at last to represent the great deficiency in the Provisions, which he insinuated Your Knowledge of, a consideration which for a long time gained my forbearance tho' not my Belief—The necessity of having vessels here to transport Pickets, Boards, Logs, Hay to the Island, carrying Provisions to 8 or 10 different parties who cannot be trusted with much at a time, the communication necessary to be kept up with all of them for their safety, has been so great that no private Consideration (tho' my private wants have not been few) could not have engaged me to send the Vessel to Detroit.

The attack upon the Illinois miscarried from the treachery of Calvé and Ducharmé Traders, & from information received by the Enemy so early as March last. As the Industry of St Joseph's has not been very remarkable for doing good—we did not get the working oxen we expected—but I now represent that three pair of working oxen will be wanted on account of Stumps, Rocks &c. in the ground where they are to work. We have plenty of Hay—as to the part of the Letter in which you mention Cattle, I am at a loss to know what it alludes to.

Lieut Clowes of the 8th Regmt acts as assist Engineer & and being also Paymr it well be considered in any future arrangement of officers here that he will be required at this Post. Corporal Davies of the Royal Artillery was ordered to attend a Court Martial at Montreal—from him I am informed that the Court Martial is over.

The report of the Natches seems too well founded.

I am, Sir, your most obedt Servant

(Signed) PATT SINCLAIR
Lt Govr

Major De Peyster

[B 97 2, p. 423.]

PETITION TO MAJ. DE PEYSTER

MICHILIMACKINAC 30th July '80.

Pray deliver the Enclosed to Major De Peyster and You'll oblige your's
2 Companies of the King's Regt.

To Joseph Fox Soldier in the Kings Regiment at Detroit.

[B 97 2, p. 425.]

The Humble Petition of 2 Companies of the Kings or 8th Regiment of Foot in Garrison at Michilimackinac.

Your humble Petitioners in the greatest distress make Bold to trouble your honor with the grievances we labour under, not in the least doubting but to find redress having had experience of your humanity & goodness whilst under your command, & good were it for us to have continued under it, for truly Sir, since you left this place your petitioners usage has been very bad & is daily increasing as it is now upwards of eleven months since part of your Petitioners has received neither pay or arrears, of Pay, or Poundage. It is true Lt. Clowes has ordered from time to time the men's accounts to be made out & the Generals Compy. has been punctual in the payment of them so that it is the Genadier Company only that Labours under this grievance. We were not so used when under your honors Command, Mr. Clowes has even thought proper to order the Grenadier Company to be confined to the limits of the Barracks, because they would not sign the Books without payment, and if your Petitioners go to Lt. Clowes about that or any other grievance we Labour under, he tells us he can do nothing in it—yet we are to appear as clean for duty as when we lay at Quebec—dressed everyway the same and powdered—and we can't get Flour under two shillings per pound which is very distressing to a part of your Petitioners who have no money to purchase it with, and we cannot work to earn any, have Roll calling twice a day. Neither can your Petitioners get any money for working at the King's Works. 'Tis time Mr. Clowes tells some of the men that choose it have tobacco or Rum, for their working money. But can never suit the Bulk of your petitioners. Neither do your Petitioners think they have received their Just due, as allowed by the Commander in Chief at the Kings Works—very seldom we received more than one Gill of Rum per day & some days but a chew of Tobacco apiece. There have likewise been several of your Petitioners been with Complaints to the Lt Governor concerning our Provisions & other maters, but his answer always is *damn you for a pack of Villians & Scoundrels, none of your Majors or Mr. Askin's ways with me*—it *won't* do. This, Sir, is the Language your Petitioners received, let the consequence be what it will, without any redress, this, Sir, grieves Your Petitioners to hear our good Commander & His name so slightly mentioned in a tone of disdain & ourselves abused without any just cause, this, Sir, and only this is the cause of our laying these Greivances so openly before you, when we have much more to complain, but your Petitioners think these are sufficient to move compassion in, a heart like yours where we are sure Humanity Reigns in these hopes Sir, we remain as in Duty bound,

Your Humble Petitioners & with wishes for your and your Honour's Prosperity. Amen.

P. S.—Your Petitioners are of opinion that our bad usage is principally given to provoke us to do some thing that may bring a Scandal on the Regiment, but your Petitioners do and will guard against it, for we can get no redress here.

[B 97 2, p. 426.]

REPLY OF DE PEYSTER TO THE PETITIONERS

Major De Peyster acquaints the 2 Companies at Michilimackinac that he has received their Petition and is extremely sorry that they should be think themselves under the necessity of Petitioning for Redress by the first Vessel it shall be forwarded to Lieut. Col. Bolton, who under His Excellency General Haldimand Commands the upper Communication—MILITARY the men may be asured, that the Major will ever entertain a proper sense of their Regard for Him, should what they have set forth appear to be Litterally true. especially as their petition gives such strong assurances expressed in the Conclusion, that they like good Soldiers will not be driven to act unbecoming the Character they have hitherto maintained. A little Patience will bring everything to light, and the Major still flatters himself that there be some misunderstanding in what they mention of the Lieut Govr., especially when he reflects for his own part he never gave any occasion for Captain Sinclair to mention his name in a Slighting Tone or any way's with disrespect—the men may be further Assured that whilst they continue to behave with Becoming decency the Major as far as concerns him to interfere will Allways maintain there Rights.

[B 97 2, p. 582.]

CAPT. MOMPESSON TO GEN. HALDIMAND

Michilimackinac 22d Augt. 1780.

May it Please Your Excellency,

In consequence of my having received orders from Major De Peyster, I being then at Detroit, to proceed with my Company to this Place, in order to relieve the Grenadiers, I arrived yesterday here with a part of my company, the remainder to follow. As it is of moment to me to know in what capacity I am to act at this post—finding Lieut Governor Sinclair here, who has had command of the Troops here only since he has been appointed a Captain in the Eighty fourth Regiment—Lieut Clowes of the King's Regt. having had command of them before, to whom Lieut Govr Sinclair always applied when he wanted any Troops. According to his instructions from you, which now lay before me, & which is also a rule for me to go by, I cannot therefore think it consistent with my Rank in submitting the command of the Troops in this Garrison to Lieut Governor Sinclair at present—As I am a Senior officer to him in Rank, for he having sold his Company in the fifteenth Regmt, disqualifies him for holding his former Rank, on which he now grounds his priority to command the Troops in this Garrison. Before Lieut. Govr Sinclair had a Company in the Eighty fourth Regmt. he did not claim being Commandant of the Troops as I have already observed to your Excellency with respect to Lieut Clowes.

If Lieut. Govr had any authority over the Troops before his preferement in the Eighty fourth Regiment, I imagine he would certainly have claimed it as his right at that time, but he did not untill his appointment to the Eighty fourth Regiment, neither can I find that he is vested with any more authority now than formerly. As Captain in the Eighty fourth Regiment (here being but subalterns before my arrival) he undoubtedly was commandant being senior officer, but since my arrival, I cannot entertain the Idea of his still remaining in that capacity. Nevertheless I shall strive with the utmost of my powers to make matters go on as smooth as possible for the good of the King's Service, and shall use my utmost endeavours to promote that harmony, so essentially necessary for carrying on the Service. At the same time Your Excellency's opinion on the matters I have mentioned would be very acceptable in regulating my future conduct, as what I have here troubled Your Excellency with, is on no other motive than to inform Your Excellency that I act only as my judgement dictates to me is my Right.

I have the Honour to be Your Excellency's most obedt & most humble Servt.

John Mompesson,
Capt. in King's Regt

[B 97 2, p 461.]

MOMPESSON TO MATHEWS

Michilimackinac Augt 22nd 1780.

Dear Mathews—As Lieut Govr Sinclair sends off an Express Canoe from this Post, I take the opportunity of informing you that I have also by the same conveyance wrote to General Haldimand concerning the Command of the Troops in this Garrison, which Govr. Sinclair (altho' I have often desired him to shew me his authority, which he shews me only by his Commission in the fifteenth Regiment) claims by being it seems, a Capt. in the Eighty-Fourth, since his appointments to which he has only commanded the Troops, before that time Lieut Clowes commanded. I have represented to General Haldimand in my Letter, my reasons for not acknowledging Captain Sinclair of the 84th Regt. commanding officer here—which of course you will see. I have another reason for writing this to you, which is, that I find Lieut Govr. Sinclair has a method of opening Letters from this place, altho' wrote by officers, and I hear detaining them sometimes—so that if in case my Letters should be served so, which perhaps may, unknown to me, I shall write you by the Vessel which will sail in about two days to inform you that I have wrote to you, and also the Commander in Chief, Mathews, that, I think will surprise you,—Major De Peyster is astonished, I have been here only three days, the Major having sent me from Detroit, in consequence of his information of matters going on here, I hope you are perfectly recovered of your illness, of which we had alarming accounts, when I left Niagara. My Compliments to Major Lernoult & believe me—Dear Mathews

Your's sincerely,
John Mompesson.

[B 97 2, p. 458.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir,—Capain Mompesson of the 8th Regmt arrived here yesterday with a Serjeant, Corporal and Twenty Privates of his Company.

The men were disembarked on the Island to assist at the Works & Captn Mompesson has thought proper to refuse my order for taking the charges of the Detachments of the 8th & 84th on that Service.

He has, since writing a note, of which the enclosed is a copy, conveyed amongst the Troops the following order—that they are to obey him as Commanding Officer of the Troops. A copy of the order is enclosed for Your Excellency's perusal. I requested to know when he could be ready to go to Detroit as he did not choose to act under authority here. He declined sending me an answer which obliged me to order the officer of the Day to attend for it—who brought me back for answer that Captain Mompesson would receive no letter or message from me & would return no answer to any.

This is the present state of a Garrison which has been for nine months uninterrupted in the discharge of some severe duties and at a time when the Traders are furnishing the assistance of their Servants in carrying on the Works, which I have been solicitous in advancing as the Enemy are taking Post at the Forks of Chigagoe. I can only add that I shall endeavor to make the confusion, already created amongst the discontented Traders, & the Servants of Traders, who are impatient of labour, as little as possible, other Events will depend entirely upon the disposition of the Troops, which I shall use no other influence over, than the authority Your Excellency has vested me with.

I have the honour to be Sir, with respect Your Excellency's most obedt & humble Servt.

Patt Sinclair,
Lt. Gov'r, Captn 84th Regmt.

[B 97 2, p. 471.]

REGIMENTAL ORDERS 22ND AUGT 1780.

Captain Mompesson having been ordered by Major De Peyster with an intention of Relieving the Grenadier Compy By Capt Mompesson's Compy, of which one Serjeant, one Corporall, one Drummer—And Twenty Private are arrived with Capt. Mompesson the same No. viz: one Serj. one Corpl. one Drummr of the Grenadiers to hold themselves in Readyness to Embark for Detroit. According to Major De Peyster's orders, signified to him from Lieut Colonel Bolton the time of the Embarkation Cannot as yet be fixed upon as the Masters of the Vessels under the direction of the Lieut Governors have not yet had orders to Receive the Detachment on Board, as Capt. Mompesson Conceives the Command of the Troops, Devolves to Him in consequence of his Seniority in Rank to Capt. Sinclair of the 84th Regiment.

He expects obedience to his commands from the Troops in this Garrison untill such time as orders from the Commander in Chieff Says to the Contrary. All Honoures due the Lieut. Governor to be Given Him.

Endorsed:—Copy of an order read to the Troops of the Garrison on the second day after Capt. Mompesson's arrival—which the officer of the day refused to read.

[B 97 2, p. 469.]

LETTER FROM THE OFFICER OF THE DAY AT MICHILIMACKINAC.

22d August, 1780.

Sir—In consequence of your letter directed to me as officer of the Day, requesting that I would wait upon Captn Mompesson for his answer to a letter from the Lt. Governor desiring to know when Captain Mompesson would be prepared to return to Detroit, I accordingly waited upon Captain Mompesson at Lt. Mercer's House where he told me he would not receive any Letters or message from you the Lt. Governor, thro' me or Lt. Brooks, and that he would signify the same to Lieut Brooks, and that if the Lt. Govr. sent any letters to Him, He would return them unopened. He expected the officers and soldiers would obey him as commanding officer of the Troops. When I offered to deliver your message to Captain Mompesson, he told me that he did not want any gobetween. I can't say that I understand the term in the Execution of my duty.

I have the honour to be, Sir, &c., &c.

(Signed), G. Clowes,

To Lieut Govr. Sinclair. King's (or 8th) Regt.

[B 972, p. 474]

22nd August 1780.

In Consequence of a Complaint preferred by the Detachment of the King's Regiment at Michilimackinac to Major De Peyster touching the character of Lieutenant Clowes, their then commanding officer, he begs leave to ask the following questions (in justice to himself, & that Captain Mompesson now commanding the Detachment will transmit their Answers to the Field officers of the Regiment.

[Q.] First they allege that Lieut Clowes has not pay'd them their Pay or arrears for eleven months, and that he wanted them to sign the Book without payment.

[A.] Sir, Your first Question is about Pay. Your humble servants of the Grenadr Company begs leave to acquaint your Honor, that when we made application to Major De Peyster we had no Pay, nor arrears of Pay, for upwards of eleven months, you told us you had no money belonging to us, and you know, Sir, our Poundage is not yet paid.

[Q.] By an order of the 29th June the Grenadier Company is accounted with to the 24th Feby, 1780, Lt. Clowes sent the Paymaster Serjeant to tell the Grenadiers to sign the Book in order for their payment to that time, which they refused, excepting their accounts was made out to the 24th June 1780, when I ordered them to be confined to the limits of the Barrack Yard till I could speak to them, which was two or three minutes afterwards, they then told me to the same effect. I then ordered them to examine their accounts to see that they were just & that they might not run into confusion from a longer delay of Payment, which they did, and were put at large?

[A.] Sir, this we acknowledge that you ordered our accts. to be made out, but we did not chuse to sign, unless cleared to the same time, the other Generals Company was, Sir, you then told us you had no money for us, and we believe our answer was, we would wait till the year or twelve months was expired, & then to apply for it to some other person.

Sir—The reason why the Grenadr. Compy. would not sign the Book was, that Mr. Clowes told them he had no money for them, and we did not choose to sign without a payment.

[Q.] Has Lieutenant Clowes ever wronged you in your pay, or has he ever stop'd it after your signing the Book—or has he in any respect given foundation for the first accusation?

[A.] Sir—Your Second Question. If ever your honor had wronged us, we all answer no, but in regard to our Payment it is most certain that the Grenadier Company received no Pay, arrears of Pay, for upwards of eleven months, at the time of application, nor yet Poundage to this Hour. So we will leave your honour to judge whether we the Grenadier Company have not a just grounds for the first accusation.

[Q.] Have any of you ever asked orders of Traders for Tobacco or other necessaries to the Extent of your Pay, that I have not granted? The Book will evince that I have to some who were in debt?

[A.] Sir—Your Third Question. If any of us ever asked for an order on a Trader, or for Tobacco but what you granted it to the full amount of our Pay, we answer Yes, to some you have but, at same time had they had their Pay, could have bought cheaper & where they pleased.

[Q.] When I had the command immediate of the Troops, did I not give you every reasonable indulgence, or did I ever refuse you any redress you asked?

[A.] Sir—To your Fourth Question about redresses when you commanded the Troops we all agree to what your honour there says, but, Sir, who is it we must make application to, we are certain that you command the two Companies, and could you have done us justice we certainly would never have appealed farther.

[Q.] During my command of the Troops has my Conduct, as an officer, or towards you been in any respect reprehensible.

[A.] Sir As to your Fifth Question is about your Behavior as an Officer & Commander of Troops, but, Sir, we must leave that answer to other Judges.

[Q.] Did Lt. Clowes tell you he had not the money up to the 24th of Feby, the time ordered for your account to be made out—

[A.] Yes

[Q.] Did you mean by your first accusation that you was apprehensive that I would not give you your Pay after you had signed the Book.

[A.] The Grendr Compy was confined to the limits of the Barracks about one hour and a half, but was obliged by some men to make great humbling to Mr. Clowes, or how long it might continued we know not—

(Signed)

Peter Barrett
Saml Bridgowan his X mark
A. Baker
Rd Chisolm
Robt Charston
Robt Forbes
John Grant X
Johnson X
Josh. Miller X
Aleck Kilbrath X
Wm Prescott

Morrison X
Wm Mackay X
Wm Neilson
Murrel
John Rankin
Robt Pound his X mark
Mt Mingay
Williamson his X mark
John Saunders
Wm. West
Mr Willson
Jos. Newton his X mark

[B 97 2, p. 463.]

23rd August 1780.

When Lieut Clowes proposed some questions at the head of the two Companies in presence of Captain Mompesson respecting his conduct in consequence of a petition sent by them to Major de Peyster (Did they not in General express their approbation of his command & said they had no fault to find against Lt Clowes on that head—Except some of the Grenadiers who thought themselves ill used in not getting their pay & arrears of a long standing & for being confined to the Barracks as my questions and their answers will shew, some of the Grenadiers even paid me the compliment to say they wished I was going with them?

James Barker step't out and said, Sir, You may remember that Mr. Mercer paid the men their arrears without your order, which made us think it hard we could not be paid likewise?

R. B. Brooke Lieut.
David Mitchell assist. Surgeon King's Regt.
J. F. Philips Lt & actg. F. Adjutant.

Lt Brooks did not attend to what I advance about what the men said in wishing I was going with them.

[B 97 2, p. 480.]

SINCLAIR TO CLOWES

Sir—I request that you will inform Mr. Mercer that the enclosed report will be sent to His Excellency the General by the King's canoes which leave this in a few days. I am, &c.,

(Signed) Patt Sinclair.

[B 97 2, p. 375.]

A STATEMENT.

Particulars relative to a Dispute between Lt Mercer of the Kings Regmt. & a Mr. McCrea of Michilimackinac, on July 1st 1780, in consequence of which Lt Mercer was ordered in arrest by Lieut Govr Sinclair.

Lt Mercer happening by chance to be in Company with Mr McCrea and some other Traders, A Dispute arose between Mr McCrea & Mr Frobisher concerning the Militia, in the course of which Mr McCrea told the latter that he would send a File of the Kings Regmt. for him if he did not appear.

So presumptious an expression from a Person by no means authorized to make use of it, could not fail to excite the Indignation of an officer of the Corps, & Lieut Mercer owns that he reprimanded Mr McCrea for it pretty severely—Mr McCrea however instead of making an apology for what he had said, retorted some very unbecoming language which provoked Lt. Mercer so much that he took him by the nose & a scuffle ensued.

Mr. McCrea upon reflection seemed so sensible of the Impropriety of his conduct that far from making any complaint to the Lt Governor, he on the contrary offered next morning in the presence of Mr McGill to endeavour to accomodate matters, by calling himself upon Lt Mercer & acknowledging that he had been very far from intentionally insulting or giving any offence to him. Mr McCrea has since repeatedly declared the same to Lt Brooke of the King's Regiment.

Lieut. Mercer was therefore not put in arrest from any complaint of Mr McCrea himself, but barely in consequence of a Representation of what had passed, made to the Lieut Governor by Mr. McNamara, a Trader, or some other by-stander.

Two days after Lt. Mercer was put in arrest, the Lt Governor ordered an Enquiry to be made by two Lieuts of the King's Regmt. concerning the conduct of Lieut Mercer in this affair. Lt Mercer could not help looking upon this Proceeding as very irregular, he had been previously supposed Culpable by being put in *arrest,* & that on the bare report of a Trader—he could not therefore imagine that the business of this Court was to *enquire,* still less could he look upon it, as authorized to *decide,* he therefore refused to plead or make any defence before it.

But as the Proceedings of this Court may perhaps be laid before His Excellency, Lt. Mercer thinks proper to observe that everything that passed at that Court is not inserted in the Proceedings, among which are the following particulars. Mr McCrea being asked by Lt. Clowes if he had anything to say concerning the Dispute answered that he had not, for that (having been in Liquor) he did not remember anything of it, but added that he had had no intention to give Lieut. Mercer *offence.*

Lieut Mercer cannot help looking upon his case as particularly distressing as he has now been near three months in arrest, without ever having been able to procure a copy of his accusation, though he has made repeated application (see No. 1 & 2). He has ever been refused an opportunity of laying his case before the commanding officer of his own Regmt. (see Nos. 3 and 4).

In consequence of such unjust proceedings he is utterly unprepared to make a proper Defence.

Many circumstances concur to show a personal, though unprovoked enmity of Lt. Govr. Sinclair towards Lieut Mercer, among which the following though foreign to the subject he cannot help mentioning: Lt. Mercer's appartments were not larger or more commodious than those of Lt. Brooks, a Junior officer, or than those of a Sergt in the Regmt. who was acting as Lieut. & Fort Adjutant.

The Lieut. Governor notwithstanding ordered Lt. Mercer to admit a French Family to share his Lodgings, and on Lt Mercer's applying to pitch his tent rather than submit to such Inconvenience, he was told that even that could not be permitted unless he would put it in a place pointed out by the Lieut Governor, and which being between the houses of Lt Clowes & Lt. Brooke's was very small & confined.

D. Mercer,
Lieut King's Regt.

MERCER TO DE PEYSTER

1st August 1780.

Sir—As an instance of further insult, I have this inst. Received a message from Lieut Governor Sinclair that I must give up a Room in my house to Mr. and Mrs. Chevalier.

I must observe there is only one fire place in the House, there are Soldiers in possession of houses unmolested and yet an officer is to be thus abused without the possible means of doing himself Justice.

It was the House the Baker lived in.

Excuse haste. I am, Sir, your most humble Servt.

D. Mercer.

Major De Peyster.

P. S.—I have remonstrated without effect and deny'd being allowed the use of my tent.

[B 97, 2 p. 434.]

MERCER TO SINCLAIR

22nd August 1780

Sir—I received a Letter this day from Lt Clowes informing me that if I thought myself entitled to the Pay of Assist Engineer &c and made my application accordingly, that I would be ordered payment for the same, I never though quitting this place without making request for payment for the time I was employed under you as Assist Engineer &c. in His Majesty's Service—Conceiving it to be the proper method to make application to you for such is the reason for my troubling you at this present.

I must likewise request your permission for an ox (my property) to be taken on board the Angelica—likewise must beg leave further to inform you of my being in possession of Bills of your signature to the amount of 200£ & upwards, to request your Bill for the Amount either on Quebec or Detroit—

I am, Sir, Your most obedt humble Servt

D. Mercer

Endorsed: Lieut Govr Sinclair

[B 97 2, p. 468.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

MICHILIMACKINAC 22d Augt. 1780.

Lieut Mercer has at last reduced me to the necessity of drawing money without Printed Bills, or destroying the Credit of the Promissory notes by means of which the expenses of carrying on the works on the works on the Island, & other services have been supported.

His letter is enclosed for your Excellency's perusal.

The several Inclosures sent herewith will show the danger of a Total stop to Building a Fort on the Island—as no requisitions can be made, & without them, as Lieut Brooks has shown an example to the men of laying aside authority, none can be used.

[B 97 2, p. 472.]

DE PEYSTER TO HALDIMAND

DETROIT the 13th August 1780.

SIR—The ninth inst. the Wellcome arrived here from Michilimackinac Copies and Extracts of Letters received by her. I herewith send you, & think it necessary to make a few remarks upon some of Lieut Governor Sinclair's letters, particularly those marked on the back.

No. 1. Should Captain Sinclair hereafter say he sent Mr Dauphin down a Prisoner I hope I shall be Justifyable in having sent him from hence as a passenger who may have something surest [secret?] to communicate, which I am not to be trusted with.

No. 2. The Chief Maskiash and six of his Band had my leave in writing to embark in the first Vessel. Mr. Harrow had my orders to receive them on Board—& I further declare it was Captn Sinclair's particular desire they were sent.

No. 3. The Engineer's Tools were unloaded from on Board the Gage & sent off on board the Wellcome the next morning—I sent more Rum by the Wyandott than the proportion allotted for the Post of Michilimackinac—When that Rum return'd here in the Spring, it was absolutely necessary for the good of His Majesty's Service to serve it out here & to dispatch the Wyandott to Sandusky with the Rangers, she being the only Vessel then in the Harbour—I wrote to Captain Sinclair about the Stone, Horses & Mares knowing that I left Michilimackinac over provided with such cattle—He seems however not to have understood me, tho nothing could be more explicit than my letter on that subject, his first requisition for oxen arrived on the ninth by the Wellcome which Vessel not being able to carry cattle, I sent the Angelica off the next morning with the draught oxen which cost about an hundred pounds a pair.

The Conduct of the Commissary and his connections I must touch upon in my own Justification. I do assure you, Sir, upon honour that I ever found Mr. Askin & his Family most usefull & faithfull Servants to Government, & as such was always ready to do him any Civility in my power. Mr. Askin hearing that his Flour to a considerable amount was put into the King's Store at Detroit—

Represented to me the distress his numerous family must be in unless I suffered him to borrow some Flour out of the Store, having at that time near two years Provisions, I accordingly agree'd to his borrowing a few Barrels, if he exceeded the bounds of Reason, it is more than he had authority from me to do. I however cannot be persuaded that he was actuated by dishonest principles. If Mr. Sinclair thinks he was, he certainly pays me a very bad compliment in his answer to the Soldiers when Petitioning him for redress.

No. 4. Sure Captain Sinclair cannot think that I can account for all ill disposition of people arriving at his post more than himself & yet his abrupt way of beginning his letter seems to intimate as much. You will please to observe Sir, that the Soldiers petition accuses Mr. Clowes amongst other matters, with not paying them for eleven months past. I had the Companies cleared to the 24th of August before I left Michilimackinac, after which period it seems Mr. Clowes did not choose to emit more paper Currency. Mr Brooks however continued to pay the Generals Company. Mr. Clowes should therefore have acquainted me that he would not continue that method of Payment, in order that you might have made the Paymr fall upon some method of sending Hard Money.

I am, Sir, Your most humble & obedt Servt

Ar. S. De Peyster.

P. S. I took the opportunity of both the Wellcome & Angelica going at the same time to send Captn Mompession with part of his Company to relieve as many of the Grenadiers, they will be better here for many reasons & 'tis highly necessary a Captn should be there.

[B 97 2, p 451.]

MICHILIMACKINAC, 30th July, 1780.

SIR—I sent you a Monsr Dauphin to be forwarded to His Excellency the General by the first opportunity.

I am, Sir, Your most obedt Humble Servt.,

PATRICK SINCLAIR, Lt Govr.

To Major De Peyster Commanding at Detroit.

[B 97 2, p. 425.]

(No Date.)

SIR—Mr Harrow has very improperly allowed Maskeash and several Indians of his Band to Come here at this advanced season of the year.

They have requested of me to send them Baptiste Point de Sable in the room of Monsr Belcour.

My rights to agree to such a Proposal are the Commander in Chief's Letter Indian Deed, tacit consent of Government waiting the decision of the King in Council, Possession & Property.

I am, Sir, Your humble Servt.,

PATRICK SINCLAIR,

Lt. Govr.

To Major De Peyster Commanding at Detroit.

[B 98, p. 306.]

MICHILIMACKINAC, 30th July, 1780.

SIR—I am at a loss to account for the Disposition in which people from Detroit come to this Post.

The Copy of the Letter from Mr Harrow who went from this with his vessel, without the Letters from your Post, will shew you the necessity I was under, for keeping him here to answer to the Commr in Chief for a species of Conduct which I cannot think him authorized to observe.

I am sorry that my endeavours to reconcile private convenience and duty has been thwarted by a sett of men who must do me the Justice to say that I sacrifice (in my own Case) the one for the other.

I am, Sir, Your most obedt. humble Servt.,

(Signed) PATT SINCLAIR, Lt. Govr.

Major De Peyster.

[B 97 2, p. 422.]

CAPT. HARROW TO CAPT. GRANT

MICHILIMACKINAC 31st July 1780.

SIR—I am here confined in the Fort at Michilimackinac by the Lt. Governor Commandant. The facts relative thereto I shall as far as I can here relate to you, which with my situation I make no doubt you will make known to the Commander in Chief. On my arrival the 29th Inst. with His Majesty's Sloop the Welcome, under my command, I made out a report of my Cargo and Passengers and went to the Wharff with an intent to deliver the same to Government when I was arrested by an officer in these words "You are not to Land here Capt. Harrow." I enquired by whose orders. "By Lieut Govr. Sinclairs. You will send your Passengers on shore." I did so & sent by this officer the Packett of Letters from Major De Peyster as well as the report of my Cargo &c to the Governor. Soon after in about two hours I received The original Letter marked No 1 Inclosed. In consequence of which begun to load the vessel. About 6 in the evening the Felicity arrived from Mackinac Island. In pursuance of my Duty demanded of Mr. McKay the master a detail of what he had been doing with the Vessel at this Post—who informing me of his having repeatedly sent to the Island of Mackinac with the Vessel, once to carry an Empty Barrel, once with a Letter & for a Load of Hay. Judging it incumbent on me, on the morning of the 30th Inst. I sent Mr. McKay the order No 2, which he having showed to the Governor, as I desired, I was sent for, on my coming into the room, he enquired what authority I had to give any order to Mr. McKay adding that if ever I presented [presumed?] to give another order "I'll put you in the Guard room." I show'd him a copy of the naval orders at Detroit this year which he kept, tho' since demanded. He then told me was it not his lenity he would send me down the Grand River, for carrying from here last Fall, three Barrels of Pork & three Barrels of Flour & a Box of Candles part of the Cargo, I had them brought I answered I took no Provisions but by Receipt to the Commissary for the Vessel's use & which I had accounted for. He then wrote a letter to Mr. Clowes with questions in it to be asked me by Mr. Clowes, in presence of Lt. Brook & Mr. Phillips. An officer formorly mentioned. The questions with their answers are No. 3. Immediately afterwards he sent Mr. McKay an order, a copy of which Mr. McKay gave me is here enclosed, No. 4, and on my going again on board he sent me the original No. 5, & soon after the original No. 6. By Mr. Phillips the Bearer of which. I reported to Lt. Governor Sinclair that I was ready & going to sail to Detroit, the vessel being then full stowed & some Passengers on Board. This was about 4 P. M. of the 30th, accordingly I began to get under way, being little wind, which, I had no sooner done than I was followed by Mr. Phillips & the Segt. Major telling me from the Governor that I was not to go away till I had his orders. I laid to & wrote the original No. 7, which I had no sooner delivered to Mr. Phillips then comes on board a Sergt. & six private armed to bring me on shore & to the vessel to anchor. I came on shore with them at the Fort Gate, when the Governor's orders were known for that purpose laid down my side arms & have now his orders No. 8. not to go out of the Fort &c. No questions have been since asked me about the Petty Officers & Crew on board, nor anything relative to the Vessel. I have in consequence of his leave got what necessarys I wanted from the Vessel. The little Time I have & the Vessel just going off prevents my saying anything more about the Vessel or myself. I dont doubt but Guthrie will take care of the Vessel and her stores—there are more circumstances to mention which will appear on my trial, as that I imagine must be the consequence. This is the only Letter I have wrote, I rely on you to make this known to the Commanding officer of the Naval Armament as well as to the Commr. in Chief and hope you will endeavor to get me a fair trial, if any.

I am Sir, your most obedt. Servant

ALEXR HARROW.

From Captn. Harrow to Captn. Grant. Dated Michilimackinac 31st July, Rec'd 20th August.

[B 97 2, p. 430.]

No. 1.

29th July, 1780.

SIR—As soon as you have been on shore & got anything wanted, yourself and the crew, you will then receive on board Mr. McGill and his effects, Mr. Myers & his effects, Mrs. Askin and her children, servants and Baggage, Mr. Dyce & Thomas Stone, when they have got all their goods & conveniences on board, you will then report when you will be in readiness for sailing.

You will inform all your Passengers and People that Letters are to be put under cover to Major De Peyster.

I am your humble servant.

(Signed), PATT SINCLAIR,

Lt. Govr.

[B 97 2, p. 412.]

No. 2.

On Board the Welcome at Machelc
30th July, 1780.

SIR—You are hereby ordered to proceed immediately to Detroit with the Sloop Felicity under your command, there to receive orders for transporting

King's Provisions, &c., from Fort Erie to Detroit or to this Post, unless Govr. Sinclair gives you an order in writing to the contrary, in that case you are to obey it, sending me a copy of the said order, on receipt thereof.

I am, Sir, your humble servant,

(Signed,) Alexr. Harrow,

Lt. & Commandr the naval armament on the Rivers and Lakes in Canada.

Directed—To Mr. Norman McKay commdg His Majesty's Sloop Felicity on the upper Lakes, 30th July 1780.

[B. 97 2, p. 413.]

No. 3.

Questions proposed to Lt. Harrow Commdg. the Sloop "Welcome" by orders of the Lieut. Governor—

1st—To whom were Naval Stores delivered at this Post and who granted receipts for them.

Answer—Naval Stores were never delivered by Mr Harrow at this Post, consequently he cannot tell who granted receipts for them.

2nd Question—What Naval Stores were delivered here in the course of last year for the Service of this Post?

Answer—He has Mr McKays receipt for naval Stores delivered at Detroit for the use of His Majesty's Vessels that might winter at this Post which he imagines were delivered here, he knows of no other Naval Stores for this Post last year. The Receipt is now on board the Welcome.

3rd Question—What became of the Box of Candles & Provisions carried away by Mr. Harrow, and how were they accounted for? How has Mr Harrow accounted for Three Barrels of Pork & three Barrels of Flour?

Answer—The Box of Candles he drew from the Store here for the use of the Vessel under his Command & thinks he gave a Receipt to Mr Askin, for it which was accordingly applied to the above use—The Pork & Flour he gave a Receipt to Mr Askin for, which Receipt he afterwards got from the Commissary at Detroit on accounting for the contents—signed by Messrs. Clowes, Brooke, & Phillips.

[B 97 2, p 413.]

No. 4.

You are to go with the Master Carpenter to examine the Shore between St. Igneas & the place where the Hay was cut, you are to attend him with the Batteau when he desires & to return with him when he does his Business.

You are not to attend to any thing but the services of this Post and to lose no time in the execution of the orders you receive.

Such Naval Stores as you want, you are to report to the Senior officer at Detroit.

You are to receive from Mr. Harrow the Sailor sent on Board the Welcome last year. (Signed) PATT SINCLAIR

Directed to Mr. McKay. Lt Govr.

[B 97 2, p. 415.]

No. 5.

30th July, 1780.

SIR—I am to request that you will always upon arrival at this Post, give your attention to the speedy unloading & ballasting your vessel—receiving on board such People or Effects as may be ordered on Board, and that you will not interfere with the other Vessels Employed on the Service of this Post, further than the Naval Œconomy of the Vessels may require.

You are now to remain on board your Vessel untill the Letters are made up & Papers sent you for the People going to Detroit. You will grant a Receipt for such as may be required & to hold yourself in readiness to sail.

(Signed) PATT SINCLAIR, Lt. Govr.

Directed To Lieut Harrow.

[B 97 2, p. 415.]

No. 6.

30th July, 1780.

SIR—You are to sign the Enclosed receipt upon delivery of the Persons mentioned in it, and you will report when you are in readiness to sail.

(Signed) PATT SINCLAIR, Lt. Govr.

Directed to Lt Harrow on H. M. S.

[B 97 2, p. 416.]

No. 7.

SIR—I now acquaint you in writing that I am ready and under way with His Majesty's Sloop Welcome under my command for Detroit. If you as Commandant of Michilimackinac have any orders for me, or any Letters &c to send on board, I will not go to Gun Shot from the Garrison for one Hour Hence, till which time I will be at hand to receive them.

(Signed) ALEXR HARROW.

Directed to Lt. Govr Sinclair.

[B 97 2, p, 416.]

No. 8.

30th July 1780.

Sir—You are not to go without Fort at your Peril untill the Pleasure of His Excellency General Haldimand is known at this place, such things as you may want from on board you are to mark on Paper & it will be sent for.

(Signed) Patt Sinclair

Directed to Lt Harrow. Lt. Govr.

[B 97 2, p. 417.]

SINCLAIR TO MCKAY

Michilimackinac 21st July 1780

Sir—You will examine the shore from Point St. Ignace to the two Rivers North East from that & look for Pine Timber very narrowly. You will try to get your Vessel into one of the Rivers, where the Hay was cut lately, or as near it as you can, if you cannot go in and you will bring a Load of Hay with you to Makina Island, which you will deliver to Serjt Gascoine to be put into the Church.

I desire that you may be very carefull of Time after you get the Hay on Board in particular and endeavour to get this Trip over as quick as possible. Even if you cannot examine all the Coast for this Time.

I am, Sir, &c &c

(Signed) Patt Sinclair

To Mr. McKay command. the Felicity. Lt Govr.

[B 97 2, p. 406.]

SINCLAIR TO GUTHRIE

31st July 1780

Mr. Guthrie—You are hereby authorized to take charge of the Sloop Wellcome from this Post to Detroit.

You are directed to land the Chief Markeash with his Band where he may require after you get into the river but not before.

You will land Baptiste Point de Sable at the Pine River.

The Dispatches & two Letters, herewith sent are to be carried to the officer commanding at Detroit without Delay, and you are not to Land Passengers or Goods but what belongs to the Persons above mentioned before your arrival at Detroit.

(Signed) Patt Sinclair

[B 97 2, p. 429.] Lt Govr.

M'KAY TO CAPT. GRANT

MICHILIMACKINAC July 29th 1780

DEAR FRIEND—I am Sorry to acquaint you of the yussage I geet hier from Leake Muschagan being heir plying from Mackeina to Makina Island. In a manner Doing nothing sometime with one Letter & at other times one man from the one Post to the other & other times loading of Hay, Sir, If I do not geet Relieved Verrey Soon I shall be obliged To leave the Vessel upon the Governor's hands, & there is not a Cabble Belonging to the Vessel that is fitt to be trusted to, one for want of good ground tackeling it be the means of Loosing the Vessel, the most part of the Running Rigging the Same, Sir, I was much Surprised that I have Rec'd no Letters or orders from you, but Sir, am in hopes that you will Let me know What to Do By the next Vessel there is such troubles heir, In one shape & another which I shall not mention that I cannot Tell What to Do, but, Sir, I hope that you will Relieve me out of them all. Sir, the Letters that I have Sent you This Spring will let your honor know what I have been about, Sir, I shall write no more at present But Remains Your most obedient & humble Servant.

NORMAND MCKAY,
Master of the Felicity.

[B 97 2, p. 411.]

CAPT. GRANT TO COL. BOLTON

DETROIT August 31st 1780

DEAR SIR—I have the honor of enclosing you letters received from Lieut Harrow yesterday. By the Sloops Angelica & Welcome arrived here from Mackinac relative to his confinement.

The want of good Cables for the Vessels in these Lakes may be of bad consequence this fall. Major De Peyster is to send the two Sloops back again with Provision.

I am, Dear Sir, with great respect your Humble Servant

ALEXR. GRANT

Colonel Bolton.
[B 97 2, p. 495.]

MICHILIMACKINAC 21st Augt. 1780.

SIR—I have just now received your Favour of the 9th inst by which I am heartily sorry to find you have not received the Letters I wrote you, the 31st ultimo, Informing you of the Reasons I am here confined, at least what passed between Govr Sinclair & me while the Wellcome was last here.

The original of the Enclosed with its Enclosure I (when sealed up) sent to the Lt. Governor to know if it might be sent—He after opening and reading the contents returned me for answer that it shall be sent—I have now on receipt of yours waited on him to know if he sent it, & if not to demand the Reason why not—he told me he sent it to the General, & that you would receive it, besides what I write in the enclosed I received a deal of abuse as an officer from him, which when I am on my Tryal shall be known.

As you will see the Propriety of having me removed from this (his Govt) to my Tryal, it being a place where by His officers I cannot be try'd, I hope you will either in your own name or in name of the Commdg officer of the Department I have the honor to belong to, apply to Governor Sinclair to have me sent to Detroit, or where I can be tryed by the proper officers, when I hope to make it appear that I have not in this Deviated from my Duty as an officer, & that the orders I have always received from my Superiors have been obey'd. I am, &c., &c.,

(Signed) Alexr Harrow.

N. B.—The morning before the Wellcome sail'd last from here, I sent the Log Book by Lieut Brook to the Govr. to acquaint him, that I thought it would be of service to the Boatswain in sailing the Welcome & if he chos'd, I would send it on board, he returned me the Book with answer that it should *not* go.

(Signed) A. H.

[B 97 2, p. 254.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

Dear Sir—I beg your attention to the Letter from Lt Clowess.

This officer has always done everything in his power to promote the Service. If his conduct on this occasion merits His Excellency's approbation, I shall ever acknowledge the favour of your Endeavours.

I am this moment informed that the troops are planted by the Lake side to intercept the Letters. Therefore I need not add much on the subject of this Post. I am ever yours

Patt Sinclair, Lt. Govr.

Endorsed:—From Lieut Govr. Sinclair to Capt. Brehm. By Mr. Kea, suppose 22nd August. Respecting Lt. Clowes giving up the command & enclosing his Letter to the Lt. Gov. of 20th August '80.

[B 97 2, p 479.]

Michilimackinac Augt. 23rd 1780.

Sir—I am under the necessity of stating to you my reasons for giving up the command of the Troops in this Garrison which devolved upon me at Major De Peysters departure from this Post.

Lieut Govr. Sinclair assumed the Authority in consequence of a Commission of Capt. in the 84th Regmt.

The resignation of that authority on my part has been complained of to a Field officer of the Regiment. If I have erred, it has proceeded from my wish to comply minutely with what was represented to me as acting in obedience to command.

The Circular Letter directed to Lieut Gov. Sinclair making him responsible for the safety of the Garrison removed every doubt, I had to his right of command which I have uniformly conformed to hitherto.

On the arrival of Captain Mompesson a dispute has commenced about the command of the Troops. Captain Mompesson was ordered by Lieut Govr. Sinclair on the day of his arrival to go to the Island to take the command of the Detachments of the Eighth, & Eighty fourth Regiments. On the day after he gave out a Regimental order acquainting the Troops that he conceived himself as their commanding officer and that they were to obey him as such.

He required of me on the Parade under no authority which he had shown, & under orders for the Island to read his own orders to the men, which I could not agree to, having those orders in my pocket, to read to the men, which took the command from myself. Captain Mompesson ordered the other officer to read the orders which he gave out, and hindered me from reading the Genl's orders, that which in my opinion, justified my giving up the Command to Lt. Govr Sinclair. Captain Mompesson has informed me that nothing prevented him from putting me under an arrest but the want of another officer in the Garrison, I shall be unhappy If I have acted improperly, I rest my conduct from the first, on this my dutiful representation to you as a Field officer, which I rely & pray for being transmitted to His Excellency General Haldimand.

I have the Honour, Sir, to be with respect, Your most obedient and most Humble Servant

G. Clowes.
Lieut.

[B 97 2, p. 481.]

Michilimackinac August 23d 1780

Sir—By the arrival of Captain Mompesson here, Major De Peyster sent a Petition sent to him signed the 2 Companies, which I find is forwarded to you, in which some complaints are preferred against me. I can only say, I am surprised at the manner it was conveyed from here. I will not enter into any vindication on that head, unless ordered by you, or in a publick manner than which nothing can be more agreeable to me than to have a light thrown on my general conduct which I flatter myself it will stand the test of. I have gone so far as to state some questions to the 2 Companies in Captain Mompesson's presence which I send to Major De Peyster with their answer, I suppose he will transmit them to you. Sir I cannot help observing from circumstances that I think it did not originate from the Soldiers.

I have this day wrote a Letter to the Lieut Governor requesting that he will inform His Excellency the Commander in Chief that I have made an appeal thro' you to him, in vindication of my giving up the Command of the Troops to Lieut Governor Sinclair, and I rest in confidence that you will do me the honour to lay it before His Excellency General Haldimand.

I have the honor to be Sir Your most obedt & Humble Servant.

G. Clowes.

[B 97 2, p. 483.]

COPY OF A LETTER FROM CAPTAIN MOMPESSON, 8TH REGMT

23rd August 1780.

To Lieut. Governor Sinclair:

Sir—I yesterday received your Letter in which you request I would inform you, when I should be prepared to return to Detroit.

I inform you, Sir, that I am always ready to go to any place where I may be ordered by Lieut Colonel Bolton.

I am, Sir, Your Humble Servant
(Signed) John Mompesson
Captn. in the King's Regt.

[B 97 2, p. 488.]

Michilimackinac August 23d 1780.

Sir—I am under the necessity to request the favor that you will do me the honor to inform His Excellency the Commander in Chief, that I have laid an appeal before him thro' the Field officer commanding the Regiment, in vindication of my conduct in having given up the command of the

Troops, in this Garrison to you, which command devolved to me on Major De Peyster's departure from this post.

I am, Sir, Your most obedient & Humble Servant
G. Clowes
Lieut Kings (or 8th) Regt.

From Lieut Clowes to Lieut Governor Sinclair 20th August.
[B 97 2, p. 487.]

SINCLAIR TO BREHM

Michilimackinac, 23rd August, 1780.

Dear Sir—At a time when every Effort was in practice to put the Garrison in a state of Security, Captain Mompesson of the 8th Regmt. arrived to dispute about command. I would willingly gratify him on command of this Fort, if the goods which are now confined in it were secured from chances of dispersing too far, and that the accounts of the year were made up. The Indian matters will soon admit of my going to the Island, but in the interim of time necessary for the above purposes, and before the General's order can arrive here, I have much to fear, if the disposition of the Troops can be influenced by Regimental attachment to lay aside my authority. The whole is a proceeding of the strangest nature. A Petition from 2 Companies was said to be sent complaining of hardships in Duty, want of men, Distress &c, and that the men who sent it were much concerned that I should have made use of expressions reflecting on Major De Peyster, such as Damm your Major De Peyster & Asken tricks.

It seems by a paper sent back that the men are given to understand that they have done very right. The paper sets forth that they may be mistaken in what concerns me, still they did right.

This unhappy affair has happened at a time when every Canadian was at hard work upon the Island. The Traders all in readiness to seize every opportunity of getting their goods out amongst the Indians, and many of them discontented that they cannot get them out to places where the Enemy are near. Besides all these considerations the Enemy are taking Post at Chigagoe. Now my dear Sir to prevent the worst consequences, I beg that you will procure a speedy removal of Disputes.

I am at this moment, as I was when I set out from Quebec ready to act in any one capacity His Excellency may order—when confined to a Civil Management I avoided a Dispute of this nature, and am ready to give way with pleasure to any authority the General may rest in another, but I cannot basely resign what he has placed in me.

The Arts practiced against the Services of the Post, whether meant against me or not, have been many.

Quarrelling with one Commissary has procured, me many Enemy's, I am afraid that some may be practised below & get to His Excellency's Ears. An Indian repeated me a Speech of Major de Peyster's, which I called the Interpreters attention to. He said that Major de Peyster informed him that I had lately seen the Great King—that my will was my own, but that for his part that he was obliged to obey His Father at Quebec. I hope that no such idea will be conceived of me as I have never given an order but in direct obedience to General Haldimand's pleasure, under whose immediate command, in every capacity, I have shewn attention to in every Instance. In that of drawing Money His Excellency has a striking proof. I would not draw for any as there were not printed Bills at the Post, which was the form prescribed by His Excellency the Commander in Chief—notwithstanding the importunity of some of the Traders, but not of the greater part of them. At last Mr. Mercer has left me no alternative but that of drawing money without printed Bills, or destroying the Credit of my Promissory notes issued for the purpose of carrying on the works here.

My Dear Brehm have I any reason for being alarmed at the beginning of His Excellency's letter dated 19th June, where the Service undertaken from this Post is marked to be agreeable to the Circular Letter forwarded to me. I was obliged to mark in my letter representing the preparations for that Service & in my letter reporting to His Excellency only the steps taken in consequence of it. That so serious a business as committing hostilities against a Crowned Head was done conformable to the exact letter of the order. In my first letter I expressed my concern, that point of time was not fixed upon for co-operating with the Brigadier, which could not have happened had the order originated with His Excellency who had a nearer view of the operations. On the whole I am ready to assert to you as a Friend and prove to the many that no Person can show more respect to his General than I do, let my fate be what it will.

Captain Mompresson this moment has wrote to me that he will now answer my letter of yesterday and informs me that he is ready to go to any Place where he may be ordered by Lieut Colonel Bolton.

This Gentleman on his first entering my Room said—You are Building a Fort there? Yes—When will it be finished? I cannot tell perhaps not in ten years—What is it good for then? to put the troops in security as soon as possible which, with your help, I hope to do in a few months—He then asked where he could put his Baggage for a few days—he did not like the House in the Fort—he would look at some of the Houses without and He pitched on the Interpreters—I told him he was very welcome but that Indian Spies were here every day—and one of them was here now who brought a Rebel and French Belt—He then chose the Fort for the Scene I have described to you.

I am Dear Brehm your affectionate friend

Patt Sinclair

[B 97 2, p. 489.]

LIEUT CLOWES TO MAJOR DE PEYSTER

Michilimackinac Augt 26th 1780

Sir—As the Lieut Governor is so Ill as to be confined to his Bed, he has requested of me, to assure you that nothing could give him greater pleasure than an Interview with you, to disavow what has been said to have escaped him.

I am Sir with due respect your most obedt Humble Servt

[B 97 2, 494] (Signed) G. Clowes, Lt.

MOMPESSON TO MATHEWS

Michilimackinac, 10th Septr., 1780.

Dear Mathews—I am afraid you will think me extremely troublesome, plagueing you with Letters, as I do lately, but as I know of no person that I can take that freedom with at Quebec but yourself, you'll be so kind as to excuse it.

The enclosed as you'll observe by the direction is for England, beg therefore you will be good enough to forward it by the first opportunity.

I am sorry to say to you, Mathews, my exceeding disagreeable situation makes me wish myself anywhere but here.

The Lieut. Governor's Illness still continues, in consequence of which Public Business were at a stand. Altho' I wrote you last, that I would do what was in my power so that ye public Business, one of course the King's service, should not suffer on that account, till on the second of this month he wrote a Letter to the merchants of this Post, acquainting them, that as far as his health would permit, he would transact business with them, and a deal more was mentioned. Upon their producing me that Letter, I immediately told them I was very glad to find the Governor's health so far reestablished as for him to take charge of & enter into public business.

However, next morning he was so exceedingly ill, as I heard no person would see him, upon which a number of the merchants and people who had business with him, came to me, as I had seen his own letter the day before, I could not think of taking upon me to interfere in affairs which was out of my Province, when on the sixth, on the morning, I received a letter from the Merchants and Traders of this place (a copy of which I enclose) signed by all of them (French & English) except two or three who are of no note, upwards of sixty, some of them the first merchants in Canada. I try all possible means to make things go on smooth, but alas, they don't turn out to my wish, in short I have a choice of Difficulties.

My compliments to Major Lernoult if he is with you.

I am with great regard your's sincerely.

JOHN MOMPESSON.

[B 97 2, p. 500.]

Petition of Merchants and Traders

SIR—The Lieut Governors violent Illness for this ten days past preventing him from paying any attention to the Public Business of this Post is particularly Detrimental to our Interests, Notwithstanding your goodness in tendering us your assistance in the matters most pressing.

The fear of the Governor's looking upon us as too Importunate is the reason that our Affairs suffer Greatly.

For it is a long time since a number of us are ready to go a wintering, and others to go to Montreal, we take the liberty to assure you, Sir, that our Retardment occasions us being at a very Extraordinary Expense, but if that was the only inconvenience we should not regard it as an object of consequence.

But the Scarcity of Provisions in the Post & the advanced Season of the Year, are Evils which require a speedy redress, and in which we beg Leave to assure you, Sir, there is not a moment to be lost.

In consequence of which, Sir, we Flatter ourselves from your goodness that you will be pleased, to take upon you the charge of the Public Business of this Post until such time as the Lieut Governor's health permitts him to resume his place, and we look upon it Our Duty as Subjects of His Britannic Majesty, to Advertize you that there is here at present a number of Indians who are upon their Departure for their respective Wintering Grounds and since the Lieut. Governor's Illness prevents him from seeing them we think it absolutely necessary that you should see them. In order that they may go from this contented, as their Good & Bad Conduct during the Winter Depends greatly on the reception they meet with from the Commanding officer at their Last Visit.

As you are almost an entire Stranger to this post it is Hardly possible that you can as yet have so particular a knowledge of it as you wou'd wish, for which reason, any of us, Sir, that you may think proper to name, will give you every Information possible which may tend to the public good.

& We have the honor to be, Sir, Your most obedient and Most Humble Servants.

Signed by Sixty Five Merchants & Traders.

Mackinac 5th Sept 1780.

[B 97 2, p. 497.]

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM MAJOR DE PEYSTER TO LIEUT. COL. BOLTON

dated at DETROIT September 8th 1780.

"I have received the Adjutants Letter of the 29th of August, and am of opinion that the several Letters should be laid before the Commander in Chief, in order to justify my conduct which in a manner stands accused.

"I have already sent you a copy of the Lieut. Governor's disavowal of the Expressions in the Soldiers Petitions, and make no doubt but he will explain away some passages in his Letter, which appear to me to be rudely couched. But in the mean time should he have wrote to the Commander in Chief, His Excellency may think unfavorably of me."

[B 97 2, p. 499.]

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM LIEUT. CLOWES TO MAJOR DE PEYSTER

dated MICHILIMACKINAC 13th Septr 1780.

"My good friend Lieut Governor Sinclair has done me the pleasure to inform me, that he has made an opening for a compleat accommodation of all misunderstandings, which I flatter myself you will be equally disposed to satisfy.

"I can assure you that he has often regretted the falling off of that friendship in which you parted."

Endorsed:—Extract of a letter from Lt. Clowes to Major de Peyster—15th Sep 180.

[B 97 2, p. 504.]

DE PEYSTER TO HALDIMAND

DETROIT 1st October 1780.

SIR—I hope your Excellency will Excuse my troubling you with a private Correspondence between Lt. Govr. Sinclair & myself, but he therein accuses me of things of a publick nature which I fear may have been misrepresented to Your Excellency—As he evidently has misconstrued my letter respecting the Secret Intelligence—in which I never advised what he call the unfortunate affair of the Illenois—in the manner it was executed—I pointed only at the Spanish Settlements as will appear by the Enclosed Extract.

In Your Excellencys letter of the 10th of August I also observe that I am suspected of being at variance with Captain Sinclair, at least it appears so to me—from the good advice Your Excellency is so kind to give me, after citing a Paragraph of Major Gamble's letter to him—I wish he had also continued to acquaint you, that Major Gamble, at the same time assured him that "Major De Peyster" by no means encouraged the reports brought against him to Detroit, but on the contrary, discouraged them as much as possible.

I am extremely sorry to trouble Your Excellency with these matters, but I think they may tend to give Your Excellency some private Satisfaction, to find that I have acted up to the character you so earnestly recommend in your letter—I write with that View only.

Major Gamble wrote from certain knowledge, & what induced him to write was the polite terms he has always heard me speak of Captain Sinclair, and was present when I checked the propogators of the first reports of his acting tyrannically at Michilimackinec. It therefore could not be pleasing to him to see one receive several letters couched in very extraordinary terms, all which I forwarded to Lieut Col. Bolton, seeing they were accompanied with a complaint from the Soldiers, where, amongst other matters, they accused Capt Sinclair of Speaking in a very slighting manner of their Major. I immediately sent him a copy of what the Soldiers had wrote, & assured him that I should be very uneasy till I heard from himself, concerning a matter of such a delicate nature.

My disputes with Capt. Sinclair are all chemerical, the meer produce of his own brain for as God is my Judge, I never thought of entering into any with him, my sole study having been mutually to promote the End of our being at the Posts. It being of too serious a nature to be trifled with.

With regard to the Post of St. Joseph's & Saguina, I have ever pursued the method of my Predecessors. The St. Joseph's Indians have a constant intercourse with this place, they come on Horse Back, in four or five days, sometimes in great numbers, where as they seldom, or ever, go to the Post of Michilimackinac, except when sent for, being unaccustomed to Canoes on the Lakes.

Michilimackinac, is however, the best situated to provide them with Traders.

If Captain Sinclair thinks I encroach upon his Government I will freely give him up one half of my Command, provided Your Excellency thinks it will be for the good of His Majesty's Service—which is the sole object I have in view. I have too mean an opinion of my abilities to offer to grasp at Power.

I have the honor to be with the greatest respect Sir Your Excellency's most Humble & obedt. Servant AR. S. DE PEYSTER.

His Excelly. General Haldimand.

[B 97 2, p. 510.]

SINCLAIR TO DE PEYSTER

SIR—The repeated violent stops, put to every explanation of some points, where connection on one hand & a return of civility to me on the other claimed rather attention, has carry'd matters farther than ever was wished for—one advice from yourself in a Letter which recommended that unfortunate service against the Illenois—viz, that of corresponding with Lord George Germain, with several subsequent circumstances all gave room to think, that I became the object of your Enmity. If claims or disputes on my part do not Justify such an idea in your own opinion, they shall all cease.

It remains with you to put a stop to every unsettled demand set up against me by Individuals upon no grounds that I could understand but that they were to be granted or complained of. I am desirous that all contention of every nature shall Cease & that the small remains of Health left to me may be employed as I at first, & always wished it to be, in the line of my Duty. You know the Difficulties in the way, I wish ever to be silent on the score of Blame—as sincerely as I wish that I had never come to this unhappy Quarter. What you do will I hope be compleat therefore I shall Close my own assurances for doing so on my part, with a request that you will mention what you wish to have done.

I am, Sir, Your most obedient and most humble Servant,

(Signed) PATRICK SINCLAIR.

Michl'c, 13th Sepr, 1780.

After writing the above I sent for Private Letters & found one from you, for "Lieut Govr Sinclair Superintendent." Believe me that the lowest Station in the Service of my Prince will not be irksome to me.

[B 97 2, p. 505.]

DE PEYSTER TO SINCLAIR

DETROIT Septr 17th 1780.

SIR—I am favored with your Letter of the 13th Inst. You must certainly have misunderstood me, to suppose from any subsequent circumstances that I could bear you the least Enmity—The Letter was wrote soon after we parted—I have not yet forgot the terms we parted on—If by saying you would perhaps be able to give Lord George Germain a good account of the Spaniards, you think I meant an other than that he might hear through the General that you had destroyed the Settlement of St Louis—you certainly prevented [perverted] my meaning. The Wellcome will before this have brought you an answer to the letter you desired Lt Clowes to write me, & I should be sorry to hear any more on that head (I am satisfied) I must however trouble you for an explanation for some passages in your Letter. "It remains with you to put a stop to every unsettled demand set up against me by individuals upon no ground that I could understand but that they were to be granted or Complained of. What you do will I hope be compleat, therefore shall close my assurances of doing so on my part, with a request that you will mention what you wish to have done."

I am equally at a loss to know why Mr. Wm Grant has sent me the three Bonds of Askins Lyons & Bostwick.

You are pleased to consult me with regard to sending two canoes more to St. Josephs. I shall venture my opinion so far as to say that unless the Pottowetamies have Traders amongst them they will in time become quite estranged or else become a great Burthen to Government at this Post.

Two hundred of them have just left this, after requesting that I would write to you to allow them Traders. I have sent LeClerc amongst them as armourer & they have promised me to bring in Mayett & his adherents who they say poison their Ears. I sent them off Empty handed till this Service is performed.

I am, Sir Your Humble & obedt Servant
(Signed) AR. S. DEPEYSTER

Lt Govr Sinclair
[B 97 2, p. 507.]

SINCLAIR TO DE PEYSTER

SIR—As to the Bonds sent you by Mr. Wm. Grant I have no desire to hear of them again.

They concern one of the Individuals whose Claims, when you have leisure to mention them, with the others, shall be satisfied as far as I can.

As I do not write at ease, I cannot be very explicit on any subject.

I am, Sir, your most obedt. humble Servt.

(Signed) PATT SINCLAIR.

27th Sepr. 1780.

Query by Major De Peyster.

What can I in any respect have to do with the claims of individuals upon Capt. Sinclair?

I surely have accounts enough to settle at Detroit without interfering with those of Michilimackinac. A. S. D. P.

[B 97 2, p 509.]

SINCLAIR TO DE PEYSTER

SIR—As I before assured you, it is my desire and wish be on good terms with you & to satisfy all in my power those who I have had unfortunate dispute with.

The matters which brought them on will be, I hope, forgot, by you and all I am heartily sorry for them and am Sir,

Your most obedient and most humble Servt.

(Signed) PATT SINCLAIR.

Michilc. 15th. Octr 1780. Lt. Govr.

The General has ordered Mr. Barthe to go to St. Mary's if he chooses and his vessel is sent to accommodate Him.

[B 97 2, p. 531.]

PAPERS CONCERNING SAMUEL ROBERTSON

MICHILIMACKINAC 1780.

Samuel Robertson confined by Lieut Governor Sinclair, For tampering with an Indian hired to carry a Letter on His Majesty's Service to St.

Mary's, which Letter was found on the day after in the Pocket of a Sailor who perished in the Ice, bringing it back to Michilimackinac without a Pass.

For disobedience of orders, While in the Charge of Inspecting the King's work, which charge he voluntarily accepted of, and continued in after being repeatedly warned against listening to the evil Council of his connection, the said Samuel Robertson having been offered the leave of resigning said charge.

For an attempt to retard and frustrate a Part of the King's Service for this year.

For receiving information relative to Indians & connected with commerce without communicating that information to the Superintendent.

[B 97 2, p. 396.]

Sir—The Thoughts of Confinement made me to apply to you some time past for Relife, & the late Disorder it caused to a Person with my Infant at her Brest, the nearness of their attachments to me in that situation, Induced me to apply to the Gentlemen of the Committee to Represent the Same with its Circumstances to the Lieut Governor, for which I am greatly obliged to them as if they had succeeded.

This urging not from any motive to evade the taste of justice there is nothing I urst more for, it was circumstances which seemed to threaten me with the loss of that person which no Justice in this world could a Recompensed me for, If the Lieut Governor will be pleased to acquaint you if security will be taken for my appearance at Montreal or elsewhere & if so with a coppey thereof, I will endeavour to provide such, you acquainting me of this Request, I shall take as a singular favour.

I am, Sir, Your Humble Prisoner,

Samuel Robertson.

To Lieut George Clowes Commd a Detachment King's (or 8th) Regt. Michilimackinac 27th Aprill 1780.

[B 97 1, p 321.]

Sir—I received your Favour, with the verrey extraordinary terms pointed outt for being permitted to Baill, which I never mean to apply for on such terms, how far I have said truth will one day appear I can onley Remains to me part of my life as a moment of power.

I am, Sir, Your Humble Prisoner,

Samuel Robertson.

Lt Clowes commdg. a Detachment Kings (or 8th) Regt Misshilmaki 27th.

[B 97 2, p. 579.]

Lieut Governor Sinclair of Michilimackinac:

Sir—I mentioned to Lieut Clowes yesterday what urged me to apply for relife some time past, soliciting him to Represent to you that I would yet endeavour to procure security if it had been such as I could a possibly conform'd to.

I can only now think that you are prejudiced against me even beyond the line of Justice in collecting all my incorrect words to tend to that purpose. I may have many faults although not dishonest is verry sorrey that my master treats them in such a harsh manner for their amendment, which I Reflect on the Sincerity of my Endeavors to perform the Task assigned to me—being always willing & ready to Risque my life in serving you.

I am Sir With every Respect Your most humble obedt Servt.

Samuel Robertson.

28th April 1780.

[B 97 2, p. 325.]

Sir—As soon as I received your orders I Told Mr. Samuel Robertson before his Confinement, that he was permitted to give Bond for his appearance in any part of the Province where His Excellency General Haldimand might reside at.

I am with Respect Sir Your most obedt Humble Servant

Christian Burgy

Noty. Public.

Michilimackinac April 28th 1780.

[B 97 2, p. 394.]

Know all men by these Presents:

That We, Joseph Frobisher & William Grant, Merchants of Montreal, are held & firmly bound in the Full & Just Sum of Ten Thousand Pounds Quebec Currency, to be paid unto the Exchequer of His Majesty King George the third, His Heirs, Executors, administrators & assigns to which payment well & truly, to be made and done, we bind ourselves, our Heirs, Executors, administrators & assigners firmly by these Presents, sealed with our seal and dated at Michilimackinac the Third day of July, in the Twentieth year of our Lord George the Third, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France & Ireland, King Defender of the Faith & so forth—& in the year of our Lord One Thousand, Seven Hundred & Eighty.

The conditions of this obligation is such, that if the above Boundens Jos. Frobisher & William Grant, Their Heirs, Executors or administrators do well and truly pay, or cause to be paid unto the above Exchequer of His Majesty King George the Third—His Executors, administrators, or assigners, the full sum of Five Thousand Pounds, Quebec Currency, in case of nonperformance for the appearance of Samuel Robertson (Death excepted) at Quebec, or any other part of the Province where His Excellency General Fredk. Haldimand Governor & Commander in Chief thereof may be & there to wait His Excellency's Pleasure, & that he will proceed as soon as possible by the Grand River without Delay, and that during his stay at Michilimackinac & upon his journey as well as during his abode in the Province. He will not do or say anything to any person or Persons whatever which may tend to Disturb the Peace of any Part of the Province endanger the Persons or Property of His Majesty's Subjects therein,

Then this obligation to be void or else to remain in full force.

The within obligation made in same double of same Tenor & date, one of them fulfilled, the other to be void & of none effect.

Joseph Frobisher [Seal.]
William Grant [Seal.]

Hypolite, desoriniez temoin G. C. Otte, temoin
[B 97 2, p. 379.]

Michilimackinac, 4th June, 1780.

Sir—As no vessel is yet arrived from Detroit, I seize this opportunity to inform you from a request of the Lieut. Governor I have ordered Sergt. Phillips & Private McDonald & Creige on command towards the Mississippi, the former in Quality of Lieut., the others as Sergeants. I make no doubt but before this they have arrived at their destination with success—for particulars I refer you to the Lt. Governor.

A commissioned officer is likewise requested to escort Samuel Robertson a prisoner to Detroit—Lieut Mercer is in readiness for that Duty.

We have been so much employed in putting our Fort in as good a state as we can, we have not had much leisure for drilling this season.

I have the pleasure to inform you the Garrison is in good health and our men in general behave exceedingly well. I will forward the Return and what else relates to the Detachment to Major De Peyster.

I have the honour to be, Sir, your most obedt humble servt.

G. Clowes.

From Lieut. Clowes to Lieut. Colonel Bolton, 3d June.
[B 97 2, p. 360.]

Quebec, 21st August, 1780.

Sir—I have to acquaint you that Mr. Samuel Robertson has appeared before me, in consequence of his obligation to you for that Purpose. Having brought his Family to Montreal. I have given him permission to return there untill such Time as He shall be called upon to answer the charge against Him.

I enclose for your Perusal a Copy of His Representation of his Case, laid before me on his arrival.

I should imagine it will be impossible to bring Him to a Trial unattended with the Inconvenience intimated in my last Letter to you upon that subject.

I am, Sir, &c &c,

(Signed) FRED. HALDIMAND.

Lieut Govr Sinclair.
[B 97 2, p. 457.]

As I now appear before your Excellency having been accused of Crimes by Lieut Governor Sinclair, which attacks my Character, has distressed my Family, & will prejudice me with the Publick. In Justice to all those I humbly Beg that Your Excellency will be pleased to hear my Complaints & grant me redress.

I have been bred to the Seafaring business from my Youth, was engaged in 1774 By Messrs. Fine & Ellice to go up to Detroit & command a Small Vessel belonging to Mr. John Askin at Michilimackinac in whose service I continued sailing from thence to Detroit & Niagara until such time as orders forbidding private vessels to navigate the Lakes & to the Posts. At that time I owned part of two small Vessels which I had built with Mr Askin & Mr Barthe at St Mary's, knowing that those orders would be detrimental to me as an Individual, having only those Vessels to subsist me and Family, which for the most part was detained or laid aside, I therefore purchased from Mr Barthe at St Mary's part of the Fort Buildings Store and Trade there, which Buildings he had erected at his own private expence, with permission from Major De Peyster & approved of by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief at that time, and wherein him and his Clerk lived peaceably until last winter when Lieutenant Gov. Sinclair ordered the Pickets of the Fort to be cut down, which alarmed the Clerk left there, that he wrote me a letter beging that if the Lieut. Governor would suffer the Pickets behind the house to stand as the Indians had already broke the windows, and in the Spring they would no doubt be more insolent. This letter I sent to the Lieut. Governor with a letter to the Clerk desiring him to have no doubts about the Indians but doo as he was ordered. I was then upon Michilimackinac Island & had been there since the 13th of Nov'r, appointed by Lieut. Gov'r Sinclair to Build a Wharf & inspect the workmen upon the Island for which he promised to pay me & aney of my men which the assistant Engineers might think proper to employ and also anything I should advance for the Service with the advantage of selling necessaries to the Workmen on the Island with these promises I undertook to doo the utmost of my power to execute his orders, & compleat the work. The inconvenience of getting lodgers at that severe season, the hardships I underwent before the Houses could be Built, the price of work I undertook with the Workmen to doo it with, and in the manner it was done, may testify my sincerity for the Service. The Lieut. Governor came on the Island the 16th of March, gave his approbation to everything that was done there, he also wrote me some time before, that one of my small vessels would be wanting in the Spring for some particular Service, & would be glad as I had represented to him that the small vessel on Lake Superior was in best order, that she might be got down as early as possible, this he took occasion to mention when on the island, and that I should write my letters, as soon as possible, & send them over to him, & desire my people there to get her down as early as possible and send her to Michilimackinac. The same evening that the Lieut. Gov'r left the Island an indian arrived, at the house on his way to Michilimackinac, and told me that he lived near St Mary's with his Family, he remained in the house that night, in the morning I wrote a line to the Lieut. Governor with him, acquainting him that I thought the indean would be a good opportunity to send the letters to St Mary's. The same morning Captain Makey received a letter from the Lieut. Governor desiring him to go or send Michilimackinac to receive Cordage, Pitch and Materials for his Vessel—by whom I sent my letters to the Lieut. Governor with the letters for St Mary's inclosed, with that letter which Geoffrey our Clerk had wrote concerning the Fort & my answer to him all open—But before Captain Makey arrived at Michilimackinac the Lieut. Governor had Dispatched the indean with his letters, which indean came into the House in the afternoon as I supposed to give me a letter, or take my letters for St Mary's—But upon my enquiry he told me he had no letters, neither was he going to St Mary's. This I supposed was to deceive me to receive more hire, I promised that if he would take my letters to St Mary's that I would pay him, upon which he agreed. I immediately wrote as nearly as I could remember letters the same as those I hade sent to be forwarded by the Lieut. Governor, & gave them to the indean who promised to deliver them at St. Mary's—I told Mr Lewison Barthe as he understood the language to enquire of the indean whether he had not deceived me telling me that he had no letters, the indean told him that he was drunk when he left Michilimackinac and did not remember whether he received a letter or not—but if he did it was lost—next morning I wrote the Lieut. Governor whate the indean had said, and also that I sent my letters with him. The same day Captain Mackay with whom I sent my letters to the Governor took with him his Cabbin Boy, John Taylor, on their way to Michilimackinac Capt. Mackey sent the Boy back to the vessel for a memorandum he hade forgot Relative to the Rigging that was wanting, the Boy returning again to Michilimackinac found the letter that the indean had lost and put it in his pocket, but drawing towards evening the Boy got fatigued and lay down upon the ice and perished, next morning was found by Kays going to the island and carried him back to Michilimackinac & that letter which the indean lost found in his pockett, after the Coroner of inquest had cleared up this matter & settled in whate manner the letter had been lost & found. Some days after I was again called for Sworn by Matthew Lessey to answer Questions—which was sent by the Lieut Governor, the manner of John Taylors leaving the island & my affairs at St Mary's & how he came to leave the Island without a Pass. Next morning I was sent for at the Notary Public & jointe Baile Demanded of me with Louison Barthe 2000 £ Halifax to leave Michilimackinac as early as the Season would permit by the way of the Grand River & appear before Your Excellency I sent word by Mr. Lessey that Baile would be given for me singly to go by the way of Detroit, this not being granted I was ordered into the Guard House, no person being permitted to see me there only the Military and without giving me any reasons for this treatment—upon my Demanding the Reasons the Lieut Governor wrote out several crimes against me. But that Lieut Clowes should choose six men for the Crown which could not be convenient to summon on a fuller trial & that I should choose six men which might be summoned on a fuller trial as evidence to invalidate or lay those charges aside. As I did not know in what manner the Lieut. Governor meant to support those Charges he laid against me, I wrote that he might choose any twelve men to Decide the same & I should abide thereby, accordingly twelve men was appointed & eight of my letters which I had wrote the Lieut Governor in the course of the Winter was sent to the foreman of the Jury to support the charges he laid against me, by taking Sentences out of each letter, which changed their meaning, from the general contents was his meaning to Deceive them, however the men was to honest to find me guilty upon such slight accusations therefore cleared this matter up to the Lieut Governor who said it was not his intentions to put me on a trial but only to hear the evidence I should produce to lay those charges aside, therefore what they had done was wrong, & I was sent back to the Guard House, such circumstances as those caused a dangerous disorder to my wife, her not being permitted to see me, only over the Pickets before the Guard House, this induced me to write to the General Store Managers to offer security for me which was objected to. I then wrote Lt. Clowes to enquire at the Lt. Governor if Bail would be taken for my appearance at Quebec, & if so with the conditions I would doo my endeavour to provide such, upon which the Lieut Governor wrote a verrey insulting Certificate, sent it to me by Lt. Clowes, concerning the disorder occasioned to my wife by my confinement, and after such Certificate would be signed, offers of Bail would be sent me—The Coppeys of those letters and Certificate I shall produce if Your Excellency think it necessary—all this while I was confined my Property which I left a Michilimackinac island was left to the Discretions of every Individual & even my Bed, Household Furniture, was used in common, the Provisions I had there for my Private Family with Liquor, & several other articles, which I had no account of, the whole being issued and given to the Soldiers & others upon the island, & having no good account or Certificate there for 623 lbs of Flour which I had there was ordered over to Mishlimakna & by the Lieut Govr's orders put into the Kings store—no Certificate, or Receipt could I obtain therefor, only the Lieut Govr. wrote that it was forfeited, a quantity of Plank, Boards & the frames for two Houses upon Mishlimakna island, part of which was taken for the Church there, for which we have not received the least recompense, or Certificate, a Raft of Planks, Boards, saw Logs upon the island of Bois Blanc partly taken for the indean Buildings there, with a Raff of Cedar picketts taken & carried on the island, all which I have not Received a Receipt or Certificate, also in the month of March when I was in Prison, the Lieut. Govr sent Angus McDonald to St Mary's to bring in our Clerk, Merchandise & every person belonging to us there, which at so early a season lost us the whole Expenses During the winter with all the credits given Indeans with ten head of cattle a parcell of hogs & various Farming utensils to a considerable amount without any person to take care of them, neither could we procure Certificates or Receipts for such onley from our owen Clerk, and upon the arravel of our Merchandise from St. Marey's to Michilimackinac they were seized by a Captain of Militia, I supposed by the Lieut Governors orders & lock'd up in a Vault, nor could I procure a Receipt or Certificate thereof, our small vessels, being two of them employ'd by the General Store Managers, neither could we obtain Receipts or Certificates for such, nor for the other which is employed by the Lieut Governor. The Sails Rigging of a small Vessel I had upon Michilimackinac Island the greatest part taken & cutt up for the others which rendered her useless to me and many other articles taken which I had not account of. Mr. Barthe with whom I was connected in Commerce went down to Detroit to bring up his Family and settle at St. Mary's, the place where he had taken so much pains and costs to make it convenient for that purpose, upon his arravel in the Spring at Michilimackinac, the Lieut Govr. ordered him imieadelty to settle his Business & Return to Detroit, not being permitted to go to St Mary's, so that everything there became lost, even Debts Due us by Traders, passing and repassing that place to a considerable amount is now lost. The whole of our Property in that Country moderately estimated by Inventrys taken thereof at between 6 & 7000 £ N. Y. C. has been put into the possession of others, we having no Receipts or surety thereof, as also my accounts against Government for my owen men and self employed on the Island, with many articles I furnished there for the service, with what I advanced to the Soldiers and others upon the island during the winter. After I had been about 40 days confined in the Guard House, a proposal was made to Lieut Mercer of the King's Regm't to give his promise in writing to Deliver me at Detroit to Major Depeyster, & that I should not aproach nearer the fort than the Garden Picketts, about 100 yards, nor go farther off than the Chippawa Bay, about 700 yards, nor upon no pretence put my foot in a cano or Bató, & that I should go to Detroit with the first vessel. This Rules I consented to, & Lieut Mercer give his promise accordingly, & in this situation I continued in about two months, until it happened that Mr. McKee, one of the Captains of Militia, give Lieut Mercer some affront, for which I believe he took present satisfaction, and the same evening was put under arrest, & next morning before I was oute of Bed the Sergt of the Guard came with an order to take me to the Guard House, untill I should find Baile to appear before your Excellency, which was the same day given, & I was again Relieved, & I imieadetly hired a cano & men to take me down, But the Lieut Governor could not give me a Pass untill the Kings cano's was gon of first, & after that my accounts with Government should be settled, which I sent to Lt. Clowes, who send them to the Lieut Governor, by whom the greatest part was objected. So that out of £3000 N. Y. C. he admitted of 742, and that after I had employed a writter four days making three of four different forms every day which was always wrong, & at the end of four days when that £742 got Right statted, I was told by Lt. Clowes, that it was inconvenient to draw Bills untill Mr. St. Germain Returned from Quebec. But if I would give a Receipt in full of all Demands, the Lt Governor would certify that that account was just, otherwise I could not be paid. Seeing no appearance of coming to a period upon those terms, & keeping a cano, men, and my family at a great expense, I applyed once more for a Pass, which was granted, and in this manner did I leave that country whence I had been settled and lived near six years with Industry & Honesty, payed every person, but could not procure one shilling of my owen property when leaving it, neither could I pass by Detroit to get certificates from those who has knowen me sinc I have been in this country. I hope your Excellency will be pleased the whole of whatt I have Relatted into consideration, & that the Persons who can testify thereto may be ordered to appear if necessary, and also those men which was appointed to examine into the charges laide against me by the Lieut. Governor.

I am your Excellency's Devoted servant,

Samuel Robertson.

To His Excellency Frederic Haldimand, General of His Majesty's forces in Canada, Governor of Quebec & the Provinces therein Depending, &c., &c.

[B 97 2, p. 550.]

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM MR. BENJAMIN LYONS

Michilimackinac, 27th of December, 1780.

I would inform you that on the 20th of October last, Lieut Governor Sinclair was pleased to send for me, and when I came into his House, he received me very kindly, and told me he was very sorry that he ever had any falling out with my Friend Askins & beged of me as a favour to write you on the matter, that he could never be easy till he should have it in his power to serve you and Captain Robertson, he expressed this several times, & said it concerned him so much, that he was many times not properly at himself on that account.

[B 97 2, p. 549.]

SINCLAIR TO HALDIMAND

Sir—My endeavour shall be rather to work a change in Your Excellency's opinion than in vindication of my own Conduct, which, however blameable, has not been altogether as I imagine it represented.

I have the Honour to be, Sir, with respect Your Excellency's most obedient and most humble Servant,

Patt Sinclair, Lt. Govr.

Michilimackinac, 16th Novr., 1780.

[B 97 2, p. 532.]

HALDIMAND TO DE PEYSTER

Quebec 6th January 1781.

Sir—I have received your Letter of the 1st October covering copies of Letters between you & Lieut. Govr. Sinclair.

It gives me infinite pleasure to find from your Declaration & Capt. Sinclair's Letter of the 16th ult. to you, that a misunderstanding, from which discontent to Individuals, and Prejudice to the King's Service alone could result, is amicably terminated—As Occurances of that nature Cannot but be very disagreeable to me. I happy in being spared the pain of investigating them—at the same time, I have as Little doubt that the Intentions of both parties would bear the nicest Scrutiny, as of the Sincerity of your Mutual Professions, and joint endeavours to promote the King's Service and the Happiness of his Subjects under your Commands. I am &c

Major De Peyster. (Signed) FREDERICK HALDIMAND.

Endorsed: (Copy) 1781 To Major De Peyster Commanding at Detroit of the 6th January.

[B 123, p. 2.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC 6th January 1781.

SIR—I have Received your Letter of the 16th Novr, wherein you say That "Your Endeavours shall be rather to work a change in my opinion than in vindication of your conduct." I am really at a loss to understand you, never having declared an opinion to your Prejudice, on the contrary, I have, upon all occasions, expressed to you my approbation of your conduct, since you have commanded at Michilimackinac, and have given you the fullest powers that confidence would dictate, particularly in my Letter by your last Express, which I was happy to hear had removed all difficulties at your Post. I had likewise the pleasure to hear from Major De Peyster in consequence of Letters written him upon that subject, that amity is re-established between you which (so far from having Received Reports from that Quarter to your disadvantage) I must assure you, was the first Intimation I ever had from him that a misunderstanding had existed.

Your several Letters of advice dated the 6th October are received, and Bills have been presented to the amount of £61,306,, 10,,11 New York Curry. which I have accepted.

A memorial has lately been Laid before me, accompanied by Solicitations to Enlarge one Cardinal upon Bail, whom you sent Prisoner from Michilimackinac—having nothing to produce against him I could not well detain him in Prisn untill I might expect to hear from you in the Spring—I have therefore taken sufficient security for his remaining in the Town of Montreal and appearance when called upon to answer to the Charges you may have against him, which you will please to furnish me with as soon as possible to prevent the Clamour of the Merchants, too much inclined to it.

I am &c &c

(Signed) FRED HALDIMAND.

Lieut Governor Sinclair.
[B 98, p. 1.]

SINCLAIR TO MATHEWS

ISLAND OF MICHILIMACKINAC 23d February 1781.

SIR—Last Autumn a Party from the Illinois embodied themselves under the Conduct of a Baptiste Hamelin for the purpose of plundering the Post of St. Joseph's, in which they at first succeeded. By the good conduct of Monsieur Campion the Pottowattamies were raised—The pursued overtook and defeated them at the Rivere de Chemin & recovered their Merchandise, tho' the loss is very considerable to the Traders.

One Half Bastion and part of the Curtain of the Fort erecting here is carrying on under Captain Mompessons directions with all the industry the Season can admit.

The timber nearest, and of course in our situation the most convenient is of that kind that will not last above a few years necessity could bring into use.

I am Sir, your most obedient and humble Servant

PATT SINCLAIR,
Lt. Govr.

Captain Mathews, Secretary.
[B 98, p. 9.]

HALDIMAND TO SINCLAIR

QUEBEC 14th April 1781.

SIR—Altho' it is probable you may hear from me, by way of the Grand River before you will receive this Letter—Yet the several People you have sent from Michilimackinac in the Characters of Delinquents are become so clamorous, either to be released from their Bails, or to be brought to Trial, that I cannot let slip any opportunity to acquaint you therewith, and to desire that you will lose no time in furnishing me with the materials necessary to their Prosecution that the Law may determine thereon.

I am informed that the two small vessels with you have met with some Damage in the course of the Winter—If you have the means of repairing them at Michilimackinac, I am persuaded no time will be lost in doing it, or if necessary you will send them to Detroit for that purpose.

I am, Sir, &c.,
(Signed) Fred Haldimand.

Lieut Governor Sinclair.
[B 98, p. 20.]

MAJ. DE PEYSTER TO GEN. POWELL

Detroit 12th May 1781.

Sir—I am sorry to accquaint you, that notwithstanding the Commander in Chief's desire to have the disputes of Michilimackinac amicably settled, and the joint endeavors of the late Lt. Col Bolton and myself to accomplish His Excellency's wishes, they are like to become more serious than ever. The enclosed Extracts from Captain Mompesson's letter to me, will serve to give you some insight into matters, I think it my Duty to transmit to you, and having it in my power to remedy them, and unwilling to have fruitless altercation with Lieut Govr Sinclair, which probably would be the case should I write to him on the subject. You are sensible, Sir, that I have no Captain here, (except Captain Bird who is engineer) to relieve Captain Mompesson. It is therefore my earnest request & the wishes of the officers to have the Michilimackinac Detachment relieved by some other Corps, which may be more agreeable to the Lieut Governor, otherwise a part of the King's Regiment which have hitherto had the approbation of their Superiors, may forfeit their good name, which undoubtedly must be the case where proper discipline and Regimental Œconomy cannot be kept up by the officer commanding them, as represented by Captain Mompesson.

I have the honor &c
(Signed) A. S. De Peyster.

Genl Powell.
[B 98, p. 37.]

Extracts of a letter from Captain Mompesson dated Michilimackinac Island 30th April 1781.

Major De Peyster—"The 21st of March Lieut Gov. Sinclair thought proper to make known his authority as Lieut Governor & Commandant, the Enclosed marked No. 1, is a Copy of what was nailed upon the Church, which surprized every Person as he has been in possession of it near six months."

(The No 1 referred to, are the General orders of Sept 11th 1780 respecting the Lieut Governors of the Posts in Canada.)

He had let me go on with the command of the Troops & by his particular request the management of many other matters, which I would never have undertaken had he not pressed me to it."

"It seems that the Lieut Governor had promised Hipworth to get him his Discharge and settle him here, Hipworth was one evening rather insolent to me, in not doing what I ordered him, being a little in Liquor at the time. I went to reprimand him for his insolent language and not doing as I had ordered him, when up with his fist and gave me a Blow and told me he was as good a man as I was"—about an Hour after because He was confined, I received a note from the Lieut Governor, hoping I would excuse Hipworth, at the same time palliating his Crime. I thought it a too serious affair to look over immediately, therefore could not think of it. Some days elapsed when I received a Letter from the Lieut Governor respecting Hipworth, the most unmilitary and ungenteel I ever saw, quite a threatening one, to intimidate me to release the man. I was a little piqued at such treatment and returned as I thought (and the Gentlemen) a suitable answer, some time after the Lieut. Governor promulgates his authority for commanding, & next day orders a Garrison Court Martial to try all Prisoners whose crimes do not come under the Cognizance of a General Court Martial. No Person being Prisoner but Hipworth we then saw his Drift.

Serjeant Langdon He has appointed to deliver out his orders, & Phillips is again an Indian officer. Langdon has recommended Patterson of the General's Company to attend the Hospital, which recommendation the Lieut Governor has taken without my being acquainted about it. I don't blame Langdon much, as the Lieut Governor asked him to pitch upon any Person of the Two Companies. Serjeant Dodymead arrived here a few days ago from the old Fort, and two days after his arrival Lieut Governor Sinclair sent word to him by a Carpenter (which are generally the kind of Messengers he employs) that he was excused doing duty.

I cannot possibly be Responsible for the Regimental Œconomy and discipline of the two Companies under my immediate command since deprived of three Serjeants out of four, and other means used to thwart me in my authority over the Detachment.

You will judge of the propriety of the Enclosed order of Lieut Govr Sinclair, mark'd No 2 for Serjeant Langdon.

Good God, Sir, you can have no Idea how matters go on here, neither is it possible for me to describe it with that perspicuity that I could wish. I only mention the above occurences out of many more of the sort, as you may not be surprised in case you should here in a small course of time, of many more extraordinary arrising, as we have a presentment of something very disagreeable happening here, sorry I am to say it, no Gentleman was ever more guilty of grater inconsistencies than the Gentleman in Question. This is the sentiments of every officer and every Private Person on the Island, so that you must not imagine that what I have related is merely from my own prejudice."

[B 98, p. 30.]

28th April 1781.

Both Drummers are to attend him to-morrow. He is first to order the Beat for the Alarm post. As soon as the officers have received the mens arms & accoutrements, which they will report to Serjeant Landon on the Field, He will then order the General to be Beat, and the whole to form on the upper ground within the Works, next the Signal for regaining their former ground or their Alarm Post, then to Dismiss, endeavour not to keep them under arms more than one Hour on account of their Gardens.

Endorsed: No 2 inclosed in Captain Mompesson's letter to M. De Peyster of 30th April 1781.

[B 98, p. 29.]

GEN. POWELL TO GEN. HALDIMAND

NIAGARA May 20th 1781.

SIR—When I reported to Your Excellency last fall that the disputes at Michilimackinac were happily terminated, I was in hopes you would not have been troubled any more upon that subject, but I am sorry I am under the disagreeable necessity, from the very serious light in which Major de Peyster views the footing Lieutenant Governor Sinclair & Captain Mompesson are now upon, to lay before you the Major's letter, with Extracts from Captain Mompesson &c. I shall write to the Lieut. Governor upon it, tho' I can fancy anything I can say will avail very little, and that it will be necessary for Your Excellency again to interpose your Authority.

It is true only one side of the story appears and that is rather a partial representation, as Captain Mompesson has not sent a copy of the Letter, he so much complains of.

I do not propose without your approbation sending the Lieut General a copy of Captain Mompesson's letter, as it might widen the breach and be productive of disagreeable consequences.

I find from Governor Sinclairs and Lieutenant Harrows letters transmitted to me by Captain Grant, that they are otherwise upon very bad terms, but I do not trouble your Excellency with the particulars, as I do not forsee any bad consequences can attend it.

I have the honor to be with great respect Sir Your Excellency's most obedient & most humble Servant

Hy. Watson Powell

His Excellency General Haldimand.

[B 98, p. 44.]

LETTERS OF GEN. HALDIMAND TO MAJOR DE PEYSTER, COMMANDANT AT DETROIT

Quebec 30th August 1779.

Sir—From Captain Lernoult you will receive my instructions and every information relative to the inspection and management of the Publick Accounts of the different departments under your Command at Detroit which I have to desire you will consider as a very material part of your duty to inspect into in the minutest manner, studying, by every possible means to contract and diminish as far as may by consistent with the good of the service the expences incurred in said Department.

I have thought proper to direct that in future, you may draw Bills upon me for the different amounts observing the regulations you will receive for that purpose, and transmit them with the Accounts to Lt. Colo. Bolton who will forward them to me.

Lieut Governor Hamilton not having had Authority to empower him to appoint a Town Major at Detroit Mr McLeod cannot be admitted as such, there being no establishment of the Kind for the Upper post, which is the only reason for my discontinuing Mr McLeod's of whom I have had a favorable character. (Signed) F. H.

[B 96 1, p. 107.]

QUEBEC 12th February 1780.

Major De Peyster:

SIR—I have received your Letters of 1st Oct., 1st and 20th November and have honoured your last Bill from Michilimackinac. The Expenses attending the Indian department at that Post this last year has been enormous I shall be glad to be more fully informed what they have been owing to, & on what particular service and account they have been incurred.

I hope you have cautioned Governor Sinclair to moderate as much as possible the expenses of that Department.

Your account of the success of the Scout upon the Ohio, together with the Papers that were taken have been forwarded to me by even Colonel Bolton—I hope that stroke will have a good effect with those Indians whose affections seem declining—much depends upon their steadiness at this interesting Period, & I am persuaded that nothing in your Power to preserve their attachment will be wanting.

I very much approve your plan of employing the Wabash Indians, and hope they will succeed in preventing Mr Clark from establishing himself at or near the Falls of the Ohio—otherwise the Indian Country will be open to their continual Incursions & safe communication will be formed between Fort Pitt & the Mississippi, if Lt Govr. Sinclair should not be quite so successfull as it is to be wished, his striking at the Illinois will be well timed & if not too late will (in some measure) favor the proposed operations towards that Quarter. (Signed) F. H.

[B 121, p 46.]

QUEBEC 8th May 1780.

Major De Peyster:

SIR—The very enormous Expence attending the purchasing of Indian Presents at the several Posts in the Upper Country owing to the avidity of the Traders who supply them, has determined me to attempt a diminution of it by supplying them from England. I must therefore desire that, with the assistance of the Indian officers and such other information and remarks as you shall be able to obtain from the necessary expenditure of the late years, that you will make out & transmit to me, an estimate of the different articles, and Quantities of each, that will be wanted at your Post, for twelve months, in order that you may be from time to time, punctually supplied, I hope at a more moderate expence to Government. I do not expect your calculations to be perfectly just, I know it is impossible it should, as the demands fluctuate with the times; but it can be brought so near as to leave very little to be purchased from the Traders, you will in the meantime buy as few things from them as possible and calculate your wants allowing for the stock you may have in store. I am &c (Signed) F. H.

[B 121, p 48.]

QUEBEC 8th May 1780.

Major De Peyster:

SIR—As the death of the late Captain McDougall will necessarily occasion an arrangement of His affairs and His Executors may in His Business, comprehend as property and offer to sale L'Isle-aux-Cochons.

I must desire that you will not permit the same to be disposed of, it being my Intention to reclaim it for the use of the Crown and Garrison of Detroit.

Mrs. McDougall need not be alarmed at this notice, which you will give Her, as she must be persuaded from what I have already done for Captain McDougall's Family, that my Inclination leads me rather to assist than distress Her. I am &c (Signed) F. H.

[B 121, p 49.]

QUEBEC, 6th July, 1780.

Major de Peyster:

SIR—I have received your letters of the 16th & 17th of May, and of the 1st ultimo by Mr McComb & Mr Perault, covering a bill in favor of the former, and intercepted Letters to Colonels Clarke and Todd, and reporting the measures you had taken to cheque the advances of the Rebels upon the Ohio, and to dispossess them of the Post at St. Vincennes.

It gives me pleasure that you have viewed the dangerous encroachments of the numerous people said to have taken refuge from the oppression of Congress, in the Country of Kintuck in so proper a light and that you have provided against the consequences—in which it is my desire that you vigorously persist, as well to prevent their becoming formidable in the vicinity of our Posts, as to secure to the Indians their natural rights to that country confirmed to them by Treaty, which Justice as well as Policy requires we should attend to. I hope the Indians will heartily take part in a measure so intimately connected with their welfare, and that those who accompanied Captain Bird will act faithfully and with such vigor as must effectually secure his success, but it is distressing to reflect that notwithstanding the vast Treasure lavished upon these People, no dependance can be had on them, and that the most trifling circumstances, altho ever so false or absurd will divert them from a Pursuit of the last Consequence, as in the Instance mentioned in your Letter of the French man's Report to those on their way to Post Vincennes, by which a good opportunity and much Time has been lost, besides the Expence of a new Equipment to the War Party.

You no doubt represent in Council the absurdity of this Conduct and paint the evil consequences that cannot fail to result from it.

You will do well ever to remind them of it and if your agreements can be strenghtened by expressing my knowledge of the affair, my astonishment and displeasure at their conduct I would have it done. It is unfortunate that French man could not be taken hold of, so be made an example of. As these are the most dangerous enemies we can have, do not hesitate, where you have well founded Suspicion, to Seize them and send them here in Irons, giving me your Reasons in writing, I hope those of that description at Post Vincenne will be taken proper notice of.

In regard to the prisoners who multiply so fast with you, should you find it necessary a part of them must be sent to this Part of the Province, altho' we are equally at a loss to find room for them.

The infamous behaviour of the Rebels to our Prisoners in variety of instances, particularly in the case of Lieut Governor Hamilton and the Troops taken with him who are still confined to a dungeon upon scanty & bad provisions & their obliging many (even in the character of Gentlemen) to work for their maintenance, would sufficiently justify a Retaliation I wish to forbear, but if the number of your prisoners became inconvenient you will please to employ as many in the works as you can with safety trust abroad at a Time—to work under a guard if necessary, giving them a Ration of Provisions and allowing them the same Pay as your Labourers have, which must be applied to cloathe them—The Air and Exercise will preserve their Health, and there is no doubt of their being treated with proper Tenderness—Those who will not comply, you will please to send down in close confinement.

The list of Indian officers is at every post so long, and the expense so very great, that I rather wish to diminish than augment their numbers, but if Mr. Du Qundre is so very useful a man, He must of course be employed & I should imagine as a Lieutenant upon the usual pay a Dollar per Day, His services may hereafter entitle him to something more.

I have accepted your Bill for the amazing sum of £64,035, 8, 8½. The appearance of such Drafts in so regular and so quick a Succession naturally led me to reflect upon their fatal consequences to the nation & the difficulty (not at present thought of) that will be experienced in getting them passed at Home—I am far from attributing this evil to indifference or unhandsome conduct of the officers under whom the expence is incurred, yet I cannot help being persuaded from comparison, that a stricter & earlier attention to this circumstance would have prevented evils which it is now very difficult to repair—and long Habits of Indulgence have created wants with the Indians which otherwise they would never have experienced such as fine saddles & many Luxuries carefully exhibited to their view by the all grasping Trader. I think it would be cruel to deny these poor people who are employed by us such mark of our attention and regards as are necessary to their comfort, every shilling beyond this is superfluous to them and a loss to Government, nor is it in a Political view necessary, for however they may threaten to forsake us, we must know it is impossible they can exist without our aid, the Rebels not having necessaries sufficient for their own wants, and consequently to supply theirs.

I am likewise satisfied that the expense has been greatly increased, by permitting persons in Government employ to become Traders, few of whom have virtue enough to consider the character independently of each other. I must therefore desire your particluar attention to the conduct of such as may be at present in that predicament which the times make it necessary still to employ, & that in future upon no account whatever to suffer any Person under your command to be even concerned in Trade while in any appointment of the Crown. I should likewise think it possible, in a great measure, to curtail the Indian Presents by representing to them the impossibility of gratifying their unnecessary demands from the enormous expense attending it—that they shall be supplied with every article that comfort requires but not with superfluities. I am very sensible that the persecution which a commanding officer at one of those Posts must go through from the Indians continually excited by the avidity of the Trader to demand is very great, but in those situations the most essential part of their duty is to attend to the expenditure of the Public Money, I am persuaded it will be chearfully borne.

I have received your Letter accounting for the expenses at Michilimackinac, Particular notes and remarks of the kind, specifying services, &c., from time to time, will be satisfactory to me, & may hereafter be usefull. I must therefore desire you will by the way of Journal, note them in such manner as to refresh the memory, should it be necessary to refer to them.

I am, &c.,

(Signed,) F. H.

[B 121, p. 50.]

Quebec, July 13th, 1780.

Major De Peyster:

Sir—Having maturely reflected upon the vast Expence, uncertainity &

difficulty attending the Transport of Provision to the Posts and the evil consequences that may attend the King's Service from being limited in that so necessary an article, I am come to a Resolution to cultivate a sufficient quantity of ground at each, which I expect will in a short time produce, if not enough for its consumption, sufficient, considerably to diminish the Transport.

I have therefore to desire, you will immediately reclaim for His Majesty's use, the Ground commonly known by the name of Hog Island, & appropriate it to the above mentioned purpose, exactly upon the same Terms & Footing with those at Niagara, agreeably to the inclosed Articles—If you have not any Persons who are fit for this undertaking Lieut. Col. Bolton will probably be able to supply you from Niagara.

I am the more desirous to employ Loyalists, as well because it is a present relief to them as that they are in General Expert Farmers. It will not be necessary to send to Detroit as to Niagara the necessary Implements of Husbandry as they are to be procured there. You will therefore provide them in the same proportion & give every assistance your Garrison will admit of to forward the successes of so essential an object.

As I wish to make Mrs. McDougall a reasonable compensation for what Houses &c, may be found upon the Island, you will please to apoint proper persons to apprise them & transmit to me their Report.

In doing this, you will observe, that it is not intended an estimation should be made of what Money may have been laid out on Improvements, Fences, &c, at present gone to decay, for which it is supposed Indemnification has been had by Rent & Return from the Land which can have no connection with the present appraisement.

I am, &c.,

(Signed) F. H.

[B 121, p. 56.]

QUEBEC 10th August 1780.

Major De Peyster:

I have received your Letter of the 27th June, covering an estimate of Indian presents necessary for 12 months. The Indians have been accustomed to receive so very liberally, that now their demands are quite unlimited. I have always thought the Presents too generally distributed & am of opinion that discrimination would not only diminish the expence but materially forward the Service.

You have now a good opportunity to make a Trial of it, by distinguishing those nations or Individuals who were most hearty in support of Captain Bird & most attentive to the Execution of his measures & by retaining or lessening the Presents of the others. It evidently appears that the Indians in general, wish to protract the War, & are most happy when most frequently fitted out—it is impossible they can draw resources from the Rebels & they absolutely depend upon us for every Blanket they are covered with. I am far from wishing to curtail the advantages these poor people ought to derive from their services, but to cloath and feed the idle and undeserving is certainlly if it can be avoided improper. Their conduct with Captain Bird is highly reprehensible. They have incessantly reproached the Commanding officer for not sending Troops to assist them in preventing the Incursions of the Rebels, & when with great Expenses & at a very inconvenient time you fitted out an Expidition for that purpose they grew refractory, & instead of complying with & supporting the measures of their conductor, by which success must have been ensured, they abandoned him, followed their wild schemes & by wantonly, contrary to their Engagement killing the cattle, rendered it impossible for him to prosecute the Intention of his taking the field.

Lieut Govr. Sinclair in one of his letters says that "Major Gamble writes me from Detroit that many complaints are sent against me"—I fear there are persons at Michilimackinac or its Dependencies, who convey Reports from thence to Detroit, prejudicial to him, and tending to create Jealousies and Discontents between the Commanding officers in these Posts. I am persuaded that your zeal & wishes for the King's service are equally strong, having both the same object, only, in view, there can be nothing wanting but a perfect confidence in erch other, joined to the abilities you possess, to give success too very measure undertook in that country; for I am persuaded you all think to liberally to suffer any little difference of opinion (if such there is) to lead you from that sence of duty which distinguishes the perfect officer from the lukewarm crowd. You will therefore do well at once to lay open to Lieut Govr. Sinclair whatever reports of the kind may have reached in you, whether by Letter or otherwise, with the name of those who have circulated them, & I shall desire him to do the same for your Information, by which means, these mean disturbers of Tranquility and of the Public Services will be brought to light and discouraged.

Altho' I consider St. Joseph's from its situation naturally more dependant on Michilimackinac and of course more immediately under the direction of Lieut Govr. Sinclair, yet, as the Indians of that place sometimes resort to Detroit (and always expect an answer to what they may have to propose) you and Captain Sinclair should mutually inform each other of what passes and perfectly coincide in whatever is to be recommended to them to regulate their conduct.

Whatever has been hitherto the custom in regard to Trading to Saguenant Bay, or the places in the vicinity either from Michilimackinac or Detroit, I would have punctually observed, subject at all times to whatever changes the exigencies of the Service may require. These matters cannot possibly be determined except by you and Captain Sinclair, who, there cannot be a doubt, will cordially unite in whatever are best calculated to promote the King's Service.

Messrs. Finchley and Fisher, are from their conduct and connections very unfit Persons to trust at a distance, and where there is a possibility of holding any kind of intercourse with the Colonists.

I should therefore think it very unsafe to permit them to winter from Detroit, or in the summer to give them a Latitude of which they can take advantage—the former was disarmed by Lieut Govr. Hamilton, much suspected by Major Lernoult and other officers at Detroit & the other has always born a doubtfull character independent of his connections.

[B 121, p 56.] I am &c. (Signed) F. H.

QUEBEC, 29th September, 1780.

Major De Peyster:

SIR—I am directed by His Excellency the Commr in Chief, to acquaint you that from the Letters of Mr. Bently which you Transmitted, and others formerly written by Him to the same effect, He is inclined to believe he may be sincere in his professions of attachment to the Government, and that his former conduct, so reprehensible might have proceeded from motives too common in Trade, he has likewise discovered a Liberality of sentiments in his behaviour to Lieut Govr Hamilton which weighs much with the General and has induced him to grant the Indulgence, upon Trial, which he has sollicited. His Excellency is therefore pleased to desire that you will signify to him his willingness to forgive what has passed, upon condition that he will firmly abide by the Principles professed in his Letters, and in order to enable him to recover, and wind up his affairs in that Country you will permit the small quantity of goods he has required, to be forwarded to him, and allow him afterwards to come into Detroit. You will naturally improve this opportunity to make him usefull, and if you find he is really inclined to be so, it might not be amiss to let him remain where he is for some time.

This must depend so much on Local circumstances, that His Excellency leaves to you to act as you may judge fit. The times and Mr. Bently's conduct hitherto, will sufficiently justify a Jealousy and particular attention to his future conduct.

[121, p. 62.] (Signed) R. MATHEWS.

QUEBEC, 6th January, 1781.

Major De Peyster:

SIR—I have received your letter of the 16th November reporting the defeat of Monsr. La Balm and transmitting his commission, &c. I consider this event as a very fortunate circumstance, and recommend strongly to you to study every means by which it can be improved.

It was certainly the beginning of a general attack planed against this Province, which from different Intelligence I have received, I have every reason to think will be attempted in the Spring against the upper Posts, and perhaps earlier in this part of the Province, this to yourself. Monsr. La Balm's Papers clearly evince the sentiments of the Canadians, and you will benefit by the discovery. I think with you that the Miamis Indians are little better, and were actuated entirely by Interested views or the arrival of Monsr. La Balm at their village must have been immediately reported to you. You have however done well in attributing to their merit an event, which I hope has confirmed them in the King's interest, and I approve much of your permitting Monsr. Beaubin to remain amongst them—his allowable resentment against the people of Post Vincennes and the benefit he will derive from his present situation, under the King's Protection, may if he is clever, be turned to good account, authentic and speedy Intelligence is what you have most to wish for, and may, I should think, by his means be easily obtained, as well by the Scouts you of course keep continually abroad for that purpose. You will not fail communicating with all possible dispatch to Brigadier General Powell whatever intelligence you may receive of moment.

Your Letter of the 10th October is received, with the sketch of Hog Island. I make no doubt your arrangement of the Families upon it is the most advantageous, & I approve of the Provision you have made for the rest of the Prisoners, and of your employing them in the Works, seeing the inconveniences you suggest that might arise from setting them at present where they might be subject to insult from the Indians.

I am, &c.,

(Signed) F. H.

[B 121, p. 64.]

DESCRIPTION OF MICHILIMACKINACK.

VARENNE 26th April 1781.

SIR—I am this inst favored with your Letters Requesting me to send you information relative to the Island and Wharf at Michilimackinac, Notwithstanding the treatment I met with from Lieut Govr Sinclair at that place, if such information as I can give you will be of any advantage to His Majesty's Service I shall always be happy in granting it, although maps and Plans are not generally given to Strangers—Your General character and present stations merit such from me, and you are verrey pardonable in Requesting them. I send you with this a map of the Lakes Huron & Michigan and also a plan of the Island and Wharf at Michilimackinac. As I was ordered to deliver up all the Plans and Remarks soon after I left the Island, to Lieut Clowes, what I now send you is only taken from my memory, I hope you will be able to understand it—I am not surprised at the Wharf being damaged as it was never properly filled up with Stones, or otherwise finished. As I had the conducting of it until the 20th of March and others, for some whim of the Lieut Governor I was ordered to leave it—The plan I send will shew you the manner it was when I left it—The season then being so severe that when the frames was filled up, there was as much Ice in them as Stones, so that of course in the month of May and June it would be half empty, and in that manner was it left to be patched up by ignorant persons, which I think is the cause of its giving away so soon. Note but that there is a great swell setts in from the Eastward & perhaps will Require a worke of more time and solidity than Govr. Sinclair was aware of, to keep vessels in safety there During the Winter, the most safest place near Michilimackinac for wintering vessels is the River Shaboygan, there is six feet water upon the Barr, the River is about twenty yards wide at the entrance, & a Vessel of 6 feet Draught of water cannot go up further than 200 or 300 yards, & then he can lay alongside of a Clay Bank, in two fathoms water, or she can be hove up two or three feet in mud & lay with all safety, I never saw the River freeze over or any sea to hurt a Vessel, it is clear level marshy ground for half a mile around at the mouth so that there could be no danger of them being surprised from Indians & there is always good Fishing and shooting.

there is plenty of fine pines both sides of the River, & other good wood, up to the little Lake which is 3 Leagues from the mouth of it, I had a Dwelling House & Garden by the Edge of the wood and the Welcome wintered two winters there.

I expect to be at Quebec in the course of next month and then every other information in my power I shall be happy in giving you,

and am Sir your most obedient humble Servant

Samuel Robertson

To Captain John Shank
[B 98, p. 27.]

TRIP FROM MICHIGILIMACKINAC TO LAKE SUPERIOR

Michilimackinac June 2nd 1784.

I left the Post this day and proceeded towards Lake Superior, accompanied by Mr. McBeath, Mr. Barthe, Ensign Fry & a Carpenter, wind fair as far as the Detour, where it headed us, we then went ashore, in order to let the men cook their Victuals, for the ensuing day, saw no Canoes from any quarter. The Lake within a League of the shore after leaving the Goose Island is far from being safe for the navigation of Vessels, they should therefore carefully avoid coming nearer than a League and a half from the shore, there are number of Rocks to be met with along this Part of the Coast, that do not all appear above the water, and yet are not more than from one to two feet from the Surface.

At the Detour (or entrance of the water communication leading to the Falls of St. Mary's) it is absolutely necessary to keep a good look out, for here the Latent rocks are found in Five or six Fathoms of water, but they do not reach further than about Four Hundred yards after turning the point— the Kettles here boiled and we proceed at 11 o'clock.

Tuesday 3rd.

The fogs were so exceedingly heavy this morning that it was with much difficulty we could find the Entrance of the *Mascoutin Sankie* Channel, which is situate about one League from the bottom of Minascon Bay. It is necessary to remark a small Island about a quarter of a mile in circumference, its eastern point bare and Rocky, directly opposite to this and about one mile distant is the Channel before mentioned, it is therefore a good Land mark in bad weather when it cannot be distinguished from a small inlet. On this river are numberless small Bays and Islands, two Rapids, of which the one near the Saint Mary is the strongest, along here many beautifull, landscapes present themselves to the eye of the Traveller. About Two Leagues from the Saut we saw a Cluster of Pines so regularly arranged that at first sight, we might imagine them to be the production of art, but a knowledge of the pursuits in this Country will immediately overbear that Idea. At 5 o'clock in the afternoon we arrived at the Saut or Falls—Monsr. Cadott had arrived yesterday from a place commonly called La Point in Lake Superior but has no news. I would have proceeded this evening as far as Point aux Pines had not young Cadotte from a misunderstanding desired a Canoe which was sent up the Rapids to Return instead of proceeding to the West end—of the Carrying Place—where I intended to embark. This Portage is half a league in length, I sent the Canoe a second time to be ready early in the morning.

Friday 4th June.

We embark at 4 o'clock for the Point where we remain'd for two Hours making observations—on the situation of the place, its environs, Harbour, Soil, Timber, &c. &c. The Bay above the Saut is about two Leagues in Breadth and one in length, along the northern shore is a chain of Islands that extend nearly half way to Point aux Pins.

The Point on which Fort Gloucester formerly stood is very low and sandy bearing scarce anything but Sand Cherry & Billberry Shrubs. The Timber a little way in the Land and along the shore eastward of the Point is almost all scraggy pitch pine, excepting a few young Birch & Willows interspersed. The Pine being of the red kind is far from being fit for ship Building. The Rason before the Fort is about one Hundred yards in depth forming a dense Line. The water fourteen and fifteen feet——opinion. There would be many inconveniences attending the Establishment of a Post here. In the first place there is no stone for making lime, or building nor any Clay nearer than the upper part of the Rapids. Fire Wood cannot be got within three Leagues of the place excepting Pitch Pine, which is but poor fuel for such severe winters as people have experienced in this climate. No Settlers would remain here, as the barreness of the Soil would depress that cheerfulness which might attend their Labours in a more fertile one. The Garrison would therefore reap few advantages from a tryal of this nature. Return from this and descend the Saut in a Canoe, breakfast a quarter after nine and depart from the Forts at the Saut, pursue the road to Tessalon, are near five hundred small rocky Islands from three to one and a half miles in circumference, some are very high & perpendicular next the water on their southern sides, they form upon the whole a very romantic appearance and what is worthy of remark, there are Trees from eight to ten inches in Diameter growing on their and no Soil to be seen but that under their roots. The water between these Islands is very deep, so that small craft may come next to any of the Islands. But the Shipping could by no means venture to go through them, from their confused situation. It would require much time to lay down this true positions, as we left St. Mary's rather late we were obliged to encamp on one of these Islands distant five Leagues from Tessalon.

Saturday 5th.

Embark early in the morning wind S. W. in our favour for a little while, arrive at the Point Tessalon between 10 & 11 o'Clock,

This is a beautiful and capacious Bay and one of the best Harbors on Lake Huron, its western side extends itself a good distance in to the Lake, the road is totally void of Rocks & the water from the point to the River's mouth from Twenty to Twelve feet in depth & six feet at the Bar, so that Vessells of a sufficient size for these Lakes may safely enter the river after which they are quite safe from any winds that blow. The mouth of the river is fifty-six yards wide, after which it carries an equal width of forty two yards. Its coarse is North Easterly, with a gentle current for about five miles and a half. The Timber might be brought in rafts to the very place.

The soil on both sides is good for raising such grain as the shortness of the season will admit of. The Chief of the timber, white Pine, maple, elm, some red oak, Birch, & Walnut &c. The Encamping ground at the entrance to the river is low & there might immediately with little expense be cleared seven to eight acres for Pasture or otherwise one the west side of the Bay. About half a mile from this on the East side of the Bay is a meadow close to the water and several places fit for meadow up the river. Clay Stone &c are found in the vicinity of the Harbour. We have seen sufficient level ground for establishing one Hundred & sixty Families, all which is excellent. The River abounds with Fish of several kinds and on its Banks is plenty of Game.

Opinion, the Barracks on the West side of the river and a small block house on each side of the river would answer every purpose for the Defence of the Harbor as well as light Houses & land marks for the shipping.

There is no Commanding Ground but two rocks, one upon each side the River and if on these the two Block Houses are properly placed agreeable to the situation it will be difficult for an enemy of any Denomination whatever to dispossess the Garrison if properly supply'd, and the communication of the two Block Houses, can never be obstructed if properly built.

Sunday 6th.

I left Tessalon a little after four o'clock in search of the (supposed) Traverse, where we arrive at half past twelve, breakfast, & explore the south eastern point of the Island, where we found some remains of an old french building supposed to be a Stone House, but the foundation is now quite coverd with shrubs & Bramble. In approaching this Island there are huge Rocks that come within a foot of the surface of the water, and so situated that they would be fatal to shipping and even small craft in any kind of windy weather—besides these, a shoal extends itself near four hundred yards from the shore into the Lake on that end of the Island facing the Detour.

No Harbour could be made here in less than three or four years and then attended with an expense too great for the consequence of the Post.

The Land for two or three miles from the water very low and strong mixed with Red sand, from this I viscited the South West end which I found equally attended with disadvantages, In fine the whole of this end the Island, affords no Timber that would answer for building, being entirely covered with Spruce and Bass Wood &c. and continues this way for nearly half its circuit—opinion—that this place (as is evident from the description) is by no means proper for a fortification and much less for settlers.

We leave this and arrive at the Island of Michilimackinac at one o'clock in the morning our Canoemen very much fatigued.

Danl. Robertson
Capt 84th Regt.

Endorsed: Journal of Captain Robertson, Michilimackinac, 2nd June 1784.

[B 98, p. 250.]

INVENTORIES, BILLS OF ACCOUNTS, AND RETURNS.

Account of Cash disbursed by Henry Hamilton, Esqr., Lieutenant Governor & Superintendent of Detroit for His Majesty's Service between the 24th of February, 1779, and the 24th of May, 1781, as also of the Bills drawn and Money received by him.

	Sterling.		
	£	s	d
1779, October 19th—To cash paid Philip Dejean on acocunt of his pay	197	......	......
February, 1780, 24th—Do paid Jacob Schieffelin his pay as Lieut. and writer to the Indian Department from 15th Sept., 1778 to this date inclusive	253	......	......
May 24th—Do paid Francois Maisonville as boat Master on acct. of pay	110	13	1½
June 6th—Do paid Patrick McKindley of Capt. Lamothes Company 468 days pay from the 24th Feby. 1779 to the 6th June 1780 @ 2s 4d per day	54	12	......
July—Do paid for cloathing & liquor for the Prisoners of war	116	11	3
December 6th—Do paid Jehu Hay at sundry times his pay from 15th Sept., 1778 to the 24th December, 1780 being 831 days at 15s per day as Major of the Detroit V. Militia & 10s pr day & 40 £ per year as Deputy Agent of Indian affairs	1128	15	......
Do paid do 200 days Bat & Forage from 15th Sept., 1778 to the 1st April, 1779	52	10	......
Do paid Capt. Guillaume Lamothe 668 days pay @ 10s per day from 25 February 1779 to 24th December 1780	334	......	......
Do paid do 200 days Bat & Forage as above	42	10	......
Do paid John McBeath as Surgeon from 15th Sept. 1778 to the 24 Dec. 1780, 831 days pay at 9s 4d per day	387	16	......
Do paid do 200 days Bat & Forage as above	25	......	......
Do paid Antoine Bellefeuille as Interpreter from 15th Sept 1778 to the 4th December 1780—831 days pay at 4s 8d per day	193	18	......
Do paid do 200 days Bat & Forage as above	8	15	......
Do paid Amos Ainsley as Master Carpenter from 15th Sept 1778 to the 15th of February 1780—being 509 days @ 7s per day	178	3	......
1781, March 5th—Do paid James Parkinson as Serjeant Major from 24th February 1779 to this date, being 739 days at 2s 4d pr day	86	4	4
Do paid William Taylor of Capt. Lamothe's Company 739 days pay from the 24th of February 1779 to this date inclusive at 2s 4d per day	86	4	4
Do paid John Brebane of Capt. Lamothe's Company 1739 days pay from the 24th of February 1779 to this date inclusive @ 2s 4d per day	86	4	4
Do paid a detachment of the King's or 8th regiment at different times as per certified account	103	2	4½
April 24th—Do paid Major Hay his pay as above from 25th December 1780 to the 24th of May 1781 both days included	205		4½

ACCOUNT OF CASH DISBURSED.—CONTINUED

	Sterling.		
	£	s	d
Do paid Captain Lamothe as above from 25th December 1780 to the 24th May 1781 inclusive	75	10	.....
Do paid Doctr McBeath as above from 25th December 1780 to the 24 May 1781 inclusive	70	9	4
Do paid Mr. Bellefeuille as above from 25 December 1780 to the 24th May 1781 inclusive	35	4	8
1779, June 19—By a sett of (6) Bills on His Excellency General Haldimand commander in Chief in Canada in favor of Col. Josiah Barker	50	.....	.....
August 17th—Do (6) Bills on—do—in favour of Samuel Beale	400	.....	.....
October 5th—Do (4) Bills on —do—— in favour of David Geddes Esqr	455	.....	.....
1780, Feby. 8—Do (3) Bills on —— do ——— in favor of John *Hay	296	16	8
April 19—Do——————on—in favour of Jacob Scheiffelin	253	.....	.....
October 21—Do one Bill on David Geddes Esqr favour of Robt. Elam for £ 7311—Virginia money at 80 dollars for one	68	10	7
December 29—By cash received from His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton by warrant	1500	.....	.....
1781, April 10th—Do a sett of (4) Bills on His Excellency General Haldimand in favour of David Geddes Esqr	860	8	10
By cash received from His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton by warrant of the 6th of April	800	.....	.....
Sterling £	4683	16	1

(Errors excepted.) [*Jehu?]

HENRY HAMILTON,
Lieut Govr. of Detroit.

Endorsed:—Account of Disbursements &c by Lieut Governor Hamilton between the 24th Feby. 1779 & the 24th May 1781.
[B 123, p. 39.]

Return of all the Batteaus & Pirogues in the Settlement of Detroit, 13th June, 1779.

	Large Batoes.	4 handled Batoes.	3 handled Batoes.	Pirogues.
Belonging to the King	3	1	3	10
South side ye River	....	....	....	6
North side ye River	....	1	3	24
	3	2	6	40

GREGOR MCGREGOR.

Endorsed:—Return of Bateaux and Perogues in the Settlement of Detroit.
[B 99, p. 85.]

A general return of all the Inhabitants of Detroit their Possessions, Cattle Houses Servants and Slaves taken by Phillip Dejean, Justice of the Peace for the said Place the 22nd day of September 1773.

	Men.	Women.	Young Men from 10 to 20.	Boys from 1 to 10.	Young Women from 10 to 20.	Girls from 1 to 10.	Servants.	Men Slaves.	Women Slaves.	Oxen.	Cows.	Heifers.	Sheep.	Hogs.	Acres of Land in front.	Acres of Land in depth.	Acres of Land Cultivated.	Houses.	Barns.
South Side of the Fort	107	81	33	112	30	76	27	6	3	222	203	117	21	390	228	....	1,424	93	63
North Side of the Fort	124	107	45	137	24	134	36	26	22	211	306	241	424	602	284	40	1,175½	117	93
The Fort	66	36	6	35	4	30	27	14	4	20	83	22	62	455	....	....	....	68	....
On Hog Island	1	1	....	....	....	....	3	....	....	20	17	32	121	30	....	....	....	2	1
Total	298	225	84	284	58	240	93	46	39	473	609	412	628	1,067	572	40	2,602½	280	157

N. B.—The Troops & Naval Dept. with their Cattle &c are not included in the above. The men servants are generally more numerous, several being now hunting & at the Indian Villages—Altho' all the farms are calculated at 40 acres in depth—eight of them runs 80 & one 60.

P. Dejean.

[B 122, p. 2.]

List of Indian Licenses granted at Quebec for Michilimackinac and places beyond from the 13th day of April to the 4th day of June, 1778. Accounting where the Arms and Ammunition distened after it arrives at the Post of Michilimackinac.

Number of Passes.	Traders Names to whom granted.	Canoes.	Quantity of ammunition brought.			Where Distened beyond Michilimackinac.	Quantity Carried		
			Fuzees.	Gun Powder.	Shot and Ball.		Fuzees.	Gun Powder.	Shot and Ball.
1	Louis Chabollier......	2	20	600	1,200	Grand River............	20	60	1,200
6	Finley & Gregory.....	2	24	1,000	900	Mississippi..............	24	1,000	900
13	Wm. and John Hay...	2	20	1,200	1,200	North West............	20	1,200	1,200
14	Ditto...........	3	20	1,500	800	Illinois and Mississippi....	20	1,500	800
15	Ditto...........	4	80	3,000	3,600	Ditto...............	80	3,000	3,600
16	Ditto...........	2	20	1,500	1,400	Prairie du Chain and Mississippi..........	20	1,500	1,400
18	Etienne Campion.....	4	4	2,000	1,800	La Baye and Mississippi..	50	2,000	1,800
19	Mchs. Maréehepean...	5	50	2,000	1,800	Ditto...............	50	2,000	1,800
22	Grant & Soloman.....	2	50	600	1,400	Nippigon...............	50	600	1,400
23	Ditto...........	3	50	1,000	2,000	Ditto...............	50	1,000	2,000
28	Amable Curot.........	1	12	500	800	Towards La Baye*.......	12	500	800
43	John Bte Barthe......	3	12	500	5,200	Lake Superior..........	12	500	5,200
—	Hippt Des Rivieres....	3	20	800	1,200	Grand River and La Baye...............	20	800	1,200
47	Gable Cotteé..........	3	34	1,200	1,200	Neppigon...............	34	1,200	1,200
49	Benj. Lyon............	1	16	400	600	Prairie Du Chain.........	16	400	600
57	Josh. Languinet......	3	30	1,400	2,400	La Baye, etc...........	30	1,400	2,400
61	J. B. Labeau.........	2	20	1,200	1,200	Illenois................	20	1,200	1,200
62	Jean Cullat...........	2	20	1,200	1,200	Mississippi..............	20	1,200	1,200
63	J. M. Ducharm.......	2	40	1,800	200	Prairie du Chin..........	40	1,800	2,000
64	P. J. Lavigna.........	2	30	1,200	1,000	La Baye, etc...........	30	1,200	1,000
66	Joseph Biron.........	1	10	400	400	Ditto...............	10	400	400
67	C. Lamarche..........	1	6	400	700	Ditto...............	6	400	400
68	L. Durocher..........	1	20	600	700	Illenois................	20	600	700
69	Alerr Campion........	1	8	250	500	La Bay................	8	250	500
70	Robt. Aird...........	1	15	425	600	Prérie Du Chin..........	15	425	600
71	Paschal Pillet.........	1	9	500	600	La Bay.................	9	500	600
72	J. B. Guillon.........	2	24	1,200	600	Illenois via St. Joseph....	24	1,200	600
73	Pt La Croix..........	2	16	1,200	1,200	La Bay.................	16	1,200	1,200

[B. 97, 1, p. 5.]

AT DE PEYSTER,
Major to the King.

---

*See appendix

I do hereby certify that the undermentioned Michilimackinac Engineers Stores have been expended by my orders on carrying on the different Services as undermentioned between the 1st April and the 30th of Sept 1778 inclusive. And the acting conductor of stores is hereby Discharged thereof.

Species of Stores.	Quantity.	For What Service Expended.
Twenty four Penny nails lbs.............	38	Repairing the Batteaus the Wharf & rebuilding.
Tenpenny do..........................	44	The Indian Council House &c.

[B 97 1, p 70.]

A. S. De Peyster.

Return of Engineer's Stores Issued & Expended at the Garrison of Michilimackinac between 1st April & 30th Sept., 1778, Inclusive, as per Vouchers.

Date, 1778.	To Whom and for what Service.	By Order of—	Species of Stores.	Quantity.		
				S.	R.	W.
April 15...	To Serj. Langdown for rebuilding the Indian Council House, repainting certain doors and other wooden works of Fort.	Arent Schuler De Peyster, Major of the King's (or 8th) Regt. of Foot, Commar here.	Twenty-four penny nails—lbs. Ten penny ditto............	14 17	....	....
August 21..	To Serj. Langdown for repairing the King's Batteaus, &c.		Twenty-four penny nails—lbs. Ten penny do.—lbs..........	4 8	......	......
Sept. 16...	To Serj. Langdown for repairing the King's wharf & other wooden works belonging to the Fort.		Twenty penny nails—lbs...... Ten penny do.—lbs..........	6 7	....	....
May 27....	To Serj. Langdown for the use of the King's works at the Grand Portage.		Ten penny nails—lbs......... Ten penny do.—lbs..........	12 12	....	....
Sept. 30...	Expended by order of between 1st April, 1778, & this present date, inclusive.					

[B 97, 1. p 71.]

Major De Peyster on Account of the Crown Dr. to Charles Paterson & Co. For Sundries furnished Pierre La Oaseur L'Chandonet two men who were engag'd by Lieut Bennet to cut & prepare Timber at the Grand Portage for Ye. King.*

1778								
Sepr 15th	To 4 large Ares, @ 25s		5	....	..			
	1 covered Kettle, @ 25s		3	....	..			
	1 large augur		....	8	..			
	2 white fish nets mounted		8	....	..			
	2 cod lines, 16s		1	12	..	18	....	..
1779 Jany 25th	To 14 Bush'ls Hull'd Indian Corn, 10s		42	....	..			
	7 Cr Flows, 10s		70	....	..			
	340 lbs Montreal Pork, 5s		85	....	..			
	Paid Pierre La Vasseur & Chandonet for cutting, sawing & squaring	950 thick plank. 950 Deals. 400 p. sqr. Timber. 2,300 pieces, 2s.				306	13	4
	N. York Curry. £					521	13	4

MICHILIMACKINAC, 7th Sept., 1779.

Received of Arent Schuyler De Peyster Esqr Major in the King's 8th Regt. & Commandant of this Post &c &c &c at Bill at sixty days sight on Fred'k Haldimand Esqr. Governor of the Province of Quebec, General & Comm'r in Chief of His Majesty's Forces in Canada for the amo't of this account being Five Hundred & Twenty-one Pounds, thirteen shillings & Four Pence New York Curry.

CHARLES PATERSON & CO.

[B 97 1, p. 133.]

---

*Mr. Arthur Doughty, Dominion Archivist at Ottawa, Canada, writes Jan. 24, 1908: "The correct spelling of these names is Levasseur and Chandonnet, but in the manuscript they are often spelled in several different ways. Both the names are common in Canada today. Levasseur was engineer in Quebec under the French regime and we have plans signed by him." H. R. P.

Return & State of Ordnance Stores Taken at Michilimackinac, 21st Sept., 1778.

	Serviceable.	Repairable.	Unserviceable.	Deficiencies.
Ordnance:				
Heavy Six Pounders, Iron	2			
Light Six Pounders, Brass	2			
Ambuzitts, Brass, much blown in the Vents; for saluting only	4			
Cohour on a Wooden Bed	1			
Wall Pieces	2			
Carriages:				
Travelling Six Pounders	1		1	1
Garrison Six Pounders	4			
Garrison Ambuzetts	4			
Side Arms for Guns:				
Ladles for Six Pounders	2			
Sponges for do	4			
Wad Hooks of sorts	4			
Drag Ropes with Pin setts	2			
Hand Spikes, Traversing	2			
Hand Spikes, Pounding	10			
Aprons of Lead	9			
For Training and Loading Service:				
Leather Pouches	4			
Tube Boxes	4			
Slow Match, lbs	30			
Luitstocks	4			
Port Fires	6			
Port fires ticks	5			
Tuin Tubes	80			
Pruning Horns	4		2	2
Training Wires	4			
Vent Pinchers	2			
Vent Spikes	10			
Corn'd Powder, lbs	315			
Shot, round and Case:				
Round shot on the Bastions	407			
Round Shot with Cartridges fill'd & fix'd	38			
Case Shot with Cartridges do., do	60			
Round Shot fix'd to Bottoms only			31	31
Case Shot fix'd to do			122	122

Return & State of Ordnance Stores,—Continued.

	Serviceable.	Repairable.	Unserviceable.	Deficiencies.
Case Shot ½ and 1 ounce, mix'd			90	90
Twenty-four round Grape for Ambuzetts			40	40
Shells:				
Live shells with damaged Fuzes			29	29
Empty shells on the Bastions	9			
Spunge Tacks	730			
Empty Paper Cartridges, Six Pds	125			
Thread, lbs	2			
Musquett Ball, lbs	424			
Tann'd Hides	1		1	1
Spare Copper Hoops	85			
have Grease, lbs	4			
Harness:				
Men's Belts		2		
Horse ditto		3		
Cartridge Paper:				
Reams				
Quires				
Formers:				
For Musquet Cartridges	4			
For Carbine do	2			
Flints:				
Musquetts	5,240			
Carbine	780			

A. S. De Peyster.

N. B.—Some Powder expected this Fall from Niagara.
[B 971, p. 69.]

List of Goods given in a present to the Ottawas of Arbecroche & Kishkacon equally divided in the fall of 1778.

8 ps Strouds
2 pie-Moultons
5 pairs 1 pt Blankets
10 pairs 2 ditto
62 pairs 2½ ditto
12 pairs 3 ditto
4 Barrells Powder x 1 for this year
4 Bags of Shot x 2 ditto
4 Bags of Ball x 2 ditto
120 Shirts
30 Bed Gowns
24 ps Tape
8 dozen knives
30 pounds paint
12 Bricks of Tobacco
9 kegs of Rum—10
Some flints, steels, screws, awls, combs, L Glasses, needles, Thread, Ribbon & Trinkets.
40 loaves
2 Barrels of Pork x no provisions
2 Barrles of flour for the year
Flowered Flannel 1 piece 1780

Endorsed:—The two Villages may contain 250 men & are accustomed to receive two presents annually. Their Spring Present exceeded the within by Major De Peyster's account. They have done very little for this year. One party of them brought in two Rebel Indians, who were sent back to their nation.

Another party of them cut off a Boat going down the Ohio, In which they took a Lieut. Wright and allowed him to be murdered by the Pottawatamies.

[B 97 1, p 89.]

Return of Provisions of every Species issued (for which Lieut Governor Sinclair has signed Vouchers) between the 25th Sepr 1779, & 24th April following For the Garrison & Navy at Michilimackinac, for artificers & others on the Island & for Indians &c Including all condemnations & all Provisions rejected & Deficient. For all which Issues &c I have received, signed Vouchers for my settlement with the Commissary General.

	Rum.		Flour.	Pork.		Pease.		Butter.		Oatmeal.	
	Galls.	pts.	pounds.	pos.	ozs.	Galls.	pts.	pos.	ozs.	pos.	ozs.
Total........	628	2	31765	19771	12	1815	5	1895	15	2510	15

N. B.—Six Hundred Pounds of Flour & two hundred & Eight Pounds of Pork for which Major De Peyster granted receipts are the whole amount of Issues of Provisions for the Crown from the 24th Sept 1779 to the 24th of April following.

John Askin,
Asst. Commissary.

[B 97 2. p. 318.]

Return of Provisions & Liquors which should be in Store on the Island & at the Post of Michilimackinac April the 24th 1780.

Rum.		Flour.	Pork.		Pease.		Butter.		Oatmeal.	
Galls.	Half Pts.	lbs.	Pos.	ozs.	Galls.	pts.	Pos.	ozs.	Pos.	ozs.
832	2	115420	53228	9	5227	1	3676	13	3545	7

JOHN ASKIN,
Depy Commissary.

Account of all the Provisions & Rum in His Majesty's Store at the Fort of Michilimackinac on the 4th April 1780, counted by officers & us, Delivered over by me, John Askin, to D. Mitchell,

Rum.		Flour.	Pork.		Pease.		Butter.		Oatmeal.	
Galls.	Half Pts.	lbs.	Pos.	oz.	Galls.	pts.	Pos.	ozs.	Pos.	oz.
804	4	98378	48866	5	5619	10	2512	2	3784	8

JOHN ASKIN,
Assist Commissary.
DAVID MITCHELL.

[B 97 2, p. 319.]

The first line contains the amount of Provisions which ought to have been in store at Michilimackinac when delivered over by Mr. Askin to Mr. Mitchell.

The second contains the Quantities Received by Mr. Mitchell, and the third the Deficiencies.

Rum.		Flour.	Pork.	Butter.
G.	Q.	lbs.	lbs.	
832	2	115420	53228	2676
804	4	98378	48866	2512
27	2	17042	4362	1164
		Barrels.	Barrels.	Firkins.
		85–42	20–202	18

[B 97 2, p 320.]

The Honourable Patrick Sinclair Esqr Lieut Governor & Superintendent at Michilimackinac & its Dependencies &c on behalf of the Crown.

1780 April 1st. To Mattw Lessey Coroner Dr.

	L.	S.	D.
To administering 320 oaths to the Jury & witnesses on the Inquest and Court of Enquiry held on the Body of John Taylor at 2s. 8d	4	5	4
To Cash paid 12 Jury men for their Attendance on the Court of Inquiry for five days at 2s. each	6	0	0
To do paid 12 Jury men on the Inquest at 2s. each	1	4	0
To Cash paid Mr Burgy as per act for Coroner & twelve men for five days attendance	90	0	0
To Cash paid Mrs Ginnis as pr. acct	7	8	0
To one shirt put on the Body	1	0	0
New York Curry	£109	17	4

Received of the Honourable Patrick Sinclair Esq. Lt. Govr & Superintendant of Michilimackinac & its Dependencies &c. &c. the sum of one Hundred & nine Pounds, seventeen shillings & four pence, New York Curry. in full of the above acct.

Mattw. Lessey,
Coroner.

24th May 1780.

[B 97 2, p. 346.]

Return of the Cargo on Board His Majesty's armed Sloop the Welcome.

Michilimackinac, 29th July 1780.

Ship't at Fort Erie.

Tierces of Flour	56
Tierces of Pease	3
Half Barrels of Pork	42
Firkins of Butter	21

Ship't at Detroit.

Large Boxes for Lt. Govr. Sinclair	4

They are the Four sent with the Harnesses and Rye Seed.

Passengers.

Mr. Francis Bellecour; John Key; Alexr Dyce; Thos. Stone: Corporal Davidson, and one Mattross, of the Artillery. The Corp'l informed on his arrival that the Court Martial was over.

Two women & a child of the Emigrants, Musquash, his wife, child, & Ten more Indians.

Alex'r Harrow,
Commr. of the Welcome.

[B 97 2, p. 417.]

List of the Proprietors of the General Store at Michilimackinac, the Number of Canoes each person has put in, their supposed value, and the present Residence of each Proprietor.

Persons Names.	No. of Canoes.	Supposed Value.	Place of Residence.
Michellé Ange	½	7,500	Akikenamazac.
Matthew Lessey	1	15,000	Michilimackinac.
David McCrae & Co	2½	37,500	Ditto & Montreal.
Augustin Dubuc	1	15,000	Montreal.
Francois Cardinal	¼	3,750	La Point in L. Superior.
Baptiste Gaffé	1	15,000	Mississippi.
Pierre Grignion	1	15,000	La Baye.
Laurent Ducharme	½	7,500	Montreal.
Pierre Hurtubize	¾	11,250	St. Joseph's.
Jean Marie Ducharme	2	30,000	Mississippi.
Henry Bostwick	2	30,000	Michilimackinac.
Dominique La Croix	1	15,000	Mississippi.
Ezekiel Solomons	1	15,000	Montreal.
Charles L'arche	¼	3,750	Ditto.
Joseph Biron	½	7,500	Ditto.
Baptiste Tabeau	1	15,000	Ditto.
Benjamin Lyon	1½	22,500	Michilimackinac.
Jean Bte Guillon	2	30,000	Montreal.
Antoine Reilhe	½	7,500	Deurx Rivieres.
Etienne Campion	½	7,500	Montreal.
Joseph Sanquinet	½	7,500	Ditto.
Augustin Chabollier	1	15,000	Michilimackinac.
Jacynth Hamlin	¼	3,750	Ditto.
Joseph Graveille	½	7,500	Mississippi.
Alexis Hamlin & P. Autaya	1	75,000	Ditto.
Aleris Campion	½	7,500	Matchidash.
Pierre Chabollier	1	15,000	Grand Riviere.
Graham & Shedd	¼	3,750	La Riviere au Sable and Detroit.
André Roy	½	7,500	Mississippi.
Catin & Bendeau	1	15,000	Ditto & Montreal.
John McNamara	1	15,000	Michilimackinac.
Barthe, Lefevre & Bouropa	1	15,000	Sagina & the G. River.
	29½	438,750	

[B 97 2, p. 577.]

APPENDIX

VOLUME IX—SECOND EDITION.

The numbers in the left hand margin indicate the pages to which the notes refer.

PAGE.

34. Mr. Thompson was in the state senate of 1848 and 1849; the sixth senatorial district then consisted of the following counties: Oakland, Lapeer, Genesee, Saginaw, Shiawassee, Mackinaw and Chippewa. Tuscola county had not yet been organized.

159. In the files in the executive office at Lansing there is a very interesting document, probably not heretofore published, relative to these important elections; its value however must remain quite doubtful because it is not signed, and unfortunately is headed "Returns of the two conventions for Sept. and Dec., 1837,"—instead of 1836. But that this was a *lapsus calami* is very certain as there were no other conventions that would have been so paired for comparison; moreover the document is dated, May 9th, 1837.

Providing these figures, as shown by the following copy, are correct or even approximately so, a very different light is thrown upon the situation and the "Frost-bitten Convention" of December, 1836, is given a much more respectable position in history.

Although improbable, it is nevertheless possible, that this compilation is entirely a fabrication, or was altered and garbled to give the December convention more authority from the people that it could justly claim; there was certainly an adequate motive, as many were deeply interested in the immediate admission of the State into the Union and many were bitterly opposed, and in support of this hypothesis we have the significant absence of officially authentic returns of the elections.

The first page reads,—

Returns of the two conventions for Sept & Decr. 1837.

May 9th, 1837.

Names of Counties.	Number of votes.	
	December.	September.
Lapeer	115	112
Jackson	365	194
Branch	310	69
Macomb	000	344
Calhoun	494	140
Kalamazoo	361	248
Hillsdale	242	49
St. Joseph	130	000
Berrien	60	170
Saginaw	69	000
Cass	131	181
Lenawee	1102	485
Oakland	592	203
Wayne	1446	853
Washtenaw	1796	970
	Amt. 7213	Amt. 4018

PAGE.

The second page reads,—

Names of Counties.	Number of votes.	
	December.	*September.*
Amount brought over	7213	4018
Kent	400	191
Monroe	000	778
	Amt. 7613	Amt. 4987

Detroit May 9th 1837.

On the back it is endorsed,—

Returns of
votes for the
Sept. & Decr.
Conventions

May 9, 1837

A comparison of the above figures for Oakland County, with the figures given by the author shows a very wide discrepancy which invites a further investigation.

171. The Hurons were so called by the French; they called themselves Wyandots. The Indians here mentioned are probably a clan or other subdivision of the Wyandots.

206. S. M. Green was in the senate while William Poppleton was in the lower house. John S. Barry was never a member of the lower house and was not in the senate after 1841.

214. There was no officer of this name in the campaign of 1813 in the northwest, but Col. McArthur, later promoted to general, took a prominent part.

236. The Americans and not the English were called Chemokomon or Big Knives; the termination "ess" is a diminutive indicating little rather than young. In the Algonquin or Chippewa tongue *assinbo* is fox; *Wabashonce,* martin; *Naberquoin,* ship; *Isquamatch,* belly.

343. Guy Carleton was born in Ireland in 1724. He entered the military service when very young, and continued until retired by old age with many honors and a pension of £1,000 a year. Nearly all of his service was in America. He was at the battles of Louisbourg, Belleisle, Havana and others; many times wounded and steadily promoted in rank. He was nominated Knight of the Bath in 1776 and made Lord Dorchester in 1786. In 1772 he was first made Governor of Quebec, which place he held until succeeded by Haldimand. In 1782 he was appointed commander-in-chief of the British Army in America, and in 1786 he again became governor of Quebec in place of Haldimand, which place he held until succeeded by Maj. Gen. Prescott. He died in England in 1808.

344. Henry Hamilton was "Lieut. Gov. and Supt. of Indian Affairs" at Detroit. He was called "Hair-buying Hamilton" by the colonists, because they alleged that he paid the Indian so much each for settlers' scalps. He was certainly lavish in making presents to the Indians, and repeatedly reported having received scalps; in one of his letters to his superiors he reported the receipt of one hundred twenty-nine scalps, in another letter he recorded the delivery to him of eighty-five. After he was captured at Vincennes by Col. Clark and sent to Virginia in irons, he returned to England and came back to Canada as lieutenant governor, which office he held for a few months only, when he was succeeded by Henry Hope in 1785. He was governor of Bermuda from 1790 to 1794 and died at Antigua in 1796.

352. Frederick Haldimand was born Aug. 11th, 1718, in the Canton of Neuchâtel, Switzerland. When very young he is said to have been a cadet in the army of Charles Emanuel, king of Sardinia and afterwards served in the Army of the States General of Holland. In 1754 he, with Henry Boquet, left Holland and accepted a British commission, as commander of one of the battalions of Lord Loundons' regiment of Royal Americans. His first station was Philadelphia. He took an active and successful part in the conquest of Canada and remained in command at Three Rivers until transferred in 1765 to Pensacola, to take the place made vacant by the death of his friend, Col. Boquet. After six years in Florida he was promoted to major general and put in command

PAGE.

at New York,—a naturalized British citizen, fifty-five years of age. In 1775 he, with his command, was called to Boston by Gen. Gage, and shortly after went to England, where he remained for three years. In 1777, while in Switzerland, he received notification of his appointment as governor general of Quebec; he arrived at Quebec in July, 1778. After six years in Canada he was recalled to England, where he remained until his death in 1791. He never married; he was knighted in 1785.

352. Arent Schuyler De Peyster was a grandson of Abraham and a nephew of Peter De Peyster, who were so prominent in New York colonial history. He was born in 1736. In the war of 1755 he served under his uncle, Peter, and in the Revolutionary War held various commands. Notwithstanding his frequent complaints of ill health, he lived until 1832. In Scotland, in 1796, he commanded a regiment of volunteers, among whom was Robert Burns.

357. Fort Sackville, at Vincennes, was evacuated by Hamilton and his British garrison February 25, 1779, in accordance with terms of surrender dictated by Col. George R. Clark, who commanded the victorious Virginia militia. Hamilton was taken with other prisoners to Virginia. The following year he was permitted, by Gov. Jefferson, to go to New York and afterward was exchanged and returned to England.

369. Philip de Rochblave was surprised by the Virginians under Col. George R. Clark, and surrendered Fort Gage at Kaskaskia, July 4th, 1778, without firing a shot.

369. Capt James Willing was the officer who commanded the detachment that escorted a party of prisoners to Virginia.

378. This undoubtedly should be Father Pierre Gibault of Kaskaskia, the French priest who so effectively assisted Col. George R. Clark in gaining the sympathy and assistance of the Illinois Creoles.

381. This probably means fever and ague, providing it is intended for *malade du Pays*, that is, illness of the country.

383. Capt. Richard M'Carty commanded a company of "volunteers of the principal young men of the Illinois" at the capture of Fort Sackville at Vincennes. He had very recently left the British service.

388.[1] Capt. Robert George came up from New Orleans with forty men who had formerly been in the company commanded by Capt. James Willing, before he resigned and returned to Philadelphia.

388.[2] Capt. John Montgomery was with Col. Clark from the beginning of the campaign, but was sent back to Virginia with prisoners and returned with reinforcements and a commission as lieutenant colonel. He was killed by Indians in Kentucky in 1794.

388.[3] The italics are in the manuscript as well as in the first edition which suggests the boat rather than Capt. James Willing,—or Willings as it was frequently spelled. The boat, which was named after the captain, mounted two four-pound cannon and four swivel guns, and carried a crew of forty-six men.

389. Le Pè (Pay, Pee) was at the present site of Peoria.

391. This is a reference to Major Linetot of the Virginia militia, under Col. George R. Clark. Col. Clark's correspondence indicates that this expedition of Major Linetot's was designed to intimidate the Indians and deceive the British into the belief that an attack on Detroit was intended.

393. Jean Baptiste Point Sable was a free negro; at this time he had a trading post near Chicago on the Du Chemin (Calumet) river. He was held prisoner at Mackinac until the following July.

427. This place now called Bolivar, is in Tuscarawas county, Ohio. The stockade was called Fort Laurens.

431. Cornstalk, a Shawnee chief, was born about 1720 and died in 1777. In 1774 he was defeated in the battle of Point Pleasant where about 1,000 of his warriors were pitted against 1,100 Virginia militia; after this battle he signed a treaty of peace with Lord Dunmore. Later, when on a trip to inform settlers of the approach of a war party which he could not restrain, he was held by them as a hostage, during which time he was assassinated by some revengeful soldiers. A monument was erected to his memory in 1896 at Point Pleasant. (Hand Book of Am. Inds.)

435. Daniel Boone was born in Pennsylvania or Virginia in 1730; in his boyhood he went to North Carolina, where he married and lived until about 1770, when he went west to Kentucky. The Indians killed several of his family and took him prisoner many times. After years of toil and fighting he found that the land

PAGE.

that he had conquered from the wilderness and savages did not legally belong to him, so he sorrowfully moved westward to Missouri, where he died in 1820. Boone's account reads: "I and ten of my men were conducted by forty Indians to Detroit, where we arrived the thirtieth day, and were treated by Gov. Hamilton with great humanity. During our travels the Indians treated me well, and their affection for me was so great, that they utterly refused to leave me there with the others, although the governor offered them one hundred pounds sterling for me, on purpose to give me a parole to go home."

523. This letter was accompanied by sketches and an explanation which were omitted through an oversight, but may be found in Vol. X, page 390.

581. The Mingoes (from the Algonquin word *mingive* meaning stealthy), were Iroquois who had moved westward from New York. From the fact that they were frequently called Senecas, it is probable that that tribe predominated, but they were certainly not all Senecas. In 1800, a part of the Cayugas who had sold their land in New York, came to Mingo Town in Ohio. In 1831 part of them went to Kansas and from there to Indian Territory.

650. This fort was at the head of Green Bay in Wisconsin. The bay was then called La Baye des Puans, from which the Indians thereabouts received the name Paunts or Stinkards; the earlier French name, however, was La Baye des eaux des Puantes, from the odor of the water. (Parkman.)

INDEX

INDEX

BY MRS. M. B. FERREY.

Abbey, —, Dr., Clarkston, 63.

Abbot, Theophilus C., president Michigan Agricultural College, 93, 96; address cited, 95.

Abbott, —, Indian fur trader, accused of violating license, 468.

Abbott, Edward, Lieut. Gov., Detroit, 436, 480, 494; at Indian council, 442; letters from, 488, 489; reported Post St. Vincennes, 434.

Abbott, James, Judge, built Goodrich House, Ann Arbor, 142.

Abel, Julius C., Grand Rapids attorney, 254.

Achenbach, W., Rev., Grand Rapids, 301.

Acssa-yen, chief at Detroit in council 1778 with Gov. Hamilton, 443.

Adam, John Johnstone, M. A., delegate from society to Michigan semi-centennial, 218.

Adams, Charles Francis, Jr., Boston, bid in Chicago & Lake Shore Railway, 279.

Adams, Charles Kendall, president Cornell University, 66; at University of Michigan, 92.

Adams, James, Mrs., Centreville, death reported, 77.

Adams, John Quincy, sixth president United States, appointed T. L. L. Brent charge d'affairs at Lisbon, Portugal, 193.

Adams, Mary Martha, Mrs., Burr Oak, death reported, 76.

Adams, Wales, Coldwater, ensign in Black Hawk War, 174.

Adams, Walter, 162.

Adhemar, 505. See St. Martin.

Adrian College, 93.

Agriculture, in Ottawa county, 261.

Aimable, 368, 581. See Amable Chevalier.

Ainse (Ains, Ainsea), Joseph, interpreter, Mackinac, 377, 581; confined in fort as prisoner, 569; discharged by Gen. Haldimand, 576; retired from army, 545, 546; sent to St. Joseph, 560.

Ainsley (Ansley), Amos, Detroit, master carpenter, pay of, 647.

Aird, James, interpreter, canoe licensed, 362; commended by De Peyster, 386.

Aird, Robert Michel, licensed trader, invoice 1778, 650.

Akeley (Akely), H. C., Grand Haven, bank director, 285; publisher, 297.

Akikenamazac, home of Ange, 658.

Albee, Clark B., Grand Haven, merchant and pioneer, 234, 238, 243, 251, 281; death recorded, 334; helped in building first court house, 294; litigation, 256; owned scow Crook, 283.

Albee, C. B., Mrs., death reported, 332.

Albert (Polliwog), boat, 104.

Albion College, former name, 93.

Alcott (Olcott) —, pioneer teacher, 94.

Alden, Irene (Mrs. Roland Root), 21.

Aldrich, —, Mrs., one of Ypsilanti faculty, 92.

Algee —, Quebec, named as vessel inspector, 439.

Alger, I. P., Dr., Coldwater, delegate Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.

Alger, Josiah H., Troy, death reported, 60.

Alger, Russell A., general and governor, Michigan, 23.

Allegan county memorial report, 17, 18.

Allen, —, Mrs., Coldwater, 22.

Allen, —, Jackson pioneer, 49.

Allen, Agnes B. (Mrs. H. Allen), daughter-in-law Ethan Allen, on first tax roll Ottawa county, 264.

Allen, Amasa C., Hillsdale, death reported, 40.

Allen, Ethan, son resident Ottawa county, 264.

Allen, H. S., Mrs., Lawrence, death reported, 79.

Allen, Hannibal, Capt., death reported, 264.

Allen, Menton F., Buchanan, death reported, 19.

Alpena, boat shipwrecked 1880, 284, 298.

Alting, —, professor university Groningen, 304.

Amable, 368. See Amable Chevalier.

Amanda, large lake boat, 283.

Americans, captured stores, 358; English

defense against, 477; English raise war troops against, 575; given Indian belt, 486.
American Fur Co., agents in Ottawa county, 280; at Saginaw, 137; posts established, 235.
American Hotel, Detroit, 193.
Amiable, 397, 585. See Amable Chevalier.
Ammunition, at Mackinac, 653, 654.
Amusements, early, 126.
Anderson, James, Hillsdale, death reported, 39.
Anderson, John, Centreville, death reported, 75.
Andre, P. C., Saginaw, 71.
Andrews, —, belonging to British navy 1777, 351.
Andrews, —, Pipestone, death reported, 18.
Andrews, James, Capt., recommended to Gen. Carleton, 438.
Andrus, William, Jonesville, death reported, 38.
Ange, Michel (Michelle), merchant at Mackinac, 658.
Angel, —, Ottawa pioneer, 251.
Angelica (Anglesea), sloop, 430, 437, 582, 597, 599; reported at Detroit, 606.
Angell, Daniel, pioneer Lamont fruit grower, 268.
Angell, David, Ottawa pioneer farmer, 263.
Angell, Esic. Lamont pioneer fruit grower, 263, 268.
Anglesea, 582. See Angelica.
Ani mi kai me, Chippewa chief at council Gov. Hamilton 1778, 442.
Ann Arbor, history of St. Andrews church, 20; organization of, 142; schools and officers, 94.
An-qua sa ca, chief at council Detroit, 452.
Ansley, Amos, 484, 647. See Amos Ainsley.
Ansook, Barbery, Colon, death reported, 77.
Ante Mortem, poem, 63.
Anthon, George Christian, Dr., recommended for surgeon, 411, 412.
Antioch College, early president, 95.
A pach aince, Chippewa chief, 442.
A pa quaash, Chippewa, chief at council Detroit 1778, 442.
Apostle Islands, location, 111.
Appendix, for references see pages 34, 171, 206, 214, 236, 343, 344, 352, 357, 369, 378, 381, 383, 388, 389, 393, 427, 431, 435, 523, 581, 650.
Apples used for payment on bond, 211.
Appropriations for securing original manuscript, 16.
Arbecroche, Ottawa Indian village, 655.
Arch, Phoebe, Montgomery, death reported, 39.
Archangel, boat, 493.
Ari-ouanda-tong, Huron chief at council 1778, 443.
Arms, James B., Webster, death reported, 83.
Armstrong, Lucina, death reported, 54.
Armstrong, Theodore C., West Bloomfield, death reported, 60.
Arnold, J. H., Eaton Rapids, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Artillery Royal, reported and pay of, 484.
Askin, John, Sr., trader at Mackinac and Detroit, 541, 567, 579, 581, 588, 603, 617, 622; accused of falsehood, 577; boast of, 564; broke trade rules, 578; commissary general at Mackinac, report of, 1779, 599, 655, 656; commissary provisions, Mackinac, asks settlement, 574, 575; defended by De Peyster, 599; fortified Mackinac, 545; letter to, 368, 369; settled account, 555; slandered by Sinclair, 610; trouble with Sinclair, 627.
Askin, John, Mrs., and children, passenger on Welcome, 602.
Assessor, salary 1777, 350.
Astor, John Jacob, trader, 237.
Atkins, Esther, Mrs., death reported, 17.
Atlantic, lake boat, 184.
Atwell, Charles, Hanover, death reported, 47.
Austin, Phoebe, Mrs., death reported, 57.
Autaya, P., merchant, 658.
Auton, Sabra, Mrs., Paw Paw, 81.
Avery, Fanny L., Mrs., Grand Rapids, death reported, 13.
Avery, J. C., Grand Haven, jeweler, 281.
Avery, Noyes L., Grand Rapids, committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Awls, in garrison supplies, 471.
Ayliffe, William, death reported, 78.

Babcock, Eliza, Niles, death reported, 18.
Baby, Duperon, captain and interpreter Detroit 1778, 470; at Indian council, Detroit, 442; Indian commissary, 418, 419; suspected, 411.
Baden, 134. See Badin.
Badin (Baden), Vincent, Rev., vicar general at Detroit, 134.
Bagley, John J., governor Michigan, 26, 188.
Bailey, —, Jackson pioneer, 49.
Bailey, Jarvis, Mr. and Mrs., 193, 194.
Baker, —, Judge, Norwalk, Ohio, 20.
Baker, A., soldier, signed complaint, 594.
Baker, Ella, music by, 7, 9.
Baker, Ephraim Ransom, death reported, 37.
Baker, Henry B., Lansing, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Baker, Hiram H., Amboy, death reported, 40.
Baker, James J., Ransom, death reported, 38.
Baker, Joab, pioneer lawyer, DeWitt sketch, 27.

Baker, John gave memorials Tuscola county, 77.
Baker, L. A., music by, 7.
Bakus, Anso, Mrs., Adrian, death reported, 58.
Baldie, John W., Ionia, 44.
Baldwin, —, Dr., Spring Lake, 333.
Baldwin, Charles, Pontiac, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Baldwin, Elizabeth (Mrs. W. W. Wolcott), 32, 49.
Baldwin, Henry P., governor Michigan, 26; appointed fire relief committee for Holland, 339.
Ballard, Appleton, Lansing, death reported, 42.
Ballard, Etienne, Detroit 1778, smith, 470.
Ballard, James, Rev., memoir given society, 10.
Bancroft, William L., Port Huron, delegate for society Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Bankashaws, Indian nation, 480.
Banker, Margaretha B. (Mrs. Schmidt), 73.
Baptist, Jean, bills due by Col. Clarke, 531.
Baptiste, Point au Sable (negro), arrested by Lt. Bennett, 393, 395. See appendix.
Barbarin, George, Freeland, 70.
Barbarin, William, Freeland, death reported, 70.
Barber, —, pioneer Ottawa county, 251.
Barber & Mason, built enterprise, 282.
Bardstoun, See of, 129.
Bark, early price of, 263.
Barker, George M., Georgetown, 253.
Barker, James, soldier Mackinac 1780, 595.
Barker, Josiah, Col., Detroit, pay of, 648.
Barnard, Emily, Miss, organist, 7.
Barnard, Richard, Mrs., Constantine, death reported, 76.
Barnes, —, Dr., Grand Haven, 332.
Barnes, —, Mrs., Jonesville, death reported, 39.
Barnes, Ebenezer, Grand Haven, 281, 283.
Barnes, Ezra, Parma, death reported, 47.
Barnes (Barns), James, Grand Haven, publisher, 296, 333.
Barnes (Barns) & Angel, Grand Haven, 297; built jail, 293.
Barnes (Barns), John W. and James, Grand Haven, publishers, 296, 333.
Barnes, O. M., delegate Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Barnes (Barns), & Angel, Grand Haven, publishers, 296.
Barney, Susan, death reported, 54.
Barnhart, Jacob, Scipio, death reported, 37.
Barns. See Barnes.
Barns, M. G., Coopersville, editor, 299.
Barns, R. C., Mrs., poem, 341, 342.
Barns, number in Detroit 1773, 649.
Barnum, James, Niles, death reported, 19.
Barnum, William, Wayne county, death reported, 60.
Baron, —, French officer, appointed major, 475.
Barracks, report at Detroit 1778, 472.
Barrett, Peter, soldier, signed complaint, 594.
Barrett, boat on Grand River, 285.
Barry John Stewart, governor Michigan, 109, 110, 188; addressed Indians La Pointe, 114; member legislature, 206; see appendix; witnessed war dance, 112.
Barthe, —, St. Mary (Soo), 384, 622; trip to Superior, 643-646.
Barthe, Jean (John), Baptiste, trader and merchant, 566, 584; at Mackinac, invoice of goods 1778, 650, 658.
Barthe, Louison (Lewison), 617, 622, 625, 643; bail demanded for, 624; spoke Indian, 623; taken prisoner, 626.
Bartlett, Benjamin, Eaton Rapids, death reported, 30.
Bartlett, Benjamin, Mrs. (Eunice Hunt), 30.
Bartlett, Edward, Dr., sketch, 62-64.
Bartlett, Richard, Dr., Independence, death reported, 60.
Barton, John, Flint, law partnership, 34.
Bascom, Abigail Stor (Mrs. R. M. Griswold), 31.
Basins, pewter furnished Indians, 471.
Bassett. James T., Jefferson, death reported, 38.
Bassett, Ira, Lodi, death reported, 82.
Batchelor, —, U. S., soldier, 166.
Bateman, R. P., 41.
Bateman, R. P., Mrs. (Hannah E. Poppleton), death recorded, 207.
Bates, —, Dr., Spring Lake, 333.
Bates, George C., Leadville, colonel, death reported, 13; member State Pioneer Society, 13; sketch, 87.
Bates, Kenzie, Major, death reported, 87.
Baton Rouge Post, captured by Spanish and French, 537.
Batteau, Campinis, trader, 363.
Batteaux (Batteaus), 648. See Boats.
Battle Creek, how named, 7; price of lots, 49.
Baubin. See Beaubin.
Bauker, Margaretha B., 73. See Margaretha B. Banker.
Baulon, Hypolite, messenger, 498.
Bausman, John I., Rev., death reported, 143, 153, 154.
Baxter, Witter J., Jonesville, v, xii, 9, 10, 23, 218; address at Michigan Semi-Centennial, 219-221; committee Historical Pioneer Society, viii; eulogized Judge Wells, 6.
Bayes Thomas, Stevensville, death reported, 18.

Bay ma ma ki tunk, Potawatomie chief in council 1778, 443.
Beach, Samuel E., Col., letter from, 211-212.
Beadner, Edward, Mrs., Ann Arbor, death reported, 84.
Beale, Samuel, Detroit, bills of, 648.
Beaman, Fernando C., 190.
Bear, Samuel, White Pigeon, death reported, 75.
Beardsley, Elijah H., Buchanan, death reported, 18.
Beaton, David, Captain, Ottawa, 345.
Beattie, Nathaniel, sketch, 43.
Beattie, Nathaniel, Mrs. (Catherine Wallace), 43.
Beaubien (Baubin), Charles, interpreter at the Miamee 1778, 470; attends councils Detroit, 442, 452; brought reports from rebellion, 475, 479, 481, 641; control of traders, 486; scout, 435; treachery of, 498.
Beaubien, Jean Baptiste, Lieut., Detroit, 1778, 473.
Beaulon, —, Major, in command at Vincennes, 488.
Beaver Creek, location, 427.
Beaver Island, description, 106.
Beavers, never molested by Indians or traders, 493.
Bechtel, F., Grand Haven, 293.
Beck, Samuel, Lansing, death reported, 42.
Becquet, —, Sieur, 436.
Bedding, list at Detroit barracks 1778, 472.
Beek, price, 280.
Beer de, D., Rev., 307, 311.
Beers, J. V. Rev., Worcester, Mass., opened female seminary, Detroit, 93.
Begole, Fox & Co., mill, Flint, 36.
Begole, Josiah W., governor Michigan, committee on nominations, 6; gave Genesee memorials, 6, 32; remarks, 8; vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 5.
Beidler, F. P., Rev., Holland teacher, 327.
Belcher, Elisha W., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrews' church, 142.
Belcour, —, British agent, 600.
Bell, A. F., Ionia, 46.
Bellecour, Francis, passenger on Welcome, 657.
Bellefeuille, Antoine, interpreter, 473; carried letters to Gov. Hamilton, 402, 405; pay of, 484, 647, 648; prisoner of the Americans, 513; recommended as surveyor bridges, 474.
Belle (Hog Island, Isle au Cochon), disputed ownership, 352; inhabitants reinstated, 422; ordered cultivated by Haldimand, 638; petition regarding, 463; report made, 461; sketch of, sent to Haldimand, 641.
Bellestre, Francois Marie Picote de, commandant of Detroit, 487.
Bello, Michael, clerk to Durrand fur trader, 531.
Bellows, C. F. R., principal Constantine schools, 95.
Belts, Indian colors show colonization, 486; 546; given by Gov. Hamilton to Wyandotts, 450; given Hurons described, 444, 445; sent by De Peyster to Indians, 370, 371; sent by Virginians to Indians, 380.
Benclo, —, Canadian, purchasing horses, 381.
Benedict, Delia E., Detroit, death reported, 60.
Benet, Lt., 356. See Bennett.
Bengsew-abrine, 581.
Benham, W. S., Grand Haven editor, lost on Alpena, 298.
Benjamin, William, Holland editor, 296.
Bennett, C., Adrian, death reported, 57.
Bennett (Benet), Thomas, lieutenant and adjutant King's Regiment, 356, 367, 391, 394, 578; employed timber cutters, 652; letter quoted, 392, 393; report of, 392, 395-397, 552; sent to intercept Linetot, 390.
Bennett, Thomas, Mrs., at Mackinac, 394.
Bentley, James, soldier war 1812, detained as dangerous, 403; escaped from prison, 570; in charge of boats Catawba river, 432; letters cited, 640; search of ordered, 476; supplied ammunition, 437.
Berlin Station, 276.
Berridge, Addie, musical director, 5.
Berridge, Lena, gave music, 8.
Berry, Abram V., Col., Jackson, death reported, 48; made first bar Lake Superior iron, sketch, 53.
Berry, James, Adrian, death reported, 58.
Bertellet, Francis, Lieut., Detroit 1778, 473.
Berthe, 556. See Barthe.
Besley, William, St. Johns, biography, 13, 28; member State Pioneer Society, 13.
Betton, —, Capt., visited Detroit, 475.
Betts, Silas, Niles, superintendent of schools, 95.
Bey de, D., Rev., 312.
Bickford, Phebe, Mrs., owned first ballot box used in Branch county, 216.
Biesel, George, Jr., White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
Biggs, —, Dr., Grand Haven, 333.
Big Knives, Indian name for Americans, 236, 457. See appendix.
Bills, William, Hudson, death reported, 57.
Bills, for nails Michilimackinac, 651; public of Gov. Hamilton at Detroit, 647.
Bilz, Aloys, Spring Lake editor, 299.
Bingham, Stephen D., Lansing, on executive committee, xii; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial celebration, 218.
Binnehant, J., Holland editor, 297.
Binnehant (Binnehaut), M., Holland publisher, 296.

Binns, Joseph, Rollin, death reported, 58.
Bird, Henry, lieutenant and captain 8th Regiment, 414, 428, 559, 638, 639; brought reinforcements, 487; departure of, 582; engineer at Mackinac, 630; expedition, 583, 585, 635; letter from, 584.
Bird, Reuben L., Clayton, death reported, 57.
Birmingham, formerly Piety Hill, 169.
Biron, Joseph, Montreal, licensed trader, 650.
Bishop, Henry, Kalamazoo, gave Kalamazoo memorial reports, 6, 54; vice president State Pioneer Society, xi.
Bishop, Levi, committee on resolutions Judge Goodrich's death, 186.
Bishop, Wilmer, Ionia, 45.
Bishops, four nations represented by Detroit, 128.
Blackbirds, pest of farmers, 126.
Black Hawk war, 122, 123.
Blacker, Thomas, Ridgeway, death reported, 57.
Blackman, —, Jackson pioneer, 49.
Blackman, Sewell E., Adams, death reported, 38.
Blair, Austin, governor Michigan, 49, 52, 190, 198; appointed Col. Thomson on staff, 34; commissioner George W. Fish surgeon 4th Cavalry, 198.
Blanchard, B. W., Rev., death reported, 42.
Blankets required at Mackinac for Indians, 561; for Indian trade, 471.
Blasius, Barbara, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Blatchley, Matilda, Mrs., Scipo, death reported, 37.
Blendon township, Ottawa county, organized, 255.
Block House, Mackinac Island, described, 538-540.
Blomer, Capt., at Natchez, 497.
Blount, Henry, Allen, death reported, 37.
For boats see Albert (Polliwog), Alpena, Amanda, Angelica, Angelina, Anglesea, Archangel, Atlantic, Caroline, Champion, City of Milwaukee, Commerce, Crook, Barrett, Daniel Ball, Detroit, Drover, Dunmore, Duncan, E. B. Morgan, Elisha Bliss, Emeline, Enterprise, Faith, Felecity, Gage, Gazelle, Governor Mason, H. C. Akeley, Henry Clay, Hope, Humming Bird, Hunter Savage, Illinois, Ironsides, Julia Smith, L. G. Mason London, Macy, Magic, Mayor Anderson, Manhattan, Maria, Mary Bell, Meshawaukee, Michigan, Michigan Belle, Milwaukee, Monticello, New Era, New Hampshire, Noah Ferry, Ocean, Olive Branch, Olive Richmond, Ottawa, Owastanouk, Paragon, Pioneer, Pochantos, Romulus, St. Joseph, Scrage, Sebastapol, Superior, Telegraph, Tempest, Troy, United States, Vermont, Victory, Welcome, Wellington R. Burt, Wisconsin, Wyandotte (Wiandot), Wyman.
Boats (batteaus), number at Detroit 1779, 648.
Bobie, —, probably Lieut. Beaubin, British officer, 393.
Boer, G. E., Rev., Holland editor, 298.
Boise, James R., professor University of Michigan, 92.
Boisquet, —, Col., 421.
Bolivar, Ohio, location, 427. See appendix.
Bolks, S., Rev., pioneer Overisel, 308, 311.
Bolles, Hannah, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.
Bolles, Rachael, Hillsdale, death reported, 39.
Bolt, John, Grand Haven, planted orchard, 268, 332.
Bolton, Mason, Lieutenant Colonel, 351, 353, 356, 360, 366, 378, 382, 408, 411-413, 415-417, 436, 461, 462, 474, 491, 542, 580, 583, 585, 591, 609, 611, 615, 630, 633, 634, 638; at Niagara, 421, 422; attack against threatened, 415; designated by Gov. Hamilton to take charge Indian supplies, 408; letter from Lieutenant Clowes, 621; letter from De Peyster, 614; letter from Capt. Grant, 606; letter from Lernoult, 411; letters to Gen. Haldimand, 427-430; not in need of provisions, 538; reports from, 407, 411, 440; superior military officer of posts, 400, 401.
Bond, Barney, death reported, 27.
Bond, Phoebe, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.
Bond, exacted of fur trader, 531; queer payments on, 210, 211.
Bondy, Joseph, Lieutenant, Detroit 1778, 470, 473; pay, 485.
Boone, Daniel, Capt., taken prisoner by Shawnese, 435, 464.
Boone, J. H., committee relief of Holland fire sufferers, 339; sketch, see appendix, 435.
Booth, —, Onondaga, only white man Ingham county, 49.
Boquet, Henry, English officer, 532. See appendix.
Borgers, H., Rev., Holland, 312.
Borgess, Casper H., Rt. Rev. Dr. Bishop, Detroit, 136.
Bos, E., Rev., 306.
Bosseron (Bosserou), —, Jr., (Qunior), Capt., at Vincennes suspected of treachery, 436, 480, 498.
Bosseron, Qunior, 480. See Bosseron, Junior.
Bostwick, Henry, Indian trader at Mackinac, 550, 617, 658; petitioned removal fort, 557; signs memorial, protection trade, 550.
Bosworth, Edward F., Georgetown pioneer, 255.

Bothwell, Bill, landlord Thompson House, Jackson, 49.

Botsford, George H. North Adams, superintendent schools, 96.

Boulder, uncovered in Ottawa county, 259.

Bounty offered Indians by British, 347.

Bourbounois, —, Miami chief, given war belt, 445.

Bouropa, —, merchant, 658.

Boutwell, —, Brother, 160, 161.

Bower, John, Mendon, death reported, 75.

Bowman, Capt., at surrender Fort Vincennes, 503.

Boyce, Sherman H., Grand Haven bank director, 285.

Boyd, E. J., Rev., president young ladies' seminary, Monroe, 93, 95.

Boyd, Thomas, 162.

Brackett, Edgar D., Charlotte, death reported, 31.

Bradley, —, U. S. consul Ningpo, 197.

Bradley, Thomas C., Three Oaks, death reported, 19.

Branch, Eaton, gave Van Buren memorial reports, 6, 78.

Branch, Israel, Deacon, 177.

Branch county, memorial report, 19-26; pioneer society furnished paper State Society, 172-175.

Brandwell, William H., Litchfield, death reported, 37.

Brant, Joseph, ally of English and protected by, 424.

Brant, Molly, protected by English, 424.

Bread, need of at Detroit, 581.

Brebane, John, in Capt. Lamothe's company, pay of, 647.

Brehm, D., Capt., and aid de camp Haldimand, ix, 357, 388, 423, 424, 554, 573, 575; letters from Lieutenant Clowes, 607, 610; letters from De Peyster, 386, 387; letter to Maj. De Peyster, 412, 413; letters to Gen. Haldimand, 410-423; letters to and from Gov. Sinclair, 532, 533-538, 543, 544, 552, 555, 556, 574, 575, 607, 610-612; sent to Detroit, 406, 407.

Brent, Charlotte, 193, 194; married tenant, 195.

Brent, Henry, 193-196.

Brent, Richard, U. S. senator Virginia, 192.

Brent, Thomas Ludwell Lee, biography, 192-196.

Brent, Thomas L. L., Mrs., 193-196.

Briand, Seigneur, requested to cause Gibault's arrest, 539.

Bridge, log at Cleveland, 163.

Bridgowan, Samuel, soldier, signed complaint, 594.

Briggs, Catherine, Sturgis, death reported, 75.

Briggs, Daniel B., superintendent public instruction, 94.

Brigham, Philip M. D., original member St. Andrew's church, 142, 143.

British order for lake vessel 1777, 348. See also English.

Britten, George A., Essex, suicide of, 27.

Britten, Jacob, death reported, 27.

Britten, Nathaniel, death reported, 27.

Britton, Amanda, Mrs., death reported, 48.

Britton, William, Mrs., Macon, death reported, 56.

Broadhead, Thornton F., Col. (Thorn), viii; died in south, last words, 183; last letter of, 208-209.

Broadley, Thomas, White Pigeon, death reported, 76.

Broek, D., Rev., 307, 312.

Broek, John, Rev., 310.

Broene, G. Rev., 310.

Bronson, Jabez, first town meeting held at, 173.

Bronson township organization, 173.

Brooke (Brook, Brooks), R. B., lieutenant 8th Regiment British army, 596, 601, 603, 607; given charge of boats, 532; paymaster Mackinac, 592, 599; refused obedience, 598; signed complaint, 595.

Brooks, Edward S., colonel in Black Hawk war, 122.

Brooks, John, Mrs., Rome, death reported, 58.

Bross, H., Newaygo, 96.

Brown, —, Dr., Spring Lake, 333.

Brown, —, Rev., Goodrich, 187.

Brown, —, Misses, Lansing, 5.

Brown, Archibald, Fairfield, death reported, 58.

Brown & Britten, Grandville, lumber mill, 252.

Brown, Cullen, Detroit, 86.

Brown, E. Lakin, Schoolcraft, delegate Michigan Semi-Centennial celebration, 218.

Brown, Edward, drove stock from Detroit to Saginaw, 123.

Brown, Francis S., Sturgis, death reported, 77.

Brown, Henry H., Mendon, death reported, 75.

Brown, James, Jamestown, 255.

Brown, John (Yankee), Saginaw, 126.

Brown, Lizzie, gave vocal solo, 5, 6.

Brown, M. V., Mrs. (Fannie Hewitt), St. Johns, sketch, 27.

Brown, Rebecca S., Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.

Brown, S. F., Schoolcraft, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.

Brown, William G., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrews' church, 142, 143.

Brown county, extent of, 73.

Brownell, Amelia, Rollin, death reported, 58.

Bruersma, A., Rev., 312.

Brute, —, Rt. Rev. Dr., Cincinnati, consecrated Bishop Reze, 134.
Bruyn de, J. A., Rev., 307.
Bruyn De, R. M., Rev., Zeeland, teacher, 328.
Bryan, Samuel, 162.
Bryant, Huldah, Burr Oak, death reported, 76.
Bryant, William Cullen, editor New York Evening Post, 200.
Brymner, Douglas, archivist, Ottawa, Can., iv.
Buckner, S. D., Orion, death reported, 60.
Budlong, Philo H., Harbor Springs, death reported, 13.
Buel, Alexander W., attorney, member on resolutions on death Judge Goodrich, 186.
Buell, Don Carlos, major general, 198.
Buffalo, Chippewa chief at La Pointe, 111, 112; speech to Gov. Barry, 114.
Buffalo, N. Y., burning cited, 29; headquarters for territorial surveys, 101.
Buffalo Historical Society, gift to Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10.
Buffalo to Michigan 1829, paper by F. A. Dewey, 161-166.
Bugbee, P. S., Osseo, death reported, 40.
Building of Ottawa county, 292-295; saved in Holland fire, 337.
Bulger, Joseph, Litchfield, death reported, 40.
Bullard, Ransom, Litchfield, death reported, 39.
Bunday, Warner, Litchfield, death reported, 38.
Burch, —, Ottawa county pioneer fruit grower, 268.
Burch, Electa, Commerce, death reported, 60.
Burdsley, L., Georgetown pioneer, 255.
Burgy, Christian, cost of coroner's inquests, 657; notary public 1780, 620.
Bürmeister, W., Rev., 301.
Burnett, C. C., Capt., 582.
Burns, Ebenezer, vessel owner, 283.
Burns, Robert, Scotland, member De Peyster's company, see appendix, 352.
Burr, James D., White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
Burr, Laura E., Lansing, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Burr Oak, principal high school, 95.
Burrows, Julius Caesar, U. S. senator, former principal Richland Seminary, 93.
Burt, E., Mrs., Concord, death reported, 47.
Burt, John and wife, account of wedding given society, 11.
Burton, Freeman, Georgetown pioneer, 255.
Bury, Richard, Rev., Detroit, Episcopal minister, 142.
Busbee, Stephen, Benton Harbor, death reported, 19.
Busby, James, soldier Black Hawk war, 122; married Miss Malden, 124.
Busby, James, Mrs. (Miss Malden), 124.
Busby, Joseph, gave pioneer experiences, 118-128; member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10.
Bush, Isaac N., Howell, 9; member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10; vice president society, xi.
Bush, John T., Buffalo, N. Y., attorney, 180, 182.
Buswell & Wyman, 283.
Butler, —, Col., British officer, 423-426, 428, 436, 474; commanded expedition five nations, 401; sent belt to Lake Indians, 434.
Butler, Adelia Saxton, Mrs., sketch, 79, 80.
Butler, Harvey, Orion, death reported, 60.
Button & Munsell, Hillsdale, merchants, 41.
Butts & Hathaway, built first mill Grand Haven, 283.

Cadet, —, 384.
Cadillac, Antoine de la (Motte) Mothe, detained at Quebec, 398, 399.
Cadle, Richard F., Episcopal rector, Detroit, first missionary, 141, 142.
Cadotte (Cadôt), Jean Baptiste, Sr., interpreter, lieutenant in British Indian department, 584, 644; commended for influence with Indians and oratory, 530, 545, 563; educated son for priesthood, 533, 537; hired fisherman for fort, 541; letter intercepted to, 577; lieutenant sent to Scioux country, 542.
Cadotte (Cadôt), Jean Baptiste, Jr., educated for priest, 533, 537.
Cahée, —, Sieur, employment and wages of, 362. See also Calve.
Cahokias, Indian tribe, attacked Spanish, 558.
Caldwell, William, colonel and captain Butler's Rangers, 345; destroyed cargo of wrecked Chippowey, 467; present Indian council, 442-458.
Calhoun county, formerly Green township, 173.
Calimancoe, presented to Indians, 471.
Calumet (Du Chemin), river; see appendix, 431.
Calvé (Calvé, Cahée), J., interpreter, 362, 363, 364, 366, 530, 558; accused of treachery, 549, 558, 568, 570, 586; recommended for duty and pay, 385.
Calveé & Roque, interpreters, 366.
Calvert, —, Sieur, 359.
Camburn, Joseph, 162.
Camfile, —, Lt. Col., 376. See Lt. Col. Campbell.
Campau, —, near Flint, 123.
Campeau, Jacques, resigned as captain, 473.
Campeau, Jean Baptiste, appointed captain, 473.

Campau (Wa gu she), Louis, Indian trader, Grand Rapids, 235; built warehouse at Grand Haven, 280; Indian name for, 236.
Campbell, —, English brigadier general, 541, 547.
Campbell, James V., Judge, Detroit, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Campbell, John, Lt. Col., British soldier at Detroit, 423, 568; visits posts at Niagara and Detroit, 357, 359, 363.
Campbell, Martha, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.
Campbell, Robert R., death reported, 54.
Campbell's tavern, Detroit, 162.
Campion, Alexis (Alerr), trader, licensed at Mackinac, 386, 629, 658; goods invoiced 1778, 650.
Campion, Eteinne, Montreal, licensed trader, 650, 658.
Canada increase fur trade, 562.
Canadians, conduct denounced, 504; loyalty to English, 397; pronounced rebels, 430; traders jealous of English, 563.
Canadian archives, Ottawa, Haldimand papers copied, 343-658.
Capitol, Detroit, farewell to, 9.
Cappen & Bertsch, Holland, tannery, 335.
Captain James, 450. See James, Captain.
Cardinal, Francois La Point, storekeeper, Mackinac, 658.
Cardinal, Joseph, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473; prisoner, 628.
Cardinal, Nicolas, captain carried flag of truce to Gov. Hamilton, 499.
Carey, J. F., Prof., Ypsilanti Normal, 95.
Cargo on board Welcome, 657.
Carleton, Guy, Sir (Lord Dorchester), governor and general, ix, 370, 374, 376, 377, 398, 399, 467, 468, 473, 490, 527, 530, 545, 553, 584; gave Langlade commission, 545; general orders and circular, 343, 345; letters from Gov. Abbott, 488, 489; letter from De Peyster, 365, 366; letters from Gov. Hamilton, 430-460; letter to Gov. Hamilton, 343-352; trade regulations, 466; sketch, see appendix, 343.
Carleton, Guy, Mrs. (Lady Dorchester), 433.
Carleton Island, attack on planned, 420.
Carmel, first town meeting in, 31.
Carmichael, A. C., Benton Harbor, death reported, 18.
Carmichael, Charles, Wheatland, death reported, 37.
Caroline, lumber vessel, 282.
Carp River, former name of Marquette, 110, 111.
Carpenter, M. Irwin, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Carr, Archibald F., Ionia merchant, 44.
Carrel, William P., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.
Carson, Levi H., Rev., sketch, 41.
Carson Levi H., Mrs., 41.
Carthage water supply inspected, 199.
Carts, taken on Hamilton's expedition, 409.
Carty, 383. See McCarty.
Carver, David, Grand Haven, 281.
Casement, Charles, Constantine, death reported, 76.
Cass, Lewis, Gen., governor of Michigan, 188; statue placed in National Capitol Hall of Statuary, 67.
Cass River (Huron of the North), named for Gen. Cass, 171.
Cassety, James, Lieut., Detroit 1778, 473; censured by Hamilton, 479.
Catholic, history of Detroit diocese given, 128-137.
Cattin & Bendeau, Montreal, merchants at Michilimackinac, 658.
Cattle, number at Detroit 1778, 470; protection from wolves, 164.
Catton, Thomas, Mrs., White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
Cayugas, Indian tribe, see appendix, 581.
Cedar, shingles made from, 640.
Celoron de, —, commandant at Ouiattanon 1778, 470, 486; accused of desertion, 495; commission asked for, 469; gave belts to Ouabash Indians, 459, 460; gave false news, 493; letter cited, 434, 475, 477, 480.
Census, of Detroit 1773, 649; of 1778, 469.
Center House, Bridgeport hotel, 65.
Cerré (Cerres), —, Mr., Kaskasquias, letter cited, 485.
Chabert, François, Lt., Detroit 1778, 470; messenger from Gov. Hamilton to Gen. Carleton, 459, 460; pay, 484.
Chabert, Joncaire (Jencaise), Lt., Detroit, pay, 484.
Chaboillier (Chaboilley), Augustin, merchant, Mackinac, 658; signs memorial for trade protection, 550.
Chaboillier, Louis, trader, goods invoiced, 650.
Chaboillier, Pierre, trader at Michilimackinac, 658.
Cha ha, Ouiattonon war chief, speech at council, Detroit, 453, 457, 458.
Chaloner, —, lake captain, of pioneer, 283.
Chambers, —, Mrs. Florence, death reported, 75.
Chaminitawaa (Chamintawaa), Ottawa village chief at counsel Detroit 1778, 442, 483; speech to Gov. Hamilton, 447, 448,
Champion, Charles, Coldwater, 22.
Champion, lake vessel, 283.
Champlain, Samuel de, pamphlets on, given to society, 10.
Champlin, Francis, Hamlin, death reported, 30.
Chance la, 436. See La Chance.
Chandler, Albert, 20.
Chandler, Rebecca, Riga, death reported, 59.

Chandler, Zachariah, 26, 190.
Chandonet (L'Chandonet), employed to cut timber, 652.
Chanees, 410. See Shawnees.
Chaney, Henry, Prof., teacher of Detroit, 94.
Chaonanoes, 475. See Shawnees.
Chapanton, Jean Baptiste, 473. See Chapoton.
Chapaw Le Fevre, smith for Ouiattanons 1778, 470. See also Le Fevre.
Chapin, Harriet (Mrs. Roland Root), 21.
Chapman, Alvin, Niles, death reported, 18.
Chapman, Samuel, quartermaster Detroit, pay, 484.
Chapoton (Chapanton), Jean Baptiste, Sr., Captain, resigned, 473; suspected of treachery, 480.
Chapoton (Chapanton), Jean Baptiste, Jr., lieutenant 1778, 473.
Chappewas at Vincennes, 475.
Charleboix, Pere, 532. See Charlevoix.
Charles II, King England, persecuted Quakers, 45.
Charles, Seneca Indian, speech in counsel at Detroit, 449, 450.
Charlevoix (Charleboix), François Xavier de, Jesuit, description Mackinac Island cited, 532.
Charston, Robert, soldier, signed complaint, 594.
Chartel, miserable ship, 515.
Chase, Catherine (Mrs. Daniel C), death reported, 28.
Chase, Daniel, Essex pioneer, 28.
Chase, Joshua M., Moscow, death reported, 40.
Cheboygan (Shaboygan) river, safe port for vessel, 642.
Cheese, first made Saginaw county, 65.
Che mo ke maness (young Englishman, No ba quon), Indian names for Winsor, 256. See appendix.
Chene (Chesné), Eleopole, interpreter, captain Indians, 433.
Chene (Chesne, China), Isidore, Captain, interpreter, 429; at Detroit Council 1778, 442, 452, 470, 483; pay of, 485.
Cherubusco, battle of, decisive in Mexican war, 211.
Cherokees, allies of English, 347.
Chesne, See Chene.
Chevalier, Amable (Amiable), Ottawa chief, interpreter, 386, 549, 553, 554, 560, 581, 585, 597; denounced for treachery, 543, 545; discharged by General Haldimand, 576; investigation had, 569; loyalty commended, 397.
Chevalier, Louis, Frenchman, at St. Joseph, 354, 375, 377, 378; charged with treachery, 466, 569, 576; influence with Indians, 368, 369; reports from, 369, 371, 383, 385, 386.
Chevalier, Louis, Mrs., at Mackinac, 597.

Chevalier, Louison, son of Chevalier, St. Joseph, 354, 581.
Chicago fire sufferers aided by Jim Fisk, 338.
Chicago Tribune quoted, 339.
Chicago (Chigagoe) post threatened by rebels, 610.
Chicago Historical Society, gifts to society, 10.
Chicago & Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, 277.
Chicago & West Michigan Railway, 278, 279.
Chickasees, message sent to, 481.
Chigagoe, 610. See Chicago.
Childs, Martha A., Hudson, death reported, 57.
Chilson, Electa B., Mrs., Osseo, death reported, 39.
China, Isidore, 429. See Isidore Chene.
Chippewa county, senatorial district, see appendix, 34.
Chippewas (Chippoweys), at Council Detroit, 442-458, 479, 482, 483; given scalp from Delawares, 446; on the war path, 347, 366, 384; sent against Illinois rebels, 378; sent down Illinois river, 375; threaten revolt against English, 361; treaty with whites, 114; war with Menomenies, 365.
Chippowey sloop, wrecked in 1775, on Lake Erie, 467.
Chisolm, R'd., soldier, signed complaint 1780, 594.
Choate, Charles B., East Saginaw, sketch, 72.
Cholera, disastrous effects of, in Detroit, 122, 210, 211.
Christmas at Williamsburg, 512; how celebrated early days, 137-139.
Church, Bethuel, Seventh day Baptist, 254.
Church, Nathan, Grand Haven, editor, 297.
Church, Thomas B., Grand Rapids, 54; member constitutional convention, 256; paper by, 256-258.
Church & Dalton, Sand Creek lumbermen, 254.
Churches, annual funds at Detroit. 132; at Mackinac inside Fort, 367; Cincinnati Catholic, 129; confiscation for, 625; first in Lenawee county, 165; history Episcopal Ann Arbor, 141-155; history Holland and German, Ottawa county, 301-318; Old Dutch, Grand Haven, 311; removed to Mackinac Island, 539; St. Andrews organized at Ann Arbor, 142.
Churchill, Amy K., death reported, 84.
Circuit, early extent of Methodists, 155, 156.
City Hall, Detroit, price of site 1836, 214.
City of Milwaukee boat, 275, 285.
Civil war, action of generals denounced, 209; incident in, 67, 68.

Clapp, Dwella M., Adrian, death reported, 58.
Clark, Charles Grandison, Rev., biography, 157-159.
Clark, Charles Grandison, Mrs. (Elizabeth Platt), 158.
Clark, David, Eagle, member of Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Clark, Edward, Plainfield, Connecticut, retired sea captain, 158.
Clark, Edward, original member St. Andrews Church, Ann Arbor, 142, 142n.
Clark, Ester, Mrs., Troy, death reported, 60.
Clark, Esther Tracy, Mrs., 158.
Clark, George Rogers, Gen. United States Army, 381, 384, 388, 391, 395, 479, 485, 490, 494, 497, 507, 531, 541, 580, 634, see appendix, 344, 357, 369, 391; agreement with Hamilton, 504; apprised of Birds coming, 584; captured Governor Hamilton, 357. See appendix; captured Vincennes, 429, 499, 503; cruelty reported, 501-507; hampered by Wabash Indians, 580; letters to intercepted, 635; perils of march, 515; saved from capture by Charles Beaubien, 498.
Clark, Harley C., Osseo, death reported, 40.
Clark, Henrietta, Mrs., death reported, 48.
Clark, Lorillá (Mrs. Josiah Pierson), death reported, 30.
Clark, Philo D., death reported, 54.
Clark, Shubael, sea captain, death reported, 158.
Clark, William T., Mendon, death reported, 75.
Clarke, Edwin R., 20.
Clarke, Morris G., Mrs., (Miss Upson), 22, 26.
Clay, D. P., Grand Rapids receiver Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, 278.
Clement, Peter, Mrs., Adrian, death reported, 58.
Cleveland, David, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrews Church, 142.
Clifford, Adelia A., death reported, 54.
Clinton, —, General at Savannah, 582, see Gen. Henry Clinton.
Clinton, DeWitt, Governor New York, 53.
Clinton, Henry, Sir, account of money sent Detroit, 648; assisted in exchange of Governor Hamilton, 515.
Clinton county memorial, report, 26.
Clinton River, formerly Upper Huron, origin of name, 171.
Clizbee, Stephen H., Dr., Coldwater, 22.
Clock, no factories west, 292.
Close —, Mrs., Medina, death reported, 58.
Close, Converse, poem by, 212, 213.
Cloth first made in Saginaw county, 65.
Clough, J. C., Mrs., Tecumseh, death reported, 56.
Clowes (Cloves, Cloes), George, Lieut. 8th King's regiment, 392, 394, 396, 586, 589, 590, 596-599, 601, 603, 608, 617, 620, 626; conducted investigation regarding charges, 592-595, 624, 625; letters to Brehm 607-610; letter to Bolton, 621; letters to De Peyster, 612, 614; letter from Robertson, 618, 619; letters to Sinclair, 609, 610; letter from Sinclair, 595; officer of the day at Mackinac, letter from, 592; paymaster, 597; received Mackinac reports and records, 642; trouble over soldiers pay, Mackinac, 587, 594, 595-597.
Clubb, Henry S., Grand Haven, editor, 296, 298.
Cobb, M. G., Independence, death reported, 60.
Cobbett, William, writings on United States and Canada cited, 119.
Coccejus, Joh, professor at Leiden, 304.
Cochran, James, principal Disco Academy, 93.
Cochran, William, Niles, death reported, 18.
Code, Joseph, Mrs., Sturgis, death reported, 75.
Coe, Arthur, Ypsilanti, death reported, 82.
Coe, George A., Lieutenant Governor Coldwater, 190.
Coffinbury, Wright L., Grand Rapids, gave memoir Robert Hilton, 6.
Cogswell, John, 51.
Cogswell, John, Mrs., (Marie French), 51.
Colclazer, Henry, Rev., biography, 159, 160; death reported, 161; helped organize Albion College, 156; how he was scalped, 160, 161.
Cold tempered by lakes, 261.
Coldwater, Courier quoted, 26.
Coldwater Light Artillery, changed to Loomis Battery, 21.
Coldwater Republican quoted, 22.
Coldwater township organized, 132.
Cole —, killed by Indians, 398.
Cole, Chester, Adams, death reported, 38.
Cole, H. M., Mrs., (Miss Hendee), 50.
Cole, Henry S., (Harry), letter to, quoted, 210, 211.
Cole, John, Osseo, death reported, 40.
Cole & Porter, Detroit, law firm, 87.
Coleman, Charles, St. Johns, sketch, 27.
Colin, 23, see H. P. Collin.
Colleges, Adrian early faculty, 92, 93; in Michigan 1860, 92-99.
Collier de Guerrie, 391. See Guerrie de Collier.
Collin (Colin), H. P., Rev., 23.
Collision on Lake St. Clair, 117.
Collwell, Christopher, Hudson, death reported, 58.
Coloron, 460, see Celoron.
Colvin, Mrs. (Miss Stebbins), Adrian, 118.
Colwell, Captain Manhattan vessel, 116.
Comfort, Dr., Spring Lake, 333.

Comfort, W. H., Woodbridge, death reported, 37.
Commandant, powers defined, 523.
Commerce in Ottawa county, 280.
Commerce, lake vessel, 162, 163.
Commissions asked for Detroit, 469.
Complaint by soldiers against Lieutenant Clowes at Mackinac, 592-594.
Comstock, Betsey Fuller, Mrs., death reported, 47.
Comstock, Darius, Hon., helped make Erie Canal, 164.
Comstock, Oliver C., Dr., committee historians State society, v, xii, 5, 6-10; prepared memorial Judge Wells, 6, 7, represented society at Michigan Semi-centennial celebration, 218.
Conant, F. H., Coldwater, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Cone, Frederick, 202.
Cone, Linus, biography, 201-204.
Cone, Lorenzo, 202.
Cone, Riley, 202.
Conkwright, James M., Jamestown, 255.
Contents, table of, vii-ix.
Cook, Catherine, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 39.
Cook, Herbert J., Rev., 23.
Cook, John R., Hillsdale, death reported, 37.
Cooley, Thomas McIntyre, committee Historians Pioneer Society, xii; gave biography Charles Upson, 188-192; delegate Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Cooley, Wilber A., death reported, 54.
Coon, Samuel, Mrs., Mendon, death reported 77.
Coon skins paid on bond, 210, 211.
Cooper, G. S., Ionia, 45.
Coopersville, 276.
Copeland, Joseph T., Judge, 186.
Copeland, Mary, Montgomery, death reported 39.
Co-quaa-nissey, Potowatomie chief at council Detroit 1778, 443.
Corbin, David, 167.
Corn, grown by Indians, 362; price at Detroit, 420, 439; purchase by English, 420; sent for Indians, 381.
Cornell, Alfred Jr., Rev., 10.
Cornish, A. H., Rev., Ann Arbor, 142, 144.
Cornstalk, Shawanese chief, release refused and killed, 431; sketch, see appendix, 431.
Coryell, David, Mrs., Ridgeway, death reported, 59.
Coryell, Jonna, Clinton, death reported, 57.
Coté (Cotteé), Gable, Mackinac, licensed trader, goods invoiced, 650.
Couagne De, chief Peorias, speech, 486.
Cou-na-son, Mohawk and Seneca village chief in council at Detroit, 443.
Council, Indian held at Detroit, 442-458.
Courier Journal, Nunica Newspaper removal, 298, 299.
Couriers employed at Mackinac, 569.
Court house same as school house, 294.
Court martial held on Corporal Davidson, 657; ordered at Mackinac, 631.
Courtright, Mary A., Jonesville, death reported, 39.
Cowles, Charles, Buchanan, death reported, 18.
Cox, Harriet, Mrs., Southfields, death reported, 60, 61.
Coy, —, security for Sinclair, 528.
Coy & Ellice, 528.
Cozens, Malinda, Mrs., Fayette, death reported, 39.
Crafts, S. C., Blackman, death reported, 48, 52.
Cramahé, Hector T., Lieutenant Governor, 519; letters cited, 469, 490; letters to, 461-464.
Crane, David B., St. Joseph, death reported, 19.
Crane, Harriet, Mrs., Saline, death reported, 83.
Crapo, Henry Howland, Governor Michigan, 200.
Crapo, Post G. A. R. Flint, 201.
Crawford, David, 62.
Crawford, James, Lockport, death reported, 77.
Crawford, John, Milford, death reported, 60.
Crawford, Mina (Mrs. Ira Thoms), 62.
Crawford, R. C., Rev., Grand Rapids, delegate Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Crawford county memorial report, 29.
Creager (Creager), M. H., Grand Haven, publisher, 298.
Credit, Benjamin F., Jonesville, death reported, 37.
Creige, —, sergeant Mississippi expedition, 621.
Creluigh, C., Rev., 309.
Crie, Mr., placed in irons, 369.
Cripps, Thomas, Blissfield, death reported, 57.
Crispell, Dr., Hope College, resigned, 329.
Crittenden, Allen, Pittsfield, death reported 85.
Crook, lake vessel, 283.
Crooks, David and Eunice, 202.
Crooks, George, death reported, 54.
Crooks, Mary (Mrs. Linus Cone), 202, 203.
Crooks, Zada (Mrs. William Poppleton), 205.
Cross, William H., Centreville, delegate from society Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave papers to society, 10; treasurer Green township, 174, 175.
Crossman, Caroline, in Barstow school 1860, 94.
Crossman, Harriet, Mrs., death reported, 39.
Crozier, James A., Menominee, vice president society, xii.

Cullat, Jean, Michilimackinac, licensed trader, 650.
Culver, Frank M., Scipio, death reported, 39.
Culver, Moses, Scipio, death reported, 39.
Cumming, Francis H., Rev., 145, 146, 153, 154; death reported, 147, 148.
Cummins, Michael, rector St. Anthony's church Monroe, 130, 1.
Cuquandarong (old Baby), speech in council 1778, 449.
Curnerd, Adam Lym, fur trader signed memorial, 552.
Curot Amable, Michilimackinac, licensed trader, 650.
Curtis, James R., Hillsdale, death reported, 37.
Curtis, Mary L., Mrs., death reported, 37.
Curtis, Orville, Litchfield, death reported, 37.
Curtis, Penella E., Hillsdale, death reported, 40.
Curtis, William, Mrs., death reported, 37.
Cushing, Sarah L., Mrs. (Mrs. Amos H. Munson), 30.
Custer, Emanuel H., father of General, 7.
Custer, George, Gen., massacre cited, 7, 214.
Cutcheon, E. M., Oscoda, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Cutcheon, S. M., superintendent Ypsilanti schools, 95.
Cutler, Dwight, Grand Haven, partnerships, 281.
Cutler, Mary E., Pittsford, death reported, 38.
Cutler & Savage Lumber Co., Spring Lake, 276, 283.
Cutler & Waits, vessel owners, 284.
Cutler, Waits & Stegeman, 281.

Dail, J. L., Rev., Grand Haven, 301.
Dalton, James, Sand Creek Catholic, 254; captain at Chicago, 263.
Dance war Indian described, 112, 113.
Danforth, J. B., Superintendent Grand Rapids schools, 94, 95, 96.
Daniel Ball, boat burned, 72; lake steamer, 285.
Darling, Charles W., Utica, New York, gave pamphlet to society, 10.
Darling, Mahala, Mrs., Jonesville, death reported, 38.
Darling, William H., death reported, 48.
Dartmouth, Earl of, 347.
Dauphin —, Mr., prisoner or passenger, 598; sent to Detroit, 600.
Davidson, Alexander, 186.
Davidson, Charles, corporal Royal artillery, 547; corporal on board Welcome, 586; released from court martial, 657.
Davies, 586, see Charles Davison.
Davis, —, Dr., Saginaw, 70.
Davis, Alonzo C., Detroit, death reported, 13.
Davis, Calista, Mrs., Ypsilanti, death reported, 84.
Davis, Jefferson, capture of, 198.
Davis, John T., Grand Haven, engaged in fruit culture, 268.
Davis, Lorenzo, Rev., paper on early ministers, 7, 155-161.
Davison, Grand Haven, pioneer, 251.
Da wat tong, Huron chief at council Detroit 1778, 443.
Dawson, to join Captain Bird 1780, 584.
Day —, British commissary general, 432.
Day, Andrew C., Buchanan, death reported, 18.
Day, John E., Armada, vice president State Pioneer Society, xi.
Dayton, Edna, violin solo, 8.
Dead covered by Indians, 453, 454.
Dean & Hurlbut, Detroit, 86.
Deane —, Mr., Adrian, death reported, 59.
Deane, Isaac, Adrian, death reported, 56.
Dean's tavern in Adrian, 164.
Dearborne —, United States minister Spain, 193.
De Baun, John A., Rev., D. D., president Hope College, 329.
De Beer, D., Rev., 307.
De Beer, J., Rev., 311.
De Bey, D., Rev., 312.
De Bruyn, —, Rev., vicar general Detroit, 134.
De Bruyn, J. A., Rev., Holland, 307.
De Bruyn, R. M., Rev., teacher, 328.
Decker, Uri, Rome, death reported, 57.
Dee Vernet, 430, see Lieutenant Henry Du Vernet.
Dejean Philip, 346, 349, 463; cash paid to, 647; justice peace commended, 469; gave census of Detroit 1773, 649; officer at Detroit, 346; paroled, 513; prisoner, 505-509.
De Jong Van Schelven & Oggel, check blown twenty-five miles, 336.
De La Motte, 398, see Cadillac.
Delawares, Indian tribe, 347, 417, 427, 475, 477, 581; brought scalps, 446; chiefs in Indian council Detroit, 442-458; proposed attack on Detroit, 427; promised protection by Governor Hamilton, 410, 441; untrustworthy and suspected, 434, 456, 464, 465; village attacked, 436.
Delight, boat, 514.
Dell, W. H., Mrs., Saline, death reported, 85.
De Long and Mills, editors, 297.
Denistry, early, 164.
Dennison Station, 276.
Densmore, William, Ypsilanti, death reported, 83.
Denton, John, 51.
Denton, John, Mrs. (Elizabeth French), 51.
Denton, Samuel, Dr., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrews church, 142.

Department Interior, United States gifts to society, 11.
De Peyster, Abraham, colonial reputation, see appendix, 352.
De Peyster (Depeister), Arent Schuyler, major, 413, 416, 424, 463-467, 475, 479, 491, 517, 520-525, 528, 535, 542, 545, 546, 553, 554, 560-566, 570, 577, 578, 584, 589-594, 601, 606, 608-611, 621, 622, 626, 632, 652, see appendix, 352; accused of extravagance, 536; accused Sinclair, 611; ask to aid in suppresing rebellion, 475; asks to be removed from Mackinac to Detroit, 360, 361, 365-394; at Mackinac, ix, 491; formed general store at Mackinac, 545; gave charge of fort to Lieutenant Clowes, 608; gave list of stores and ordinance Michilimackinac, 653, 654; gave list of traders licensed, 650, 651; instructions regarding Mackinac, 576; letter from Lieutenant Bennett, 392, 393; letters from Captain Brehm, 412, 413; letters from Clowes, 612, 614; letters from Haldimand, 352, 353, 627, 628, 633-635, 640; letters from Mathews, 640; letter from Mercer, 597; letter from Mompesson, 630-632; letter from Sinclair, 600, 616, 617; letter to Bolton, 614; letter to Carleton, referred to, 374; letters to Haldimand 367-371, 386, 388, 394, 397, 398, 615, 616; letters to Major Nairne, 389, 390; letter to General Powell, 630; letters to Sinclair, 580-586, 617; list of presents given Indians, 655; petition to and reply, 594, 567, 588; receipt for goods for men, 652; received complaint against Clowes, 592; received reports from St. Joseph, 465, 466; resigned at Mackinac, 519; sent belts to Illinois, 370; sent Mompesson to Mackinac, 591; slandered by Sinclair, 610.
De Peyster, Arent Schuyler, Mrs., Detroit 1780, 582, 585.
De Peyster, Peter, colonial reputation, see appendix, 352.
Depot at Grand Haven, 274.
De Pree, J., Rev., 312.
De Putter, C., Zeeland, fruit grower, 269.
De Puy, Ezra, Clinton, death reported, 59.
Dequindre, Antoine Sr., Major in the Indian department, 470.
Dequindre (De Quendre, Du Quindre), Dagneau, Lieutenant in charge western Indians, 465, 475, 479, 582, 583, 636.
Dequindre, Lepiconiere, Lieutenant Detroit, salary, 485.
Dequindre, Francois, pay in Indian department 1778, 470.
Dequindre, Frontenay (Fontenoy), Lt., pay in Indian department 1778, 470; scouting with Shawanese, 479, 485.
Dequindre, Pontchartren, lieutenant Indian department Detroit, pay, 485.
Derwin, name for French voyageurs, 237; characteristic description of Michilimackinack, 642, 643.
Deserters report number rebels, 426.
D'Estaing, —, 538. See Estaing D.
Detahyjas, Huron at Lorette, 437.
Detroit, Indian agent at, 410; Indian attack planned, 381, 390, 427; bills of Hamilton for, 647-658; Catholic diocese established, paper on, 128-137; diocese, map of 135; census of 1773, 649; of 1778, 469-473; condition of, 405; early teachers and no superintendents of schools, 94; cholera epidemic, 122, 210; in 1830, 120, 121; Indian council held by Governor Hamilton, 442; Labay, probably Detroit of the bay, 371, 380; Lernoults defenses planned, 407; list of men, goods and prices at Detroit 1778, 469-473; Advertiser quoted, 184, 185, 186, 187; Free Press quoted, 88, 89, 208; one hundred years ago, paper cited, 9; papers early displayed, 215; prices in 1778, 439; price of land 1836, 214; recommendations for self support, 405; report of garrison, 403, 481, 482, 420; slaves and price 1778, 470.
Detroit, lake boat, 283, 284.
Detroit, Grand Haven & Milwaukee Railroad, 274, 276, 278, 281, 283.
Detroit, Lansing & Lake Michigan Railroad, 46.
Detroit & Michigan Railroad, 284.
Detroit & Milwaukee Railroad granted charter, 273.
Detroit & Pontiac Railroad, 187; first charter, 273.
Deveraux, S. M., Pontiac, death reported, 60.
DeViney, R. B., music by, 9.
Devoe, Elias, Lincoln, death reported, 19.
Dewey, Ellen C., Mrs. (George M.), member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Dewey, Francis A., Cambridge, offices held in State Pioneer Society, xi, xii, 5, 8, 217; gave Lenawee memorial report, 6, 56-59; paper by, 161-166.
Dewey, Francis R., 6, see Francis A.
Dewey, George M., Flint, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90; receives land from Brent for taxes paid, 194.
Dewey, Lorenzo Dow, 162.
Dewey, Lorenzo D., Mrs. (Miranda Olmstead) and son, 162.
Dewey, Simon, Tecumseh, pioneer, 162.
Dexter, Eliza (Mrs. David Osborn), death reported, 30.
Dexter & Noble, 178.
Diamond Match Company, 290.
Dibler, Jacob, Litchfield, death reported, 38.
Dickee, A. M., Grand Haven merchant, 281.

Dickinson, C. M., Grand Haven publisher, 298.
Dickinson & Hully, 281.
Dieckmann, Ferdinand, East Saginaw, sketch, 74, 75.
Dieckmann, Ferdinand, Mrs., 75.
Diekema, N., Holland, fruit grower, 269.
Diekema, W., committee relief Holland fire suffers, 339.
Dingman, Alvin, S., Dr., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Diocese Detroit, established, 128-133; map 135; paper, 128.
Disco Academy, early instructor in, 93.
Dix, John A., Gen., 207.
Dixon, Eliza, Mrs., Pulaski, death reported, 47.
Dodge, John, pronounced renegade, 512.
Dodymead, Sergt., excused from duty, 631.
Doesburg, C., professor, Holland editor, 298.
Doesburg, G. S., editor, 298.
Doesburg, H., Holland, taught private school 327.
Doesburg, I., defendant law suit, 256.
Doesburg, J. O., committee to relieve Holland fire suffers, 339.
Doesburg, O. J., Holland, publisher, 298, see J. O. Doesburg.
Doesburg & Sons, Holland, publisher, 296, 297.
Donahue, Daniel, Augusta, death reported, 83.
Donald & Lee, publishers, 298.
Donovan, Catherine, Mrs., Ann Arbor, death reported, 84.
Dorrance, Albert G., Lansing, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Dosker, Henry E., Rev., paper by, 301-315.
Doud, Julia A., Mottville, death reported, 75.
Douglass, Samuel T., judge, 186.
Dow, John, Vermontville, sketch, 31.
Downey, Alexander, Groveland, death reported, 60.
Doyson, —, Capt., secured release, Odren a British prisoner, 214.
Drake, John S., Amboy, death reported, 37.
Drake, Susan, Woodstock, death reported, 58.
Drake, Thomas J., Hanover, death reported, 48.
Drake, William, Amboy, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Draper, Albert F., Pontiac, death reported, 60.
Drew, Sally, Mrs., death reported, 17.
Drouillard, Francis, lieutenant Detroit 1778, 473.
Drouillard, Joseph, interpreter at council Detroit 1778, 442.
Drouillard, Pierre, Detroit, interpreter for Hurons, 470.
Drover, —, British lake vessel 1812, 284.
Drukker, R., Rev., 311-313.
DuBois, C. H., Grand Haven, publisher, 298.
Dubuc, Augustin, Montreal, storekeeper Mackinac, 658.
Ducharme, Jean Marie, Mackinac trader and interpreter, 650, 658; accused of treachery, 559, 560, 568, 586.
Ducharme, Laurent, merchant at Montreal, 658.
Du Chemin (Calumet) river, see appendix, 393.
Dufur, Earl, 216.
Dufur, Maggie, Mrs., recitation by, 216.
Dufur, Wesley, 216.
Dugan, William, petitioned removal of fort Mackinac, 557.
Duggan, Patrick, Indian trader, Mackinac, signs memorial, trade protection, 550.
Dullam, Frank, 35.
Dullam, R. W., Flint, 35.
Dumais (Dumet, Dumay), Jean Baptiste, witness in murder case, 463.
Duncan Robinson, tug boat, 285.
Dunlap & Hadsell, Holland, editors, 298.
Dunmore, John Murray, Lord, list commending loyal frontiersmen cited, 348, 435, see appendix, 431.
Dunmore boat, quick trip, 475, 582, 585.
Dunn, —, British paymaster Indian department, 350, 353, 402, 488.
Dunn, Robert, Carmel, cast first vote in township, sketch, 31.
Duplessis, Louis, interpreter at Miamee 1778, 470.
Du Quindre, 582, see Dequindre.
Du Quinte, —, 581.
Durand, John, Jackson, pioneer, 49,
Durand (Durrand), Pierre, bonds as trader, 531; suspected of treachery, 537, 554.
Durocher, Laurent, judge, early trader, goods invoiced 1778, 650.
Dutch, intelligence of, 300; papers in Michigan and United States, 300.
Dutch reformed churches, differences, 313, 314.
Dutton, C. H., Holland, peach grower, 269.
Dutton, Delos, Holland, planted peach orchard, 269.
DuVernet (Du Vennett, Dee Vernet), Henry, 2d lieutenant Royal artillery with Hamilton's expedition, 409, 430, 482, 582.
Duverney (Duvernay), Pierre C., Grand Haven, pioneer 1834, 237, 238, 243, 248, 276, 281, 334.
Duverney, Pierre, Mrs., 248.
Dwight, John M., Jackson, merchant, 49.
Dwight, Timothy, Dr., president Yale College, 145.
Dyce, Alexander, passenger on Welcome, 602, 657.

Dye, George H., Ionia, 44.
Dye, Mary E., 44.
Dye, Nelson, Ionia, merchant, 44.
Dye, Richard, Ionia, death reported, 13; member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10; sketch, 43.
Dye, Richard, Mrs. (Polly Welch), member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10; paper cited, coming to Michigan, 7.
Dyelle, François, Sandusky, 1778 smith, 470.

Eagle Tavern, Detroit, 121, 127.
Eastman, Celia, Mrs. (Miss Jones), 80.
Eastman, Galen, Eastmanville, built New Era boat, 283; moved newspaper, 296.
Eastman, Timothy, Dr., Eastmanville, pioneer, 184, 234, 238, 244, 225-263; erected barn, 264; member constitutional convention, 256.
Eastmanville, 253, 254.
Eaton, Orsamus, death reported, 17.
Eaton county memorial reports, 29.
E. B. Morgan, lake vessel, 284.
Eberhart, Isaac, Colon, death reported, 76.
Ebster, P., Rev., Spring Lake, 312.
Eddy, Jerome, Mr. and Mrs., Flint, 33.
Eddy, Louisa, Mrs., Somerset, death reported, 39.
Edgerton, D. W. C., Chillicothe, Missouri, gave paper to society, 10.
Education for a quarter of a century in Michigan, 92-99.
Educational Weekly, Chicago, bought, Michigan teacher, 98.
Egh kee too wa, war chief at council Detroit, 452.
Egoushawry, Ottawa chief, speech at council, 483.
Egremont, —, Baron, 195.
Eight regiment (Royal artillery), 414, 534, 538, 546, 575, 586, 608, 610.
Ekstein, Charlotte, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Elam, Robert, Detroit, bills of, 648.
Eldred, O., Mrs., Benton, death reported, 18.
Elisha Bliss, tug boat, 285.
Ellice, Robert, merchant, 528, 544, 562, 622.
Ellice & Coy, 528.
Elliott, Emily, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Elliott, Matthew, prisoner, escape of, 435.
Elliott, W. G., Dr., 63.
Elmer, Franklin, Jackson, soldier 1826, 50.
Elmer, Rachel (Mrs. Franklin), Arland, death reported, 48; sketch, 50, 51.
Elwood, I. N., Rev., 36, 201.
Ely, R. R. A., 478.
Embankment, ancient at Milan, 164.
Emeline, large lake boat, 283.
Emerson, Thomas, regarding bond of Thomas Palmer, 210, 211.
Emmons, Halmer, H., judge, committee on resolutions on death Judge Goodrich, 186.
Engines, (locomotive), displaced horses on cars 1831, 272; prize for one running 10 miles an hour, 272.
Engleman Transportation Company, built elevator, 275.
English, attempt to drive out Americans, 411; boats mouth Mississippi, 459; churches Ottawa county, 315; employ Wabash Indians, 634; held Indian council, 493; name not Chemoke maness, see appendix, 236; passes required, 549; presents given Indians, 567, 655; protection for Indian lands, 474; traders jealous Canadians, 563.
Ennes, Eliza, Mrs., death reported, 76.
Ensign, Samuel, Colon, death reported, 76.
Enterprise, lake boat, 161; dangerous voyage, 282.
Epidemics, Grand Haven, 333.
Equshawa, Ottawa chief, present at a council at Detroit 1778, 442.
Erie, Fort, 422; battle at, 29; condition, 421.
Errett, Isaac Rev., 44.
Esselstyn, Elton, music by, 9.
Estabrook, Joseph, principal Ypsilanti Union Seminary, 94, 96.
Estaing, Charles Hector, Count D' (D'Estaing), 538; repulse at Savannah, 582.
Evans, Musgrove, Tecumseh pioneer, built first house, 165.
Everett, J. G., Ontonagon, 96.
Everitt (Everitt), Mehitable E. (Mrs. Philo), death reported, 59.
Everitt, Philo M., Marquette, 59.
Everts, Miles, Mrs., Bloomfield, death reported, 60.
Ewers, Abigail, Mrs., Augusta, death reported, 83.
Ewing, A. O., pioneer fruit grower, Ottawa county, 268.
Ewings, —, Miss, Constantine, death reported, 76.
Expedition, Hamilton's account of, 489-516; Hamilton's numbers in, 492; planned against Illinois rebels, 484, 485; sent by English against rebels, 548.
Export fruit, Ottawa county, 269, 270.

Faculties, Michigan Agricultural College, 93; Normal, 92; University of Michigan, 92.
Fairfield, Edmund B., Lt. Gov., president Hillsdale College, 93.
Fairfield, Edmund B., Jr., paper by, 321-326.
Fairfield, M. W., professor Olivet College, 93.
Faith, early boat on lakes, 585.
Falls of St. Mary, dangers of, 643.

Farley, Deacon, Medina, death reported, 57.
Farmer, Silas, gave article on Detroit to society, 10; paper on Detroit 100 years ago cited, 9.
Farmer's (Silas), history Detroit cited, 86.
Farmers trouble with blackbirds, 126.
Farms, number in Ottawa township 1846, 264; size at Detroit 1773, 649.
Farnan, Mary E., Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.
Farnsworth & Bates, Detroit law firm, 88.
Farnum, Benjamin T., Hillsdale, death reported, 39.
Fassett, Charles S., superintendent schools Ottawa county, 324.
Fay, Barnabas, Norvell, death reported, 47.
Feast held by Indians, 479.
Felch, Alpheus, Ann Arbor, delegate Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Felicity boat, 429, 430, 530, 582, 585, 601; arrival announced at Mackinac, 533; ordered to Detroit, 602.
Fellows, Samuel, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 38.
Fenton, Seth W., Madison, death reported, 57.
Fenwick, Edward D., Bishop, 129, 130, 132, death recorded from cholera, 133; visited Rome 1826, 131.
Ferguson, William, Benton Harbor, death reported, 18.
Ferris, Alonzo, death reported, 48; sketch, 53.
Ferris, John W., Hillsdale, death reported, 39.
Ferry, —, Col., planted orchard at Ferrysburg, 268.
Ferry, E. P., Grand Haven, president first bank, 285.
Ferry, Thomas White, Grand Haven, 246; member house representatives, 256.
Ferry, William Montague, Sr., Rev., father Ottawa county Indian missionary, viii, 222, 223, 225, 226, 237, 248n, 256, 257, 276, 281, 294, 315, 316, 334; death recorded, 241; early teacher, 239; established first Presbyterian church, Grand Haven, 240; planted orchard, 268; sketch, 238-241.
Ferry, William M., Mrs. (Amanda White), 239.
Ferry & Son, Grand Haven bankers, 285; built first lake boat, 282; vessel owners, 283.
Ferry boats, early, Grand Haven, 280.
Fessenden, —, 190.
Fetters, weight of, 508.
Fever and ague (malade du Pays), prevalence of, 127, 381. See appendix.
Field, W. S., Mr. and Mrs., 20.
Fillmore, Millard, president U. S., 53, 179.
Finchley, Thomas, ensign, accused of treachery, 578, 640.
Fine & Ellice, merchants, 622.
Finley & Gregory, Michilimackinac, licensed traders, 650.
Fire, covered in council at Detroit, 452; destructive in Holland, 296; forest, 334; great ones in Michigan, 337; in Holland, 334-341.
Fish, —, North Adams, death reported, 40.
Fish, Alda, Miss, death of, 200; in Tunis, Africa, 197, 199.
Fish, De Laska W., Genoa, Neb., helped capture Jeff Davis, 198, 201.
Fish, Frank A., San Francisco, Cal., 201.
Fish, George F., lieutenant civil war, helped capture Jeff Davis, death reported, 198.
Fish, George Whitefield, Dr., biography, 96-201; death reported, 12; member State Pioneer Society, 12; repaired John Howard Payne's tomb, 198.
Fish, George W., Mrs. (Octavia A. Mowra), 197.
Fish, George W., Mrs. (S. A. Rulison), 199.
Fish, Julia C., death recorded, 198.
Fish, L. B., Rev., 79.
Fish, Melancthon W., Dr., Oakland, Cal., 201.
Fish, Reuben, Kortright, N. Y., 197.
Fish, Reuben, Mrs. (Fanny Robinson), 197.
Fish, capture and preservation, 540; payment on bond, 210, 211.
Fisher, —, Albany, stayed winter at Saginaw, 578; untrustworthy, 640.
Fisher, Anson, Palmyra, death reported, 57.
Fisher, Marshall, Concord, death reported, 47.
Fishing, plenty at Island Mackinac, 642, 643.
Fisk, James, aid to Chicago fire sufferers, 338.
Fiske, Lewis R., professor chemistry Michigan Agricultural College, 93.
Fister, George, Mrs., Colon, death reported, 75.
Fitzgerald, Lucy, Niles, death reported, 19.
FitzSimmons, Lee, Reading, 215.
Fitzsimmons, William, Mrs., Centreville, death reported, 77.
Flanders, —, inspector at New Orleans, civil war, met brother, 67.
Flanders, George A., Lt. Col., sketch, 65-69.
Flanders, George A., Mrs., death of, 65.
Fleming, Jesse, Adrian, death reported, 58.
Fleming, Samuel, British commissary general, 437, 492, 575.
Fletcher, Addison, Ypsilanti, death reported, 83.
Fletcher, Timothy, Ottawa county pioneer, 334.
Fletcher, William A., Judge, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.

Flour, bad condition of, 364; price, 264, 280, 429, 439, 655-657.
Fogle, George H., Mrs., Royalton, death reported, 19.
Fondly, Lydia A., Mrs., Ransom, death reported, 38.
Food, complaint regarding, 362; condition of, 540.
Foot, Gilbert, Mrs., Leonidas, death reported, 76.
Foote, Samuel, Cambria, death reported, 38.
Forbes, Robert, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Force, John E., Constantine, death reported, 76.
Ford, Henry A., Prof., paper, 92-99.
Forrest Brothers, flour merchants, 285.
Forshee, Daniel, Saline, death reported, 82.
Forster, John Harris, Williamston, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave memoir John Mullett, 7; paper on Lake Superior copper region cited, 8; paper on reminiscences of lake surveys, 100-107; surveyed Mexican boundary line, 10, 105.
Forsyth, John, United States minister to Spain, 193.
Forsyth, Maria, Mrs., death reported, 83.
Fort, name for Saginaw city, 137.
Fort, proposed at mouth Ohio river, 477.
Forts. See Erie, Gage, Gloucester, Howard, Kentucke, Laurence, Lee Pee, Mackinac, McIntosh, Pitt, Poy, Sackville, Schlosser, (St. Vincennes) and Vincennes, William Henry.
Forty-seventh regiment at Detroit, 417.
Fosdick, Alvin, Mrs., Bloomfield, death reported, 60.
Fosdick, William B., Oakland, death reported, 61.
Foster, Mary E., Mrs., Ann Arbor, remarks by, 8.
Fowler, F. F., Col., Reading, 215.
Fowler, Frederick, Reading, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Fowler, Smith W., Manistee, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Fox, Joseph, private King's Regiment, Detroit, petitions for pay, 587.
Fox, Simeon, Capt., Commerce, 162, 163.
Foxes (Reynards, Rhenards), connected usually with Sacs, 362, 530.
Foy, E., British deputy adjutant general, orders, 343-345, 643, 646.
Fralick, Henry, Grand Rapids, 5-9; committee Holland fire sufferers relief, 339; member legislature 1847, 9; prepared memorial Judge Wells, 6; president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 1, 8, 217.
France, fruit culture, 267; sent messengers to Indians, 458.
Frankish, Samuel, Mrs., death reported, 77.
Franklin, Benjamin, Rev., prayer by, 7, 8.
Franklin, Benjamin, Mrs., Moscow, death reported, 39.
Fraser, James, removal to Saginaw, 123.
Fraser, James, Mrs. (Miss Busby), Saginaw, 123.
Freeman, Capt., aid de camp to Gen. Reidevel, 507.
Freeman, Melankton, death reported, 54.
Freeman, S. W., Rev., Episcopal missionary, 142.
Freeman, William, Ogden, death reported, 58.
Fremont, John Charles, Gen., candidate for president United States, 87.
French, Buell, death reported, 77.
French, Charlotte, death reported, 77.
French, Eliabeth (Mrs. John Denton), 51.
French, John, Spring Arbor, death reported, 48; sketch, 51.
French, Joseph A., Spring Arbor, 51.
French, Maria (Mrs. John Cogswell), 51.
French, Martha, Spring Arbor, 51.
French, Moses J., 51.
French, accused of aiding rebels, 465, 475; English treatment of suspects, 636; fickleness of, 478; fleet expected, 362; given Indian belt, 486; settlement at Green Bay, 103; war feared, 393.
French River, vessel asked for, 564.
Frieze, Henry F., instructor in university, 92.
Frink, Susan, Mrs., Troy, death reported, 61.
Frobisher, Benjamin and Joseph, fur traders, signed memorial, 552.
Frobisher, Joseph, Montreal, merchant bond, 595, 620, 621.
Fruit, culture in Ottawa county, 261, 267; early varieties, 267; section called fruit belt, 261; when introduced into America, 267.
Fry, Philip R., 8th British regiment, letter cited, 582, 643.
Fryant, George, Grand Haven, lumber dealer, 285.
Fryant & White's mill, 285.
Fuller, Benjamin, Southfields, death reported, 61.
Fuller, Edward L. banker, 285.
Fuller, Harriet, Niles, death reported, 18.
Fur, amount trade Mackinac, 545, 550.
Fur trade, control of, 526; molested by war, 546; petitions for protection of, 549-552.
Fur traders, house used as church, 316.
Furgeson, J. S., Mrs. (Miss Miller), 69.
Furgeson, Lydia, Mrs., Cambridge, death reported, 57.
Furlong, John, Grand Haven, 334.
Furniture for barracks at Detroit, list of 1778, 472.
Gaffé, Baptiste, Mississippi, storekeeper Mackinac, 658.

Gage, Franklin, Rev., Colon, death reported, 76.
Gage, Thomas, Maj. Gen, see appendix, 352.
Gage, boat, 438, 473; repairs to, 582, 585.
Gage, Fort, at Kaskaskia, see appendix, 369.
Gaige, Mary A., Mrs., Jonesville, death recorded, 39.
Galvez, Don Bernardo de, New Orleans, 497.
Gamble, —, Major, letter cited, 578, 615, 639.
Gamelin, Francis, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Gamelin, Joseph, Lt., Detroit incapable and superceded, 473.
Gamelin, Medard, Lt. and Adjt., Detroit 1778, Indian department storekeeper, 470; resigned, 473; salary, 484.
Gameliz, Jac., Indian trader Mackinac, signs memorial trade protection, 550.
Gano, —, Mr., vessel owner, 285.
Ganong, Rebecca Cole, Waterford, death reported, 61.
Garden of America, 259.
Gardiner, —, Rev. D. D., 239.
Gardner, —, criminal trial, 256, 257.
Garfield, James A., president United States, death of, 199.
Garrison, William, Sodus, death reported, 19.
Garrison, Michilimackinac, report of, 430, 482; size complained of, 382.
Gascoine, —, Sergt., Mackinac, 605.
Gautier, Charles, interpreter, 363, 366, 372, 375-385, 530, 545; pay, 362; sent to Lee Pee, 389.
Gazelle, boat on Grand river, 285.
Gazeteer, Holland paper, burned, 298.
Gebease, —, 378. See Pierre Gibault.
Gebou, 531. See Father Gibault.
Geddes, David, Esq., Detroit, bills of, 648.
Geddes, Norman, paper on probate judges cited, 9.
Genesee county, memorial report, 32; senatorial district, see appendix, 34.
Genoir, Joseph, Monroe, death reported, 13.
Gentzler, Adam, Mrs., Constantine, death reported, 76.
George, —, in command of company, 388.
George Third, England, 526, 620.
George, Lord, 351. See George Germain.
Georgetown township, Ottawa county, organized, 252, 254.
Germaine, George, Lord, 351, 364, 489, 490, 516, 519, 522, 542, 544, 545, 559, 616, 617, 626; letter quoted, 346-348.
German artillery used by English, 427.
Gibault, —, brother of priest, deserter, 497.
Gibault, Pierre (Gebou, Gibaut, Gebease, Gibeau), Jesuit priest, vicar general Illinois, 459, 527, 537; accused of being rebel ally and arrest recommended, 480, 497, 531, 537, 539; at Post Vincennes, 378. See appendix.
Gibbs, E. P., Rev., paper, 315-321.
Gibson, —, Col., command fort at Beaver Creek, 427; commandant at Tuscarawa, 428.
Gibson, H. H., Spring Lake editor, 298.
Gibson, Myrta, recitation by, 216.
Gicee, Indian chief, 380.
Giddings, Marsh, Judge, 256.
Gidley, Townsend E., Hon., engaged in fruit culture, 268.
Gifts to State Historical Society, 10.
Gilbert, Frank B., Grand Haven merchant, 238, 280, 281.
Gilbert, Frank B. & Co., 281.
Gilbert, Thomas D., Grand Haven merchant, 280, 281; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; fire relief committee Holland sufferers, 339; pioneer sketch, 245.
Gilbert, William S., 20.
Gilbert & Co., Grand Haven, 280, 283.
Gilberts, vessel owners, 283.
Gill, George, Superior, death reported, 83.
Gillespie, George D., Rt. Rev. Bishop, gave history St. Andrews' church, Ann Arbor, 141.
Gilmer, Samuel, Jonesville, death reported, 40.
Ginnis, —, Mrs., expenses of aiding coroner, 657.
Girty, two brothers, interpreters, 435, 463.
Girty (Girtie), Simon, Jr., interpreter, 428, 444 463, 464; interpreter for six nations 470; interpreter escaped from Fort Pitt, 463; present at Indian council 1778, 442; reported Indian attack on Detroit, 427.
Glennie, —, Lt., Royal Artillery, 547.
Gloucester, Fort, location, 664.
Goddard, James, Stanley, sent rum, 377.
Godette, Francis, Marantette, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Godfrey, Levi, 11.
Godfreys, —, Grand Rapids, built Gov. Mason boat, 285.
Gooden Francis, Mendon, death reported, 77.
Goodison, John, teacher and editor, 98.
Goodrich, Aaron, chief justice Montana, and secretary legation in Belgium, 178, 179.
Goodrich, Chauncey Smith, Ann Arbor, 142.
Goodrich, Enoch H., Ransom, death reported, 39.
Goodrich, Enos, commended work of society, 13; helped move capitol, 179; member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90, 218; memior John S. Goodrich, 180-187; paper on family reunion, 178-180; paper on old capitol Detroit cited, 9.

Goodrich, Enos and Reuben, 183.
Goodrich, Eunice Skinner, 180.
Goodrich, George A., death reported, 54.
Goodrich, John S., judge Pontiac, sketch, 180-187.
Goodrich, Levi Hamilton, Clarence, N. Y., 180.
Goodrich, L. H., Mrs. (Eunice Skinner), 180.
Goodrich, Merchant, Huxford, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi, 5, 8.
Goodrich, Moses, 178, 179.
Goodrich, Reuben, Traverse City, 178, 179, 180, 184.
Goodrich family reunion, 178.
Goodrich Transportation Co., 275.
Goods, list of given Indians as presents, 655.
Goodwin, Daniel Hon., Detroit, 87.
Goose Island, 643.
Gorden, Francis, Mendon, death reported, 75.
Gorham, Charles T., Marshall, delegate from society Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Goss, Sarah, Mrs., Mendon, death reported, 77.
Gouin, —, Lt., killed by Indians, 441.
Gouin, Charles, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473, 486.
Gouin, Nicholas, visited Detroit, 486.
Gould, A. R., St. Joseph, death reported, 19.
Gould, James, Jackson, member State Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Governor Marcy, boat, 126.
Governor Mason, lake boat, 285.
Grabber, Henry, Mrs., Colon, death reported, 76.
Graham, Benjamin, 166.
Graham, William, 166.
Graham & Shedd, traders at Michilimackinac, 658.
Grain, extravagent price for, 437.
Grand Haven, depot at, 274; depth of alluvial soil, 259; extent in 1838, 293; First National Bank, officers of, 285; inhabitants 1834, 237; price of lumber, 263; recollections of, 330, 331; Semi-Centennial celebration in, 222; western headquarters American Fur Company, 235; newspapers, Clarion, 296; Courier-Journal, removal, 298-299; Grand River Times, 296, Herald, first in county, 298-299; News, 299, twice burned, 297; Union, moved to Grand Rapids, 297.
Grand Haven ferry, 274, 275.
Grand Haven Railroad Company, 278.
Grand Haven township organization, 252.
Grand Rapids, courthouse burned, 256; market for Ottawa county, 265; Grand River Times at Grand Haven, newspaper moved to, 296; early schools and superintendents, 94; School Moderator moved to Lansing, 98.
Grand Rapids & Holland Railroad, 279.
Grand Rapids & Lake Shore Railroad, 277.
Grand Trunk Railroad, absorbed Great Western, 276.
Grand River (Washtanon), early boats on, 285; Indians, 379; licenses to trade with Indians on, 1778, 650.
Granite railroad, first in United States, 272, 273.
Grant, Alexander, Capt., fur trader, 351, 422, 440, 441, 473, 476, 492, 493, 572, 573, 580, 633; letter from Capt. Harrow, 601, 602, McKay, 606; to Col. Bolton, 606; made sketch of Sandusky Lake, 415; signs memorial trade protection, 552.
Grant, Charles W., East Saginaw, gave Saginaw memorial reports, 6, 64; vice president society, xii.
Grant, Claudius B., Judge, superintendent Ann Arbor schools, 94.
Grant, John A., Capt., soldier signed complaint, 594.
Grant, Ulysses S., president United States, appointed Bates United States attorney Utah, 87.
Grant, William, attorney general Quebec, 468; opinion regarding removal fort, 557; regarding bonds, 617, 618, 620.
Grant & Soloman, Michilimackinac, licensed traders, 650.
Grapes, shipment from Ottawa county, 269.
Graveille, Joseph, merchant with store at Michilimackinac, 658.
Graves, —, conduct denounced, 398.
Graves, William, Mrs., Adrian, death reported, 57.
Gray, A., Capt., British soldier, 349.
Gray, Joseph W., Tecumseh, death reported, 58.
Grayton, —, Capt., squadron, 514.
Great Western Canada Railroad, 276; completes Detroit & Milwaukee, 274.
Greek, George W., Ransom, death reported, 37.
Green, Allen, Napolean, death reported, 48, 51.
Green, Lorenzo D., Jonesville, death recorded, 38.
Green, Noah K., Medina, death reported, 59.
Green, Polly (Mrs. Wardwell Green), Farmington, death reported, 60; second white settler in Farmington, 61.
Green, Ruth, Novi, death reported, 60.
Green, Sanford M., member legislature, 206. See appendix.
Green, Wardell, Farmington, 61.
Green Bay, French settlements on, 103; Indian school in 1823, 129; surveys on, 103.
Green township, former name Branch

county, extent of, 173; history of, 172-175; organization of, 175.
Greene, George Henry, Lansing, corresponding secretary society, xii, 5, 6, 8, 12, 13, 217; gave Ingham memorial report, 6.
Greenway, John, Mrs. (Miss Root), 73.
Gregory, John M., Rev. LL. D., superintendent public instruction, president Kalamaoo College educational work, 92, 94-98.
Gregory, Matthew F., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Gregory, Uriah, Kalamazoo, conducted business school, 92.
Gregory & Finley, license for Indian trade, 650.
Grenadiers, their answers to Lt. Clowe's interrogations, 593; petition to Maj. De Peyster against wrongs and answer, 587-589.
Grey, —, 1778, Montreal, 363.
Griffin, Henry, Grand Haven merchant, 281; pioneer fruit grower Ottawa county, 238, 255, 268; built schooner Pioneer, 283; paper by, 280-286; sheriff Ottawa county, 244, 251.
Grignion, Pierre, La Baye storekeeper, Mackinac, 658.
Grinnell, Daniel T., Rev. D. D., 150.
Griswold, Roger W., Vermontville, sketch, 31.
Griswold, Roger W., Mrs. (Abigail Stor Bascom), 31.
Griswold, Zenas L., death reported, 17.
Grondwet De, Holland, largest circulated Dutch paper in United States, 296, 297, 299.
Gross, Henry, Riga, death reported, 56.
Grosselier de, J. B., letter carrier for Gen. Haldimand, 353, 354, 578, 579.
Grostanhim, Bernardus, early Holland fruit grower, 269.
Grosvenor, E. O., Jonesville, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave Hillsdale memorials, 36.
Groves, R. S., Rev., 45.
Grow, Ralph, Benton Harbor, death reported, 18.
Guillon, Jean Baptiste, Montreal merchant, invoice of goods, 650; trader at Michilimackinac, 658.
Guion. See Gouin.
Gunn, William, Ionia, 44.
Gunnell, Granny, death reported, 78.
Gunnison, —, Lieut., United States engineer, sketch, 105.
Gurney & Hammond, Centreville, law firm, 25, 189.
Guthrie, —, in charge of vessel Welcome, 602, 605.

Habits of pioneers, 137.
Hadsell & Dunlap, publishers, 298.
Hagen, Erastus, Jonesville, death reported, 38.
Hagerman, Ellen, Fairfield, death reported, 57.
Hagerman, Frank, Mrs., reminiscences of father cited, 10.
Hagerman, Ira J., Fairfield, death reported, 58.
Haines, Lizzie, music, 9.
Halbert, Horace, principal high school, Burr Oak, 95.
Haldimand, Frederick, Gen., British officer at Quebec during revolution, iv, ix, 352, 433n, 446, 543, 549, 576, 586, 588, 605, 608, 611, 620, 621, 626, 648, 652; commissions Lt. Gov. Sinclair, 560; copies of his papers from original manuscripts, 343-658; deplores the amount of rum consumed in Detroit, 408, 426; letters from Capt. Brehm, 410-422; letters from Col. Bolton, 427-429; letters from Maj. De Peyster, 367-398, 598, 599, 615; letters from Lt. Gov. Hamilton, 464-487; letter from Capt. Mompesson, 589; letters from Gen. Powell, 632, 633; letters from Lt. Gov. Sinclair, 516-523, 544-564, 569-573, 576, 591, 598, 627, see appendix, 523; letters to Maj. De Peyster, 352-365, 386, 388, 627, 628, 633-641; letters to Lt. Gov. Hamilton, 398-407; letters to Capt. Lernoult, 407-408; letters to Lt. Gov. Sinclair, 519, 521-523, 547, 548, 564-569, 573-576, 621, 622, 628, 629, 630; letters unaddressed, 423-427; memorial to, from traders, 550-552; names fort, 573; not yet given Indian name, 446; papers, copies from Canadian archives during revolution, iv, 343-658; how secured, iv; proposed as name for fort, 572; recommends regiment Royal Forresters, 525; reprimands excessive use of rum at Detroit, 408; sanctions war, 482; sketch, see appendix, 352; succeeded Lord Dorchester, see appendix, 343.
Haldimand Bay, Mackinac Island, 533; wharf arranged for, 531.
Hale, —, Mrs., Coldwater, 22.
Hale, D. S., Flowerfield, death reported, 77.
Hale, David B., Eaton Rapids, vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi; gave Eaton memorials, 29-32.
Hall, Clark, Raisin, death reported, 58.
Hall, O. D., Mendon, death reported, 77.
Halstead, Lorenzo D., 20.
Hamelin, Baptiste, led raid on St. Joseph, 629.
Hamilton, Henry, colonel and lieutenant governor Michigan, ix, 345, 354, 361, 364, 374-384, 387, 388, 408, 410, 423, 427-429, 442, 474, 513, 541, 543, 566, 581, 633, 636, 640; at Indian council and speeches Detroit, 443-447, 450-454, 457, 458, 482, 483;

inventories, bills and accounts while at Detroit, 647-649; called Hair Buying Hamilton, see appendix, 344; captured and imprisoned at Fort Vincennes, 357, 358, 379-381, 384, 411, 419, 430, 507, 509, 541; captures Fort Vincennes, 406; cast into dungeon, Williamsburg, 490, 509, 510; defeat and causes, 383, 387, 388, 543; expedition, 375-377, 406, 409, 428, 477, 487, 489-516; gave list of men goods and prices at Detroit, 409, 469-473, 647-658; letters from Gen. Carleton, 343-352; letters from Gen. Haldimand, 398-407; letters to Gen. Carleton, 430-461; letters to Gov. Carmahé, 461-464; letters to Gen. Haldimand, 464-482, 485-487; list of officers and men in expedition, 484, 485, 492; made dykes for boats, 493; orders census for Detroit 1778, 469; orders to, 345; parole of, 511, 513, 514; proposed frontier attack, 347; released from Fort Vincennes, 507; restrictions on rum, 365-366; sketch, see appendix, 344; terms of surrender, 500-504; treatment by rebels while prisoner, 566; see appendix, 435.

Hamilton, John Mendon, soldier Black Hawk war, death reported, 77.

Hamlin, Alexis, merchant at Michilimackinac, 658.

Hamlin, Augustus, Indian student L'Arbe Croche, sent to university Rome, 129.

Hamlin, Charles T., Benton Harbor, death reported, 19.

Hamlin, Jacynth (Jasaint), trader at Michilimackinac, 658.

Hamlin, Samuel, Jackson pioneer, 49.

Hamlin township, Eaton county, formerly Tyler, 30.

Hammond, Ann E., Mrs., death reported, 84.

Hammond, Henry, death reported, 84.

Hampton, —, 327.

Hams, —, 282.

Hancock, Joseph, Cambria, death reported, 39.

Hand, Edward, surgeon's mate commanding Fort Pitt, 430.

Hand, George E., Judge, 187.

Hannah, —, Mrs., Tuscola county, death reported, 78.

Hannah, James, Coloma, death reported, 18.

Hannah, Lay & Co., 178.

Hanscom, Alfred H., Pontiac attorney, 180, 182, 183.

Hanscom & Goodrich, attorneys, 180, 183.

Harbster, George, Mrs., Colon, death reported, 76.

Hardenborg, Helen, Pontiac, death reported, 60.

Harding, Alice D., Mrs., death reported, 40.

Harding, William H., surveyor, 105.

Hardy, —, Mr., Franklin, death reported, 58.

Hardy, Charles, Sir, fleet reported, 538.

Harmon, John, state senator, trip to Lake Superior and joke on Gov. Barry, 109, 110, 115, 118.

Harpham, —, 22.

Harriman, Walter, Gov. New Hampshire, 68.

Harrington, George, Holland, peach grower, 269.

Harris, —, editor Cleveland Herald, 109.

Harris, Ezra, Lansing, death reported, 42.

Harris, Frances, Reading, death reported, 38.

Harris, J. V., Talmadge, 255.

Harrison, W. H., general and president United States, appointed Bates district attorney for Michigan, 87; barracks on Saline river in 1814, 162.

Harrison, Woodthorp, Napolean, landlord, 51, death reported, 48.

Harrow, Alexander, Lieut., commanding naval forces in Canada, 598, 600, 603; commanding Welcome, 657; confined at Fort Michilimackinac, 572, 573, 606, 607; letter cited, 603; letter from, 606, 607; letter to Capt. Grant, 601-602; letter to Sinclair, 604; questions put to, 603.

Hart, Eunice, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.

Hart, James, Mrs., Brooklyn, N. Y., 32.

Hart, Samuel, Talmadge pioneer, 255.

Harts, George, Burr Oak, death reported, 76.

Hartson, Luther, Charlotte, death reported, 30.

Harvard University, early president, 95.

Harvie, Andrew, attorney, member legislature, on lake Superior trip, 109, 114, 115.

Harwood, Ruth A., Mrs. Jackson, death reported, 48.

Hass, Samuel, Centreville, death reported, 76.

Hastings, James, Berrien Springs, death reported, 19.

Hathaway, William, Grand Haven, Judge, founded crockery, 225, 234, 238, 244, 251; pioneer fruit grower, 268.

Hats for Indian presents, 471.

Hawkins, L. D., Jackson, 53.

Hawkins, Mary, Mrs., Parma, death reported, 48, 53.

Hawkins, Olney, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrews church, 142.

Hawkins, William B., Mrs., Jonesville, death reported, 37.

Hawks & Bassett, Holland, editors, 296.

Haxton, B. F., 281.

Haxton, Cutler & Waits, Grand Haven, 281.

Hay, Jehu (John), Major, Barrack Master & department Indian agent, Detroit, 428,

429, 441, 467, 470, 483, 489, 492, 502, 503; at Indian Council, 442, 452, 483; Barrack Master, Detroit, 1778, 472, 473; commended, 468; Indian name (Touraighwaghti), 449; in Hamilton's expedition, 494; licensed trader, goods invoiced at Michilimackinac, 650; parole of, 513, 514; prisoner, 502, 505, 510, 513; recommended assistant Indian Department, 343; salary of, 484, 485, 647, 648.
Hay, William, licensed trader at Michilimackinac, 1778, 650.
Hay ordered stored in church, 605.
Hayward, Robert, member of Michigan Pioneer & Historical Society, 10.
Hayward, Thomas, Cambria, death reported, 39.
Haze, William H., Dr., benediction by, 10.
Hazel (Hazle), Edward, messenger to Moravian Missionary, 435.
H. C. Akely, lake vessel wrecked, 284.
Heald, R. K., Commissioner to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Heath, Alfred H., Ionia, 45.
Heath, Lucy, (Mrs. William Jones), 80.
Heath, O. H., Ionia, 45.
Heckhins, J., Mrs., Holland, engaged in peach culture, 269.
Heckman, Aaron, Constantine, death reported, 76.
Hedden, I. N., Plymouth, 177.
Hedden, William, 177.
Hedges, Dewey, Ottawa pioneer farmer, 263.
Heffner, Mary, Mrs., Rives Junction, death reported, 48.
Helm, Leonard, Capt., American officer, commanding at Vincennes, 505, 506; surrendered fort Vincennes, 494, 495.
Hemphill, Orin, Burton, death reported, 36.
Hendee, R. D., Jackson, death reported, 50.
Hendee, R. D., Mrs. (H. M. Cole), death reported 48, 50.
Henderson, Don C., gave Allegan memorial report, 17; vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi, 6.
Hendricks, M. Weston, death reported, 58.
Heniker, G., Rev., Holland, editor, 298.
Hennaert, Father, Bishop, Detroit, 136.
Henney, Elizabeth, Berrien Springs, death reported, 19.
Henry —, Hon., Vermont, takes lake Superior trip, 109.
Henry Clay, lake vessel, 202.
Henry, Farrand, Detroit, author of Scientific Investigation of Lakes, 101.
Hep (Hepe), conducted canoe, 396.
Herald, E., commissioner to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Hes he waa biney, Chippewa chief present council, Detroit, 1778, 442.
Hess, James A., Berrien Springs, death reported, 8.
Hesse —, Captain at Pencour, 549; cautioned against extravagance, 547; returned with prisoners, 558; trader, 546.
Hesse —, Dr., East Saginaw, 74.
Hewitt, Fannie, (Mrs. M. V. Brown), death of, 27.
Hewitt, Mary E., Mrs., Allen, death reported, 37.
Hibbard, Daniel B., Jackson, stage proprietor, 50.
Hibbard, Elizabeth, Sturgis, death reported, 77.
Hicks, Emily, Mrs., Allen, death reported, 38.
Hicks, Jacob H., Ann Arbor, death reported, 12.
Hicks, James, Lodi, death reported, 82.
Hicks, Rachel, Mrs., death reported, 40.
Higbee, Edward W., Eagle, sketch, 28.
Higgins, Gilbert, death reported, 54.
Hill, Elisha, Colon, death reported, 75.
Hill, Elizabeth, Colon, death reported, 75.
Hill, Rollin, Morenci, death reported, 56.
Hill, Stephen, Watertown, death reported, 13; sketch, 27.
Hill, Thomas, Rev., Antioch College, 50, 95, 96.
Hillsdale college, early president, 93.
Hillsdale county memorial report, 36.
Hilton, Robert, compiled Kent memorial report, 6; death reported, 12; President Old Residents' Association memoir, 54-56; vice president society, ix.
Himes, Emiline, Fairfield, death reported, 57.
Hinds, H. H., Ionia, 45.
Hinds, Philander, Ionia, 44.
Hinman, Adna, Bridgman, death reported, 18.
Hinman, Benjamin F., Battle Creek, vice president Michigan Pioneer & Historical Society, xi; member Michigan Pioneer & Historical Society, 90.
Hinman, John F., Battle Creek, gave recollections Eaton county, 6, 7; member Michigan Pioneer & Historical Society, 10.
Hipworth, promised discharge, 631.
Hiscock, Orrin, Raisin, death reported, 58.
Historians report, 15-17.
History, Ann Arbor St. Andrews Church, 141; early sources of author, vi; Green township, 172-175; Ottawa county 222 342.
Hitchcock —, Grand Haven, editor, 299.
Hitchcock, Ira, Carmel, death reported, 31.
Hoag, William H., Judge, 162.
Hoats, John, Park, death reported, 77.
Hoats, Jonathan, Park, death reported, 77.
Hobart, John Henry, Bishop New York, laid corner stone church Detroit, 144.
Hochsema, G., Rev., 307, 309.
Hodges, Ezra J., Scipio, death reported, 40.
Hodwerp —, Rev., 310.
Hoez, J., Rev., 309.

Hogarth, Rev. Dr., Presbyterian church, Detroit, 95.
Hogeboom, John, death reported, 54.
Hog Creek, former name Prairie river, 174.
Hog Island, 433. See Belle Isle.
Holcomb, A. R., quoted, 176.
Holcomb, Benjamin, Fremont, Ind., 215.
Holdeisma, R. T., Rev., 312.
Holden, L. E., Proffessor Kalamazoo college, millionaire Cleveland, 93.
Holland —, Maj., 360.
Holland, M., Dr., St. Joseph, death reported, 18.
Holland, Simon, Hanover, death reported, 48.
Holland, colony of, 264, 326, 334.
Holland, first church, 306.
Holland township history, 229.
Holland village, fire in, 296, 307, 334-341; first schools, 326; history of churches, 301-315; location, 278; manufactories, 291.
Holland newspapers, 295-299; City News, 298, 299; De Hollander, first paper Ottawa county, 296, 299; Hope De Holland college newspaper, 297-299.
Holland, started first newspaper in county, 296.
Hollanders characteristics, 302, 303, 304.
Holland village, settlement of, 229.
Hollister, A. S., Rev., 150.
Holliway, Margaret, Adrian, death reported, 56.
Holmes —, attorney, 256.
Holmes, John C., Prof., chairman executive committee, vii, 5, 6, 8-10, 217; gave papers to society, 10; Secretary Michigan State Agricultural Society, 204.
Holmes, John W., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Holmes & Grant, fur traders, sign memorial, 552.
Holston, Nutter M., Niles, death reported, 19.
Holt, Alva, Mrs., Morencie, death reported, 57.
Holt, Henry H., Muskegon, vice president, xii.
Homes —, conduct denounced, 398.
Hoogesteger, M., Holland editor, death recorded, 297.
Hope, —, English Admiral, captured Taku (China) forts, 197.
Hope boat, 567, 585.
Hope College, Holland, 93, 297, 327; history of, 328-330.
Hopkins, Benjamin, Ottawa county pioneer farmer and fruit grower, 263, 264, 268.
Hopkins, John W., Grand Haven, lumber dealer, 238, 251, 285, 334; pioneer sketch, 244.
Hopkins, Moses B., Judge, Ottawa county, 256.
Hopkins, Silas, 282.
Hopkins Bros., Spring Lake, lumbermen, 284.
Horses displaced by engines on cars 1831, 272.
Horton, Henry Wisner, Groveland, death reported, 60; sketch, 62.
Horton, Henry W., Mrs. (Ada Jennings), 62.
Hosford, Oramel, Prof., Olivet college, 93, 96; Superintendent Public Instruction, 323.
Hosmer, Rufus, publisher, 186, 187.
Hotchkiss, Calvin, Col., & Son, 168.
Hotels (Taverns), Campbells, 162; Dean's, 164; Eagle, 121, 127.
Hough, Alice, Rome, death of, 57.
Hough, Nancy (Mrs. James Surene), 31.
Hough, P. T., Rome, death reported, 57.
House, first frame, Leslie, 50; first in Lenawee county, 165; number in Detroit 1773, 649; pioneer difficulties, 194.
Houston, James, Constantine, death reported, 76.
Howard, Horatio N., Pontiac, death reported, 60.
Howard, Jacob M., attorney, 187, 190.
Howard, Joseph, accused of not having passes, 389, 390; trader, goods and boats seized, 358, 363, 383, 384.
Howard M. D., Holland, publisher, 296.
Howard, Marvin, 162.
Howard, William A., Grand Rapids, committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Howard, Fort, location, 104.
Howe, —, Lt., 487. See Lieut. Shourd.
Howe, William, Gen. Lord Viscount, commanding English troops in America, 516.
Howell, Fidelia A., Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 43.
Howlet, Robert, Grand Haven, bank director, 285; tug owner, 281.
Hoxsey, D., Mrs. (Miss Poppleton), 207.
Hoyt, Ira, first teacher, Holland, 327.
Hubbard, George E., Grand Haven, merchant, 281, 282.
Hubbard, H. H., Bainbridge, death reported, 18.
Hubbell, Jay A., vice president and member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi, 10.
Hudson, Martin, Lansing, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Hudson Bay Fur Co., employed physician, 197; trade increase, 562.
Huff, Daniel, Bankers, death recorded, 39.
Huff, Joseph, Osseo, death reported, 40.
Hughes, Peter, Hillsdale, death reported, 39.
Hughes, Richard H., Flint, soldier civil war, sketch, 35, 36.
Hughes, Richard H., Mrs. (Miss Dullam), 35.
Huissaar, A., Rev., 312.

Hull, William, Centerville, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.

Hully & Dickinson, Grand Haven, merchants, 281.

Hulst, L. G., Holland editor, 298.

Hulst, T., Rev., 307.

Humming Bird, lake steamer, 285.

Hunt, Eunice (Mrs. Benjamin Bartlett), 30.

Hunt, James B., president Michigan State Agricultural Society, 204.

Hunt, Phebe L., Mrs., Lodi, death reported, 84.

Hunter —, Dr., Spring Lake, 333.

Hunter, James G., Bloomfield, death reported, 60.

Hunter Savage, lake vessel, 283.

Huntington, John, Leonidas, death recorded, 75.

Hurd, Henry M., Dr., Pontiac, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.

Hurlbut, Chauncy, returned salary as fire chief, 86; sketch, 86.

Hurlbut, Francis, Booneville, N. Y., 86.

Hurons (Wyandots), Indian tribe, absent from Council, 479; ask for new priest at Detroit, 437; brought war rumors, 487; from Sandusky in Council at Detroit, 443; good and bad bands, 437; in council at Detroit, 442-458; profess allegiance to French, 410; received belt from Six Nations, 444; tribe called Wyandots, see appendix, 171.

Huron rivers, three in Michigan, Indians name for names changed, 171.

Hurtubize Pierre, St. Joseph merchant, 658.

Huston, John S., Williamston, member State Pioneer Society, 90.

Hutchins, John B., Ionia, 45.

Hutchinson, Elizabeth, Mrs., Ypsilanti, death reported, 82.

Huxford, Merchant, Ann Arbor, 142.

Hyde, Newton K., Royalton, death reported, 19.

Hypolite, officer Mackinac 1780, 621.

Icebergs, deposits of, 259.

Ide, John B., death reported, 54.

Illinois, attack on, planned by Hamilton, 406, 409; attack on, defeated, 586; country, dangerous condition of, 363, 403, 404; country report of rebellion in, 363, 368-375, 377, 381, 388, 389, 404, 406, 475; English attempt to regain, 404; evacuated by rebels, 581; license to trade with Indians in 1778, 650; missionary to, 353; rebels ordered dispersed, 374; supplies exacted from, 549.

Illinois, lake vessel destroyed by fire, 283.

Illinois river, Fort LePe on, 389.

Illustrations, map of diocese of Detroit, 290; Fort at Mackinac, 290.

Incidents of early days in Michigan, 166-172.

Index given for volumes 1 to 6, 16.

Indian agent necessity for Agent at Detroit, 411; amusements, dance for tourists, 112, 113; appointed to watch lead mines, 549; ask for missionary at Detroit, 400; at Detroit without rum, 585; at Labay at war with Chippewas, 366; attempt to secure provisions from, 530; awed by vessels, 366; blankets used for windows, 49; conduct on Hamilton's expedition, 492.

Indian customs, gave war dance and song, 445; held feast, 479; never molest beavers, 493; painting bodies, 112; queer memento, 105; wearing no clothing at war dance, 113.

Indians, danger from, 613, 614, 622; demand supplies, 373.

Indian department employees and invoice of goods, 470, 647-658.

Indians, De Peyster policy towards, 585; dress, 113, 114; English policy with, 344-346, 359, 384, 400-403, 474, 490, 535, 542, 545, 548, 553; expenses extravagant at Mackinac, 634; false report of scalping, 161; friendly to whites, 125, 234; given commissions by rebels, 531; hired to intercept letters, 618, 619; hunting grounds, preservation proposed, 525; in council at Detroit, 442, 458-482; marriage with whites, 236; mission at Grand Rapids, 235; murders committed, 398.

Indian names see, Acssa-yen chief, 443; Animikainee, 442; Anqua sa ca, 452; Apachaince, 422; A-pa-quaash, 442; Ari-ouandatong, 443; Bay-ma-nia-ki-tunk, 443; Bourbounois, 445; Caha, 452, 453; Capomiké, 442; Captain James, 443, 450; Cha-min ta waa, 442, 483; Cha onanoes, 475; Charles, 449; Chémo ke Maness, 236; Co-quaa-niss-ey, 443; Cornstalk, 431; Cou na son a, 443; Da wat tong, 443; De tah yjas, 437; Dy en tete, Sr. & Jr., 443; Egh-kee-too wa, 452; Egonsheway, 483; Equshewa, 442; Esh keebee, 443; Hes he waa bimey, 442; Inip, 443; Kayshay, 443; Kec ou te nan, 443; Kee ar vee weet, 443; Kee jee kainee, 442; Ke wigush kum, 393; Ki ou quaan, 443; Ki ow ki ma, 442; Ko nio ute rie, 433; Koo quan da rong, 443; Kusigushkan, 396; Maa ni go, 442; Mach iquewish, 530; Ma con see, 443; Ma hi mamba, 452, 453; Ma mal tee at, 443; Manetawabe, 531; Mashkiash (Mark eash), 598, 600, 605; Massi-gay-ash, 442; Massong, 442; Matchiquie Matchiquivorche, 379, 392; Mec kis sinance, 443; Meloue sou ato, 452, 456; Men wee shinga, 452; Mettu sua gay, 442, 482; Mesh keema, 443; Minable, 530; Missou fi nishy, 422; Muc intté, 442; Musquash, 657; Neekigg, 422; Nibeingushkam, 393; No ba quon, 237; Nov chi ca bocy, 442; Okia, 443; O-not-Oways, 171; Oss a wa na quaa, 443; Otta waa kee, 442; Ouabush, 403; Ouanda rong, 443; Outawa, 454; Packing qua shinga, 452; Pag a nug a zische (Col. Roberts), 236; Peck an dogh a lind (The black father), Delaware chief, 443; Peemembikactack, 454; Petit Bled, 392-395, 396; Pi e mash kee cann, 452; Pinask, 443; Pow di gee ka waa, 442; Qui qua po quois, 452, 457; Quoi kee pee nan, 443; Ree mee ca, 452; Sa goney bee, 443; Sapa ti, 454; Sayaata, 443; Sca tou rainee, 443; Schee quoi, 443; Sec caha, 442; Seon ca resse, 443; Sha a ris, 443; Shabinee, 443; Sha ouana qua am, 443; Shaq qua ba no, 443; Sha waa nissey, 442; Shaw she bahriver, 167; Shee bai nee, 443; Siggenake, 380; Snip, 450; Sou dos quaa ha, 443; Ta pa ti, 453, 456, 458; Teek a mi ga zee, 442; To hou getton, 443; Tonguish, 7; Touraighwaghti, Mr. Hay, 449; Wabangay, 442; Wa bas ha, 544; Wa bene kiah, 453; Wa bi gouey, 442; Wa by nossée, 442; Wa gu she, 236; Was ka bog a mic, (shrub), 236; Wa va ohase, 236; Wa wiaghten, 443; Wah wish quoin, 442; White Eyes, 450; Wy mee gong, 442; Wyn dee go, 443; Wy shi na dey too, 442; Wy wee na cam, 442; Ya pa ti a, 452.

Indian name for Louis Campau, 236; for Col. Roberts, 236; signification, see appendix; 236; for Winsor, 236, 237; number in Vincennes, 495; number of prisoners taken at Detroit, 476, 477; number with Hamilton's expedition, 487; part in rebellion, 385, 476, 526; presents, given by English, 348; manner of giving, 655; sent for, 423; prevented settlers raising food, 435; prey of traders, 637; reported idle, 383; schools aided by government, 298; how supported, 129, 132; thefts, 369; took prisoners, 434.

Indian trade, goods and rum ordered for, 357; goods price and number at Detroit 1778, 471; licenses at Michilimackinac, list, 463, 650; requested by memorial, 549.

For Indian tribes see, Algonquin, Chippewas, Cherokees, Cohakies, Delawares, Fox (Reynards), Hurons, Illinois, Iowas, Iroquois, Kickapous (Quickapoes Quiquaboes) Mascontains, Menominees, Miamis, Mingoes, Ojibways, Ouiattanons, Outagamis, Ottawas, Potawatomies, Puants, Sacs, Senecas, Saginaw Saguinan, Shawnese (Chaouanoes Chanes) Sioux (Scioux), Six Nations, Tobaccos, Tuscarora, Wabash (Ouabash), Winnebagoes (Weenippegoes).

Indian tribes, allies of English, pay and bounty given, 347; attitude towards English, 411.

Indians, troublesome to De Peyster, 583; villages near Detroit, 649; women attacked, 81; woman wife of Louis Major, 140.

Industrial School for boys, music, 9.

Industries, Ottawa county, 286-292.

Ingalls, Peter B., Ann Arbor, death reported, 85.

Ingham county, first white man in, 49; memorial report, 41.

Inglis, Capt. of Delight, 514.

Ingram, —, Capt., injured Toledo war, 204.

Inhabitants, number at Detroit 1773, 649.

Inip, Huron chief at council Detroit, 442.

Instructions to P. Sinclair, 516-518.

Inventories, bills of account, returns 1779-1881, 647.

Inventory of people, articles, cattle, provisions, etc., at Detroit 1778, 469-473.

Ionia county memorial report, 43.

Ionia & Stanton Railroad, 46.

Iowa Indian tribe, 558.

Iron utensils, list at Detroit barracks 1778, 472.

Ironsides wrecked near Grand Haven, 284.

Iroquois, see Six Nations.

Irving, Washington, United States minister to Spain, 192, 193.

Irwin, Thomas B., Paw Paw, sketch, 78, 79.

Isles, J. J., Rev., 309.

Jackson, James, Cazenovia, N. Y., 52.

Jackson, William, Gen., Jackson, death reported, 48; sketch, 52, 53.

Jackson county memorial report, 47.

Jacobs, Anna, Sturgis, death reported, 77.

Jail, description first public building, Grand Haven, 293.

James, Capt., Delaware chief at Council Detroit, 443; speech, 450, 451.

Jamestown, Ottawa county, organized, 254; origin of name, 255.

Janes, Betsey A., Mrs., Cambria, death reported, 38.

Jefferay, Sarah, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.

Jefferson, Thomas, called rebel governor of Virginia, 490; see appendix, 357; ordered Hamilton in irons, 507; paroled prisoners, 512-514.

Jencaire, Louis, 470. See Louis Joncaire.

Jenison, Hiram, Georgetown, pioneer, 252, 255.

Jenison, Lucius, Georgetown, pioneer, 255.

Jenison, Luman, Georgetown pioneer, 255.

Jenison, Orien A., gifts to society, 11.

Jennings, Ada (Mrs. Henry W. Horton), 62.
Jerome, George H., Niles, address Berrien county pioneer society, 198; death reported, 18.
Jesuit missionary, death expected at Detroit, 432; Hurons asked younger man, 437; started grape culture in California, 268.
Jewett, Eleazer, Judge, Saginaw, 65, 123, 137, 138.
Jewett, George W., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142, 143.
Jewett Hotel at Saginaw City, 139.
Johnson, —, Rev., South Haven, 17.
Johnson, —, soldier, signed complaint, 594.
Johnson, Andrew, president United States, 190.
Johnson, Bishop A., Jonesville, death reported, 39.
Johnson, Eli, death reported, 54.
Johnson, James F., Mrs. (Miss Fish), 201.
Johnson, S. A., Capt., Washington, D. C., 20.
Johnson, William, Sir., 530.
Johnston, Melissa (Mrs. William Jones), 80.
Joncaire (Jencaire), Louis, Lt., Detroit 1778, 470.
Jones, Horace, Mrs., Mendon, death reported, 76.
Jones, William, pioneer Kalamazoo county, death reported, 80.
Joseph, probably Brant, 427.
Joslin, Chauncey, delivered first lecture on free schools, 95.
Journey, cost of, 399; from New York to Detroit, 120; perils of early, 492-495.
Joy, H. M., Rev., music, 9.
Judges salary 1777, 350.
Julia Smith, lake vessel, 71.
Justice, early methods, 257; how administered at Detroit, 468.

Kachler, A. M. W., Rev., Grand Haven, 301.
Kalamazoo business college, 92.
Kalamazoo county memorial report, 54.
Kansas Historical Society gift to society, 11.
Karsters, J. H., Rev., Holland editor, 298.
Kaskaskias (Kaskasquias), Fort Gage at, see appendix, 369; mission at, 485; rebellion at, 369; report from, 369, 388, 389.
Kayshay, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Kea, —, Mr., 607.
Kecoutenan, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Kedzie, A. S., Rev., paper by, 295-300.
Kedzie, George H., Deerfield, death reported, 59.
Kedzie, William, Mrs., Kedzie's Grove, widow, 164.
Kedzie & Kedzie, Grand Haven, editors, 298, 299.
Keightley, Edwin W., Constantine, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Keith, Oliver, Lansing, death reported, 42.
Keith, Ozan, Pittsford, death reported, 39.
Kelley, Bridget, Clinton, death reported, 58.
Kelley, Nancy, Mrs., Burr Oak, death reported, 77.
Kellogg, A. M., Litchfield, death reported, 38.
Kellogg, Henry W., Ann Arbor, death reported, 83.
Kellogg, Maria, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 38.
Kelly, Clinton, Macon, death reported, 56.
Kelsey, A. F., Ionia, 45.
Kelsey, Frank, Jonesville, death reported, 40.
Kelsey, Sullivan R., member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10.
Kennedy, Stewart, Saginaw, 71.
Kennedy, Thomas S., Capt., Saginaw, sketch, 70, 71.
Kennedy, Thomas S., Mrs. (Mary E. Litterding), 71.
Kenney, Patty, Mrs., death reported, 84.
Kent, James W., death reported, 17.
Kent, William I., Rev., 194; executor for Mrs. Brent, 194-196.
Kent county memorial Robert Hilton, 54-56.
Kentuck, Fort, rebel at, 410; attack planned, 464; location, 432.
Kenyon, Nathan, Holland, 336.
Kerr Bros., Masonville, Branch county, 20.
Kesselring, Ann M., Mrs., Cambria, death reported, 38.
Kessler, John, Clayton, death reported, 59.
Kewigushkum, Indian chief, 393.
Key, —, Mr., interpreter, 542, 544, 607, 624.
Key, John, passenger on Welcome, 657.
Kickapous (Quiquaboes Quicapoes), 390, 452, 455, 457, 475, 558.
Kickintveld, H., Rev., 312.
Kidd, James M., Ionia, 46.
Kilbourne, Joseph H., member legislature 1847, 9; member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10.
Kilbrath, Aleck, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Kilean, Johnny, Grand Haven, 334.
Kimball, George C., receiver Chicago & Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, 279.
King, Benjamin, Mrs., Three Rivers, death reported, 77.
King, Fred, Mrs. (Miss Miller), 69.
King, N. S., Mrs., member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10.
King's regiment (8th British) sent to Niagara, 487.

Kingman, William R., Benton, sketch, 30, 31.
Kingsley, James, Mrs., original member St. Andrew's church Ann Arbor, 142.
Kingsley, Sarah Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Kinney, Booth, first settler, Blendon, first town meeting at house, 255.
Kinney, George W., Watertown, sketch, 28.
Ki-ou quaan Huron chief, 443.
Ki-ow-ki-ma, Chippewa chief, 442.
Kirby, —, lake captain, 284, 285.
Kirby House, Grand Haven, 257.
Kirkland, Libbie, Mrs. (Miss Odren), 214.
Kishkacon, Ottawa village, 655.
Kissinguaa, interpreter at Indian council Detroit, 442.
Kleyn, H. C., Rev., 311.
Knapp, Morris, Mrs. (Miss Knickerbocker), 50.
Kneeland, T. T., Mrs., Tecumseh, death reported, 56.
Knickerbocker, —, Miss (Mrs. Morris Knapp), 50.
Knickerbocker, Charles R., Jackson, 50.
Knickerbocker, Lucretia, Mrs., Saline, death reported, 82.
Knickerbocker, William, Jackson, death reported, 48; sketch, 50.
Knight, Jane, Blissfield, death reported, 56.
Knight, Phoebe, Mrs., Moscow, death reported, 40.
Knight, Potter, Mrs., Farmington, death reported, 60.
Knight, William, Mrs., Blissfield, death reported, 56.
Knip, Peter, death reported, 54.
Knives for Indian presents, 471.
Knott, —, Dr., 52. See Eliphalet Nott.
Ko-nio ute-rie, Huron chief, 443.
Koo-quan-da-rong, Huron chief, 443.
Krause, Francis, Saginaw, 65.
Kremer, J., Rev., 309.
Kuder, Joshua, Clinton, death reported, 56.
Kundig, Martin, Jesuit priest, temperance work, 139, 140.
Kusigushkan, Ottawa chief forced to join English, 396.

La Baie (La Baye Le Bay), Indians at, 366, 373, 375, 553, 567; licenses for Indian trade granted, 650.
La Balm, —, Col., defeat reported, 641.
Labate, Claude, 470. See Claude LaButte.
La Bay (La Baye des Eaux), location and meaning of name, 650, see appendix.
Labeau, J. B., Michilimackinac, licensed trader, goods invoiced, 650.
La Butte (La Bute, Labate), Claude, Lt., Detroit, 470; reported sick 1778, 485.
La Chance, Benoni, 436.
L'Chandonet, 652. See Chandonet.
La Croix, —, 530, 570.
La Croix, Dominique merchant trading at Michilimackinac, 658.
La Croix, Jean Baptiste, due bill from Col. Clarke, 531.
La Croix Pt., Michilimackinac, licensed trader, goods invoiced, 650.
Ladles, garrison supplies, 409.
La Fourch, 580.
Lafoy, Augustin, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473; salary of, 485.
Laible, Eugene, Detroit, death reported, 13.
La Kaye, 365.
Lake, George B., Judge, 207.
Lake, George, B., Mrs. (Carrie J. Poppleton), death recorded, 207.
Lake, Homer, death reported, 84.
Lake Shore Railroad of West Michigan, 277.
Lake Sandusky, map made of, 415.
Lake Superior copper and iron region, paper cited, 7, 8; tidal waves on, 101; trip to Mackinac, 643-646.
Lakes, dangers navigation, 524; licenses issued to trade on, 650; survey of, paper, 100-107; tides of, 101.
Lamarche, C., Michilimackinac, licensed trader, goods invoiced, 650.
Lamb, Orsamus, reminiscences Ridgeway cited, 9.
Lambie, William, poem cited, 6.
Lamond, Robert D., Dr., Flint, 184.
Lamont, formerly called Steel's Landing, 263.
La Moquer, means la Moitre, 566.
La Mothe, C., —, company at Detroit, 463.
La Mothe, William (Guillaume), captain Royal Artillery, 431, 436, 437, 440, 468, 491, 492, 497, 509; arrival at Detroit 1778, 473; commission asked for, 469; list of his officers, 484; lost while scouting, 498; paroled, 513; pay at Detroit, 647, 648; recommended by Hamilton, 400; report, 441, 442; scales picket around fort, 499; taken prisoner, 507, 509; volunteers remonstrance of, 500; with Hamilton expedition, 500; widowed mother's poor condition, 441.
Lancaster, Mary A., Mrs., Frankin, death reported, 56.
Land, condition and price in Ottawa county, 266; entries, 62, 202; price early per acre, 166 restraint at Detroit prevents settlers, 433; sold in Illinois country, 480.
Landon, Edward, Tecumseh, death reported, 56.
Landon, Hulda, Mrs., Leoni, death reported, 48.
Lane, Marcus, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Langdale, —, 392. See Langlade.
Langdon, —, Sergt., Mackinac, 631, 632; voucher for repairs, 651.

Langdon, E. H., Holland teacher, 327.
Langdown, —, Sergeant, bills for stores and garrison repairs, 651. See also Sergt. Langdon.
Langlade, Charles, captain, 365, 367, 372, 385, 396, 545; messenger, 376, 377, 378, 380, 381; pay, 362; reported St. Joseph, 397; with expedition against rebels, 548, 554.
Langto, —, Mr., reported with reinforcements for rebels, 531.
Languinet, Josh, Michilimackinac, licensed trader, 650.
Lansing, principal of schools, 95.
La Oaseur, 652. See La Vasseur.
Lapeer city academy, early teacher in, 93.
Lapeer county, senatorial district, see appendix, 34.
Lapham, Jonathan, Adrian, death reported, 57.
Lapham, Mary, Rome, death reported, 59.
Lapham, Norton, Farmington, death reported, 60.
L'Arbe Croche, scholarship of Indian mission, 129.
L'Arche, Charles, Montreal merchant at Michilimackinac, 658.
Larnauld, 410. See R. B. Lernoult.
Larned, Edwin, Channing, memoir given society, 11.
Lasher, John A., Mrs., death reported, 17.
Lasselle, Nicholas, Detroit, storekeeper 1778, pay, 485.
Lath and boards paid on bond, 210, 211.
Lathrop, G. V. N., 186. See Lothrop.
Lathrop, Henry B., member legislature 1847, 9.
Laubargayen, R. G., Mrs., Lima, death reported, 84.
Laurence (Laurens), (Tuscawiawas), Fort, 429; rebels at location, 410; see appendix, 427.
La Vasseur (La Oaseur), employed to prepare timber, 652.
Lavigna, P. J., Michilimackinac, licensed trader, 650.
Lawrence, Edwin, Judge, Ann Arbor, death reported, 82, 85.
Laws, proceedings poor at Detroit, 463.
Lawson, —, pioneer near Detroit, 121.
Lay, Ezra D., gave Washtenaw memorial report, 82; member legislature 1847, 9; vice president society, xii, 5, 6.
Lebaron, Maria P., Mrs., Tecumseh, death reported, 57.
Le Clerc, armorer to Potawatomies, 617.
Le Croix, 570. See La Croix.
Ledeboer, B., Dr., committee to aid Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Lederer, Henry, Lansing, death reported, 42.
Lee, John G., Grand Haven, 298, 299.
Lee. Roswell H., Grand Haven jeweler, 281.
Lee & Donald, Spring Lake editors, 298.
Leeds, Alex. B., gave Berrien memorial report, 18; vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi, 6.
Leeland, 333. See Dr. G. S. Leland.
Lee Pee, 389. See Le Pe.
Lefevre, Bartha and Bouropa, traders at Michilimackinac, 658.
Lefevre, Peter Paul, Rev., administrator, made bishop Detroit, death, 136.
Lefoi, Augustin, Detroit, armorer, pay 1778, 470, 485.
Leggatt, J. A., Grand Haven, miller, 285.
Legislature granted charter O. & O. R. R., 273.
Le Gras, —, Major, commanded cavalry, 393, 498; traitor, 480.
Leipelle, Francois, Monroe, 131.
Leipelle, Jacques, Monroe, 131.
Leland, Daniel, Waterford, death reported, 61.
Leland (Leeland), George S., Dr., 333.
Le May, Pierre, witness in murder trial, 463.
Lemon, Joe, nurse, 333, 334.
Lenawee county, memorial report, 56-59; reminiscences, 9.
Lendrum, Samuel, Blackman, death reported, 48.
Lenould, 415. See Lernoult.
Leopoldine Society organized, 132.
Le Pe (Pay, Pee), location, 389. See appendix.
Lernoult (Larnould, Lenould), Richard Berringer (B. B.), British officer King's regiment, ix, 362, 379, 384, 393, 396, 406, 411, 415-421, 423, 424, 427, 431, 475, 476, 479, 487, 491, 492, 590, 613, 633, 640; at council Detroit, 442, 482, 483; commended, 421; fears attack on Detroit, 378; forbids corn exportation, 420; letter from Gen. Haldimand, 407, 408; letter to Col. Bolton, 429, 440; petitions for Dr. Anthon's appointment, 412; report to, 395; sent Indian speeches, 413; succeeded by De Peyster at Detroit, 365; succeeded Hamilton at Detroit, 410.
Le Roy, H. H., Detroit, 55.
Leslie, Alexander, Gen., 514.
Leslie, first frame house in, 50.
Lessey (Letsey), Matthews (Matt.), trader Mackinac, 624, 658; coroner's bill, 657; petitioned removal fort, 557; signs memorial trade protection, 550.
Letsey. See Lessey.
Letters, from Col. Beach, 211, 212; Gen. Carleton, 343-346; Haldimand's administration, 343-641; intercepted by Robertson, 618, 619; Richard McCarty to John Askin, 368, 369.
Lewen, Jane, New Troy, death reported, 18.
Lewis, Merriwether, Col., rebel, 507.

Leyba, Don, Lt. Gov., Spanish at Pencour, 531.
L. G. Mason, Saginaw boat, 72.
Librarian, Rev., Colclazer, first at University of Michigan, 160.
Libraries, extent of first, University of Michigan, 160; school in Ottawa county, 326.
Licenses, Indian returned to lieutenant governor, 463; traders granted at Michilimackinac, 650.
Licot, 473. See Linetot.
Liddle, John, Colon, death reported, 75.
Lideboer, D., Holland publisher, 296.
Lillie, Benjamin, Wright, pioneer farmer, 264.
Lillie, Timothy, Wright, pioneer farmer, 264.
Lincoln, Abraham, president United States, 190.
Lincoln, Daniel, Mosherville, death reported, 39.
Linctot, 389. See Linetot.
Linetot (Linctot, Linelot, Licot), —, trader, 389-393; see appendix; deserted to rebels, 389, 393.
Linetot (Licot), Jean Baptiste, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Liquor, 647. See Rum.
L'Isle aux Cochons, owned by McDougall, offered for sale, 635. See Belle Isle.
List, officers and men, Hamilton expedition, 484, 485.
Lister, Robert, 363.
Litchfield Lumber Co., Grand Haven, 284.
Littlejohn, Flavius J., Judge, 256.
Livins, —, Judge, chief justice of Quebec 1778, 349, 463.
Lobraige, Mary, Tecumseh, death reported, 58.
Lockwood, Abagail, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 37.
Lockwood, Charlotte, death reported, 39.
Lockwood, John O., Highland, death reported, 61.
Logs, shingles, bark, price, 263.
Lohr, Henry, Mrs., Centreville, death reported, 77.
London, boat, 108; collision, 116, 117.
Long Island, garden of America, 259.
Longyear, Ephraim, treasurer State Pioneer Society, xii, 5, 8, 14, 217.
Loomis, Peter, Jackson, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Loomis Battery, formerly Coldwater Light Artillery, 21.
Lord, D. V., lawyer and celebrated divine, 179.
Lord & McGill, furnished canoes, 386.
Lorimer, —, took Daniel Boone prisoner, 435.
Losses, by Holland fire, 336.
Lothrop (Lathrop), George Van Ness, Detroit attorney, 186, 187.
Lots, price at Battle Creek, 49.
Louis, Tom, ran ferry boats, 280.
Louison, Chevalier, 354. See Chevalier.
Lovain, Charles, commissary Miamis, pay, 484.
Lovell, —, Spring Lake, pioneer fruit grower, 251, 268.
Lowell, Savina (Mrs. James I. Rogers), 29.
Lowery, —, Judge, Southington, Conn., 25, 188.
Lowing, S. L., paper, 251-255.
Lowrey, W. T., Rev., 20.
Luce, Cyrus G., Gilead, governor Michigan, 23; member State Pioneer Society, 91.
Lull, C. L., Spaulding, 64.
Lull, Charles A., Bridgeport, death recorded, 12; sketch, 64, 65.
Lull, Charles A., Mrs. (Roxy Whitney), 64.
Lull, Joab, Windsor, Vt., 64.
Lumber, accepted on bond, 211; prices at Grand Haven, 263; principal industry Ottawa county, 286.
Lumsden, David S., Rev., gives church report, 150-153.
Lyon (Lyons), Benjamin, trader Michilimackinac, 617, 658; invoice of goods 1778, 650; letter of, 627; petitioned removal of fort Mackinac, 557; signs memorial protection trade, 550; to remove houses from French river, 552.
Lyon, Mary, noted teacher, 246.
Lyster, William, Narcissus, Rev., gives church statistics, 143, 148.

Maanigo, Ottawa chief, 442.
McArdle, Barney, reform of, 140.
McArthur, 214. See McCarty and appendix.
McArthur, Alexander, second settler in Corunna, 86.
McBean, —, Col., 426.
McBeath, George, fur trader, signed memorial trade protection, 552.
McBeath, John, surgeon Detroit, narrow escape of, 499; pay of, 484, 647, 648; prisoner, 510, 513; trip from Mackinac to Lake Superior 1784, 643-646.
McBride, —, lake captain, 283.
McCartney, Hiram, Augusta, death reported, 83.
McCarty, —, denounced as rebel captain, 383, 581.
McCarty, Richard, letter to John Askin, 368, 369.
McCarty, William, Gen., soldier war 1812, released prisoner Odren, 214. See appendix.
McClelland, Robert, Gov., 206.
McClennand D., experience with bears, 124.
McClure, —, Miss (Mrs. John C. Mathewson), 33.

McClure, Joseph, Gen., Franklinville, N. Y., 33.
McClurg, A. C. & Co., gift to society, 11.
Maccodabinese, William, Indian student, L'Arbe Croche, sent to university at Rome, 129.
McComb, —, (Macomb), Indian trader, 408; bill sent, 635.
McConnell, Frank, death reported, 84.
McCormic & Dawson, 584.
McCormick, Alexander, conduct denounced, 398.
McCormick, William, Mrs., Centreville, death reported, 76.
McCormick, William R., Bay City, vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi.
McCoskry, Samuel A., Rt. Rev. D. D., 184, 185; elected bishop Michigan, 144.
McCrae, David, altercation with Lieut. Mercer, 595, 596; signs petition protection Indian trade, 550; signed petition Mackinac, removal of fort, 557.
McCrae, David & Co., merchants, 658.
McCrary, Preston I., death reported, 54.
McCune, Mary E., Mrs., Hillsdale, death recorded, 40.
McCurdy, Nathaniel Adams, death reported, 37.
McDonald, Alexander, Sergt., in Mississippi expedition, 621.
McDonald, Angus, Lt., British Regiment, 625.
McDougal, George, Capt., 433; claimed Hog Island, 461; commission, 538; death of, 635.
McDougal (Dougall), —, Mrs., compensation for, 638.
McDougal, Maggie, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 37.
McElrath, —, Elizabeth, Mendon, death reported, 75.
McGill, James, merchant Montreal, 362, 363, 552, 574, 596; passenger on Welcome, 602.
McGill & Paterson, fur traders, signed memorial, 552.
McGowan, James H., Coldwater, congressman, 23; superintendent, 95.
McGregor, George, gave list of boats Detroit 1779, 648.
McGregor, Gregor, captain and adjutant Detroit 1778, 473.
Machiquewish, Chippewa chief, 530, 546, 548, 549.
McIlvaine, Charles P., Rt. Rev. Bishop, Ohio, 144.
McIntosh, —, Gen., charge Indian troops, 427.
McIntosh, William, lake captain, 282.
McIntosh, Fort, locations in hands of rebels, 410.
McIntyre, John, Northfield, death reported, 83.
Mack, Mary, Mrs., Berrien, death reported, 18.
McKamora, —, furnished information to Maj. De Peyster, 385.
Mackay, Lieut, artillery, 624.
McKay, Normand, master Felicity, 601-603; letter from Sinclair, 605; letter to Grant, 606.
Mackay, William, soldier signed complaint, 594.
McKee, —, Capt., Indian, 419.
McKee (McKay, McKie), Alexander, Col., 417, 419, 436, 445, 451, 452, 470, 480, 623, 626; Indian agent and salary, 485; present at Indian councils, 442, 452; prisoner, escape of, 435, 464; took presents to Shawanese, 479.
Mackenzie, —, Miss (Mrs. Prideaux Girty), 126.
Mackinac, Indian chief, 368; death reported, 369.
Mackinac county senatorial district, see appendix, 34.
Mackinac (Michilimackinac, Missilimakinac), Fort, destroyed by Pontiac's men, 102, early church at, 129; invoice of goods, 650; map of defences, 529; name selected for, 573; post ordered removed to Island, 534, 556-558; petition for defence from merchants and traders, 549, 550; priest asked for, 367; removed to island, 534; report of Mackinac, 353, 553; provisions, arrangement for, 555; report of post required, 412, 413; rules for, 516-518; sketch of, 429; traders' licenses given for, 650; without defence, 545.
Mackinac Island, account of defenses and supplies, 527, 528, 539, 540, 656; bills, etc., military stores at, 386-387, 651, 653, 654; described by Samuel Robertson, 642, 643; described, 524, 532, 540; defences reported, 527, 528, 552; directions for securing, 535; given to English by Indians, 564, 578; trip from to Lake Superior, 643-646; troubles at, 630-633.
McKindley (McKinley), Patrick, in Capt. Lamothe's company, pay of, 647.
McKinley, Patrick, witness in murder trial, 463.
McKinley, John G., Commerce, death reported, 60.
McKinney, Bridget, Mrs., death reported, 40.
McKnight, David, Oxford, death reported, 60.
McKnight, Sheldon, boat owner, trip to Lake Superior, 108.
McKoe, 417. See Alexander McKee.
McLeod, Norman (Normand), captain, 633; pay of, 484; with Gov. Hamilton's expedition, 409.

McLouth, Louis, president Lapeer Academy, 93.

McMahon, James, Ann Arbor, death reported, 82, 85.

Macnamara, John, Indian trader, Mackinac, 658; petitioned for removal fort to island, 557, 558; signs memorial protection trade, 550.

McNett, J. B., Dr., paper, 332-334.

Macomb, Alexander, Gen., Detroit, Indian trader, 423, 633; commended, 466-467; captain commanding lake surveys, 106.

Macomb, William, Detroit, Indian trader, commended, 466, 467.

Macousee, Potawatomie chief, 443.

McTavish, Simon, fur trader, signs memorial protection trade, 552.

Macy, three-masted schooner, 283.

Madison, James, president United States, 192.

Madison, James, Mrs. (Dolly), kind act of, 195.

Magic, large lake boat, 283.

Magill, 574. See McGill.

Mahan, Asa, president Adrian College, 93.

Mahinamba (Quiquaboues), chief, speech at council Detroit, 452, 453, 456.

Mails, early facilities, 125; carrier, history of early, 175-177; time from Vermont to Detroit, 211.

Maisonville, Alexis. captain Detroit, 419, 473, 481; pay of, 484; pleads for brother's life, 501, 502.

Maisonville, Francois, British sergeant, 419, 490; brought in prisoners, 498; committed suicide, 502, 513; pay as boatmaster, 484, 642; reported Clarke's attack, 490; scalped by Col. Clarke's men, 501; taken prisoner by cousin, 499.

Major, Louis, Frenchman, reform of, death reported, 140.

Major Anderson, boat, 284.

Makey, —, Capt., 623. See McKee.

Malade du Pays signification, 381. See appendix.

Malden, Joseph, Capt., 124.

Maloy, Ellen, Mrs., Ann Arbor, death reported, 82.

Ma mal tee at (Spotted Fawn), Delaware chief, at council Detroit, 443.

Man, first white, in Ingham county, 49.

Man (Maisonville), suicided, 501, 502.

Manchack Post, captured by Spanish and French, 537.

Manchester (Eng.), built first railroad to Liverpool, 272.

Mandeville, Giles H., Rev. D. D., president Hope College, 329.

Manétewabe, Ottawa chief, given rebel commission, 531.

Manhattan, lake steamer, 111; sunk by collision with the London, 116.

Mann, Elizabeth, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 40.

Manomenia Indians, 371. See Menomenies.

Manufactures, actual and possible, 286-292; in Grand Haven, 285.

Manuscripts, French, obtained by society, 16.

Maps, Detroit diocese, 135; fort at Mackinac, 529; Lakes Huron and Michigan in 1781 cited, 642.

Marantete, Francois, Lieut., French, censured by Hamilton, 479.

Marcy, L. J., Detroit, teacher, 96.

Marcy, William L., governor New York, gave Stanton commission, 46; visit to Saginaw, 126.

Maréehepean, Mchs., Michilimackinac, licensed trader, 650.

Margaret, slave, 462.

Maria, boat, 344.

Markeash, 605. See Maskeash.

Marks, Samuel, Rev., Ann Arbor, Episcopal minister, report, 144, 145, 153, 154.

Marquette city, formerly Carp River, 110, 111.

Marquette county memorial report, 59.

Marston, —, Dr., Grand Haven, 333.

Martin, George, Judge, 256.

Martin, W. N., Bennington, 32.

Martin, W. N., Mrs. (Emily Robinson), death reported, 32.

Marvin, Jeremiah, Jackson, death reported, 48; sketch, 52.

Mary Bell, tug boat, 285.

Mascoutin, Indian tribe, 390, 435, 452, 455, 457, 558.

Mascoutin, Sankie Channel, location, 643.

Maskeash (Markiash); Indian chief, 598, 600, 605.

Mason, Eunice, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 39.

Mason, James, death reported, 54.

Mason, Stevens T., Gov., appointed Thomson prosecuting attorney, 34.

Massegayash, Chippewa chief, 442.

Massong, Chippewa chief, 442.

Master, L., Rev., 44.

Matches, report confirmed, 587.

Matchiquis, Indian chief, employed by English, 379, 392.

Matchmaking, Grand Haven industry, 290, 291.

Mathews, 576. See Robert Matthews.

Mathews, Eunice, Leonidas, death reported, 76.

Mathewson, John C., sketch, 33.

Mathewson, John C., Mrs. (Miss McClure), death reported, 33.

Mathewson, Stephen, Flint, 33.

Matthew, Father, not first temperance work in Michigan, 133; temperance work inaugurated, 139.

Matthews, G. W., Paw Paw., postmaster, 78.

Matthews (Mathews), Robert, captain and

major, letter from Mompesson, 590; letter from Sinclair, 629; letter to De Peyster; letter to Sinclair, 576.
Matross, —, Sergt., wounded at Vincennes, 499.
Maxfield, Ira H., 251, 263, 268.
Maxfield, Parshel, Ottawa pioneer farmer, 263, 264.
Mayette, —, appointed French commandant at Vincennes, 475; Canadian pronounced ally of rebels, 531; capture promised, 617.
Mayette, Thomas, Sr., Blackman, death reported, 48; sketch, 52.
Mayette, Thomas, Jr., Blackman, 52.
Mayhew, Isabella, Sodus, death reported, 18.
Mead, Philander, Hillsdale, death reported, 39.
Meade, George G., Gen., United States surevyor Michigan lakes, 106.
Meat, price, 383.
Mec kis sin ance, Chippewa chief, 443.
Medals, given Indians at council Detroit, 456; given Wabash Indians, 479; offered Indians, 391; one requested by young Pondiac, 369; worn by Indian chiefs, 114.
Medical history, Ottawa county, 332-334.
Medicines, none at Detroit, 438; supply requested for Mackinac, 544.
Medill, Joseph, editor Chicago Tribune, 339.
Meengs, H., committee to relieve Holland sufferers, 339.
Meldrum, George, refused pass, 562; supplies to English, 544.
Me lou e sou ate (Melousonata), at council Detroit 1778, 452, 456.
Memorial to Haldimand, from Mackinac traders, 550-552.
Memorial reports of counties, 17-89.
Menominees (Manomenia, Menomes), Indain tribe, 371, 382, 392, 546; lost two chiefs, 365.
Men wee shinga, Indian at council Detroit 1778, 452.
Meras, William, Grand Haven grocer, 282.
Mercer, D., Lieut., King's Regiment, Mackinac, 592, 621, 626; arrested by Sinclair, 595-598; dispute with McCrea, 595; fitted up Indian council room, 532; letters to De Peyster and Sinclair, 597; sent to Detroit with prisoner, 621; suspected by Sinclair, 577; trouble over payment of soldiers, 595, 598, 611.
Merchants and traders, memorial from, 549; traders petition of, 613.
Merrick, Artemita, Adrian, death reported, 57.
Merrifield, E. R., letter from Col. Beach, 211.
Merrifield, Sarah T., Mrs., Lansing, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Merritt, F. G., Detroit, built organ St. Andrew's church, Ann Arbor, 151.
Merryweather, Horatio, surveyor, death reported, 61; sketch, 62.
Meshawaukee, lake vessel, 285.
Mesh kee ma, Chippewa chief, 443.
Meteoric shower 1833, 124.
Mettusaugay, Chippewa chief, speech, 482, 483.
Meyer & Vorst, Holland editors, 297.
Miamis, Indian tribe, 390; declare war with Ohio Indians, 475; in council at Detroit, 442-458; portage described, 492; post reported, 480, 481; reported from rebellion, 475; scalp given from Delawares, 446.
Michigan, celebration Semi-Centennial, 217-221; education in, 92-99; Fourth Cavalry, 198; Exchange, Detroit hotel, 184, 185; incidents of early days, 166-172; militia at Detroit, 473; newspapers, see newspapers, Journal of Education, see newspapers; teacher, see newspapers; pioneer journey, 108; pioneer life in, 118; polygamy in, 107; schools, see schools; seventy years ago, paper cited, 8.
Michigan Belle, lake vessel, 284.
Michigan, propeller, 275.
Michigan, Agricultural College, aided by Dr. Pilcher, 157; early instructors in, 93.
Michigan Female College, Lansing, 93.
Michigan State Normal College, Ypsilanti, instructors, 94.
Michigan & Ohio Railroad, 279.
Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, afterward Chicago & West Michigan, bridge destroyed, 338; history of, 278.
Michigan State Agricultural Society, gives diploma for best cultivated farm, 204.
Michigan State Pioneer and Historical Society, address of president, 1; cost of printing, 14; gifts to, 10; memorial reports, 17-89; nominating, 8; officers, v, xi, xii, 6, 8; recording secretary report, 5; report of historians, 15; representatives at Michigan Semi-Centennial, 217; treasurer, 14; work of, 220, 221.
Michigan State Teachers' Association at Ypsilanti, 95.
Michiguiss, Indian chief, 397.
Michilimackinac. See Mackinac.
Midler, A. J., East Saginaw, 72.
Miedema, D., committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Miles, —, captain of Enterprise, 161, 162.
Miles, George W., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Miles, Stephen, Mrs., Hanover, death reported, 47.
Military, British troops in Hamilton's ex-
Militia, 473. See Michigan Militia.

pedition, 484; orders E. Fox., 343, 344; stores report at Mackinac, 386-388.
Miller, —, Capt., Grand Haven, keeper lighthouse, 333.
Miller, Albert, Judge, 5, 6, 8, 15, 118, 123-128; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 217; convivial habits of the pioneers of Saginaw, 137-140; member legislature 1847, 9; member of society committee, xii, 5, 6, 8; memoir T. L. L. Brent, 192-196; note by, 127, 128.
Miller, Charles C., and wife, sketch, 69.
Miller, G. W., & Stark, tug owners, 284, 285.
Miller, Henry (Harry), lake captain, Ottawa pioneer farmer, 263, 282.
Miller, Henry, sea captain, Grand Haven, death recorded, 244, 251.
Miller, Henry, sheriff, Saginaw, 69.
Miller, I. T., Dr., 194.
Miller, Isaac D., Ridgeway, death reported, 58.
Miller, Josh, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Miller boys, saved crew wrecked steamer H. C. Akely, 284.
Mill Point, changed to Spring Lake, 333.
Mills, George H., Hudson, death reported, 58.
Mills & De Long, publishers, 297.
Milwaukee, lake vessel, 284.
Milwaukee & St. Paul Railway Co., 275.
Minable, Ottawa chief, sent against rebels, 530.
Mineral Springs, Ottawa county, 333; mines, 11.
Mingay, Mt., soldier signed complaint, 594.
Mingoes, Indian tribe, allies of English, 410, 428, 458, 477, 581; in council at Detroit, 442-458; tribe and sketch, 581. See appendix.
Mingo, Ohio, 581. See appendix.
Ministers, early in Washtenaw county, 155-161.
Minneapolis Spectator, 298.
Minomies, 548. See Menomonies.
Miquetto, 452. See Mis quitto.
Miscer, Helen, Adrian, death reported, 57.
Mis quitto (Miquetto) Qui qua bone, war chief sang war song and gave speech, 452, 457.
Missabogs, arrival at Detroit, 580.
Missilmakinac. See Mackinac.
Missionary, requested by Indians at Detroit, 400; at Mackinac, 367; value of services, 319, 320.
Missions, Detroit requests missionary, 400; Mackinac asks for priest, 367.
Mississequis, 393.
Mississippi river, licenses granted for 1778, 650.
Missoubinishy, Chippewa chief, 442.
Mitchell, David, Mackinac, assistant surgeon, King's Regiment, 544, 554, 595.
Mitchell, David, commissary to succeed Askin, 656.
Mitchell, J. H., Grand Haven editor, 297.
Mitchell, William, Concord, death reported, 48.
Mitchell, William T., gave St. Clair memorial report, 6; resolution on Gen. Cass memorial, 6; vice president society, xii, 5.
Moerdyk, William, Rev., 310, 318.
Moffat, Orlando, Dr., principal Colon Seminary, 93.
Moffitt, Samuel, 215.
Mohawks and Senecas in council at Detroit, 442, 443.
Molineaux, Martha M., Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Mompesson, John, captain Eighth King's Regiment, Mackinac, 592, 594, 599, 608-610, 629; disputes rank of Sinclair, 575, 583-592, 611; letter to Maj. De Peyster, 630-632; letter to Haldimand, 589, 590; letter to Mathews, 590, 612, 613.
Monbrun (Monbruin), French officer appointed lieutenant, 475, 488, 489.
Money, confiscated from rebels, 554; no exchange for, 554.
Monroe, Charles J., South Haven, vice president society, xii.
Monroe, George C., Jonesville, death reported, 13.
Monroe, James, president United States, gave commission to Brent, secretary legation to Portugal, 193.
Monroe, Stephen, Dr., first one in Ottawa county, 332; sketch, 333.
Monteith, Julia A., Mrs., death reported, 17.
Montforton, William (Guillaume), loyalty commended, 485.
Montgomery, Augustus, Gen., 388.
Montgomery, Augustus, Mrs., Ridgeway, death reported, 57.
Montgomery, John, Capt., sketch, 388. See appendix.
Monticello, collided with Manhattan boat, 116.
Montoine, John, interpreter for Sandusky Indians, 429.
Montour, John, released at request of Indians, 434.
Moody, E., Jackson pioneer, 49.
Moore, John, Litchfield, death reported, 40.
Moore, John, Grand Rapids attorney, 254.
Moots, Eliza, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 43.
Morand, Charles, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Moravian, minister at town of Delawares, 432; at Kurshayhking, 435.
Morehouse, Matthew, Holly, death reported, 60.

Moreland, William, Jerome, death reported, 40.
Morgan, George, Indian agent, released from Fort Pitt, 431; suspected, 435.
Mormanism and polygamy in Michigan, 107.
Morris, S. L., Dr., publisher, 298; committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Morris, Sarah A., Buchanan, death reported, 18.
Morrison, —, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Morse, Almira, Mrs., Tecumseh, death reported, 58.
Morse, John, Coldwater, 174.
Morse, Philip, Mrs., Fairfield, death reported, 58.
Morton, Hugh, Three Rivers, death reported, 77.
Mosely, William F., Major, 193.
Mosher, Benjamin, Jackson, 52.
Mosher, Mary, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 40.
Mosher, Shubel, Tecumseh, death reported, 58.
Mosquitoes, bane of settlers, 127.
Motley, John L., 303.
Mowra, George P., Dr., Oxford, N. Y., 197.
Mowra, Octavia Aldruda (Mrs. George W. Fish), daughter of Dr. George P. Mowra, 197.
Moyan, 369.
Mulder, L., Holland publisher, 297.
Mullett, John, memoir of, 7.
Munday (Murdy), Edward, Judge, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142, 256.
Munroe, —, lake captain, 284.
Munroe, Stephen, Grand Haven, bank director, 285.
Munson, Amos H., Charlotte, death reported, 30.
Munson, Amos H., Mrs. (Mrs. Sarah L. Cushing), 30.
Munson, Amos H., Mrs. (Lydia White), 30.
Murdoch, Samuel C., Sturgis, death reported, 75.
Murdock, Daniel, Litchfield, death reported, 40.
Murdy, —, 256. See Judge Edward Munday.
Murphy, Mary, Buchanan, death reported, 19.
Murray, Daniel, Reading, death reported, 37.
Murray, Flossy, recitation by, 216.
Murray, Patrick, British colonel, barrack master, Quebec, 467.
Murrel, —, soldier, signed complaint, 594.
Muskegon & Ferrysburg Railroad, 277.
Musquash, Indian, passenger on Welcome, 657.
Myers, Christopher, Lt. Col. British, passenger on Welcome, 602.
Nadeau, Martin, trustee St. Anthony's church, Monroe, 131.
Nails, bills for, at Michilimackinac, 651.
Nairne, —, Maj. commander Montreal, letter from De Peyster, 389, 390.
Napoleon I, emperor of France, 304.
Nash, Alfred, Dr., 209.
Nash, Zenas, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Natchéz, Post, captured by Spanish and French, 537.
Neekegg, Ottawa chief, 442.
Negro, reported cargo boat, 432.
Neilson, William, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Nelson, Theodore, Rev. Dr., superintendent public instruction, 99.
Neponset river, first railroad United States built to, 272.
Nettleton, Daniel, Coldwater, 20.
Newcomb, —, Spring Lake, pioneer fruit grower, 251, 268.
New Era, steam propeller, 283.
New Hampshire, capacity vessel, 283.
Newspapers, American cited in 1778, 463; Courier-Journal, first paper in Ottawa county, 298, 299; history in Ottawa county, 295-300; Michigan Journal of Education established 1853, 98; Michigan School Moderator, Grand Rapids, moved to Lansing, 98; Michigan Teacher started at Niles, removed to Chicago, 98; The School, Ypsilanti paper, 98.
Newton, Joseph, soldier, signed complaint by X, 594.
Neygus, Roxanna (Mrs. Orrin Sisson), 81.
Niagara, recommended as English trading post, 416.
Nibeingushkam, deserted, 393.
Nicheway, Indian word for brother-in-law, 236.
Nichols, E. N., Mrs., Tecumseh, death reported, 57.
Nichols, Elizabeth, Mrs., Ann Arbor, death reported, 85.
Nichols, James M., Pittsfield, death reported, 84.
Nichols, John F., Detroit teacher, 94.
Nichols, Maria, Mrs., death reported, 28.
Niemeyer, George, Rev., 309.
Niles, Henry, 45.
No ba quon (vessel), Indian name for Z. G. Winsor, 237.
Noble, Nathaniel, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Noordewier, J., Rev., 307.
North, —, Dr., Grand Haven, 332.
North, Henry H., Delhi, death reported, 13, 42.
North, M. K., Alaiedon, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
North, Townsend, Vassar, vice president, xii.
Northwest, society denounced, 552.

Northwest territory, licenses for trading with Indians in 1778, 650.
Norton, A. and G. L., mill owners, 284.
Norton, Amos N., Col., Nortonville, pioneer fruit grower, 251, 268; escape from shipwreck, 283.
Norton township, Ottawa county, organized in 1837, 252.
Norvell, Emily (Mrs. Henry N. Walker), 88.
Norvell, John, United States senator for Michigan, 88.
Nott (Knott), Eliphalet, D. D., president Union College, 52.
Novchicabocy, Chippewa chief, 442.
Nowland, Andrew, biography, 175-177.
Noyes, —, lake captain, 283.
Nunica village, 276.
Nutten, Matilda, Mrs., Moscow, death reported, 39.
Nye, Betsy, New Troy, death reported, 18.

Oakes, Forest, fur trader, signed memorial, 552.
Oakland county, first mill stones used, 7; memorial report, 60; senatorial district, 34. See appendix.
Oakland & Ottawa Railroad Company, chartered 1848, 273.
Oaks, —, report cited, 398.
Oath, exacted at Fort Vincennes, 496; required of traders, 526.
Oatmeal at Michilimackinac, 655-657.
O'Brien, Frank A., Right Rev., Kalamazoo, commended society, 13; member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90; paper by, 128-137.
O'Brien, John, Rev., 142.
O'Brine, —, Mrs., Hudson, death reported, 57.
Observer, Coopersville, newspaper, 299.
Ocean, first boat on Lake Superior, 282.
Ochipwa, 558. See Chippewa.
O'Dell, John C., Fairfield, death reported, 57.
Odin, J. M., Rev., refused Bishop Detroit, 136.
O'Donnell, James, Jackson, congressman and editor, 23.
Odren, —, in Custer massacre, 214.
Odren, Alexander, and wife, anniversary, 213, 216.
Odren, Alexander, member State Pioneer Society, 213; taken prisoner by British, 214.
Odren, Alexander, Mrs., blind, 216.
Odren, David, killed battle wilderness, grave unknown, 214.
Odren, Joseph, wife and son, Knoxville, Neb., soldier civil war, at capture Jeff Davis, 214.
Officers, army forbidden excessive use rum at Detroit, 408; pay of Detroit 1778, 484, 485; posts rules for, 401.
Officers Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi, xii; thanked for services, 2.
Oggel, Christian, Rev., 308.
Oggel, E. C., Rev., Holland editor, 298, 311.
Oggel, P. J., Rev., Prof., Holland editor, 297, 311; death recorded, 329.
O'Hara, Capt., at Fort Pitt, 428.
Ohio Falls, report of Indian disasters, 391.
Ohio river, forts on, 465.
Okia, Potowatomie chief, 443.
Olcott, —, early teacher in Detroit, 94; see also Alcott.
Old Baby, 449. See Cuquandarong.
Old Lang Syne, new version, 212, 213.
Old Residents' Association Grand River Valley, tribute to Robert Hilton, 54-56.
Old Settlers' Records, Ottawa county, quoted, 296.
Olds, Harley J., Jonesville, death reported, 37.
Olive Branch, lake steamer, 285.
Olive Richmond, lake vessel, 284.
Olives, Mary, Buchanan, death reported, 19.
Olivet College, instructors in, 93.
Olmstead, Harley, White Lake, built first house in township, 62; death reported, 61; sketch, 62.
Olney, Edward, professor mathematics Kalamazoo College and author textbooks, 93, 95, 96.
Olney, Jesse, Southington, Conn., author geography, 25.
Olney, Joseph, Mendon, death reported, 76.
Omulty, —, Archbishop, endorsed Leopoldine society, 132.
O'Neil, James, Ann Arbor, death reported, 82, 85.
O'Neil, Michael, in Capt. La Mothe's company, 463.
O not o way see bee, Indian name Huron river, 171.
O not o ways, name for Huron tribe, 171.
Orchards, in Ottawa county, 268; started from apple seeds, 49.
Orders, regarding boats 1777, 345, 348, 349, 356; regimental 1780, 591, 592.
Ordnance, list at Michilimackinac 1778, 653, 654.
Orillat, Mr., sent news of Illinois rebels, 370.
Osband, Charles H., Lansing, 7.
Osband, Melvin D., Frederickville memoir of Martin Valentine, 29; paper on Tonguish cited, 7; vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi, 10.
Osborn, David, Eaton Rapids, sketch, 30.
Osborn David, Mrs. (Eliza Dexter), death reported, 30.
Osborn, Horace, Wheatland, death reported, 37.
Osborne, N. & Co., contractors for new capitol, sign given to society, 11.

Ossa wa na quaa, Potowatomie chief, 443.
Ostrom, S. C., Dr., Saginaw, 70.
Oswego, garrison for, requested, 425.
Ottawa county, agriculture, 261-266; buildings, 292-295; burning Holland, 334-341; Clarion, first republican paper in county, 296; commerce and ship building, 280-286; early settlement, 234-237; early settlers, 238-246; English churches, 315-321; first lumber vessel built by Major Ferry and Son, 282; culture in, 267-270 history Grand Haven, 330-332; history of Hope College, 328-330; historical sermon, 222-234; history of, given at Semi-Centennial celebration, Grand Haven 1884, 222-340; Holland and German churches in, 301-315; judicial history, 256-258; manufactures, 286-292; medical history of, 332-334; newspapers, 295-300; organization of townships, 251-255; population, 263, 265, 295, 319; railroads, 270-279; schools in, 321-328; Semi-Centennial poem, 246-251; soil and climate, 258-261; statistics regarding, 265, 266.
Ottawa, boat built in 1776, 283, 345.
Ottawa House, Grand Haven, 257.
Ottawa, Canada, contain archives, 343-658.
Ottawaakee, Ottawa chief, 442.
Ottawas (Outawas), 347, 392, 428, 442, 475, 479, 482, 483, 558; and Chippewas allies Virginians, 380; chiefs, 442, 483-530; council with De Peyster, 394; English try to enlist as allies, 548; feared by Illinois, 370; in council at Detroit, 442-458; presents given to, 561, 655; profess loyalty to English, 582; refused to march against Illinois rebels, 377; sang war song, 454; sent against Illinois rebels, 378; sent down Illinois river, 375; sent to Detroit, 365.
Otte, G. C., officer Mackinac, 621.
Ouabash, 403. See Wabash.
Ouiattanons (Ouashtanon), Indian tribe, 435, 442, 452, 455, 457, 475.
Oumissigoes, Indian tribe, 371.
Outagamis, Indian tribe, 558.
Owastanonk, first steamboat at Grand Haven, 285.
Owen, —, Judge, at Detroit, absence of, 468.
Owen, John, Detroit, 86.
Owens, Alonzo H., Venice, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90; vice president society, xii.
Oxen, number at Detroit 1773, price, 429, 599, 649.

Packard, Benjamin H., D. D., Rev., first president Albion College, 156.
Packard, Joseph, Hamilton, death reported, 82.
Packer, Henry, Jonesville, death reported, 13.
Packing-qua shinga, Indian chief, 452.
Paff Bros. & Roseborn, 281.
Paga nug a zische (big belly), Indian name Col. Roberts, 236.
Page, Margaret, Mrs., sketch, 32, 33.
Pagleson, Charles, vessel owner, 284.
Palmer, Alonzo B., Dr., Grand Haven, 333.
Palmer, Jehial, Sturgis, death reported, 77.
Palmer, Thomas (Tom), gave bond to Thomas Emerson, 210, 211; paid bond, 211.
Panis (slave), murdered by Thibault, 463.
Paragon, lake steamer, 285.
Parish, —, Mrs., Kinderhook, 215.
Park, William, trader, letter to Sinclair, 583.
Parker, —, Admiral, West Indies, 538.
Parker, Elias, Reading, 2, 15.
Parker, Zebulon W., Cambria, death reported 40.
Parkhurst, J. G., Gen., president Branch County Pioneer Society, 172.
Parkinson, James, sergeant major Detroit, pay of, 647.
Parkman, Francis, quoted, see appendix, 650.
Parks, George, Ottawa county pioneer, 251, 334; pioneer sketch, 244, 245.
Parks, George and son, built first shingle mill, 285.
Parks, George and son, vessel owner, 284.
Parks, Walter B., Fayette, death reported, 37.
Parole, copy of, 511, 512.
Parsons, Orrin, 162.
Parsons, Philo, Detroit, 6; advocated statue to Gen. Cass, 6; eulogized Judge Wells, 6; vice president society, xii, 5; gave Wayne county memorial report, 86.
Passes, to be refused, 555; issued to traders at Michilimackinac, 650; none given to Mackinac, 359; regulated, 567.
Patchin, James, Ottawa pioneer, 251.
Pateman, messenger for Gen. Haldimand, 383.
Paterson, Charles & Co., receipt for stores furnished, 652.
Paterson, 358. See Charles Patterson.
Pattengill, H. R., teacher Michigan Agricultural College and editor, 98.
Patterson (Paterson), Charles, of Northwest Fur Company, 358, 398; appointed to hospital duty, 631.
Patterson, John, Marshall, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Patterson, Lucius, attorney, 256.
Pattison, J., Bombe, Royal Artillery, report from Mackinac, 387, 388.
Pay of Royal Artillery, 484.
Payne, —, Dr., Grand Haven, 333.
Payne, William H., made professor pedagogy University of Michigan, 98, 99; superintendent schools, Three Rivers, 94.
Peake, Caroline B., Richland, member

Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Peake, Ira, Richland, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Peake, Louise M., Mrs., Bunkerhill, death reported, 42.
Pealer, R. R., Judge, Three Rivers, 23.
Pean, Kashaa, Indians at Vincennes, 494.
Pearson, Edward D., Hudson, death reported, 57.
Pease, Frederick H., Prof., Ypsilanti, 92.
Pease, amount at Michilimackinac, 655-657.
Peck, Edward W., Pontiac, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Peck an dogh a lind (black father), village chief Delawares at council, Detroit, 443.
Peemembekeetach, owned war axe, 457.
Peemembikactack (Peemembeketach), Potawatomie war chief, presented war axe, 454.
Pelham, goaler at Williamsburg, 509.
Pencour, attacked Spanish, 558; loss at, 559; reduced, 546.
Pennoyer, Henry, Grand Haven pioneer, 236, 238, 244, 251, 257; death reported, 13; editor, 296; engaged in fruit culture, 268; gave Ottawa memorial report, 6; landlord Washington House, 257; paper by, 258-261.
Peoria, Ill., formerly Le Pe, see appendix, 389.
Perault, 635. See Peroult.
Percival, John T., paper by, 270-279.
Pero, bad Indian, committed suicide, 398.
Peroult (Perault), John, bill sent, 635.
Perrin, Benjamin, Parkville, death reported, 75.
Perry, Chester, Ypsilanti, death reported, 84.
Perry, Oliver H., Commodore, 282; recaptured Odren, 214.
Persons, suspected arrest recommended, 408.
Petit, Bled, chief Village Nipicons, represented Potawatamies, 395, 396; returns hatchet and pipe, 392.
Petition, Mackinac merchants and traders, 613-614; sent about pay, 610; to De Peyster, 587, 588.
Pettibone, D. A., Mrs. (Miss Lull), Bridgeport, 64.
Pewter, basins for Indians, 471.
Peyton, Bernard, Ypsilanti, death reported, 84.
Phelps, Philip, Rev., committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339; president Hope College, 297, 327, 328, 329.
Philadelphia Library Co., gift to society, 11.
Philips, — (Phillips), Gen., 507, 511; furnished aid to prisoners, 511, 512, 515.
Phillips, —, Mr., 601, 602.
Phillips, —, sergeant Eigth Regiment, acting lieutenant, 546, 549, 621, 631.
Phillips, Eliza, Mrs., Fairfield, death reported, 56.
Phillips, J. F., lieutenant and adjutant, 595, 601-603. See Sergeant Phillips.
Phillips, Mary J. (Mrs. Martin Valentine), 29.
Phillips, Walter, president Western Michigan Fruit Growers' Society, paper by, 267-270.
Phipps, Chester M., death reported, 61.
Phlegel, Chris., Mr. and Mrs., 332.
Phoenix House, Coldwater, 174.
Phyn, James, London merchant, 528.
Piaiyash, interpreter present at council, Detroit 1778, 442.
Piankashaws, Indian tribe, sold lands, 475.
Pi e mash kee canny, French medal exchanged for English, 452, 456.
Pierce, Alexander, Hudson, death reported, 58.
Pierce, Henry A., Prof., Owosso, 96.
Pierson, Benjamin, Farmington, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Pierson, Job, Rev. D. D., 45.
Pierson, Josiah, 30.
Pierson, Josiah, Mrs. (Lorilla Clark), death reported, 30.
Pieters, R., Rev., Holland, 306, 310.
Piety Hill, former name for Birmingham, 169.
Pilcher, Elijah Holmes, Rev., M. A., M. D., regent University of Michigan, 159, 160, 161; biography, 155-157.
Pillet, Paschal, Michilimackinac, licensed trader, 650.
Pinask, Potawatomie chief, at council Detroit 1778, 443.
Pine lands, early struggle for, 168, 169.
Pioneer, conditions, 235, 262, 264, 265; difficulties of sick, 334; early dangers of, 202; early ministers Washtenaw county cited, 7; incidents in Michigan, 108, 118, 137, 155, 161, 166; journeys, 163-164; privations, 214; our debt to, 223, 224, 271, 272; Saginaw, habits of, 137-140; work ministerial, 155.
Pioneer, lake vessel, 283.
Piroques, at Detroit 1779, 648. See also boats.
Pitcher, E. P., Holland teacher, 327.
Pitt, Fort (Pitte), 427, 460, 481, 584; attack planned by Indians, 399, 428; condition, 431; in hands of rebels, 410; plan of not received by Haldimand, 433; plan sent to Gen. Carleton, 431, 432; prisoners taken from, 430; report from, 437, 445.
Places licensed by Michilimackinac traders, 650.
Platt, Alonzo, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.

Platt, Edwin A., Pittsfield, death reported, 82.
Platt, Ezra, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Plessner, Henry, Prof., Breslau, Prussia, 70.
Plessner, M. C. T., Dr., Saginaw, sketch, 69, 70.
Plumb, Didoma, Mrs., Burr Oak, death reported, 76.
Plummer, Benjamin, death reported, 17; sketch, 17, 18.
Plumstead, Alonzo, St. Johns, sketch, 27.
Pocahontas, lake vessel, 284.
Pocahontas Mills, 173.
Poem, by Dr. Edward Bartlett, 63; on death W. Poppleton, 208; The Song of Time, by Mrs. R. C. Barns, 341, 342.
Point Pleasant, battle at and monument to Cornstalk, see appendix, 431.
Point de Sable, Baptiste, negro, 600; passenger Welcome, 605; taken prisoner, 393, 395. See appendix.
Point Tessalon, location, 645.
Polk, James K., president United States, 44.
Polliwog, 104. See Albert boat.
Polygamy, practiced by Mormans on Beaver Island, 106, 107.
Pond, C. V. R., 23.
Pond, Elihu B., copy letter given society, 11.
Pondiac. See Pontiac.
Pontiac (Pondiac), Ottawa chief, 369; son of chief same name requests medal, 369.
Pontiac, lake boat, 332.
Poor, T. J., Rev., president Dickinson Institute, Romeo, 93, 95, 96.
Pope, Micah D., Clinton pioneer, sketch, 28.
Poppleton, Andrew J., Omaha, Neb., 207.
Poppleton, O., Birmingham, 6, 7, 10, 207.
Poppleton, Orrin, Birmingham, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave biography Linus Cone, 201-204; gave Oakland memorial report, 60; sketch of William Poppleton, 205-208; vice president society, xii, 5.
Poppleton, William, biography, 205-208; member legislature, 206. See appendix.
Poppleton, William, Mrs. (Zada Crooks), 205, 207.
Population, Ottawa county, 263, 319; amount at Michilimackinac, 655-657.
Pork, price of, 264, 280, 385.
Port Sheldon, failure of, 227, 228.
Porteous, Jh., fur trader, signs memorial, 552.
Post, Henry D., Holland editor, 297; committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Post at Mackinac. See Mackinac.
Post at Vincennes. See Vincennes.
Posts, captured by Spanish and French, 537; expense of visitation, 352; Indian officers at, 470; inspection ordered, 344, 357; recommends regarding, 418; rules for officers, 401; two commandants at, 521.
Postage, price per letter, 211.
Potatoes, how obtained, 214.
Potier, Pierre (Pere), Jesuit missionary blessed troops, 491.
Potowatamies (Pottawatamies, Poutawattamies), 368, 390, 392, 479, 482, 483, 558; announce war intentions, 454; chiefs in council at Detroit, 442-458; declared allegiance to French, 392, 396, 397; murdered Lieut. Wright, 655; ordered to move down Illinois, 375; rebelled, 554; returned from St. Joseph, 378; traders necessary to, 617.
Potter, George W., White Pigeon, death reported, 75.
Potter, Nathan, death reported, 78.
Potter, W. S., Rev., Ionia, 45.
Potts, Hiram, editor, 299.
Pound, Robert, soldier, signed complaint by X, 594.
Powder, amount furnished Indians, 469; purchase recommended, 420.
Pow di gee ka waa, Ottawa chief, at council Detroit 1778, 442.
Powell, Henry Watson, Brig. Gen., 641; letter from Maj. De Peyster, 630; letter to Gen. Haldimand, 632, 633.
Power of attorney given by Bishop Fenwick, 130.
Powers, C. C., Dr., Coldwater, 22.
Poy, Fort, proposed destruction of, 363.
Prairie du Chien, licenses to trade at, 650.
Prairie River (Hog Creek), changes in name, 174, 175.
Pratt, C. O., Capt., music by, 9.
Pratt, H. P., Mrs., Lansing, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Pratt, J. F., Mrs. (Miss Upson), 26.
Pratt & Myers, 52.
Prayles, Samuel, death reported, 54.
Pree, C. D., Zeeland, pioneer fruit grower, 269.
Pree de, Peter, Rev., 309.
Preface, iii.
Prescott, —, Mrs., Hanover, death reported, 48.
Prescott, Robert, Gen., succeeded Haldimand as governor, see appendix, 343.
Prescott, William, soldier, signed complaint, 594.
Presents, from Indians, 423; given Indians at Detroit council, 447; given Indians by English, 348, 359, 567; given Indians by Gov. Barry, 115; given Indians Montreal, 527; given Ottawas, 655; great cost to English, 634; Indians curtailed, 636; Indian extravagance, 638; Indians how managed, 579; necessary for In-

dians, 375, 535; required for Indians, Mackinac, 561; sent by De Peyster to Indians, 371.
Prettiplace, Hannah, Mrs., Madison, death reported, 56.
Price, Isaac W., Leonidas, death reported, 75.
Price, L. B., reminiscences cited, 10.
Prices of articles 1778, at Detroit, 439, 466, 467, 470; at Detroit 1773, 649; canoes at Mackinac, 658; coroner's juries, 657; early provisions, 280; flour, 264, 429; fruit crop Ottawa county, 269, 270; grain produce and ammunition 1778, 470; logs, shingles, staves and bark, 263; lumber, Grand Haven, 263; oxen, 429; paid men at Michilimackinac, 647, 648, 652; passage Hampton to New York, 515; pork, 264; price prison site at Jackson, 49.
Priest, asked for at Mackinac, 367.
Prisoners, attacked by disease, 513; cost at Detroit, 647; demand trial, 629; number reported, 431; rebel treatment of, 636; taken to Williamsburg, Va., 506; treatment of, 508, 509.
Privations of traders, 551.
Prize money offered for locomotive running ten miles an hour, 272.
Probate judges, Lenawee county, paper cited, 9.
Produce and supplies, price in 1778, 439.
Proudfit, Jane Ann, Constantine, death reported, 75.
Proutey, Almira, Mrs., death reported, 17.
Provencal, —, traitor, sent to Illinois, 570.
Provisions, furnished Indians by British, 359; list at Michilimackinac, 533, 655-657; scarcity of, 398, 423, 429.
Prudheme, —, killed by Indians, 398.
Puants, 546, 650. See appendix.
Puddleford Papers, Michigan, author, 188.
Pupils enrolled in Michigan, 99.
Purcell, —, Archbishop, 134.
Purdy, —, Major, California, 215.
Purdy, Alexander, Major, first town meeting held at house, 215, 216.
Purinton, David B., 20.
Putman, John, Leoni, death reported, 48; sketch, 51, 52.
Putnam, Daniel, Prof., principal Old Union Kalamazoo, 94; discussed school prizes, 96.

Quackenbos, Elizabeth, Mrs., Tecumseh, death reported, 57.
Quebec, licenses granted to trade with Indians 1778, 650.
Quigley, John, Northfield, death reported, 84.
Quincy, Granite railroad, first in United States, 272, 273.
Qui qua bous (Qui qua bones), sang war song, Detroit, 452-454; council, 455; speech, 457.
Qui qua po quois, chief, certificate given by Gov. Hamilton, 458; speech at council, Detroit, 452, 453.
Quiuck, Indian word for right, 236.
Qunior, Bosseron, 480. See Bosseron, Junior.

Railroads, Baltimore and Ohio commenced 1828, 273; Chicago & Michigan Lake Shore, 277; Chicago & West Michigan, 277; Detroit, Grand Haven and Milwaukee, 276; Detroit & Milwaukee, 273; Detroit & Pontiac, charter granted 1834, 273; first in United States, 272, 273; Grand Rapids & Holland, 279; Grand Rapids & Lake Shore, organized, 277; Grand Trunk, 276; Granite, first in United States at Quincy, Mass., 272; Great Western, 276; completes Detroit & Milwaukee, 279; in Ottawa county, 270-279; Michigan & Lake Shore, in hands of receiver, 278; Muskegon & Ferrysburg, 277; none in Michigan, 272; Oakland & Ottawa, company incorporated, 1848, 273.
Raimbault (Rainbault), Pierre, illicit trader, 486; threatened with hanging, 505.
Raisin Riviere au, baute at, iv.
Ramsdell, Thomas J., Judge, Manistee, vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi.
Randall, Benjamin, Des Moines, Ia., 81.
Randall, Caleb Dwinell, Hon., Coldwater, 20; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave memorial Branch county, 19-26; gift to society, 11; paper by, 172-175; vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi.
Randall, H., 81.
Randall, Maynard, New Tacoma, Washington, 87.
Randall, S. C., Capt., 23d Michigan Inf., 35.
Rankin, James., Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Rankin John, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Ransom, Epaphroditus, governor Michigan, appointed Thomson commissioner immigration, 34; judge, 256.
Ransom, Wyllis C., Major, eulogized Judge Wells, 6, 10.
Rarrick, Flora, Mrs., rendered music, 7.
Rate bill for schools, abolished in Michigan, 97.
Rathbun, Amos, Grand Rapids, vessel builder, 284.
Rawdon, —, Lord, 515.
Raymond, Henry S., Col., 9.
Rea, Mary, Mrs., Jonesville, death reported, 39.
Realey, Daniel, raised first wheat in Ottawa county, 263; built barn, 264.
Real estate, value in 1846 in Ottawa county, 264.

Reaume, Bonaventure (Banaventure), Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Reaume, Charles, captain and interpreter Detroit, 371, 372, 470; pay, 385.
Reaume, Claude, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Reaume, Jean Baptiste, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Reaume, Joseph, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Reaume, Pierre, Lt., Detroit, dismissed, 473.
Rebels, affect Indians, 526; attack on, planned by English, 406, 407; capture English papers, 506; defences and victories of, 410, 465; evacuated Illinois, 581; lack resources, 478; loss of, 559; means employed to subdue them, 413, 414; number reported by deserters, 426; report from, 394, 459, 465, 488, 531, 635; taken prisoners, 548; treatment of prisoners, 636.
Receipt, De Peyster for goods, 652.
Recollections. See Reminiscences.
Reddick, Nancy, Niles, death reported, 19.
Redner, Conn., Mrs., death reported, 83.
Reed, Grosvenor, tug owner, 285.
Reed, Laura, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Reed, Seth, Rev., 201.
Ree mee ca, Indian chief, 452.
Regimental orders 1780, 591, 592.
Reidevel, —, Gen., 507.
Reiley, Sarah A., Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 40.
Reilhe, Antoine, merchant trading at Michilimackinac, 658.
Religious controversies, 303-305.
Reminiscences, recollections cited, 7, 9; early Grand Haven, 230-331; early ministers in Washtenaw county, 155-161; pioneer life in Michigan, 118; survey of northwestern lakes, 100.
Renkin, James, Lt. See Rankin.
Report, corresponding secretary, 12, 13; superintendent public instruction, quoted, 322.
Residence, storekeepers at Mackinac, 658.
Resolution, honoring Robert Hilton, Grand Rapids, 56.
Reuhle, 86. See Ruehle.
Revell, F. H., gift to society, 11.
Rexford, Harriet N., Mrs., Ypsilanti, death reported, 84.
Reynards, 362. See Foxes.
Reynolds, John, Dr., Grand Haven, pioneer homeopathy, 333.
Reze, Frederick, vicar general, first bishop of Detroit, 129-136.
Rhines, Jacob, Sandstone, death reported, 48.
Rice, —, Dr., unique treatment cholera, 210.
Rice, —, Mrs., Bingham, death reported, 28.
Rice, Benjamin A., Pontiac, death reported, 61.
Rich, Hampton, gave Ionia memorial report, 43; Ionia vice president society, xi.
Richard, Gabriel, Father, congressman, 131; death recorded, 133; recommended for bishop, 129, 130.
Richards, Anna, Mrs., Duplain, sketch, 28.
Richards, John A. M., Prof., Albion, 96.
Richardson, John G., collector, Green township, 173; death recorded, 174.
Richardson, John G., Mrs., first white woman Branch county, 174.
Richardson, Origen D., governor Michigan, 207.
Richardson, Reuben, Berrien Springs, death reported, 18.
Rietdyk, L., Rev., 309.
Riggs, Lewis, Jonesville, death reported, 38.
Riley, Daniel, Talmadge pioneer, 255.
Riley, Henry H., Constantine, author Puddleford papers, 188; delegate Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave memorial report St. Joseph county, 75; vice president society, xii.
Ring, Paul B., Jackson, stage proprietor, 50.
Ripley, E. L., Prof, 92, 96.
Ripley, Whitman, Rome, death reported, 57, 61.
Rivers, see Clinton, 171; Fox, 103; Grand, 285; Huron, 171; Illinois, 389; Muskingum, 272; Saginaw, 72; Sh'awshebah, 167.
Rivieres Hippt des, Michilimackinac, licensed trader, 650.
Roach, Mark, White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
Roat, Malachi, Sturgis, death reported, 77.
Roberts, —, Ottawa pioneer, 251.
Roberts, Amos, Col., Paga nug a zische, Indian name for, 236.
Roberts, Welch, landlord, 257.
Robertson, Daniel, captain 84th British Regiment, account of trip from Mackinac to Lake Superior 1784, 643-646.
Robertson, John, Brig. Gen., protested against bill for wood for garrison, 467, 468.
Robertson, John C., Cambria, death reported, 37.
Robertson (Robinson), Samuel, sailor, merchant, carpenter, account of imprisonment by orders Gen. Sinclair, 618-633; built wharf at Mackinac, 622, 623; erected block house, Mackinac Island, 538; gave description Michilimackinac, 642, 643; journal cited, 533; letter to Sinclair, 620; pilot of Felicity, 530; property confiscated, 625; refused bond, 577; trial postponed, 565.
Robinson, Amos, arbitrator, 254.

Robinson, David G., Hastings, vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi.
Robinson, Duncan, vessel builder and owner, 284.
Robinson, Emily (Mrs. W. N. Martin), sketch, 32.
Robinson, Fanny (Mrs. Reuben Fish), 197.
Robinson, Hiram (Hi), 332.
Robinson, Rix., first pioneer of Ottawa county, agent for American Fur Company, viii, 225, 238, 245, 248, 257, 280; attempt to establish store, 237; congressman, death recorded, 243; helped found Grand Haven, 257, 258; Indian name for, 236; member Constitutional Convention, 256; sketch, 241-243; trading post of, 235, 242, 280, 282; United States sutler, Detroit, 242.
Robinson, Rix, Mrs., daughter of Indian chief, 235.
Robinson, White, Williams & Co., boat owners, 285.
Rocheblave, Marie Michel de (Mrs. Philip), 491.
Rocheblave, Philip (Phillippe), Francois de Rastel, governor of Kaskaskia, 344, 350, 476; escaped from military prison, 513; letter cited, 402, 436, 438, 458; placed in irons by Willing, 369, 402, 458-460, 465, 490, 491.
Rock. See Joseph Rocque.
Rocket, prize engine 1831, 272.
Rockey, Caleb, Royalton, death reported, 19.
Rocque (Rock Rocq), Joseph, interpreter, 365, 366, 385, 530, 542, 544, 559, 561; surrender of, 369. See appendix.
Rocque (Roque) & Calveé, 366.
Rodney, George Boydges, Sir, admiral sent to West Indies, 538.
Roeser, Otto, Judge, sketch, 71, 72.
Roeser, William, Freeland, 72.
Rogers, Abigail C., principal Michigan Female College, Lansing, 93, 95.
Rogers, Delia, principal Michigan Female College, Lansing, 93.
Rogers, James I., Eaton Rapids, soldier war 1812, sketch, 29.
Rogers, James I., Mrs., Eaton Rapids, death reported, 29.
Rogers, W. H., Holland editor, 298.
Romeyn, Theodore, Detroit, death reported, 12.
Romulus, ship, 514.
Roost, John, Holland publisher, 297.
Root, Albert M., East Saginaw, sketch, 72, 73.
Root, Albert M., Mrs., 73.
Root, J. M., Hon, 20.
Root, Roland, sketch, 19-22.
Root, Roland, Mrs., 21.
Root & Miller, 72.
Rose, Samuel, Clinton, death reported, 58.
Roseboom & Pfaff Bros., 281.
Rosenhoeser, C., Mrs., White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
Ross, Hannah, Mrs., death reported, 31.
Rounds, Henry, Niles, death reported, 19.
Roy, Andre, Mississippi, trader at Michilimackinac, 658.
Royal Artillery. See Artillery.
Rozelle, Rudolph, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 40.
Ruehle (Reuhle), John V., Detroit, 86.
Rulison, Sallie A. (Mrs. George W. Fish), author of missionary leaf, 199.
Rum (liquor), account of, at Detroit, 647; demanded by Indians, 396; furnished Indians by English, 359; furnished prisoners, 647; list at Michilimackinac 1780, 656; none at Detroit for Indians, 585; quantity used daily at Detroit fort, 419, 426; remonstrance against excessive use at Detroit, 408; restrictions against price, 365, 366; scarcity reported by Sinclair, 586.
Rumrill, Harvey, 137, 138.
Rumsey, Henry, Judge, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142, 143.
Rundall, Josiah, Pittsfield, death reported, 84.
Rush, Henry, Berrien Springs, death reported, 19.
Russan, Jacob, death reported, 77.
Russell, —, Jackson, landlord, 49.
Russell, —, Mrs., Macon, death reported, 58.
Russell, Cornelia, Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.
Russell, Frank G., graduate Ypsilanti Normal and principal of Middletown school, Lansing, 95.
Russell, Sarah, teacher, Detroit, retired, 94.
Russey, —, 49.
Rynearson, Barnet, St. Joseph, death reported, 19.

Sabres (Sabris, Toyes, Wernippigoes), Indians, 371, 378.
Sackville (Sackwith), Fort, at Vincennes, 383; see appendix; cannon ordered spiked, 491; capture not known, 506, 507; garrisoned by English, 494, 495; given to Clarke, 500; location, 357; see appendix; surrendered by Hamilton, 504.
Sacs (Sakis), and Reynards or Foxes, 384, 530, 546; at Mackinac, 573; quiet, 381; taken prisoners by rebels, 558.
Sadler, —, teacher, 94-96.
Sagina river, traders at Mackinac, 658.
Saginaw (Saguenant), Bay trade with, 640.
Saginaw, city called fort, 137; deer shot in streets, 74.
Saginaw county, first wheat grown in, 64; memorial report, 64; senatorial district,

34; see appendix; pioneers, habits of, 137.
Saginaw (Saquinah), Indians, 545; allies of English, 548; at council in Detroit, 442.
Sagoneybee, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Saguenant, 640. See Saginaw Bay.
St. Andrew's church, Ann Arbor, history of, 141-155.
St. Cosme, Amable, Detroit, armorer pay, 484.
St. Cosme, Pierre, Lieut., Detroit, pay, 484.
St. Germain, Louis, interpreter at Quebec, 626.
St. Hubert, —, missionary to Illinois, 353.
St. John, —, Mrs., Woodbridge, death reported, 38.
St. Johns church, Grand Haven, German Lutheran, 301.
St. Joseph, pioneer vessel, Grand Haven, 282.
St. Joseph county memorial report, 75.
St. Joseph Post, aid requested to suppress rebellion, 475, 553, 567; attached to Michilimackinac, 639; control of, 564, 565; condition of, 545; rebels reported starving at, 385.
St. Leger, Lt., Col., 346.
St. Lorne, Pierre, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
St. Martin, Adhemar, commissary Indians, 484; account for wrecked goods recommended, 467.
St. Mary's Post, captain sent to, 553, 567; no necessity for guards at, 563; reinforced from Detroit, 547.
St. Paul, —, trader, 390.
St. Paul's, Grand Haven, German Lutheran church, 302.
St. Vincennes, post, 459. See Vincennes and Fort Sackville.
Sakes, 381. See Sac Indians.
Salaries, British soldiers and mechanics, 350, 484, 485, 647, 648.
Sandbrook, Mary Ann, Bloomfield, death reported, 61.
Sandbrook, William, Bloomfield, death reported, 61.
Sanderson, Melancthon, Augusta, death reported, 82.
Sandusky city, 428, 429.
Sandusky Indians, allies of English, 410, 417.
Sanford, Mary (Mrs. E. H. Stanton), 46.
Sanford, Philo, Niles, death reported, 19.
Sanguinet (Sanquinet), Joseph, Montreal, trader, 658.
Sapati (Sa pa ti a), 454; given medal C. D., 456.
Sastakaritze, 449.
Sault Ste. Marie in 1851, 110.
Saunders, John, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Savage, Hunter, Grand Haven, bank director, 285.
Sawyer, Horace, Kalamazoo county, death reported, 54.
Sawyer, Horace, Centreville, St. Joseph county, death reported, 75.
Saxton, Margaret, Mrs., sketch, 79, 80.
Sayaata, Huron chief, 443.
Scalps, bought by hair buying Hamilton, see appendix, 344; given Gov. Hamilton, 431.
Scatourainee, Huron chief, 443.
Schaddelee, K., committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Schall, Aaron, Mrs., Three Rivers, death reported, 77.
Schank, 356. See Shank.
Scheequor, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Scherhorm, William, Mrs., Nottawa, death reported, 77.
Schieffelin, Jacob, Lieut., Detroit, 470, 498; escaped from prison, 513; pay, 484, 647, 648.
Schiong, interpreter, 366.
Schlosser, —, M., 368.
Schlosser, Fort, 421.
Schmidt, George, Saginaw city, sketch, 73.
Schmidt, George, Mrs. (Margaretha B. Bauker), 73.
Schoff, A. M., Ann Arbor, 146.
School, The, Ypsilanti school paper, 98.
Schools, compulsory bill passed, 97; county superintendency, 97; first in Holland, 326-328; for Indians, 129; free, first lecture on, 95; number in 1860, 98; history of, and teachers, 92-99; history of Ottawa county, 321-328; rate bill abolished, 97.
Schoolhouses, Detroit in 1860, 94; Grand Haven, used as court house, 294.
Scioux, 547. See Sioux.
Scott, Charles, Prof. D. D., Hope College, 329; committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Scott, Rachael, Mrs., Moscow, death reported, 39.
Scott, Winfield, Gen., candidate for president United States, 87.
Scovill, —, Mrs., Coldwater, 22.
Scrage, early river boat, 125.
Scult, Marlan, Mrs., Norvell, death reported, 48.
Seabrease, A. W., Rev., 33.
Seal of Bishops of Detroit, 136.
Searles, Zelotes, Charlotte, death reported, 31.
Searcher, Holland newspaper, lived only one year, 297.
Sears, Mary E., Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Sebastopol, lake vessel, 284.
Seccaha, Chippewa chief, 442.
Secoux, 371. See Sioux.
Secretary, recording, report of, 5-12.
See, John L., Rev., New York, sent aid Holland fire sufferers, 340.

Seelye, Lydia L., Mrs., Medina, death reported, 57.
Sees of the Catholic church, 129.
Selby, Warren B., Farmington, death reported, 61.
Semi-Centennial of Ottawa county, poem, 246-251.
Semi-Centennial, Michigan celebration, 4, 215-221; Ottawa county, 222-342.
Seneca Indians, in council at Detroit, 347, 442-458; speech of chief in council, 446, 449.
Senecas, relation to Mingoes, 581. See appendix.
Seon-ca resse, Huron chief, 443.
Serjeants (Sergeants), Detroit, pay 1778, 484.
Seroux, 372. See Sioux.
Settlements, broken up at Detroit, 433; early Ottawa county, 234.
Settlers, early at Grand Haven, 238-246.
Seward, William, H. U. S., secretary of state, 207.
Shaaris, Huron chief, 443.
Shabinee, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Shaboygan River, 642. See Cheboygan.
Shank, Ella W. (Mrs. Rush J., Miss Williams), gave violin solo, 6.
Shank (Schank), John, captain British, 360, 387, 416, 420, 422, 473; letter from Robertson, 643; naval commissioner, 356, 518.
Sha on an a qua am, Chippewa chief, 443.
Shaq quabano, Chippewa chief, 443.
Shaw, Reynolds & Co., East Saginaw, merchants, 72.
Shaw, Thomas, York, death reported, 82.
Shawaanissey, Chippewa chief, 442.
Shawnese (Shawanese, Chanes, Shawnees, Chawanese), 131, 414, 417, 427, 441, 475; accepted war at Detroit council, 442-458; belts, 434; delivered up prisoners, 435; English allies, 347, 410, 465; expected at Detroit, 418; took Captain Daniel Boone prisoner, 435.
Shaw she bah, Indian chief, creek named after, 167.
Shea, Rebecca, Mrs., Pontiac, death reported, 61.
Shears, John, White Pigeon, death reported, 75.
Shedd & Graham, traders, 658.
Sheebainee, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Sheeler, Jane, Cambridge, death reported, 56.
Sheldon, Mary L., Blissfield, death reported, 57.
Sheldon & Slayton, Grand Haven, merchants, 281.
Shepard, Mary A., Constantine, death reported, 76.
Sheriff, salary 1777, 350.
Sherman, Levi, Rollin, death reported, 56.
Shiawassee county senatorial district, see appendix, 34.
Shingles, made of cedar, 640 pioneer price, 263.
Shinmel, David, Centreville, death reported, 76.
Ship building in Ottawa county, 280.
Shipman, John B., Judge, 23.
Shirts, price for coroner's for body, 657; required for Mackinac Indians, 561.
Shoemaker, B. W., secured Haldimand papers, iv.
Shoemaker, Joseph P., Amsden, vice president, xii, gave Montcalm memorial report, 6.
Shoemaker, Michael, colonel civil war, 5, 8, 17; chairman committee of historians, v, xii, 8, 15-17; delegate of society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gift to society, 11.
Shot for Indians, 471.
Shourd (Shroud, Howe), Lt., with Hamilton's expedition, 48-491, 497; wounded by accident and died, 493.
Showerman, Timothy, Mrs., Ypsilanti, death reported, 83.
Shravensande, P., editor, 297.
Shroud, 491. See Lt. Shourd.
Shucks, Charles, Constantine, death reported, 76.
Sibbald, Ann, Mrs., Jonesville, death reported, 37.
Sides, Isaac, Mrs., Colon, death reported, 75.
Siggenake, Milwaukee, chief, led insurgents, 380.
Sill, J. M. B., Prof, educational positions, 92-93; superintendent Detroit schools, 94.
Silver Heels, Indian chief, death cited, 443.
Simmons, Anna, Mrs., Pittsford, death reported, 37.
Simmons, Maria M., Mrs., Moscow, death reported, 38.
Simons, Isam, Mrs. (Miss Lull), Bridgeport, 64.
Simons, Lavina, Mrs., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Simpkins, E. B., Mrs., poem by, 216.
Sinclair, Laura H., Lyon, death reported, 61.
Sinclair, Patrick (Patt.), Capt., British governor at Mackinac succeeding De Peyster, ix, 360, 361, 389, 589, 590, 592, 598, 606, 608, 609, 614-615, 619-622, 624-627, 630-633, 639-642, 657; appointed lieutenant governor Mackinac, 364, 365, 394, 398, 516, 517, 608, 633; arrested Capt. Harrow, 601; arrested Mercer, 596, 597; arrived at post, 398; cautioned against expenses, 634; erected block houses, Mackinac, 557; illness reported, 612, 613; imprisoned Robertson, 618, 622; letter from Brehm, 533-538, 555, 556; letter from Clowes, 592, 595, 609, 610; from

De Peyster, 580-586, 617; letters from Gen. Haldimand, 519, 521-523, 547, 564-569, 573-576, 622, 628, 629; letter from Mathews, 576; letter from Mercer, 597; letter from Samuel Robertson, 620; letter from Wm. Park, 583; letters to Capt. Brehm, 523-532, 538-544, 552, 553, 578, 607, 610-612; to De Peyster, 584-586, 587, 600, 616-618; to Guthrie, 605; to Haldimand, 516-523, 544-564, 569-573, 576, 577, 591, 598, 627; quoted Vol. x, p. 390; see appendix; to Capt. Harrow, 602-605; letter to McKay, 605; to Mathews, 629; to Samuel Robertson, 620; list of goods furnished for at Michilimackinac, 655; orders, 602-605; rank disputed, 575, 589-592; trouble with soldiers, 586, 587, 588.

Sinex, Thomas H., president Albion College, 93.

Sinzley, John, Mrs., Mendon, death reported, 77.

Sioux (Scioux, Secoux, Seroux), 371, 372, 558; allies of English, 530, 559; chiefs, 544, 548, 561; employed by English, 547; presents from English, 561; sought as English allies, 563; threaten revolt against English, 361; trouble with Ochlipwas, 563.

Sipley, May, organist, 8.

Sisson, Orrin, Hartford, death reported, 80; sketch, 81.

Sisson, Orrin, Mrs., 81.

Sitterding, Mary E. (Mrs. Thomas S. Kennedy), 71.

Six Nations (Iroquois), awe other tribes, 428; proposed attack on Detroit, 427; sent belt to Hurons, 444.

Sixtieth British regiment, 546.

Skeels, James, Jamestown, 255.

Skinner, Eunice (Mrs. L. H. Goodrich), 180.

Skinner, Joseph, death reported, 54.

Skinner, William, death reported, 54.

Slag, Harm, Holland publisher, 296.

Slaght, John, Mundy, 33.

Slaght, — (Mrs. John C. Mathewson), 33.

Slater, Leonard, Rev., and wife, missionary, Grand Rapids, 235.

Slater, Sylvester, Canadaigua, death reported, 57.

Slaves (Panis), murdered by Thibault, 463; number at Detroit, 469, 649; price of, 470.

Smallman, —, lake captain, 285.

Smallpox epidemic, Grand Haven, 333.

Smart, W. N., Dr., Grand Haven, 333.

Smith, Aaron, invented jointer plow, 203.

Smith, Benjamin F., death reported, 54.

Smith, Ed., Coopersville editor, 299.

Smith, Eleazer, Ypsilanti, 159.

Smith, George A., Somerset, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.

Smith, Harry, lake captain, 284.

Smith, Hiram, Harwood, Jackson, vice president society, xi.

Smith, Joseph, Morman leader, death reported, 106.

Smith, L. M. S., Rev., Ottawa county editor, 297; pioneer fruit grocer, 268; poem, 246-251.

Smith, O. H., Rev., Chester, kept day school, 302.

Smith, Phillip, Parma, death reported, 48.

Smith, Samuel, North Adams, death reported, 39.

Smith, Samuel L., Lansing, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.

Smith, Truman, United States senator, Conn., 109.

Smith, W. L., historical sketches cited, 324n.

Snip, Wyandot war chief, speech in council, 450.

Snook, Henry, Mrs., Colon, death reported, 75.

Snow, Orrin D., Berrien, death reported, 18.

Snow, depth in Ottawa county, 257.

Soil and climate, Ottawa county, 258-261.

Soldiers, complain of not getting allowance, pay, rum and tobacco, 587, 588, 595; exchange rations, 385; number volunteers at Detroit, 479; pay of, 212, 484, 485; pay question at Mackinac, 593.

Solomon, Ezekial, Montreal merchant, Michilimackinac, 658.

Solomon, J. W., Mrs. (Miss Putman), 52.

Solomon & Grant, invoice of goods 1778, 65.

Song, new version of Auld Lang Syne, 212.

Song of Time, the poem, 341, 342.

Soper, Catharine, Dover, death reported, 59.

Southerner, ocean steamer, 305.

Southwick, Allie, Miss, recitation by, 216.

Southworth, Albert, Raisin, death reported, 59.

Spades, scarcity at Mackinac, 387.

Spain, sent messengers to Indians, 458.

Spaniards, aided rebels, 495; allies of French, 455; condition, 478; engaged at Post Vincennes, 437; foes of English, 465; given Indian belt, 486; Indian allies of, 461.

Spanish boats at St. Joseph, 369; captured, 556.

Spanish and French, capture American posts, 537.

Spanish forts on Mississippi threatened by English, 542.

Spanish, prisoners taken, 548; soldiers ordered sent away, 566; traders on Mississippi, see also Spaniards, 562.

Spare, —, Saginaw, adopted deserted baby, 122.

Spear, Stephen, Seneca, death reported, 58.

Spencer, John C., New York attorney, 87.

Spencer, Mary C., Mrs., gift to society, 11.
Spendler, F. W., Rev., 301.
Spinal meningitis epidemic, Grand Haven, 333.
Spindler, George, Mrs. (Miss Miller), 69.
Spoon, John, Spoonville, pioneer fruit grower, 268, 332.
Spotted Fawn, Delaware chief, 443.
Sprague, Frederick A., Judge, Avon, 202.
Sprague, James M., South Lyon, death reported, 60.
Spring, Gardiner, Rev. D. D. 239.
Spring Lake village, formerly Mill Point, mineral springs in, 333; newspapers, 298, 299; smelting furnace, 291.
Sprowles, Mahala, Mrs., Adams, death reported, 38.
Stafford, Nicholas, Mrs., Cambridge, death reported, 58.
Stanford, Mary (Mrs. E. H. Stanton), 46.
Stanley, Cornelius, Coloma, death reported, 19.
Stanton, Erastus H., Hon., sketch, 45-47.
Stark & Miller, 285.
State Historical Society. See Michigan State Historical Society.
State Pioneer Society. See Michigan State Pioneer Society.
Staton, Phoebe, Niles, death reported, 19.
Staves, price, 263.
Steamers, collide on Lake Superior, 116.
Stearns, —, Grand Haven, factory destroyed by fire, 281, 290.
Stebbins, Cortland B., deputy superintendent public instruction, 92; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave memorial report Ingham, 41; gift to society, 11; memoir of Father Winter cited, 9; memorial report Ingham county, 41; vice president society, xi.
Stebbins, Francis R., Adrian, an old time trip, 108-118; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; vice president society, 5.
Stebbins, Francis R., Mrs., 108.
Steel, H., Mrs., Talmadge pioneer, 255.
Steel, Harry (Henry), Ottawa pioneer farmer, 263; pioneer fruit grower, Lamont, 268.
Steele, William, Ionia, 45.
Steel's Landing, changed to Lamont, 263.
Steffens, N. M., Rev. D. D., given chair Hope College, 306, 308, 329.
Stegeman, Albert, Grand Haven merchant, 281.
Stephenson, George, built Rocket, prize engine 1831, 272.
Sterling, James, captain, paroled prisoner, 349; Detroit succeeded by McGregor, 473, 583.
Sterling, Joseph M., Monroe, vice president society, xii.
Sterling, William, Lt., Detroit 1778, 473.
Stevens, Henry, 11.
Stevens, Levi, Rome, death reported, 58.
Stewart, —, Indian agent, south Vincennes, 497.
Steward, A. T., committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Stewart, Sheldon E. M., Mrs., Michigan Center, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Stickney, George, Grand Haven, bank cashier, 285; paper by, 286-292.
Stickney, "Two," injured in Toledo war, 204.
Stinkards. See Puants and appendix, 650.
Stirling, James, 583. See James Sterling.
Stobbelaar, J., Rev., 308, 309.
Stockwell, Madelon (Mrs. Turner), first woman graduate University of Michigan, 98.
Stoddard (Stoddart), Allan. Ottawa, pioneer fruit grower, 263, 268.
Stone, Aurelia, Mrs., Allen, death reported, 40.
Stone, James A. B., Dr., president Kalamazoo College, 93.
Stone, Thomas, passenger on Welcome, 602, 657.
Stones, Ottawa county formations, 259.
Stoors & Wyman, Blendon mill owners, 255.
Storekeepers at Michilimackinac, canoes and residences, value given, 658.
Stores, at Michilimackinac, list given, 653, 654; expenses of garrisons at Michilimackinac, 651; list of proprietors at Michilimackinac, 658; sent from Montreal to Detroit, 417; stock in Grand Haven, 280, 281; taken on Hamilton's expedition, 409.
Storick, John, Berrien Springs, death reported, 18.
Storr's mill, 285.
Stowell, J. S., Fayette, death reported, 40.
Strang, James J., Mormon king, sketch, 106, 107; member legislature, 107.
Strang, James J., Mrs., lawful wife of, 107.
Strawberries grown in Ottawa county, 269.
Streeb, George, Saginaw, 71.
Strong, Alonzo B., Somerset, death reported, 38.
Strong, Harriet, Mrs., death of, 38.
Strong, James A., Somerset, death reported, 38.
Strong, Leman, Litchfield, death reported, 38.
Stroud & Molton, required for Mackinac Indians, 561.
Stuart, —, 403, 480, 481.
Stuart, Orlando G., Avon, death reported, 60.
Stuart, Robert, Indian trader, with Northwest Fur Company, 225, 240; one of the founders of Grand Haven, 257, 258.

Stuyvesant, A. D., Mrs., 81.
Styles, —, Dr., Grand Haven, 333.
Sumner, Charles, United States senator, 174.
Sunday school, first in Grand Haven, 331.
Superior, lake vessel, 120.
Superior, Lake, licenses issued to trade with Indians on, 650; pioneer trip to, 108-118; trip to, from Mackinac, 643-646.
Supplies, arranged for at Detroit, 583; denounced, 380; question of, for troops, 383; sent to fire sufferers, Holland, 338.
Surene, James, Vermontville, sketch, 31.
Surene, James, Mrs. (Nancy Hough), 31.
Surrender of Hamilton, 504.
Surveyors, early privations, 103, 104.
Suydam, James, Elder, gift to Hope College, 329.
Swarthout, Susan, Mrs. (Miss Odren), Reading, 214.
Sweesey, S., Mrs., Norvell, death reported, 48.
Sweet, Samuel, Adrian, death reported, 59.
Sweetland, Fred, Capt., Sturgis, death reported, 75.
Swegles, John, auditor general, 109.
Switzer, John, Saline, death reported, 83.
Sykes, —, United States soldier, 166.

Tabeau, Baptiste, Montreal, trader, 658.
Tabor, Mary A., Three Oaks, death reported, 19.
Tacquaagancy, Chippewa chief, 442.
Taku Forts, China captured by English 1861, 197.
Tapati (Tapatia, Yapati), Indian, 453, 456; speech at council, 458. See also Yapati.
Tappan, Henry Phillip, D. D., LL. D., president University of Michigan, 92.
Tappon, Ira, death reported, 77.
Tascon, —, Corporal, 395.
Taverns. See Hotels.
Taxes, early in Green township, 173; in Ottawa county, 289, 290; rate bill for schools, abolished, 97; school, Ottawa county, 325.
Taylor, A. W., school superintendent, Ottawa county, 324, 326.
Taylor, Alvin, married Mrs. Randall, 81.
Taylor, Charles C., Rev., president St. Mark's College, death recorded, 150; rector St. Andrew's church, Ann Arbor, 148-150, 153, 154.
Taylor, Chester B. (R.), gave memorial Jackson report, 6, 47.
Taylor, Eliza, Cambridge, death reported, 58.
Taylor, Fannie R. (Mrs. A. T.), Decatur, death reported, 81.
Taylor, George, Rev., Lansing, 5.
Taylor, John, cabin boy, Capt. McKay, 624; death and coroner's expenses, 657.
Taylor, Susan, instructor Ypsilanti Normal, 92.
Taylor, Walter T., started school which became Hope College, 327.
Taylor, William, Rome, death reported, 56.
Taylor, William, in Capt. Lamothe's company, pay of, 647.
Teachers, number in Ottawa county, 324; number and wages in Michigan, 99.
Teekamigazee, Chippewa chief, 442.
Telegraph, large lake boat, 283.
Temper, Maria, Mrs., Scio, death reported, 83.
Temperance pledge among Catholics, 139.
Tempest, tug boat, 285.
Tenevay (Tennevay), —, 529, 543.
Ten Eyck, Charles, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 39.
Tenney, Harriet A., Mrs., secretary Pioneer society, v, xii, 6, 8, 10, 12, 217; secretary's report, 5.
Tenney, Jesse E., Lansing, death reported, 42.
Territorial council, granted first railroad charter, 273.
Tessalon (Tessalony), river, described by Daniel Robertson 1781, 645, 646.
Thatcher, Orrin, Chelsea, death reported, 84.
Thayer, Austin, Fairfield, death reported, 58.
Thayer, Edwin, paper, 261-266.
Thayer, Homer, Mrs., music by, 7.
Thebault, 580. See Thibault.
Theurit, Joseph, White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
Thibault (Thebault), Joseph, at Detroit, 580.
Thibault, Lamy, 463. See Nicolas Thibault.
Thibault, Nicolas (alias Lamy), charged with murder, 463.
Thomas, Heman, Eagle, sketch, 26.
Thomas, Lewis, Three Rivers, death of, 77.
Thompson, James O., Superior, death reported, 83.
Thompson, William, Dr., Pontiac, 171.
Thompson, William, Crockery, pioneer fruit grower, 268.
Thompson, Zechariah, Capt., British inspector naval department, 351, 438-439.
Thompson, House, Jackson, Indian blankets used for windows, 49.
Thomson, Edward H., Jr., Flint, 35.
Thomson, Edward H., Col., member legislature, 34; see appendix; memoir, 33-35; vice president society, 13.
Thorn, James H., Pittsford, death recorded, 38.
Thorn, James L., member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10.
Thorne, —, Mrs., Osseo, death reported, 40.
Thorp & Godfrey, state printers, i, 16.
Throop, Nathan, Grand Haven, owned mill, 283; uncovered boulder, 259.
Thurgood, E. P., Freeland, 70.

Thurgood, Ebenezer, Freeland, death reported, 70.
Tibbitts, Allen, Coldwater Prairie, 174, 175.
Ticknor, B., Dr., United States navy, death reported, 151, 152.
Tiffany, Cornelia, Mrs., Jonesville, death reported, 39.
Timber, sought by troops, 605.
Time, of travel, 495; of trip from England to New York, 119.
Times, Coopersville paper, lived one month, 299.
Timms, Elizabeth A., Mrs., Hillsdale, death reported, 38.
Tindall, Caroline L., Tecumseh, death reported, 59.
Titus, Joseph, Three Rivers, death reported, 75.
Tivy, Alford, Tuscola county, death of, 77.
Tobacco, Indian chief, son ally of Spain, 457.
Tobacco and rum, not granted soldiers at Mackinac, 593; price of, 439.
Toby, Benjamin, death reported, 54.
Toby, Bracy, Sturgis, death reported, 77.
Todd, Andrew, trader, 362, 363.
Todd, John, Flint, pioneer landlord, 123.
Todd, John, Col., governor of Illinois country, letters to, intercepted, 635.
Todd, Levi, Litchfield, death reported, 37.
Todd & McGill, fur traders, signs memorial, 552.
Tohougetton, Huron chief, 443.
Toledo war, casualties of, 204.
Tolk, J., Mrs., burned to death in Holland fire, 336.
Toll, Isaac D., captain Mexican war at Cherubusco, 212; vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi.
Toms, Ira, Troy, death reported, 60; sketch, 61, 62; soldier 1812, land entry, 62.
Tones, Ira, Mrs. (Mima Crawford), 62.
Tones, Martin M., Troy, death reported, 60.
Tonguish (Toga), chief, 7.
Tooker, Smith, Lansing, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Tosha, —, editor, 297.
Touraighwaghti, Indian name for Mr. Hay, 449.
Towler, —, Lt. Col., English prisoner, intercedes for Gen. Hamilton, 513.
Town, Catharine A., Mrs., death reported, 17.
Town meeting, first in California, 216.
Towns, Ottawa county, churches in, 318, 319.
Townships, early disagreements, 252, 253; organization of, Ottawa county, 252-255.
Townsend, Electa, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 37.
Townsend, Goodenough, gave biography Dr. Fish, 196.
Townsend, Goodenough, Mrs. (Miss Fish), 201.
Trade, affected by rebels, 410-422; at Detroit, 466, 467; condition, 391, 394; early, at Grand Haven, 280; in English presents, regulated, 634; Mississippi endangered by Indians, 371; problems, 384; reports from, 570, 571; restriction regarding, 358, 360, 361, 370, 562, 563, 570.
Traders, alarmed and plundered, 370; complaint of, 365; conduct denounced, 398, 562; English object to prices, 635; given exclusive Missouri trade, 549; help move Mackinac church, 539; licenses at Mackinac, 650; loyalty examined, 348; misuse passes, 555; necessary among Potawatomies, 617; oath required of, 526; partnership articles, 561, 562; petition for priest at Mackinac, 367; protection of, 373; started general store, 398; sufferings of, 551; suspected, 433; trouble with, 571; violated license, 468; where settled, 553.
Trails, Indian only roads, 65.
Travel, pioneer, 205, 206, 276, 277; prices 1779, 422, 515.
Traver, Eliza, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 40.
Travis, William, teacher, 96.
Treasurer report, 14.
Trees, how preempted, 168.
Trip, an old time, 108.
Troops, Eighth Regiment, Sandusky, 414; Eightieth Sandusky.
Troops, Forty-seventh Regiment, Detroit, 417.
Trowbridge, Charles Christopher, Detroit, 86; appointed receiver D. & M. railroad, 276; gift to St. Andrew's church, 143.
Troy, Alford, death reported, 77.
Troy, lake boat, 284.
Truman, S. W., Rev., 153.
Trumbull, Hannah, Mrs., Wheatland, death reported, 40.
Tucker, Haynes B., Jonesville, death reported, 38.
Tucker, Thomas, Hanover, death reported, 48.
Tucker, William, Sr., Indian interpreter for Chippewas and Ottawas, at Indian council, 442, 470; scout, report of, 428.
Tuft, —, Saginaw, 123, 124.
Tull, Charles, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142, 143.
Turner, Charles, St. Johns, sketch, 26, 27.
Turner, Eva, music by, 9.
Turner, Homer, Addison, death reported, 56.
Turner, Madelin, Stockwell, Mrs., first woman graduate University of Michigan, 98.
Turner, Martin, death reported, 54.
Turney, John, brought belt to Lake Indians, 434.
Turpin, tried for murder, 256.
Tuscarawas, Ohio, present name Bolivar, Fort Laurens at, 427. See appendix.

Tuscawiawas, called Fort Laurens, 410; see appendix, 427.
Tuscola county, memorial report, 77; senatorial district, see appendix, 34.
Tuthill, Hiram, Liberty, death reported, 48.
Tuttle, Rufus, Mrs., Coloma, death reported, 19.
Tuttle, W. G., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Tweed, Louisa, Mrs. (Miss Jones), 80.
Twiss, —, Capt., engineer, 534.
Tyler, John, candidate for vice president, 87.
Tyler, Noah, Orion, death reported, 60; sketch, 61.
Tyler township, changed to Hamlin, 30.

Uiternyk, Henry, Rev., 307, 309.
United States, built La Pleasance Bay road, 162; built military road Detroit Chicago, 162; department of the interior, gift of, 11; railroads in 1853, 273; soldiers did first sawing at Saginaw, 128; surveyed northern lakes, Michigan, 101.
United States, lake vessel, 162.
University, Harvard, early president, 95.
University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, admits women, 97, 98; branches consolidated, 156; Rev. Colclazer, first librarian, 160; establishes chair of pedagogy, 98; faculty, member of, 93, 94; first woman graduate, 98; no restrictions on attendance, 97.
Upham, Sophia (Mrs. Charles Upson), 26, 191.
Upham, William, Coldwater, 22.
Upper Huron river, name changed to Clinton, 171.
Upson, A. S., Coldwater, 26.
Upson, Charles, Judge, Coldwater, viii, 11, 20; biography, 188-192; death reported, 12; member of congress and legislature, 24, 189; sketch, 22-26.
Upson, Charles, Mrs. (Sophia M. Upham), 191.
Upson, Edwin, Milwaukee, 22.

Valentine, A. B., Dr., first white child born in Lapeer county, 29.
Valentine, J. S., Rev., prayer by, 7.
Valentine, Martin, Marathon, sketch, 29.
Valentine, Martin, Mrs., Marathon, 29.
Valentine, P., Fredericville, 29.
Van Aiken, Hannah, death of, 58.
Van Alsten, D., Rev. D. D., 45.
Van Buren, A. D. P., Galesburg, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; paper by, 175-177.
Van Buren, Martin, president United States, 28.
Van Buren county, memorial report, 78.
Van Den Schmer, K., Rev., 311.
Van Der Bosch, K., Rev., 311.
Van Derhart, E., Rev., 312.
Van Der Meulen, Cornelius, Rev., 234, 308.
Van Der Meulen, John, Rev., 307, 310, 312.
Van Der Veen, —, pioneer physician, Ottawa county, 333.
Van Der Veen, Christian, Rev., and editor Grand Haven at Semi-Centennial celebration, Ottawa county, 222, 298, 310-312; first county superintendent Ottawa, 324; historical sermon, 222-234; paper on schools, 326-328.
Van der Veen, Jacob, Ottawa county pioneer, 282, 327.
Van Der Vries, E., Rev., 222, 298; address Semi-Centennial celebration Ottawa county, 310-312.
Van Duzen, —, Dr., surgeon Mill Point, 332, 333.
Van Dyke, —, picture crucifixion in chapel, Detroit, 132.
Van Erf, B., Rev., 308.
Van Every, Clarissa, Mrs., Jackson, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Van Eyck, H., Holland editor, 296.
Van Fleet, John, Dexter, death reported, 83.
Van Fleet, Nancy, Hudson, death reported, 57.
Van Fleet, Nellie Clapp, Mrs., White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
Van Guilder, Thomas, death reported, 54.
Van Hoosen, Jane, Coloma, death reported, 19.
Van Ingen, Alvira, Mrs. (Miss Orrin Sisson), 81.
Van Mees, J. G., Zeeland, fruit grower, 269.
Van Raalte, A. C., D. D., Rev., pioneer, Holland, 229, 234, 269, 307, 311; committee of relief for Holland fire sufferers, 339; engaged in fruit culture, 269; gave account Holland fire, 339; quoted, 338, 339; sketch, 305, 306; started Hope College, 328.
Van Riper, John A., Buchanan, death reported, 18.
Van Schelven, G., Holland editor, 296, 298; committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339; paper by, 334-341.
Van Sickle, Mary, Mrs., Greenbush, death reported, 28.
Van Vleck, John, Rev., started Holland Academy, 327, 328.
Vaughn, Isaac C., Moscow, death reported, 38.
Vermillion for Indians, 471.
Vermont, lake vessel, wrecked, 283.
Vermont Colony, settled in Eaton county, 31.
Verney, Isaac, editor, 297.
Vessel, first lumber, Grand Haven, 282; given Sinclair, 574; needed Mackinac, 376; pay and control by English, 348; report of, ordered, 344; time of trip, 163.

Victory, lake vessel, 282; shipwrecked, 283.
Villages, two of Huron Indians, 655.
Vincennes (St. Vincennes, Vincent), Post, 378; attack of, 498; captured, 406, 429, 430; defences, 495; Fort Sackville at, 357; see appendix; rebels at, 548; report from, 393, 434, 459, 466, 475. See also Sackville Fort.
Vireoke, F., Herr, principal German English school, Detroit, 93.
Virginians, attack planned, 380; enemies of English, 448, 449; expedition into Illinois, 475; lost Vincennes, 497; number, 381; rebels, 453, 457. See also rebels.
Visscher, Arrand, Holland peach grower, 269.
Visscher, John, Holland, fruit grower, 269.
Voetius, Aysbertus, professor at Utrecht, 304.
Volunteers, pay, 482.
Volz, Conrad, Rev., 75.
Vorst, C., Holland editor, 298.
Vought, Samuel M., Superior, death reported, 83.
Voyages, perils of early sea, 119, 120.
Voyageurs (Derwin men), characteristics, 237. Also called Courier de bois.
Vredenburg, Albert, first supervisor Blendon, 255.
Vriesland, Netherlands, early church in, 309.

Wa ban gay, Chippewa chief, at council Detroit, 442.
Wabash (Ouabash), Indians, allies of English, 410, 477, 479, 634; attacked by Virginians, 475; importance of conciliating, 459, 460; invited to Detroit, 580; rebellion reported, 434.
Wabasha (Walaslas), Sioux chief, 548, 561; commended, 542, 544; English ally, 361, 549, 559; gave presents to Scioux, 561; reported capture Hamilton, 382, 384.
Wa bene kiah, Indian chief, and son, deaths reported, 453.
Wa bi goney, Chippewa chief, 442.
Waby mossee, Chippewa chief, 442.
Wa gu she (fox), Indian name for Louis Campau, 235, 236.
Wait, J. G., Sturgis, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Waits, H. L., Grand Haven, merchant, 281.
Wakker, G., committee to relieve Holland fire sufferers, 339.
Walashas, 361. See Wabasha.
Waldron, W. K., 162.
Walker, Charles I., author sources of early history, Vol. 8, p. 396, vi; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Walker, Douglas & Campbell, Detroit law firm, 88.
Walker, Ebenezer, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 10.
Walker, Henry N., Detroit, sketch, 88-89.
Walker, Henry N., Mrs. (Emily Norvell), 88.
Walker, Samuel S., gave Clinton memorials, 26-28; vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi.
Walkley, —, Dr., Spring Lake, 333.
Wallace, Catherine (Mrs. N. Beattie), 43.
Wallace, William, Grand Haven, 281.
Walton, Jerome, Mrs., Ypsilanti, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Wampum, given Indians by Gov. Hamilton, 444; green belt showing truth, 453; offered Mackinac Island chief, 530.
Wang, Gen., Chinese rebel captured Ningpo, 198.
War, Mexican, battle Cherubusco, 212; rumored between France and Spain, 461, 462.
War belts, given Indians, 434; given Miami chief, 445.
War dance, described, 112, 113.
War song, sung at council Detroit, 452, 454; sung by Hamilton, 482.
Ward, —, Detroit, built boats, 283.
Ward, —, Miss (Mrs. Charles A. Lull), 64.
Warner, A., Reading, death reported, 37.
Warner, Harry, 20.
Warner, Harvey, Judge, Coldwater Prairie, 174, 175.
Warner, Thomas, Hillsdale, death reported, 37.
Warren, Fannie W., Mrs., death reported, 42.
Warren, John, lake captain, 283.
Washburn, John, Allen, death reported, 39.
Washington House, Grand Haven, hotel, 257.
Washingtonian, temperance move, 140.
Washtenaw county, early ministers in, 155-161; memorial report, 82.
Was ka boga mic, shrub whisky, 236.
Wasson, C. E., Spring Lake editor, 299.
Waterbury, Ira, Ypsilanti, death reported, 84.
Waterhouse, Harriet, Mrs. (Miss Odren), 214.
Waterstreet, Christopher, Mrs. (Elizabeth), 51.
Waterstreet, Elizabeth, Napoleon, death reported, 48, 51.
Watkins, L. D., Norvell, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Watson, Alice J., Grand Rapids, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Watson, S. G., attorney, committee resolutions death of Judge Goodrich, 186.
Watson, Stephen W., Litchfield, death reported, 40.
Watts, Harriett, death reported, 54.
Wa va ohase (Martin), Indian name for Rix Robinson, 236.

Wawiaghten, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Wayland, H. L., teacher and editor, 98.
Wayne county memorial report, 86.
Way wish quoin, Ottawa chief, 442.
Wead, Ira M., Rev., 159. See Ira M. Weed.
Webb, B. L., Detroit, 86.
Webber, William L., East Saginaw, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218.
Webster, Daniel, statesman, 239.
Webster, Norman, Concord, death reported, 48.
Webster House, Saginaw city hotel, 139.
Wedding ceremony, performed by Judge Miller, 124.
Weed (Wead), Ira M., Rev., 159.
Weerd, A. D., Holland fruit grower, 269.
Weholms, return of, requested at Mackinac, 387.
Weenippigoes, 384, 582. See Winnebagoes.
Weight of fetters used, 508.
Weir, G. S., Rev., 29.
Welch, —, struck by falling tree, 169, 170, 171.
Welch, A. S., principal State Normal School, Ypsilanti, 92, 95, 96.
Welch, John B., Ionia, 44.
Welch, Mary E., Ionia, 44.
Welch, Polly (Mrs. Richard Dye), 44.
Welch, Simon, Ionia, 44.
Welch, Spaulding, Parma, death reported, 48.
Welch, Vine, Herkimer county, New York, 44.
Welcome, sloop 1778, 366, 377, 567, 582, 598, 599, 602, 603, 606, 607, 657; commanded by Capt. Harrow, 601, 604; purchased by De Peyster, 390, 391; turned over to Guthrie, 605.
Weld, —, Mrs., Florence, death reported, 76.
Weller, Elizabeth, death reported, 54.
Wellington, R. Burt, Saginaw boat, 72.
Wellman, Martha E., Miss, death reported, 83.
Wells, Charles C., Allen, death reported, 40.
Wells, H. C., Mrs., Lawrence, death reported, 79.
Wells, Hezekiah G., Judge, memorial of, 6.
Welton, Alanson W., Rev., first Episcopal clergyman in territory, 141.
Wescott, Samuel, Somerset, death reported, 37.
Wesleyan Seminary and Female College, now Albion, early instructors, 93.
West, —, Rev. Dr., Lawton, 80.
West, William, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Wetherby, A. Mrs., Fabius, death reported, 76.
Wheat, first grown in Saginaw county, 64; how raised, 263; how regarded by Holland settlers, 260; price, 439.
Wheeler, William, Flowerfield, death reported, 75.
Whipple, Charles W., Judge, friend of Judge Goodrich, 184-186; held first court, Ottawa county, 256.
Whisky shrub, Indian name for, 236.
Whitaker, —, Wessel, Capt., 162.
Whitcomb, Alford, death reported, 17.
White, pioneer family Ottawa county, 225, 234, 238.
White, Amanda (Mrs. William M. Ferry), 239.
White, Andrew D., president Michigan and Cornell University, 92.
White, Barak O., Fabius, death reported, 76.
White, George H., Grand Rapids, gift of memorial to society, 11.
White, Josiah, White Pigeon, death reported, 76.
White, Luke A., Grand Haven, pioneer fur trader, 245, 280.
White, Lydia (Mrs. Amos H. Munson), 30,
White, Mary Ames, paper, 330, 331; first teacher Ottawa county, pioneer sketch, 245, 246.
White, Nathan H., Sr., Grand Haven pioneer, 225, 234, 238, 280, 281, 334; built boat Michigan Belle, 284; memoir, 243, 244, 251.
White, Nathan H., Jr., plaintiff in suit, 256.
White, Oliver K., New Era, vice president, xii.
White, Peter, Marquette, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; gave memorial report Marquette county, 6, 59; paper on Lake Superior iron region cited, 7; vice president society, xi, 5; work for Marquette, 111.
White, T. Stuart, Grand Haven bank director, 285.
White, Thomas W., lake captain, 285; pioneer Grand Haven, 245, 251.
White & Fryant, Mortonville mill, 285.
White Eyes, Delaware chief, in council at Detroit, 450.
Whitehouse, Henry J. Rev. D. D., declined bishop Michigan, 144.
Whitmore, Oliver, Judge, landlord log hotel, Ypsilanti, 162.
Whitney, Abel, Adrian, gift to society, 11.
Whitney, C. L., teacher and editor, 98.
Whitney, Roxy (Mrs. Charles A. Lull), 64.
Whitsell, George B., Orion, death reported, 61.
Whittaker, John, Concord, death reported, 47.
Wiandott, 580. See Wyandott.
Wiard, Hannah, Mrs., Ypsilanti, death reported, 83.
Wight, Stanley G., Detroit, 86.
Wigwams, description of, 112.
Wilbur, Eason, Adams, death reported, 39.

Wilcox, Lyman G., Avon, death reported, 60; sketch, 61.
Wilcox, O. W., Centreville, death reported, 75.
Wilcoxson, Gideon, Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Wilder, W. N., Marshall, death reported, 13.
Wilkins, John, Allen, death reported, 38.
Wilkinson, Malinda, Mrs., Litchfield, death reported, 40.
Willan, —, 460. See Willing.
Willard, Ephraim, Adrian, death reported, 56.
Willard, George, Rev., Burr Oak, teacher Kalamazoo College, 95.
William, Henry, Fort, 411.
William, Prince of Orange, 304.
Williamsburg, number prisoners sent to, 506.
Williams, —, Capt., graduate of West Point, surveyed Green Bay country 1845, 104; mortally wounded at Monterey, 105.
Williams, —, Dr., Grand Haven, pioneer fur merchant, 280.
Williams, A. L., Owosso, death reported, 13.
Williams, A. S., Gen., 34.
Williams, Alfred, Lorenzo (Old Salt), Indian trader, 8, 10.
Williams, Benjamin O., Indian trader, committee on nominations and vice president, 5-7; gave Shiawassee memorial reports, 6.
Williams, Ephraim S., Indian trader, 8, 15; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; furnished last letter Col. Broadhead, 208, 209; paper on early Michigan, 166-172; sketch by, 210, 211.
Williams, Gardner, D. and Ephriam S., agents American Fur Co., 137, 138.
Williams, George Palmer, Rev., LL. D., teacher University of Michigan, 92, 149.
Williams, Joseph R., Constantine, 188.
Williams, Oliver, Major, Silver Lake, 166.
Williams, Wolcott B., Charlotte, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Williams, —, first saw mill in Saginaw, 127.
Williams & Phillips, saw mill at Waterford, 168, 169.
Williamson, —, soldier signed complaint, 594.
Willing, —, American commander St. Joseph, 369; see appendix; depredations, 388; see appendix; led expedition to Illinois country, 460.
Willis, John A., 149.
Willitts, Edwin, president Michigan Agricultural College, delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; teacher and lawyer, 95.
Willson, —, Mr., soldier signed complaint, 594.
Wilson, —, Gen., 515.
Wilson, Eveline, Madison, death reported, 58.
Wilson, Henry, vice president United States, 190.
Wilson, Jack, captain Monticello, 116.
Wilson, John A., Rev. D. D., sermon of, given society, 11.
Wilson, John B., Lapeer, vice president society, xi.
Wilson, Judson, death reported, 84.
Wilson, Robert S., Ann Arbor, original member St. Andrew's church, 142.
Wilson, Thomas M., Lansing, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 90.
Winchell, Alexander, professor University of Michigan, 92.
Winder, John, Col., 186, 187.
Wing, Talcott E., 5, 7, 8; delegate from society to Michigan Semi-Centennial, 218; member and officer society, v, xii, 5, 6, 8, 10.
Winnebagoes (Weenippegoes, Winipigoes), 382, 384, 497, 559, 582, 588.
Winsor, Darius, Michigan pioneer, 243.
Winsor, Zenas G., 234, 238, 248; (Che mo ke maness), Indian name, 236, 237; sketch, 243.
Winter, Asa (Father Winter), memoir cited, 9.
Wisconsin, lake vessel, 275, 284.
Wisner, Anson R., Jonesville, death reported, 37.
Wisner, Luther R., Jonesville, death reported, 37.
Witherbee, A. B., Mrs. (Miss Thomson), 35.
Witherell, Benjamin F. H., Judge, 186.
Witter, Lyman M., Lawrence, death reported, 81.
Wolcott, Charles C., 50.
Wolcott, Grove H., 50.
Wolcott, Josephine, death reported, 50.
Wolcott, Mark S., 50.
Wolcott, Thomas C., 50.
Wolcott, William V., 50.
Wolcott, William W., Hamlin, death reported, 32; sketch, 48-50.
Wolcott, William W. (Mrs. Elizabeth Baldwin), 32, 49.
Women, admitted to University of Michigan, 98; first graduate University of Michigan, 98; second settler Farmington, 61. See also Indian women.
Wood, Ann, Mrs., Wheatland, death reported, 40.
Wood, Charles M., Anderson, member Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, 91.
Wood, Devolson, professor University of Michigan, 92.
Wood, George P., Blissfield, death reported, 59.

Wood, Jethro, Rochester, New York, first maker iron plows, 28.
Wood, Joseph, St. Johns, death reported, 13.
Woodbury, Thomas, Talmadge, pioneer fruit grower, 255, 268.
Woodruff, Eunice, Mrs., Jefferson, death reported, 38.
Woodruff, Henry, Blendon, pioneer, 255.
Woodruff, Henry, Farwell, vice president Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, xi.
Woodruff, Milton, Blendon pioneer, 255.
Woodworth, Asa T., Hillsdale, death reported, 40.
Woodworth, George, 49.
Woolson, —, Mrs., Adams, death reported, 40.
Woolson, Joseph, Mrs., Adams, death reported, 40.
Wooster, John E., Wheatland, death reported, 37.
Word, William, Rome, death reported, 57.
Worth, James, Spring Arbor, death reported, 48.
Wright, John, Lt., reported killed by Potawatomies, 655.
Wright, John S., memoir given by Chicago Historical Society, 10.
Wright, Rhoda, Mrs., Jonesville, death reported, 37.
Wurtz, Louis H., Dr., Coldwater, 22.
Wyandot (Wiandots, Huron), Indians, 347, 427, 428; chiefs in council Detroit, 442-458; desire war, 445; tribal relation, 171. See appendix.
Wyandott (Wiandott), boat beached in Lake Huron, 580, 582, 598.
Wycoff, Phebe, Mrs., Salem, death reported, 84.
Wyman, Charles E., Grand Haven, bank director, 283, 285.
Wyman Hamilton, death reported, 54.
Wyman & Buswell, vessel owners, 283.
Wyman, large lake vessel, 283.
Wy mee gong, Chippewa from Saginaw in council at Detroit, 442.
Wyndeego, Potawatomie chief, 443.
Wyshinadeytoo, Chippewa chief, 442.
Wy wee na cam, Chippewa chief, 442.

Yapati (Ya pa ti a, Ta pa ti a, Sapati), Ouiattonon chief, speech at council Detroit, 452, 453, 456.
Yates, Richard, governor Illinois, gave Stanton commission, 46.
Yeomans, S., Georgetown pioneer, 255.
Yetter, Michael, Mrs., Colon, death reported, 76.
Young, Brigham, Mormon leader, 106.
Young, D., first supervisor, Zeeland township, 255.
Young, David, Allen, death reported, 37.
Young, Elias G., first teacher Zeeland, 328.
Young, Harriett, Mrs., Three Rivers, death reported, 77.
Ypma, Martin A., Rev., 309.
Ypsilanti, principals at Normal school, 95.
Ypsilanti Normal School, 94.

Zeeland township, Ottawa county, organized, 255; first church organized in, 308, 309; first teacher in, 328.
Zillman, William, Benton, death reported, 18.
Zimmerlee, —, Mrs., Lake, death reported, 19.
Zimmerman, Christoph, Rev., 301.
Zutphen, Holland church, 310.
Zwemer, A., Rev., 309.
Zwemer, J. T., Rev., 312.

F
561
M47
v. 9

Michigan. Historical
Commission
Michigan historical
collections

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY